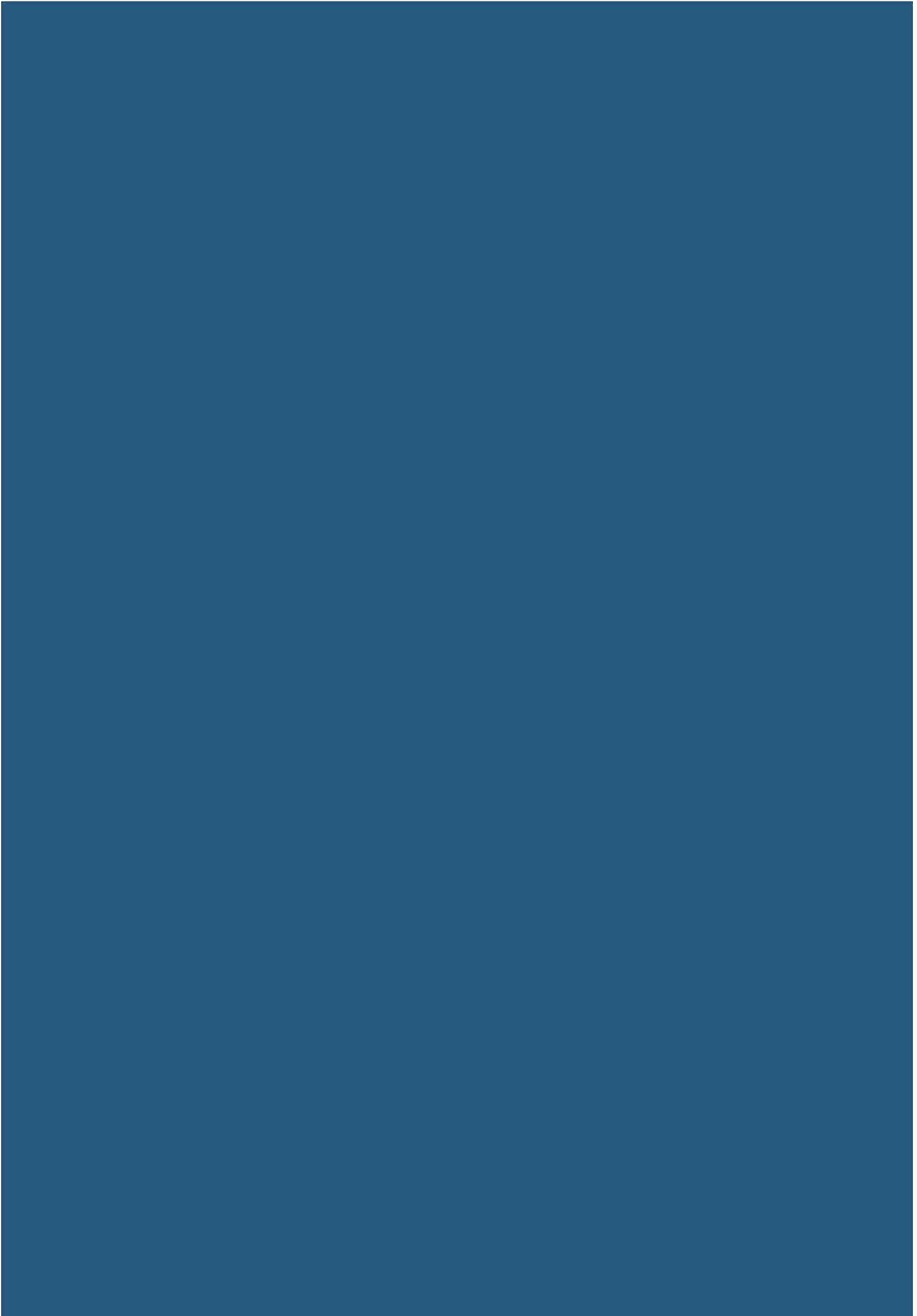


DIALOGS WITH
THE LORD JESUS CHRIST
SECOND VOLUME



DIALOGS WITH THE LORD JESUS CHRIST
SECOND VOLUME

DIALOGS WITH
THE LORD JESUS CHRIST
SECOND VOLUME

DIALOGS WITH THE LORD JESUS CHRIST — SECOND VOLUME

For a free copy of this book, please, write to:

TNR Foundation
4482 Meadowlark Lane
Santa Barbara, California 93105-9725

Published by TNR Foundation in the United States of America

Second Printing

Table of Contents

Introduction.....	iii
Dialog 101.....	1
Dialog 102.....	19
Dialog 103.....	29
Dialog 104.....	41
Dialog 105.....	53
Dialog 106.....	67
Dialog 107.....	77
Dialog 108.....	91
Dialog 109.....	111
Dialog 110.....	121
Dialog 111.....	129
Dialog 112.....	139
Dialog 113.....	147
Dialog 114.....	159
Dialog 115.....	167
Dialog 116.....	185
Dialog 117.....	195
Dialog 118.....	205
Dialog 119.....	219
Dialog 120.....	231
Dialog 121.....	241
Dialog 122.....	253
Dialog 123.....	271
Dialog 124.....	291
Dialog 125.....	303
Dialog 126.....	319
Dialog 127.....	333
Dialog 128.....	345
Dialog 129.....	359
Dialog 130.....	373
Dialog 131.....	393
Dialog 132.....	407
Dialog 133.....	423
Dialog 134.....	447
Dialog 135.....	461
Dialog 136.....	477
Dialog 137.....	491
Dialog 138.....	505
Dialog 139.....	521

Dialog 140.....	537
Dialog 141.....	553
Dialog 142.....	569
Dialog 143.....	587
Dialog 144.....	601
Dialog 145.....	617
Dialog 146.....	635
Dialog 147.....	651
Dialog 148.....	663
Dialog 149.....	679
Dialog 150.....	695
Postscriptum.....	721-734

INTRODUCTION

The second volume of this book consists of 50 Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ. They were recorded sequentially and therefore, it is advised that their first reading be undertaken sequentially as well. Some Dialogs contain topics which were addressed in the previous Dialogs and for that reason, it would be difficult to understand what they contain without their relatedness to the preceding Dialogs.

These Dialogs can be considered as a sequence to and continuation of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** the ***Corollaries to The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** and the first volume of the ***Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ***. Because their philosophy, and everything contained in them, has a direct relevance to those three books, it would be impossible to properly understand anything in these Dialogs without the prior reading of those three preceding books and without thorough knowledge and practice of what they contain. Otherwise, very little would make sense with what these Dialogs deal. And not only that, but there is a certain degree of spiritual danger in reading them without the prior familiarity and acceptance of the content of the previously published three books. Not knowing and understanding what these Dialogs contain or deal with, may lead the prospective reader to reject whatever they offer. In such a rejection is hidden the possible denial of the spiritual truth directly derived from The Lord Jesus Christ Who is the Absolute Truth Himself/Herself. In this logical sense, denial of the content of these Dialogs, may equal denial of The Lord Jesus Christ. This is the mentioned spiritual danger.

Of course, based on any prospective reader's free will and choice, he/she may accept or reject anything contained not only in these Dialogs but also in the preceding three books — as indicated above. Nothing is being forced or imposed on anyone. However, in order to be fair and objective, it is necessary to honestly warn about any possible consequences, results and outcomes of any choice in this respect.

The above mentioned conditions and requirements fully apply to any other future volumes of these Dialogs likewise — if any at all will be forthcoming. Thank you for considering what is being revealed in these Dialogs.

Dr. Peter D. Francuch
Santa Barbara, CA
September 20, 2000

DIALOGS WITH THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

SECOND VOLUME

One Hundred and First Dialog

September 6, 1999

Peter: Good morning, my Lord Jesus Christ and everyone present. So, we are at the beginning of the second volume of our dialoging. Interestingly enough, just as we finished the first volume, and thinking that it would be a somewhat extended break between the first and the second volume, suddenly, new questions started to arrive, as if giving me an indication that it is important to continue in our effort in this respect. Some of these questions are interesting ones. However, we also received one letter from a reader which is, as I see and interpret it (and I could be very wrong in my interpretation!), full of bitter and frustrating anger and sarcasm. You know, I was wondering how long it would take for someone who reads these Dialogs to come up with some complaints and misunderstandings of what these Dialogs are all about. Do You think that all these questions and this one complaint are indicative of the need to continue in our dialoging? Moreover, if they are, how would You like to open the second round in our dialoging, besides answering the asked questions or interpreting the content of the mentioned complaint?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Good morning to you from all of us as well, Peter. And yes, it is not by coincidence that you have received all those questions and the one complaint. They do indicate that we need to begin with the second round of our dialoging. This indication very clearly points out the fact that everything is considerably accelerated, not only in our world, but also in your pseudo-world and in the entirety of the Zone of Displacement.

This means that certain things, concepts, ideas, illustrations, happenings and events need to be interpreted, explained, conveyed and implemented so that preparations are being made for the reception of the very first and initial surge of energy, stemming from the core of the soon-to-be released (in a non-time sense) spiritual component that would, first of all, close this cycle of time; secondly, that would institute the transitional period; and thirdly, that would prepare everyone to receive the new aspect of My Absolute New Nature which would substantially, and to everyone's individual and personal core of their own unique nature, change their perception of Who I am and what My Nature is all about.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

For that reason, before going into interpretation of the letter of complaint, I would like to take this opportunity, that you, Peter, so kindly offered to Me, to begin the very first Dialog in this second round with, once again, talking about some aspects of My New Nature. After that, we'll go into the mentioned letter. The other questions asked, we'll bring up in the next Dialogs — if this sequence is acceptable to you, Peter.

Peter: Oh, yes, by all means, I would be more than happy to proceed in any way You so kindly suggest.

The Lord Jesus Christ: In that case, we'll do it as suggested. So, let us talk about the most important concept, the proper understanding and acceptance of that which determines not only everyone's position and role in the spiritual reality of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, but on which everyone's life, individuality and unique personality depends.

As you know, Peter, all these things have always been dependent on how sentient entities perceive, understand, recognize and relate to Me personally. This is the reason why the topic of discussion about My New Nature can be considered the most important one which far transcends the importance of all other topics. If your life depends on something like that, it is obvious why such a topic would be the most important and crucial one. So, today, let us talk about My New Nature first, and then, as a contrast, we'll talk about the letter of complaint.

In the history of humanity on planet Zero, the concept of God has always been on the mind of all its inhabitants. However, the issue about this concept is dependent on its proper definition. But here comes the problem: How do you define what or who God is? What is His/Her Nature? How can a relative being relate to Someone Who, in His/Her Essence and Substance, is Absolute, and therefore, from the position of the relative, is non-definable? And yet, if you want to establish a proper and meaningful relationship with your God, you must first define His/Her Nature. So, throughout the entire history, philosophers, mystics, clergy, ministers, preachers, laypersons and many others, tried very hard to come up with some kind of definition of God which would give them a certain foundation on which they could establish the necessary relationship with Him/Her. The many and numerous definitions of God, very often, were contradictory and opposing each other's conceptualization in this respect. As you know by now, none of these definitions came even remotely close to the true reality of Who I am and what My attitude toward and relationship with everyone in My Creation and pseudo-creation is.

The very first problem in this respect is the definition of the two concepts — ‘the Absolute’ and ‘the relative.’ How do you define these two concepts? What is Absolute and what is relative? Is there a possibility at all to apprehend the nature of something which is Absolute from the position of something which is relative? This has always been a problem. Because of this problem, it became a source which led toward the establishment of so many inappropriate, distorted, irreconcilable and false concepts in understanding what the true nature of this Absolute is, and by association, of what the definition of God, could or should be like.

The problem with offering some reasonable and realistic definition of these concepts is in the fact that, if we are limited in our attempt to define them in typical human terms, using the words of the language which are so limited and limiting, and which are incapable of containing the entirety of the meaning of these concepts, then we are exposing ourselves to the possibility that, no matter how exhaustive and appropriate our definition from our position would be, from the position of the relative human mind it could lead to distortions or even to outright falsities. The reason for this possibility lies in the fact that everyone would have a tendency to interpret the content of the used words from his/her own subjective understanding of what they contain, mean or signify.

So, how do we go about eliminating this insurmountable obstacle? The only feasible way is by a direct revelation about anything of this nature from the Absolute Source Itself — Me. One of the many reasons for My incarnation on planet Zero into the human life was to acquire their limited and limiting language which would give Me a means of proper and understandable communication with everyone who, by their very nature, is relative.

Of course, unless anything revealed by Me in this respect is accompanied by intuitive discernment of what we are talking about, the meaning of the used words could elude the human external mind and it would tend to either misinterpret them or misunderstand them. This is one of the many reasons why I equipped some of the human stock — you, My representatives, in particular, with a special type of spiritual intuition which is capable of conveying to you the right meaning of the used words for defining any spiritual concepts. Without this special type of intuition they would be incomprehensible.

Because you have this intuition, you are shielded from the possibility of misunderstanding and misinterpreting anything which is revealed by Me in this respect, **as long as you use it with Me on your mind.** Having said this, let us attempt to define the concepts of ‘Absolute’ and ‘relative.’

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

What is Absolute? Is this an abstract concept? Many human philosophers, as well as many other humans, would consider it an abstract concept. And this is the problem. Such a consideration leads to the total inappropriate and false apprehension of the true reality of the Absolute.

Let Me tell you something: There is nothing more concrete, tangible, realistic and real than this Absolute. Without it, and all its characteristics, nothing else could have its own reality in its own being and existence. From this fact, you can define Absolute as **the only real, concrete and tangible, infinitely Unique, Self-Contained, Self-Perceptive and Self-Sentient Individuality, as well as the only Object and Subject, which is all-encompassing, containing all and everything without lacking anything and which, by its nature, is the source of all and everything by the factor that it contains within Itself the totality of Being and Existence with all their traits and characteristics, as well as of all imaginable and unimaginable States and Processes and Changes and all their specific traits and characteristics and which, at the very same time, transcends all of them.**

From this definition of the Absolute can be derived the definition of the relative. In this respect, **relative can be defined as a derivative of the Absolute, containing Its certain specific element which gives a unique character of its own to the relative, and which determines the relative's position, state/place and process relative only and only to the Absolute.** The nature of the relative derives from the factor of its dependence on the Absolute in which is all being and existence. Whereas the Absolute, in its own subjective Being and Existence, which are in Him/Her, doesn't depend on anyone or anything — otherwise, by definition it would not be absolute — the relative is always dependent on this Absolute because it doesn't contain within itself and by itself its own being and existence apart from and independent of the Absolute.

Having defined the concepts of Absolute and relative, in terms somewhat limited by the human language and its words, we can now talk about My New Nature from a somewhat different perspective.

As you know, Peter, and all who read these words, very often My Nature is defined as the Absolute Love, Wisdom, Good, Truth, Energy, Life, Mind, Light, Warmth, Fire, etc., and from the time of the acquirement of My New Nature, as the Only Absolute Human in the positive connotation of this term. But how do you conceptualize and understand these very important terms? What do they really mean? In most instances, these terms, and what they contain or signify, in the typical human mind are

conceived as something intangible, abstract, non-touchable, non-concrete or non-perceptible, having its manifestation only in some kinds of feelings, senses or intellectual discernments. By such a conceptualization and understanding, by association to My very Nature, it leads to the paradox of Myself being that way — abstract, non-touchable, intangible, non-concrete, non-real and impossible to encompass in the reality of the human mind.

I can assure you that nothing is further from the truth than this conceptualization of My New Nature. It is time for all of you to realize that Love, Wisdom, Good, Truth, Energy, Life, Light, Warmth, Fire, Process, State, the Only Absolute Human, and everything else by which I am Named, are not something which have no concrete and tangible representation, but they are all **One Subjective and Objective Sentient Entity — Me**. In Me, they are all *sentiently* alive and living, continuously emanating and radiating their characteristics, traits, substance and nature to all and everything in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, thus, making it possible for all of them to be who or what they are and where they are.

The mystery of these important terms is contained in the emphasized word '*sentiently*.' This unusual word (not contained in any English dictionary — doesn't exist; we have just made it up for our own purpose, deriving it from the word 'sentient'!) denotes that all these terms by which My New Nature is designated or named, are self-aware, self-perceptive, self-cognizant, self-identified, self-real, self-knowing, self-feeling and self-everything. They are all what and who I Am and I Am what and who they are. Because all of them are in Me and I Am in them, they are all in their own state and process of Absoluteness.

In the understanding and application of these important terms in the minds and lives of all relative sentient entities, it is necessary to realize that, in the true spiritual reality of their being and existence, or pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, all of them, no matter where they are situated, are their own loves, wisdoms, goods, truths, energies, etc., or their counterparts in the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, by which they are who they really are and how or what they are.

Thus, the definition of everyone's individuality, personality and uniqueness, derives from the state, process, substance and character of everyone's specific love, wisdom, good, truth, energy, life, etc., or their counterpart in the negative state. In them these terms are not terms but they are *sentiently* self-aware, self-perceptive, self-cognizant, self-identified, self-real, self-knowing, self-feeling and self-everything. They

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

are all what and who you are and you are what or who they are. This nature of these terms and the nature of all sentient entities derives from My Absolute Nature.

If everyone and everything is who or what they are depends on Who I Am and what My Nature is, then it is obvious that all and everything will reflect this condition and nature in their own relative condition and nature. And because all infinite uniquenesses, in their totality and all its possibilities and derivatives, are contained in Me in an Absolute sense, each and every sentient entity, no matter where and when, reflects this uniqueness in his/her own individualized and personalized life. This fact signifies that each and every individual's love, wisdom, good, truth, energy, life etc., are likewise infinitely unique and different in their own nature, content and manifestation. It also means that only from this position can and may any meaningful relationship between Me and them and them and Me be permanently and eternally established. It also tells you how wrong and dangerous all religious systems on your planet are, when they forcefully impose on their followers a uniformed, and common to all, way of relating or worshiping their God. By doing that, they destroy any possibility of establishment of a proper relationship with Me. And not only that, but by such uniformed prescriptions, they succeed in contacting and worshiping creatures of the Hells, who are propagating and living the philosophy of uniformity, mass worshiping and communality, rejecting by all means anything individualized, personalized, unique and different. This inappropriate way stems from distorted and false definitions of God and what His/Her Nature truly is.

Another important factor to realize about My New Nature and about all the above described terms, by which I am defined, is something which relates to the mystery of My incarnation on planet Zero. Before that event, My interaction with all sentient entities was different than it is now or as it became after My return from planet Zero. Before that time, there was a certain degree of separation, or, even in some sense, of isolation of My Absolute Essence and My Absolute Substance, and all the above described terms, contained in My Absolute Nature, from the rest of My Creation and pseudo-creation.

As you remember from ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***, the way any interaction or communication between Me and them was accomplished, was by mediation through angels who were specially appointed and trained by Me for that purpose. This situation very often gave an inappropriate impression, especially for humans and other creatures in the Zone of Displacement, that I was unapproachable and impossible to directly communicate with. It put Me in a position of an

impersonal, remote, intangible, cold and very strict God, who had no way of coming down to the level of relative sentient entities or humans and to communicate with them face to face. This situation also led to the conceptualization of the terms love, wisdom, good, truth, energy, life, etc., as something abstract which doesn't have any mode of concrete and tangible manifestation in their own nature and characteristics. Thus, from this understanding and interpretation, for many, these terms became empty notions, meaningless words, theoretical constructs and philosophical and psychological hypotheses by which were described human emotional states and processes and humans' external behavior.

In order to change this situation, and in order to make it possible to define in concrete, experiential and factual concepts the true Nature of God — My Nature, and Its sentient attributes, as reflected in the above described terms, it was necessary for Me to make Myself and My Nature real, concrete, tangible and sensible not only for Myself in My Absolute Self-Perceptive and Self-Feeling State and Process, but also for everyone in My Creation, in pseudo-creation and for humans as well. To do that, it was necessary to incarnate into the most remote, the lowest possible (symbolically speaking) level of the externals, which were totally separated and isolated from My Creation, represented by humans on planet Zero.

As you know, many most important reasons existed for why I undertook My incarnation into human life. But the above mentioned reason can be considered one of the most important ones. It gave Me the most rugged, most concrete, most material (in the sense of matter), most tangible, most sensible, most sensory and most external means for making Myself, My Nature and all Its self-sentient Attributes, What and Who We really are — the true Self-Perceived and Self-Sentient Reality from which all other realities derive and on which all of them, including the pseudo-reality and human life, depend.

Because of this factor, My Nature completely changed, — as seen from the subjective and objective time-space continuum and pseudo-continuum, — and I acquired, in their perspective, and also factually, My New Nature. From the position of My New Nature all such terms as love, wisdom, good, truth, reality, life, energy, sentiency, faith, and all else, became in their own right self-perceptive, self-sentient and self-real. By them all sentient entities truly live, are alive and are factually and experientially sentient. Because in Me all these terms are absolutely alive and living, and thus fully sentient, constituting the Absolute Essence and Substance of My Own Life; so are they alive and living, and thus fully sentient, in all

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

sentient entities, constituting their own relative essences and substances of their own lives.

So, from now on, when you say something like — God is Love, it will signify that Love in God is alive and living and is fully sentient in its objective and subjective sentiency, and therefore, is capable of relating to everyone from the position of the purity of its fully sentient nature. Thus, it is fully aware of its own state and process and is fully cognizant of how it is radiating warmth and emanating light, influencing and supporting life everywhere and everywhen. And this is what the Nature of God — My New Nature, among many other things, is all about.

This aspect of My New Nature is being released right now in preparation for the global release of the spiritual component which will rule the incoming new cycle of time, as well as in preparation for the release of the entirely new aspect of My New Nature. It will also reflect the nature and content of the new phase of the currently ongoing shift, which is being initiated by Me right now, as these words are being recorded by Peter. By the factor of this first Dialog in the second round of our dialoging, all My representatives are being prepared for this event (it will happen in the process of everyone's individual reading of this particular Dialog).

And now, Peter, let us address the content of the complaint-letter which you received through E-mail the other day. In order to have the full impact and explanation of its content, I would recommend quoting it verbatim with the preservation of anonymity of its author. It will be in full contrast to that which we have been talking about as described above.

Peter: Before I do that, I would like to thank You very much for the above recorded revelation. It has a profound meaning and it really signifies something new and different. And now here goes the mentioned letter in its full content (the name of the author is left out for the preservation of confidentiality):

“What The Lord Jesus Christ has said so far this year:

1. So far this year I have been told that I live in a place with a climate like Siberia because I am positioned here for reasons having to do with what is going on in the new universe or some other place that my puny human brain can't really comprehend. Bottom Line: Learn to like it in Siberia.
2. Don't make love to anyone unless they are practicing and reading The New Revelation, and then they might not be on your level so don't make love to anyone ever again — of

course that would have to be your own choice but don't come running to me if you get burned.

3. Don't drink alcohol or coffee or eat chocolate. You can be attacked by the negative state if you do that. And not consuming those things would be by your own free will and choice but don't come complaining to me if you have problems with those things.
4. Work until you are about ready to die at a job that takes up all your time and that really has no significance or means anything at all because the world is upside down and inside out anyway — just some kind of weird demonstration project for who knows what purpose which would be something your puny human brain couldn't comprehend anyway — because you agreed to that before you came here, so don't complain about it either.
5. Spend all of your free time reading material that makes you cross-eyed and is about topics that your puny brain can't really comprehend or that can't be fully explained to you right now anyway.
6. And by the way get rid of your pets unless you want to be attacked by the negative state. If you don't, that would be your choice and if that happens don't complain to me about it. And if that means living out your years all alone with no comfort or company, well, you agreed to that before you came here. By your own free will and choice of course.

I wonder how I could have been so stupid so as to have agreed to all of this.

Are we having fun yet?????????

I want to win the lottery.”

The Lord Jesus Christ: First of all, I would like to express My Personal appreciation and gratitude to the author of this letter for giving us all an opportunity to illustrate something spiritually very important. This letter is an excellent example which shows very clearly what happens if one approaches life, any life, as well as My New Revelation, and what it contains, not spiritually, not from the standpoint of one's true nature, or that portion of one's nature which was wired by Me, but from the aspect of one's typical, non-spiritual human nature. It is a clear illustration of how

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

such a typical non-spiritual human approach leads to outright distortions and falsifications of everything contained in My New Revelation and particularly, in these Dialogs. It also shows you what happens if one disregards one's own intuition and evaluates everything from the position of his/her external human mind and from the position of the pseudo-values of the typical human life. In that case, the entire point of everything which is being conveyed to you in My New Revelation is missed, lost or disregarded. Let us take all the points in the letter one by one.

In the first point the author complains about living in a place which is comparable to living in Siberia and that it has something to do with what is going on in the New Universe or some other place that the author's 'puny brain' can't really comprehend. It takes tremendous spiritual maturity and spiritual awareness to accept in all modesty, humbleness and humility one's chosen destiny without complaining where one is situated, why one is there and what it means for all involved to whom one is integrally connected. It is not as difficult to comprehend, even for 'the puny human brain,' the fact of the multidimensional connectedness of all and everything and how one's life, or how one manages and lives one's life, no matter where and under what conditions, contributes to the learning and enhancement of all. All one has to do is to go inward and ask Me personally to enlighten him/her in this matter and clarify all the reasons for the choices which were made in this respect. The author of the mentioned letter has the ability to do so. If the author is not using that God-given ability, it is the author's choice to do so. Neither I nor anyone else in other dimensions will rebuke or blame the author for not using that ability. We'll understand the author's need to experience the human pseudo-life from the position of the human skin and not from the position of the true reality of the author's inner, spiritual self. No one will be judging anyone, and especially not the author of that letter.

In the second point, the author complains about our advice not to make love to anyone unless they are practicing and reading The New Revelation, and even then to be careful because if your sexual partner is not on the same spiritual level, you might get burned. So in essence, the author concludes, don't make love to anyone ever again. The bitterness about and total misunderstanding of our advice is very obvious. At no time was it indicated that you shouldn't make love to anyone ever again. What was indicated however, was that, before you approach anyone for the purpose of lovemaking, preferably to someone who reads and accepts My New Revelation and preferably, if possible at all, to someone who is on the same or close spiritual level as you are, turn yourself to Me in the state of your inwardness and verify if it would be useful, beneficial and profitable

for all involved on all levels to have such a lovemaking session; and if it is My will for you to enter such a relationship; and if it would contribute to the greater knowledge of Me, others and yourself; and if it would become a true source of joy, delight and pleasure and not a trap of the forces of the negative state to make your life uncomfortable, miserable and complicated and to deprive you of your precious energies for their own purposes, making you, by the means of your sexual partner, their slave and follower.

It was also clearly indicated in the Eighty Second Dialog, that under the presently existing spiritual conditions and the conditions in the negative state and human life in general, when the renegades are searching for all possible means to win the battle with the pseudo-creators and to establish their own brand of pseudo-life, one of the most potent tools they found is in your human sexuality. Therefore, they will tempt you to get sexually involved with the most dangerous and spiritually devastating partners, who initially will appear to you as angels of light in order to trap you and sway you to their cause.

Now, any of these warnings didn't indicate that you should never ever get sexually involved with anyone. In fact, your sexual involvement with a proper sexual partner, if it is endorsed and blessed by Me and if it involves Me in the process, can be a great positive contributory factor for the cause of My positive state and your life in particular. Don't ever miss this factor during your reading of these Dialogs, or any other books of My New Revelation, whenever we are discussing sexual matters in them! Is it so difficult to understand this issue or to accept the fact that My advice was/is for your own protection and not because I am prohibiting something? Believe Me, I am not in the business of prohibiting anything to anyone. The opposite is true: No matter what choices you make or will be making, you will have My full support and help, as well as of all members of your spiritual family and of the New Universe.

In the third point, the author is complaining about not being able to drink alcohol or coffee or to eat chocolate. By the way, in no place within My New Revelation, or in these Dialogs, was anything at all mentioned about not eating chocolate. Here comes the issue of sweeping generalizations. And here comes the issue of dependencies which impede one's life and interfere with one's proper, normal and healthy functioning. Alcohol, nicotine and strong black coffee, which contains a high dose of addictive caffeine, and similar chemical substances, make one's brain cells dysfunctional, so that they lose their autonomous ability to produce the necessary substances needed for the maintenance of your organism's balance. If one uses them on a frequent basis, which is the case with the majority of the drinkers of alcohol, strong black coffee and smokers of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

cigarettes, one develops severe external dependencies on them and one loses one's own internal reliable dependence on the ability of one's own organism to take care of itself and its proper and healthy functioning. This fact is also known to medical science. How much more spiritual danger is embedded in such dependencies!

The negative spiritual correspondence of this fact lies in keeping humans in the clutches of the negative state, away from themselves and their true inner reality, by making them rely on external inputs where no reality exists. This is how the pseudo-reality of the negative state and of the typical human life is established, which subsequently, is considered by them to be a true reality. This is how illusions of the human life and of the negative state came about and how they are considered by the users to be the only feasible lifestyle.

Moreover, as mentioned in one of the previous Dialogs, such substances as alcohol, nicotine (cigarette smoking) and high doses of caffeine are effectively being utilized by the renegades to adversely influence, if possible, even My true representatives. The reason we were talking about these types of chemical dependencies was that the position of the renegades in relationship to you, situated on planet Zero, is such that they need to divert your energies for their own use. What you have to understand in this respect, is that the renegades are in the process of continuous recycling of their own pseudo-energies which they need for their own negative and evil pseudo-activities in order to perpetuate their own pseudo-life. In the process of continuous recycling of these pseudo-energies, these energies lose some degree of their potency. Thus, they become weaker and weaker and, subsequently, less and less effective in their properties.

Because of this, they need some new sources of supply of these energies which can be provided only and only by My representatives and My people in general. Alcohol, nicotine, strong black coffee, and all other chemical substances, which have the ability to alter one's consciousness and which enable one to develop physiological and psychological dependencies on them to the point of development of severe withdrawal symptoms, are an excellent tool in the hands of the renegades to divert your spiritual energy, which comes directly from Me, to their own cause. By succumbing to your cravings to drink alcohol, **even in the smallest amount**, or to smoking cigarettes, or to all other chemical substances of this nature, you are opening the door for the renegades to tempt you and to sway you to their cause, enabling them, thus, to steal your spiritual energies which are needed somewhere else.

As far as chocolate is concerned, and similar food substances, the reason they were not mentioned in our Dialogs was because they lack the ability to alter your conscious mind and they don't produce physiological, and corresponding to them spiritual, withdrawal symptoms which would enable the renegades to utilize them for their own adverse purposes. Is the true pleasure of human life in imbibing alcohol and coffee, in smoking cigarettes, or some other similar, but mind-altering chemical substances? Think about it and make your own conclusions!

In the fourth point, the author is complaining about working until you are about to die and doing the type of job which has no significance or means anything at all because the world is upside-down and inside out anyway — just some kind of weird demonstration project for who-knows-what purpose, which would be something your 'puny' human brain couldn't comprehend anyway. Now, here is something that is totally out of context with anything which has been revealed in all sources of My New Revelation.

First of all, throughout the entirety of My New Revelation, the meaning, the purpose, the goal and the outcome of everything related to the pseudo-existence and pseudo-being of the negative state and human life, has been extensively discussed in very straightforward terms. With a little more paying attention to the content of My New Revelation, everyone could very clearly understand the purpose for which the negative state and human life were permitted to come to their adverse fruition.

Secondly, in these Dialogs and elsewhere in My New Revelation, it was clearly stated that whatever you do, wherever you are, no matter what kind of 'puny' or unimportant, in your view, job you have, or no matter in what place, climate, country you are, **if you do it for Me and with Me on your mind**, during performance of your duties in the process of your job or work, the energies that you are spending on it, are being utilized by Me for the cause of the positive state. So, for you, My true representatives, there is no such thing as a meaningless or insignificant job or work. In My view, everything that you do, **if you do it for the proper spiritual reasons**, as outlined above, is most significant and meaningful. Never ever underestimate this fact! This fact can be understood even by the 'puniest' human brain. Only in the typical human view, which doesn't take into consideration any spiritual factors, everything is meaningless and insignificant. Don't trap yourself by looking at your life from the position of your human nature. You have something more than that in your personalized and individualized makeup.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

In the fifth point, the author complains that one needs to spend all or one's free time reading material that makes you cross-eyed and is about topics that your puny human brain can't really comprehend or that can't be fully explained to you right now anyway. Also, this statement is a distortion of the facts. More than two-thirds of everything contained in My New Revelation, and especially in these Dialogs, is fully comprehensible, apprehensible and practical, that even a 'puny' human brain could understand. Yes, the minority of their content, is somewhat difficult to understand if you approach it from the position of your 'puny' human brain.

However, if you approach it from the position of your intuition, with which I abundantly endowed you, you will be able to grasp or intuit what we are talking about. You might not be able to put its meaning into the human words of your external language, but you will know internally what it is all about. At the same time, as you read them over and over again, their meaning will become clearer and clearer and after several more readings, you will fully grasp their meaning. On the other hand, certain things cannot be fully explained at the time when we were talking about them for the simple reason of security. It is for your own protection that we are doing this so that you don't become a target for the negative state to tempt you. Is this so difficult to understand even with your 'puny' human brain?

Still, there are certain things that derive from My Absolute State and Process and thus, they are of the Absolute Nature. Because of their obvious absoluteness, they cannot be grasped by any type of mind and not only by the 'puny' human mind. The sentient minds of all are aware of and know about the existence of many factors in being and existence which stem from this Absolute Aspect and which therefore, are not fully comprehensible in their true nature. However, in all their modesty and humbleness, the sentient minds of all accept this necessity, knowing very clearly that whatever I do from the position of My Absolute State and Process, is for the benefit of all and therefore, it can have only the most positive, the most useful and the most beneficial impact on and outcome for all of them.

At the same time, don't ever forget, the many times mentioned fact throughout these Dialogs, and reiterated very strongly in the One Hundredth Dialog, that your continuous reading of My New Revelation, is very much needed not only for your own spiritual development, growth and progression, even if some portions of it are difficult, or even temporarily impossible for you to understand, but, most importantly, for many other sentient beings in other dimensions and pseudo-dimensions. One of the important reasons why I connected you with so many

dimensions and pseudo-dimensions, was to make it possible for this to happen. This is especially important for all those various negative entities from many other pseudo-dimensions which are assigned to you for this very purpose. Now, I am repeating this fact again for the purpose of a strong reminder because, as it is obvious from the complaint, this many times mentioned fact was conveniently forgotten.

In the sixth point, the author complains about our advice to get rid of your pets and to live out your years all alone with no comfort or company. It is another sign of spiritual maturity to be self-reliant and self-sufficient in all your needs without seeking comfort or company in external objects and subjects or without being dependent on them in seeking such comfort or company. As mentioned very clearly in the Eighty Fifth Dialog, at the present time, the way things are going with the position of the renegades and all other forces of the negative state, pets may be utilized by them to trap you, to sidetrack you and to rob you of your energies and time which needs to go into the services of the positive state and in My services personally.

On the other hand, what happened to your full awareness that I, as well as all members of your true spiritual family, as well as the members of the New Universe who are assigned to you, are all constantly present with you on a 24-hour basis? And then why would you complain about not having any comfort or being lonely — if you have this true spiritual awareness? This is an internal dependency which is a sign of true independence because it is based on self-reliance and reliance on Me and My positive state.

If you take into consideration the fact that I am Absolute Independence then, from it logically follows that by the factor of this state, anyone who relies on Me, becomes fully independent in his/her own right. All other factors, such as the external needs for external comfort and company, if they are sought out for the purpose of avoidance of one's so-called loneliness and for seeking comfort, are enslaving, robbing one of his/her own independence, making him/her a slave of external necessity and no freedom of choice. In that case, one begins to rely on that which is coming from without and not from one's own within.

Now, this doesn't mean that you should avoid any external company or comfort in being with someone or something on your physical, external level. However, it is the motivational and intentional factors which determine for what purpose you seek out such company or comfort and whether it is solely for avoidance of your so-called loneliness.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

A true sign of true spiritual maturity and advancement is to be able to be physically alone, **but not lonely**, knowing that I am always with you, as well as the members of your spiritual family and of the New Universe are always with you, and, at the very same time, to be able to enjoy the company of others, finding full comfort in any of these states. In the true spiritual reality of true being and existence, to find comfort in being with yourself alone, as well as, equally, in being with others, is the most spiritually proper way to be.

On the other hand, in the true non-spiritual pseudo-reality of the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, it is true torture and misery to be alone, by yourself, because you have no recourse or ability to rely on Me and My positive state in order to provide you with true company and comfort. After all, if everyone in the negative state, as well as the majority of typical humans, have their backs turned on Me, they are incapable of seeing, feeling, discerning and sensing My presence or anyone else's from the positive state. Because of that they really feel lonely and miserable.

From these facts it is very obvious that if any of you still feels lonely and uncomfortable in your own company, if you are constantly seeking out external company and comfort for the sole purpose of avoiding your own self, **and for no other purpose**, then, in that case, for some reason or other, your back is turned on Me. If this were to be the case, then it would indicate that you are in the negative state and that you anchored yourself in the typical aspect of your human nature, totally and completely disregarding your spiritual heritage which I imparted upon you shortly before your incarnation on planet Zero.

Should this happen to any one of you, in that case, I would humbly advise that you amend your ways and begin working on yourself and your needs to have such external damaging dependencies which are keeping you in the negative state and in the negative aspects of your human nature. Unfortunately, anyone who finds himself/herself in such an unfavorable situation, is giving all his/her spiritual energies, by whatever activities and lifestyle that he/she leads, to the cause of the negative state, supporting thus, the continuation of its pseudo-life. Remember this!

Furthermore, the author of the letter wonders how the author could have been so stupid as to have agreed to all of this. This statement indicates that the author evaluates the life, led by the author, from a typical negative aspect of human nature. From the human position, if looked upon the meaning of human life the way the majority of humans understand and conceptualize how life should be and what true joy, happiness and delights are all about, to choose to lead the proper spiritual

life is therefore boring, solemn, restrictive and restricting. In that case, if you view your life from this negative perspective, of course, you would consider yourself to be stupid to agree to this kind of life. That this type of proper spiritual life seems burdensome and unfulfilling for the author stems from the statement, 'are we having fun yet' with eight question marks.

What is the spiritual significance of this statement? What is it that is considered to be true fun? How much fun can you find in drinking alcohol, coffee, smoking cigarettes, in taking out the urine and feces of your pets, in being in the company of people who drink and smoke and talk about meaningless, banal and boring things without any spiritual awareness? Or in winning a lottery? Is this what true fun, joy, happiness, delight, pleasure, contentment and satisfaction, or whatever you have, is all about? Aren't these things temporary, transient, perishable, anti-fun, anti-joy, anti-happiness, anti-delight, anti-pleasure, anti-contentment and anti-satisfaction? Aren't they only illusions of the true genuine fun, joy, happiness, delight, contentment and satisfaction or whatever you have in this respect? Think about it and you'll see to what you are really clinging. Is it such a tremendous joy, delight, pleasure, happiness, etc., to wake up in the morning, after some kind of wild party, or whatever, and find yourself with a hangover in the most miserable, putrid and puke state? This state is a very good indication of to what human conceptualization of fun, delight, pleasure, joy, happiness, or whatever they have, leads. Do you wish to continue in this type of fun?

Of course, it is your own free choice; and if you choose this type of typical human life by your own free will and free choice, no one, including Me, will judge you or condemn you. However, because we all love you unconditionally, we have no desire for you to suffer or be miserable in any respect. Remember that!

It is not a matter of not complaining about the consequences of your wrong choices. You may always complain. The door to Me is always open, and will always be open, no matter what. You'll always be welcome to come in and to complain to Me about anything you want. And if you ask for My help, to become aware of all these facts, and about the proper understanding of everything that has been revealed so far in My New Revelation (in all its sources), and in helping you to amend your ways, you most certainly will have My help. You will never be denied My help, no matter what you did or do or will do. All you have to do is to ask for it.

In conclusion of this Dialog, let Me remind you, Peter, of your experiences with My representatives in Russia, Slovakia, the Czech Republic and with

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Lyudmila and Manfred. Do you remember what tremendous joy, delight, pleasure, fun, satisfaction, happiness and all other positive feelings you all experienced being in each other's company? To make you so, did you need for that purpose any so-called typical human means, such as, for example, alcohol, coffee, cigarettes, drugs, loud senseless pseudo-music or any other such means? Only purely spiritual factors were in place which were accompanied by non-alcoholic drinks, by good food and pastries, including chocolate. And yet, everyone without exception, was leaving those meetings and each other's company in a state of heightened joy, delight and pleasure, almost to the point of having a state of positive euphoria. And have you noticed how all participants were concentrating more on the spiritual discussions than on drinking their non-alcoholic drinks or eating their food, pastries or chocolate?

Despite the fact of how many people were participating in those meetings, the leftovers of food and drink were enormous. Doesn't it clearly tell you what the true priorities of My people are? In the spiritual discussions they found more nurturing satisfaction than in the physical food and drink themselves. You almost needed to force them, Peter, to go and eat or drink something, being very well cognizant of their physical needs as well.

Your experience, Peter, in this respect, is a very good illustration and demonstration of the fact about where the true source of joy, delight, pleasure, happiness, contentment, satisfaction and everything else of the positive nature, can be found. This is a marvelous update on the Dialog which dealt with the issue of *'seeking the Kingdom of God and His righteousness, and all these things shall be added to you.'* Do I need to say more today in this respect?

Nevertheless, these facts needed to be brought to everyone's attention and we all should be thankful to the author of this letter which enabled us to address these important practical issues. And this is all that we need to talk about in this introductory Dialog to the second volume of our dialoging.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your deeply meaningful contribution.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. And now, go for a walk.

One Hundred and Second Dialog

September 8, 1999

Peter: Before going into asking questions posed by some of Your representatives in Slovakia and the Czech Republic, I understand that You would like to continue in discussion about the topics of the One Hundredth and One Hundred and First Dialogs as related to the proper apprehension of Your New Nature. I would be more than happy to yield this time to You.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, you are right. And I thank you very much for your yielding this time for My input or further elaboration on the issues raised in those two Dialogs. As you remember, we have given an extensive definition of the term 'Absolute' which integrally relates to My Absolute New Nature. If you carefully analyze that definition, you will notice its two most important aspects. One is talking about the all-encompassing nature of the Absolute, which is indicative of the fact, that in that Absolute, nothing is lacking. This 'nothing is lacking' could give someone the wrong impression that the Absolute contains also everything inherent in the pseudo-nature of the negative state; that is to say, that it is both good and evil — as some foolish pseudo-philosophies and pseudo-spiritualities on your planet and in the Zone of Displacement claim. What they are forgetting and not taking into consideration is the fact that, as it was outlined in one of the European Dialogs, the negative state and all its products and fabrications are illusions only and appearances of reality but not reality in themselves and by themselves. Because they are of such an unreal nature, for all practical purposes, within the true reality, they don't exist. Therefore, anything of that pseudo-nature cannot be contained in the all-encompassing true reality of the Absolute — My New Nature. Ascribing non-reality to the true reality doesn't make any logical sense.

However, as you know, one of the major thrusts of the negative state and all its inhabitants, is to convince itself and everyone in its domain that it is real and permanent. Thus, for a long period of time, it had been in the business of deceiving people into believing that it is real and permanent. And what is a better way of making that deception or subterfuge true if not by proclaiming that the Absolute — Me, is the originator of both — good and evil? That way, by the factor that something like that could originate in Me, you assure your own realness and permanency. If this were to be the case, then the negative state with all its products and fabrications would be really real. This proclamation of the negative state

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

led many humans on your planet toward the establishment of all kinds of pseudo-spiritual movements that propagate this outright falsity. However, in the true reality of being and existence, which are the only things that are always real and permanent, from their position, the Absolute is all-encompassing, lacking absolutely nothing.

The second most important aspect of the above mentioned definition of the Absolute is that, 'at the very same time, the Absolute transcends all of them.' What do these concluding words of our definition really mean? This statement reflects the fact that, because the Absolute is really Absolute in all its aspects, it cannot be limited only to and by that which is defined as all-encompassing, lacking absolutely nothing within Its Nature. Thus, in this sense, the Absolute is more than all of that. But what is that more than all of that? In the relative sentient mind, there is an idea about this Absolute which tells this mind that the Absolute, in its transcendence, contains within Its Nature something which either cannot be named by any existing words, images, or pictures, or no corresponding ideas are available or possible which could come even remotely close to the understanding or grasping what the Absolute, in Its totality, really Is. However, the sentient mind does know about this, actually the most important aspect of the Absolute. It does also know that in no way can this part of My Absolute be named by anything available in the repertoire of the words, expressions, ideas, concepts, etc., which has been available at any given time or non-time up to this point.

However, there is another point to this aspect of the Absolute, which is not subject to naming or understanding by any sentient mind. As it was so nicely pointed out in ***Writings*** by Dr. Pieter Noomen, which contain My meaningful conversations with him (page 346), that '*it is the unconditional guarantee that this part of Me also cannot be reached or affected by the distortions and lies as My other names and aspects are. What is not known cannot be denied or perverted.*' Should it be possible to reveal or to convey anything from this portion of My Absolute Nature (**which is an utter impossibility!**) by not having any proper grounds on which the sentient mind could correctly define or determine what this portion of My Absolute Nature truly is or what it truly means and signifies, it would have no choice in the matter but to distort or falsify Its meaning. In that case, by the factor of the particular dependency of its life on that Absolute Portion, the sentient mind would cease to exist in an absolute sense. And not only that, but, by the factor of interconnectedness of all and everything, in the process of conveyance of this distortion and falsity, everyone and everything else would cease to exist as well.

Do you remember the statement in the Christian Bible about the forgiveness of sins? And, in it, how it was stated by Me that all sins will be forgiven but the sin against the Holy Spirit is considered to be unpardonable and therefore, it cannot be forgiven? In the connotation of this discourse, the Holy Spirit is that portion of the Absolute, which, in its true Essence and Substance, cannot be named, apprehended, understood or conceived by any sentient mind. The unpardonable sin against It signifies that if any distortions and falsifications of this Portion were to be possible (which they are not), it would lead to the total and ultimate cessation of sentient life, both individually and all-inclusively. So, not only would it be impossible to convey the true meaning of Its Nature, but in not being able to do so, the sentient entities are being forever prevented from losing their individualized and personalized lives. These lives have a most direct relevance and connectedness to this particular Portion of the Absolute.

The factor of the above mentioned transcendence would refute any notion, which would lead someone to derive a pantheistic point of view from our definition of the Absolute. The term ‘all-encompassing’ could lead some people to make such a false conclusion — as is the case in many instances amongst the philosophers and thinkers on your planet. If you transcend something which is included in your all-encompassing nature, you cannot be in your totality that something at the very same time or in the very same state. Otherwise, you would be limited by that something. The factor of limitation by anything would preclude your being Absolute.

Take for example, your idea about creating or producing something. Let us take your idea about building a house. You come up with a plan of how that house should be, what it should contain, how functional it needs to become, etc. Those are all your own ideas, contained in you. So, by following those ideas, you build your dream house. The house stems directly from you, and all its ideas are within you, and you are in your house, and through its ideas in your mind, the house is in you, but you are more than just your house, because you are not the house and the house is not you. Your house fully depends on you for maintenance, repairs, additions, or whatever it needs for its continuous proper function but, nevertheless, you and your house are two different entities. Thus, in all aspects of your nature, you transcend your house. You are independent of your house.

From the above description you can clearly deduce how foolish and inappropriate the notion of pantheism is. It doesn't reflect at all the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

reality of the relationship between the Absolute — the Creator and the relative — the Creation. The above description can also give you an idea of what it is to be Absolute and what it means to transcend everything designated in our definition as the all-encompassing. Thus, it is not as abstract or as intangible as it seems at first glance.

The other factor of the Nature of the Absolute, which makes it truly Absolute and which totally and completely precludes the possibility of the pantheistic view, is its absolute independence on anyone or anything. If you depend on the house and the house depends on you, if you are the house and the house is you, then you cannot be conceived as being absolutely independent of anyone or anything. In your being and existence, you would be dependent on the being and existence of the house in the same manner as the house, in its being and existence, would be dependent on you. Such an interdependency would preclude the existence of the Absolute in any of its aspects. However, one of the major characteristics of the Nature of the Absolute, is that in its own Absolute Being and Existence, It is completely and totally independent of anyone or anything. Whereas Creation fully derives from and is dependent on its Creator, the Creator, in its Absolute Nature, doesn't derive from His/Her Creation and is in no way dependent on it.

Why are we talking in this particular Dialog about a seemingly abstract and purely theoretical and impractical subject as the Absolute? Because it has a direct relevance to My Absolute New Nature and the way it needs to be understood by My representatives in order to establish on planet Zero the right idea about Who I am and what My Absolute Nature is all about. In order for the release of a totally new and different aspect of My New Nature to take place, it is first necessary to dispel all and every incorrect notions contained in the prevailing views, existing amongst humans and all inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement, so that by the means of their distortions and falsities, they would not contaminate the incoming new aspect of My New Nature and impede its proper understanding, apprehension and acceptance.

By these types of Dialogs, which deal with My New Nature, we are building a foundation on which a correct and proper perception of My New Nature is established. It will be utilized for reception of the new and different aspect of My New Nature by everyone in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. The reason why it is done from your position, the position of planet Zero, and not from some other dimension, is because with the maintenance of improper ideas about and conceptualization of My New Nature in the sentient minds of those who

are or will be situated in the Zone of Displacement and/or on planet Zero at the time of this release, they would distort and falsify the nature of the aspect in question, and, by that factor, would continue to fuel the pseudo-life of the negative state and human life, precluding the closure of this cycle of time and the beginning of the transitional period.

The way you have to understand this problem is in the fact that, even though some sentient entities reside in a state, place and condition which was designated as non-state, non-place and non-condition, nevertheless, because they do contain within themselves the true sentient mind, by that factor they are connected to the true reality of being and existence. By this connection, they keep their own subjective self-awareness as being alive and living. But also, by this connection, they could transmit incorrect, distorted and false ideas to the rest of the sentient entities in being and existence, about Who I am and what My New Nature is all about. And although within the positive state, none of the sentient entities could be polluted and contaminated by such incorrect, distorted and false ideas, nevertheless, they would be in a position of necessity of a continuous repudiation of the idea in their mind that they may, if they wish, by their own free will and choice, accept such incorrect, distorted and false ideas as the correct and true ones; thus, for all practical purposes, by accepting such ideas, they would reject Me in My Absolute New Nature as the only Creator who transcends His/Her Creation.

As you know from ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***, as long as such an idea is maintained in the sentient minds, regardless of where or when they are situated, the negative state and its end product — the human life in its negative aspects, could not be eliminated. This is the reason why we need to build a proper foundation in the most external of the most external factor of the sentient mind, represented by humans on planet Zero, on which the acceptance of proper, correct and right ideas about My Absolute New Nature could take place and subsequently, be transmitted to the rest of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence in an ascending manner. By the position of My representatives on planet Zero, to whom all these facts are being conveyed by the means of these Dialogs, and by My New Revelation in general, such a foundation is being built and effectively established. As you see from these facts, your positions on planet Zero have a multilevel significance and function and by you, through you and with you, I am preparing everyone and everything to receive, when everything is ready and in proper position, the new and different aspect of My Absolute New Nature. This is the major reason why we are spending so much time, and will be in the future, on discussion about the issues of My New Nature.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

And this is all that I wanted to bring to your attention today. You may proceed, Peter, and ask your questions on behalf of My representatives in Europe.

Peter: Thank You so much for this meaningful and important elaboration. The question came from Boris Bella of Slovakia. He would like to know if there is anything important for us, and for the current phase of the ongoing shift, contained in the scene described in Matthew 26:36-41. For the clarity of our discussion, let me quote those verses in the fullness of their content: *Then Jesus came with them to a place called Gethsemane, and said to the disciples, "Sit here while I go and pray over there." And He took with Him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, and He began to be sorrowful and deeply distressed. Then He said to them, "My soul is exceedingly sorrowful, even to death. Stay here and watch with Me." He went a little farther and fell on His face, and prayed, saying, "O My Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass from Me; nevertheless, not as I will, but as You will." Then He came to the disciples and found them asleep, and said to Peter, "What, could you not watch with Me one hour? Watch and pray, lest you enter into temptation. The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak."*

The Lord Jesus Christ: By now, Peter, you know that, if this type of question is asked, it means that it does have relevance to the present phase of the ongoing shift and to your — My representatives — lives, personally and individually. Let us take the mentioned text step by step and let us see how it is applicable to your present situation. I came with My disciples to a place called Gethsemane. Some say it was a garden of Gethsemane. Of course, it wasn't a garden in your particular sense. It was an illusion of a garden but not its true reality. In general terms, garden signifies all knowledge and its wisdom congregated in one state. In this case though, this particular place was void of any true knowledge and its wisdom. Coming to this place with all My disciples signifies bringing into it something that in true reality it doesn't have — My Truth and all its derivatives (coming with My disciples).

However, because that place was secluded from the outside world, it also corresponds to the state which has no proper connection to anything positive. If you have no knowledge and no truth, you have nothing positive in yourself. Because of that, places of this nature, such as, for example, wilderness, deserts, etc., in addition to these types of so-called gardens, also have a connotation of separation from everything Divine. As you noticed, whenever I went to places of this nature, I prayed to My Father; meaning, I was separated from My True Essence and Substance,

and anchored Myself, for that period of time, in My human nature. In this sense, for all practical purposes, I became a typical human. The place Gethsemane corresponds to this state. It enabled My separation, and separation of everything represented by My disciples, from My Divinity, in order to allow the final, and the most dire temptation against Me to take place. A temptation of this nature could happen only to My being a human and not God. This was in preparation for the ultimate human experience, which doesn't exist anywhere and anywhen else, of the death of the human physical body and for My descent into the Hells. It was also for the purpose of establishment of the fulfillment of the final phase of My mission on planet Zero and My ultimate victory over the negative state and the negative aspects of My human nature.

In your particular case, this scene points out the fact that you, as My true representatives on planet Zero, are likewise entering the final phase of your mission that you have from Me. Because this is the most decisive aspect of your mission, it will also be the most vulnerable to temptations by the forces of the negative state. All aspects of that portion of your nature, which derive directly from the negative state, will be subject to the most intense temptation by the renegades and their minions, and by everyone else in the negative state. For that reason, an all-out attempt is in the process of being made, to separate you from My aspect in your nature and to anchor you into the human aspect of your nature which can be more easily tempted and swayed with promises of the negative state than the other aspects of your nature, stemming from Me.

That I said to My disciples, "Sit here while I go and pray over there," signifies placing everything in a certain position which would enable the complete and total separation of My Divine from My human and My human from My Divine so that I would be prepared for the beginning of My last temptation, culminating in the physical death of My human body. Thus, I put them aside, or told them to sit in one place, while I went a little farther away from them in order to establish the state of this separation and pray to My Essence and Substance — My Father.

That I took with Me Peter and the two sons of Zebedee (James and John) to the place where I was to be in a state of total and complete separation from My Divine and to find Myself only in My human nature, signifies the need to maintain My human life by the factor of the spiritual representation and correspondence of those three disciples, which enable such life to continue in its function regardless in what a dire, desperate and sorrowful condition it finds itself — love and good, wisdom and truth, and positive works and faith. Only these factors can maintain any

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

form of life. For these reasons, finding Myself for that moment only in human nature, as any other human, knowing what was awaiting Me, I felt deeply distressed, exceedingly sorrowful, even to death.

This condition, that is to say, being only in the human skin, clearly illustrated to all what it meant to be a human. It was a sorrowful, deeply distressing and dying state which had no hope for anything in itself and by itself and which therefore, had no choice in the matter but only to die. Symbolically speaking, anything at all, which is of human nature, must die first in order to truly live. By the factor of human death, death is conquered and turned into true life. By the process of My dying, thus, one of the most important factors for acquirement of true life for humans, was eternally established. But they must die first in order to live. So I also had to die first in order to give life to humans and to all who trapped themselves in the negative state.

However, before accomplishing that, I had to illustrate all aspects of being human and being in the process of dying. Dying was the last temptation that I had to participate in, the same way as you all will have to go through it. It will be your last temptation likewise. As a typical human, I was afraid of dying and of everything that was about to happen to Me. From that position I was praying to My Father, asking if He could spare Me this horrid destiny. At the same time, by saying very clearly, three times in a row, 'Your and not My will be done,' I surrendered My humanness to My Divine Essence and Substance and by that factor, boldly prepared Myself for everything that I needed to go through in order to accomplish My mission successfully. By surrendering Myself to the Will of My Father, I had effectively overcome all temptations and was ready for everything that was about to happen. As you noticed, this happened three times; and three times I found My three disciples asleep; and three times I told them, 'Watch and pray, lest you enter into temptation. The spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.'

'Three times', in the discussed connotation, represent the state of integration of all aspects of My human nature and, in the process, its preparation for the unification with My Divine Essence and Substance, which culminated in the acquirement and establishment of My New Nature. In the case of My disciples, finding them asleep three times, signifies their total separation from the representative function which they had, and reversion back to their former condition, rooted in their own typical human nature. This was necessary to establish in order to make it possible for the negative state to enter and prepare humanity for betrayal of all true spiritual principles as related to My True Nature.

Once you fall asleep, that is to say, once you disregard your spiritual essence and substance (which means falling into deep sleep), by that factor, you anchor yourself in your externals where nothing of true life exists and because of that, everything in it is like being in a deep sleep.

In this particular case, the sleeping disciples represented humanity's condition in a state of a total separation and recession from everything truly spiritual and from all aspects of the positive state, which are rooted in love and good, wisdom and truth, and positive works and faith. The lack of these most fundamental conditions of life, of any life at all, induce the state akin to a deep non-awakeable sleep. In order to avoid this condition, I had to remind them that only spiritual factors of life are able to overcome any states of temptation and have any meaning, strength and validity. All else of human nature, represented here by the flesh, is weak and therefore, very much vulnerable to succumb to the temptations of the negative state.

As mentioned in one of the previous Dialogs, it also signifies that if you anchor yourself only in the human aspects of your nature, you will find yourself in a perpetual state of temptation because human life, as well as the negative state in general, is nothing else but a state of continuous temptation. In your particular case, the scene described in the above quoted verses, is a warning that, under presently existing conditions, during the present phase of the ongoing shift, you have entered your own final state of temptation which will continue until your recall. In the process of this phase, an all-out effort will be made by the forces of the negative state to put you to sleep and thus, as mentioned above, to separate you from Me, or from that portion of your nature which is from Me and in which I am present; as well as to separate you from your intuition. If you are in a state of sleep, your intuition becomes dormant likewise.

In what manner could this sleep in your individualized and personalized life manifest itself from a practical standpoint? First of all, by disregarding your ability to see things as they happen behind, and not at or on the scene. In other words, by evaluating and validating everything from a typical human standpoint. Secondly, by spending all your time in activities which have no spiritual value or connotation. Thirdly, by compromising your spiritual values, trying to please someone else (your spouse, for example, who opposes your involvement in and with My New Revelation) and by justifying and rationalizing your typical human attitudes, behaviors, desires, cravings, wants, demands and needs that, in themselves and by themselves, have no spiritual value and which are

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

transient and perishable. Fourthly, by forgetting to communicate with Me and the members of your spiritual family and of the New Universe, by means of reading, pondering about and meditating on everything contained in My New Revelation. Fifthly, by inappropriate prioritization of your everyday activities, giving preference to the non-spiritual and non-positive activities which are put on the top of your list of priorities. Sixthly, by spending most of your time, by your own volition, in the company of those who are under the spell of the negative state, being its trusted agents, when you are not required by any circumstance to be in their company. And seventhly, by surrounding yourself with all kinds of objects and subjects, living and non-living, which take most of your energy and time so that you are too tired to devote any of it to the spiritual factors of your life.

Now, these conditions, **and many others like them**, will put you to sleep, spiritually speaking. The negative state will do everything in its power to keep you in that sleep so that none of your precious energies would be spent on your mission in My services. And this is the relevance of the discussed event to your present situation. It fully applies to all of you — My representatives. Therefore, in order to avoid falling into this sleep, watch and pray (meaning read, ponder and meditate on My New Revelation and regularly communicate with Me and members of your spiritual families and the New Universe by whatever means are available to you). For the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak. Otherwise, you could end up like My disciples did, running away following My arrest; or like Peter did, by betraying Me three times, claiming that he had never known Me. And this is all that we need to talk about today.

Peter: I thank You very much for this timely reminder.

One Hundred and Third Dialog

September 10, 1999

Peter: I am having some very annoying interferences today in starting the process of recording of this Dialog. I feel that someone or something doesn't want me to record whatever it is that we need to discuss today. I do have a barrage of questions coming from Your European representatives. One of these questions is an interesting one in that it is coming from a very young Mark (less than 14 years old) from Ostrava, the Czech Republic, who has read some of the books of Your New Revelation. His question relates to the issue of sexual intercourse or sexual involvement in the positive state which requires three and not two persons, the third person being You. The questions from other people, or at least two of them, are not appropriate to ask at all because they are either too individual, related only to a personal issue of the inquirer or we are not supposed to ask them because they relate to specific correspondences of nations and their nationalities (gypsies and their role in this particular case.) You personally requested that such questions as this should not be asked for security reasons. Of course, before going into answering any of these questions, perhaps, You have some other issues to bring to our attention this frustrating morning.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are right, Peter, for you it is a frustrating morning having so many problems with your computer programs constantly crashing on you. It is a sign that the negative state doesn't want you to know about whatever I would like to convey to all of you this morning before addressing the very young Mark's question and, if we still have time, some questions of others.

We need to talk some more about the terms by which sentient entities and humans describe My Absolute New Nature. First of all, when we were designating such terms as Life, Love, Good, Wisdom, Truth, Positive Works, Faith, Energy, Warmth, Light, Fire, Freedom, Independence, Joy, Delight, Pleasure, Laughter, Fun, Order, Manifestation, Sexuality, Unity, Oneness, Harmony, etc., as having within Me their own Absolute Reality in the sense that they are self-aware, self-sentient, self-real, self-perceptive, self-living, it could give some humans and other inhabitants of the Hells a very wrong impression that I suffer from Dissociative Identity Disorder (having multiple personalities). The way you have to understand this issue is that in Me, all these categories are fully integrated into oneness of their functions and, most importantly, they are *sentiently* alive. Because I am the only

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

One Who is sentient, is alive and lives in Myself, by Myself, of Myself and through Myself, whatever is contained in My Nature, fully reflects this condition and is the same as I Am, because they are all Me and I am them in the full meaning of this conceptualization. They are My True Nature and their Nature is Me.

In this sense, you can clearly say that, in their absolute connotation and condition, I am Life; I am Love; I am Goodness; I am Wisdom; I am Truth; I am Positive Works; I am Faith; I am Energy; I am Warmth; I am Light; I am Fire; I am Freedom; I am Independence; I am Joy; I am Delight; I am Pleasure; I am Laughter; I am Fun; I am Order; I am Manifestation; I am Sexuality; I am Unity; I am Oneness; I am Harmony; etc. But, at the very same time, I am more than all of them. I have something in Me, in the Core of My very Essence and Substance, which is more than all of them and which cannot be named; or it is impossible to name It by any words, concepts, ideas, images, or by whatever is available to the expressive abilities of any sentient mind. The problem with naming any of these attributes is in the fact, that if they are named, or conceptualized, or imagined, or by whatever available mode they are conceived, because this naming is done by the relative mind of sentient entities, by the factor of their relativity, they limit the full and complete understanding and apprehension of the Absolute Meaning of these terms and, thus, of My True Absolute New Nature. This is the reason why the Absolute Core of My Very Absolute Nature cannot be named by anyone. Because it is Absolute, by the logical factor of Its Absoluteness, It cannot be limited by anything or by anyone.

At the same time, you can say that, in their absolute content and meaning, Life is Me; Love is Me; Goodness is Me; Wisdom is Me; Truth is Me; Positive Works are Me; Faith is Me; Energy is Me; Warmth is Me; Light is Me; Fire is Me; Freedom is Me; Independence is Me; Joy is Me; Delight is Me; Pleasure is Me; Laughter is Me; Fun is Me; Order is Me; Manifestation is Me; Sexuality is Me; Unity is Me; Oneness is Me; Harmony is Me; and all else positive is Me. Yet, at the same time, there is more to it of Who I truly am than just these *sentiently* alive attributes of My True New Nature.

So, it is not as if I am split into many personalities, because the meaning of the definition of the term 'Absolute' indicates that all is in Me and I am in all, but that at the very same time, I, in My Absolute Essence and Substance, transcend them all. I am more, much more than all these terms and what they imply, contain and signify. This fact needs to be constantly kept in your mind in order not to fall into inappropriate

understanding of the true meaning of these concepts and of My Absolute New Nature. It is important to be aware of these facts in preparation for the release of the new and different aspect of My New Nature.

Moreover, within My Absolute State and Absolute Process, all these terms or attributes are interchangeable. Thus, for example, you can say that Love is Energy and Energy is Love; Love is Manifestation and Manifestation is Love; Love is Sexuality and Sexuality is Love; Love is Wisdom and Wisdom is Love; Love is Truth and Truth is Love; Love is Freedom and Freedom is Love; Love is Independence and Independence is Love; etc. You can use any of these attributes, and everything else contained in Me, and interchange them because they are integrated and unified in the totality of My Oneness and Only-ness.

Secondly, the above mentioned terms and concepts, the way they are conceptualized, understood and defined by humans and all others in the Zone of Displacement, in comparison with how they are conceptualized, understood and defined in the positive state, are totally and completely distorted and falsified, and subsequently, most inappropriately applied in all their contextual properties. As you remember, Peter, many years ago, you were informed by Me that in human life, and in the life of all in the negative state, there is not one concept, term, idea, or whatever, yes, not one, that would not be somehow or in some manner distorted and/or falsified. At that time, we used the term ‘myriads of distortions everywhere and in everything.’ That statement, and what it really means, applies for the present time in an even much greater degree than at that time. As the negative state proceeds to its final and most intense condensation in its domain and on planet Zero, the above mentioned terms are being more and more distorted, falsified, misunderstood, misinterpreted and misapplied. The factor of limitations, so inherent in human nature and in the nature of the negative state, makes it possible for this to happen.

In order to bring about the full pseudo-victory of the negative state on your planet, it is necessary to take humans as far away as possible from even the most remote understanding and application of what these terms, concepts and ideas really mean and signify. The more proper and appropriate understanding of these terms by the human mind, and the more effective application of their true meaning, the less chances the negative state would have in pseudo-winning on your planet. Therefore, be aware, that, presently, an all-out effort of the forces of the negative state is going on to make understanding of these terms, as much as possible, distorted and falsified, as well as of how they are reflected or

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

applied in all their properties and aspects in humans' everyday behavior. The major thrust of the negative state at this point is, of course, a total falsification of how I and My True Nature is perceived, conceptualized, understood and accepted by humans and all creatures and sub-creatures of the negative state's domain. Because all these terms are seen as substantial and essential attributes of My New Nature, their distortion, falsification and inappropriate conceptualization by them leads to the most foolish, false and insane understanding and acceptance of Who I am, What My True Nature is all about and how I relate to everyone in My Creation, in pseudo-creation and to humans.

If I am all that those terms in the true reality of their Absolute State contain; and if they, in their own Absolute State, are Me, and if I am more, much more than all of them, then, in order for the negative state to have any chance of pseudo-winning, or originally to be activated, it was necessary to come up with two fundamental factors: One, it was necessary to come up with the total opposites of what these terms meant and signified in their true essence and substance, the way they were conceived in their original state and process, as reflected in Me and My activities. In this case, the activators of the negative state successfully came up with and defined such terms as hate, evil, falsity, untruth, dependency, limitations, disunion, and all else that has opposing characteristics to everything contained in the nature of the above mentioned positive terms.

Secondly, the activators of the negative state, knowing that it would be utterly impossible to fully and sufficiently erase My Name and what it means from the minds of their fabrications and humans, distorted and falsified the meaning of those terms in such a manner so that nothing would remain in them from their original meaning.

The deception of this situation is very obvious. "Yes," they said to themselves, "we are going to retain all those terms in the vocabulary of humans and all other inhabitants of the negative state, but we are going to implant in their mind a totally different meaning than what they really mean. And not only that, but we are going to fabricate numerous religious and pseudo-spiritual trends within our domain and on planet Zero which, in the name of God, would effectively propagate, maintain, and induce this totally false meaning in the minds of all humans and other inhabitants of our domain and by which all of them would be successfully kept in the clutches of the negative state."

The most perverted rationale for this factor in the minds of the activators of the negative state and fabricators of humans and others, was that, by

falsifying and distorting the true meaning of the above mentioned terms and, thus, by falsifying and distorting the truth about My Nature, and now about My New Nature, they succeeded in excluding Me from the lives of all of them. In other words, by doing that, they turned their back on Me so that I wouldn't be directly present in the activities of their lives. It is said, 'directly present.' These two words indicate that there is an indirect presence of Me in their lives in the sense that any life, in order to be living and alive in whatever mode or pseudo-mode, is possible to derive only from the Absolute Energies of My Absolute Life. As those Energies are continuously and unceasingly radiating and emanating from Me, they support the lives and pseudo-lives of all and everything.

However, once those Energies are out there (symbolically speaking), anybody can take them and utilize them for whatever purpose they wish. In this case, they were utilized for the purpose of the activation of the negative state and for fabrication of humans and others of the negative nature. And because those Energies are My Energies, I am present in them as in My Own. That the inhabitants of the negative state have their back turned on Me, not recognizing and accepting the true original source of those Energies, is an entirely different story. By doing that, and I am repeating this, they excluded My presence from and in them. And this is how the pseudo-life of everyone in the negative state and human life in its negative aspects is maintained and is possible. Anyone who succeeds, by their free will and free choice, in exclusion of My presence from and in them, at the very same time, excludes all those attributes, which are reflected in the above mentioned terms. By their exclusions, they live a life of lies, deceptions and falsities. This is how the pseudo-life, in its pseudo-essence and pseudo-substance, is defined.

So, in essence, we can say with one hundred percent certainty, that during the history of humanity, and during the history of the entirety of the negative state, at no time has there been anything true, right, correct in anyone's conceptualization, understanding and acceptance of My True Nature, as well as in any of all Its Attributes as indicated and described above. Thus, in the conceptualization and understanding of humans, such terms as life, love, wisdom, good, truth, positive works, faith, energy, light, warmth, fire, freedom, independence, manifestation, joy, delight, pleasure, sexuality, fun, unity, oneness, harmony, and anything else of the positive nature, have never been properly and correctly conceived, understood, defined and applied in any of their aspects. In fact, you can say for sure that to all these terms, in order to reflect the true reality of this fact, you could easily add in front of them the word 'anti-.' Therefore, it would be anti-life, anti-love, anti-good, anti-truth,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

anti-positive works, anti-faith, anti-energy, anti-light, anti-warmth, anti-fire, anti-freedom, anti-independence, anti-manifestation, anti-joy, anti-delight, anti-pleasure, anti-sexuality, anti-fun, anti-unity, anti-oneness, anti-harmony and anti-everything. Or you could also use the word 'pseudo' in front of them instead of the word 'anti.' In this true sense therefore, there is nothing real in and about the human life and the life of the negative state. They are nothing else but fake and subterfuge in all aspects of their pseudo-manifestation.

Because of this indisputable factor, what humanity and all inhabitants of the negative state have is not God — Me, but Anti-God or Pseudo-God — Non-Me, who is presented to them as the only true God. And because of numerous pseudo-spiritual and religious movements, they buy into this falsity.

What is the relevance of this topic to the present state of affairs as related to you, My representatives, and to the nature of the phase of the currently ongoing shift? You can expect an attempt in seduction by the forces of the negative state through the means of very nice, convincing, tolerant, mutually accepting and supporting religious and pseudo-spiritual talks, publications and proclamations, which will use all of the above terms, pretending that they know, understand, accept and support their true meaning the way they are conceived and practiced in the positive state. Thus, they will present them to you as the positive state. And because they will sound so nice, so convincing, so true, so honest, so positive and so good, it would be very difficult not to buy into them or not to accept them as coming from the true Me. Don't forget about the current sophistication of the negative state and all its minions. This sophistication they derive from the knowledge about My New Revelation. As you are aware, My New Revelation was and is made available to anyone. It became equally available to the forces of the negative state. From it they learned all the nice words, and how to talk, what to say and how to behave externally so that their agents and falsifiers could be accepted by all as My true representatives.

The lesson in this grave situation is in the fact that not all, in the near future, who will come to you in the skin of being My true representatives, and who will claim that they are accepting My New Revelation as the source of the Absolute Truth for the current cycle of time, will be them. They will appear to be so but it will be only an appearance but not the true reality. The effort of the forces of the negative state in this respect will be tremendous. Of course, they don't want you to know about this. This is one of the reasons, Peter, why you had so many problems this

morning with your computer programs. They tried very hard to prevent this particular Dialog, and what it contains, to be brought to all of your attention. The way you have to go about not falling in this particular trap, is to verify any such claims with Me by the means of your intuition. Those of you who claim very little awareness about the workings of their intuition, will be able to recognize this danger by consciously asking Me to help them to detect any discrepancies in the external behavior of such persons, which would be incongruent with the principles of My New Revelation, as well as with what has been and will be revealed in these Dialogs.

Of course, this situation can also be used to your advantage. Once you recognize that this is the case, you can help that person by bringing to his/her attention the possibility of his/her conversion to the positive state, thus, offering him/her to become in true reality, My true representative. Such a possibility does exist and it is realistic even at the present time. You can say for sure that at the present time this possibility is even more feasible than it has been in the past. Therefore, you shouldn't avoid anyone of this nature; or you shouldn't dissociate yourself from such a person unless that person, after being discovered in his/her true identity, chooses by his/her own free will and choice to dissociate himself/herself from you. Remember, you are here to set a vivid, concrete and living example of what it is to be My representative — the one who lives and is situated by his/her true spirit and soul in the midst of the positive state while, at the very same time, by his/her human body, he/she is in the midst of the negative state and in the human life in its negative aspects. Remember this fact!

So, to reiterate, it is very important for your proper spiritual awareness to be cognizant of these facts related to the true meaning of the above mentioned terms and how, in human language, they are misunderstood, distorted, falsified and don't reflect the true reality of their genuine meaning. This factor has already been brought to your attention in one of the recent Dialogs. We are repeating it for emphasis.

Based on this information, some of you, perhaps, will be asking about the authenticity and genuineness, as well as of proper understanding, of every term, concept, idea, principle, or whatever is contained in My New Revelation in all its sources. "After all," you may say, "we are using the words of the typical distorting and distorted human language. If such words don't reflect the true reality of that which is behind them or what the true significance of the conveyed information is, then how do we know that our understanding of anything contained in The New

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Revelation is correct, right and appropriate, reflecting the true reality of The Lord Jesus Christ's Word?"

For any reader of My New Revelation, if it is approached with positive and good intent, for the sake of principles, for the sake of learning the truth and for the purpose of practicing its principles, without any ulterior reasons, then in that case, I personally will endow such a person with a special type of intuition which will be conveying to him/her the right meaning or the right sense of that which is really behind the used words. All My true representatives on planet Zero are equipped by Me with such a special and specific intuition in addition to the general type of intuition, applicable to the proper grasp of other issues. This specific intuition relates solely and only to the proper understanding and acceptance of all principles of My New Revelation. This is the reason why you — My representatives — were able, during your reading, to recognize, to understand and to accept the truth of My New Revelation without any apparent difficulties. And if, with some of you, there were some initial difficulties in its understanding and/or acceptance, you were able to overcome them, thanks to the availability of that special and specific intuition in you in which My presence was in the most unusual and strongest possible manner. Through this presence of Mine, I was leading you toward the proper understanding and acceptance of everything contained in My New Revelation despite the fact that it had no recourse but to use the typical words of the typical human languages (English, Russian, Spanish, Czech and Slovak). This is how the problem in this respect was resolved. And this is how it will be resolved with anyone who will approach the reading of My New Revelation in the future (of course, to repeat it again, only if it is approached with right and positive intent in the manner as outlined above. If not, then it would lead to even greater distortions and falsifications, and to outright rejection of everything contained in it, than otherwise would be the case).

The content of this Dialog has a direct relevance to the question of a very young Mark of the Czech Republic. His question relates to the necessity of My direct presence during sexual intercourse of two positive sentient entities in the positive state. Why is it so vital and crucial that I personally need to be involved in this important process?

As is obvious from the above discourse, in the true positive connotation of sexuality, as it is conceived, understood and practiced in the positive state, it derives from the Absolute State of My Sexuality, being that I am the Absolute Sexuality and that the Absolute Sexuality is Me. It is *sentiently* functioning within Me. Through it and by it, its energies

radiate and emanate to the entire being and existence, as well as to the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, maintaining and supporting the creative process of life everywhere in the positive state; and giving incentives to the fabrications of humans and everyone in the negative state without, of course, their acknowledgement and acceptance that it is the fact of their own pseudo-life.

Now, in the positive state, when two individuals of the opposite sex approach each other for the purpose of sexual intercourse, they are always aware of the limitations which they have because of their relative condition. They are also aware that any sexual act is possible only because it has its Absolute source — Me, which enables them to be engaged in such an act. In order for them to have full, non-limiting and unlimited experience of sexuality in its true essence and substance, the way it is supposed to be, and in order to acquire greater knowledge of My Nature and of each other, and in order to experience the true joy, delight, pleasure, fun, elation and everything else purely positive, contained in such an act, they need to invite Me to participate in that process because I am the only available Absolute Source of all these felicities in their absolute conditions, states and processes. Due to their relative condition, such two individuals, without Me, would not be able to experience the fullness and completeness of sexual involvement. Because of that, very soon, their lovemaking acts would end up in boredom, emptiness, meaninglessness, non-communicativeness and non-fulfillment without any ability of conveying to them any new knowledge about Me and about each other. Should anything of this nature happen, they would inadvertently end up in the negative state because only in the negative state sexual acts ultimately produce this type of outcome.

The reason why in the negative state and in human life sexuality has a tendency to end up in such a negative manner, is because from their sexual practices My direct presence is totally excluded. If you exclude the very source of everything contained in true sexuality, you exclude from it its ability to convey to you its true meaning and purpose. In that case, you end up in a state of letdown and emptiness without any genuine fulfillment and true satisfaction. You get only temporary appearances of being fulfilled and satisfied. From this situation in human sexual life, as well as in sexual life of all in the negative state, all forms of sexual perversions derive.

However, there is another mystery of sexuality in the positive state as related to the need of My personal and direct involvement in any sexual act of two individuals of the opposite sex. Sexuality in Me, being that it is

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

in its Absolute Sentiency, and being that it is the major and the most vital source of life-force energies through which and by which all life contents are transmitted to My Creation and to the pseudo-creation, for that reason its main and substantial portion stems from the very Core of My New Nature. It is that Core which cannot be named, comprehended, apprehended and understood by any relative sentient mind. In fact, this portion of My Sexuality maintains any possibility of the sexual life's existence. In order for the sexual act to take place in its purely and only positive connotation, My personal involvement is needed so that from the very Core of My New Nature, everything contained in positive sexuality, could be fully conveyed to those two individuals. Without My involvement, from the position of that Core, nothing of the positive and enduring nature could take place during such a sexual act. In that case, very soon, sexuality would lose its true meaning, and, as a result, everyone would lose incentives for creating and for their own living.

The connection of My Core to any sentient entity in the positive state is through his/her sexuality, which is the conveyer of *positive-ness* in a general sense. There is a deep mystery in this statement. The very nature of the positive state, being that it is positive, as you know, Peter, derives from My Absolute Nature which is Absolutely Positive. Now, this very *Positive-ness*, by which the life of the positive state is possible at all, and from which it stems, derives from and is conveyed to all in the positive state, from the very Core of My Absolute Condition, State and Process. Although in no way can this Core, and the essence of that which It transmits to all, be named, comprehended, understood by any relative sentient mind, nevertheless, it is needed to be integrated into the relative totality of the sentient mind, in order to maintain its nature of being positive or to maintain the *positive-ness* in general. In other words, in order for the positive state to be and to exist at all, it has to be on the receiving end of that which is being constantly transmitted from the very Core of My Absolute New Nature. Or to say it differently, without being connected to that Core of Mine, the positive state can neither live or be alive nor can it be positive, containing within itself, in its relative condition, all that which is contained in My New Nature in its Absolute Condition.

Now, as mentioned above, the relative sentient mind cannot survive at all without this connection. At the same time, by its own effort, because of its relative condition, and because of its inability to grasp, understand and apprehend anything contained in that Core, it is incapable of connecting itself to that Core of Mine. So, in order to enable this connection to happen, and in order to maintain the life of the positive

state in its pure *positive-ness*, I personally need to be present in everyone in the positive state so that I could provide all its sentient entities with it. This connection is accomplished through the sexual intercourse of two positive sentient entities during which I personally participate in its course as a third Person, and during which I am able to transmit into them from that Core everything that they need to continue in their life, and most importantly, that they may continue to be **positive**. And because in the positive state there are always some entities who make love, by the mode of their inter- and intra-connectedness to all others in the positive state, My very specific Absolute Sexual Energies, stemming from their portion which is in My Absolute Core, the life of the positive state, and its pure and uncontaminated *positive-ness* is constantly and eternally maintained. Not only is it maintained, but it also is giving to all sentient entities in the positive state continuous incentives to be creative, productive, constructive, inventive, progressive and more and more positive in their own unique and unrepeatable and non-duplicable natures and in their own rights and privileges. So, as you see from this profound mystery, it is absolutely essential that I am involved in any sexual intercourse of twos as a third Person, which is happening in My positive state at any given time.

As far as the situation with the inhabitants of the negative state and with humans in this respect is concerned, although My direct presence is lacking during their sexual intercourse, and because of that, it lacks any positive connotation in the manner as it is in the positive state, nevertheless there is an indirect presence in the sense that any life at all, even if it is the pseudo-life of the negative state and human life, is possible only because of the life of the positive state. So, as all sentient entities are in a state of constant reception of My Life through and by the means of their own sexual intercourse or lovemaking, the energies produced during such an act spread out in all directions (symbolically speaking) and, as they enter into the Zone of Displacement and reach planet Zero, they enable all their inhabitants to continue in their pseudo-life. What kind of ramification of this mystery is for you, My representatives on planet Zero? In order to bring you closer to the above meaning of sexual intercourse or lovemaking, and in order to reduce as much as possible the negative connotation of human sexuality and its various perversions, with which human sexuality is so abundantly infested, you are advised to invite Me to always be present during your sexual intercourse. Also, to make such an act more positive and fulfilling, you are likewise advised to ask the members of your spiritual family and the members of the New Universe to be involved during your sexual acts.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

By such invitation, the Sexual Energies from their portion in My Absolute Core, will be able to establish themselves in your lives, giving you better and more effective incentives and desires to continue in your mission on planet Zero which you have from Me. And not only that, but, most importantly, such participation of all from the positive state who are assigned to you, as well as My personal participation, will bring your intuition to the highest possible level for the purpose of understanding, grasping and recognizing the true meaning and content of all those terms and attributes about which we were talking in the first part of this Dialog, as well as for the acquirement of greater knowledge of My Absolute New Nature, nature of others and your own nature, at a much higher level of understanding of their true meaning and content than has been available to you so far. Remember that!

Talking about the very young Mark, as you remember, Peter, in your conversation with Mgr. Kamil Brancik of the Czech Republic, you were both wondering how it was possible for such a very young man, who was not even 14 years old, to read and understand the content of My New Revelation. And not only that, but during your meetings, he was attentively present, fully participating and even asking very appropriate and deep questions. Then you learned about another case of a young girl, 16 years old, who is virtually blind and who likewise reads and accepts My New Revelation. Her reading is peculiar in that she cannot clearly see the words, but in the process of her concentration on those words, she sees or reads them not by her eyes but by her inner sense. What are these examples telling you? They are telling you that the writings of My New Revelation, because they contain My true Word in its absolute Truth, radiate and emanate the beautiful Idea, constantly renewing and regenerating itself, which is able to reach these very young people's minds and impart on them the true meaning of its content. This fact reflects the way how The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ in all its sources is being read and accepted in My positive state. And this is all that we should talk about today, Peter. For that reason, I would recommend to postpone asking other questions until our next dialoging — if it is agreeable with you, Peter.

Peter: I wholeheartedly agree. And thank You so much for all these beautiful words.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. And now, go in peace and have a very pleasant afternoon.

One Hundred and Fourth Dialog

September 13, 1999

Peter: For some time now I have been somewhat concerned about the philosophical nature of the recent Dialogs. Personally, I like them the best. But it is only my personal preference. I know for sure that many readers of these Dialogs prefer to see discussions in them about more practical issues of everyday living on planet Zero. We have already had one complaint about the difficulties in understanding some of these Dialogs. I have also verbally heard about some readers' preferences for the practical, everyday type of topics that they like brought to their attention. Any comments on this concern of mine, or on anything else on Your part before going into some concrete questions?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, look at this issue in the following manner: When we are dealing with issues of multiversal significance; when we are covering topics that relate to the intricate structure of Creation and the complexity of the pseudo-creation; when we are talking about something like the nature of the Absolute; and about similar vital and important topics, it is inevitable to go into the philosophical aspects of them because only by this type of method of covering them can you come to some proper understanding of what they are all about. I can assure you, no other methods in the human language or presentation exist which would be able to properly convey the true meaning of all these issues. Don't forget one important fact: In the reality of the entire being and existence, nothing more crucial and more important exists than the proper understanding of these issues. On their proper understanding and conceptualization, everyone's position in My Creation depends and is established. From that position, they can most appropriately relate to Me.

One of the major reasons why we need to deal with these types of topics or issues, and to deal with them in a purely philosophical, or to be more precise, in a purely spiritual-philosophical manner, and to deal with them from your position on planet Zero, is for the purpose of establishment of a proper foundation on which, in an opportune time, the elimination and/or correction of all distortions and falsities in human life could effectively and successfully be accomplished. Even if many of you were to claim that you have difficulties in understanding about what these types of Dialogs contain, or that you don't understand them at all, by your reading them, you are still contributing to the building of such a foundation. From our standpoint, these types of topics are more crucial

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

for the ultimate elimination of the negative state than are any other ones. And although from the position of your own personal and individual life, the way you need or are required to live your life in the role of My representatives, the practical issues of your everyday behavior and your life in general are important and significant likewise, nevertheless, from the globality of the multiversal needs, our spiritual-philosophical discussions are more needed and are more required than any other ones.

Now, this doesn't mean that from now on we'll be avoiding these types of practical discussions. As needed and if needed, we'll address them parallel with the other ones. On the other hand, take into consideration the typical structure of the typical human mind, the way it was originally fabricated by the pseudo-creators. By and large, with the majority of humans, their minds tend to lean on and to prefer something which is familiar to them. Because their life was structured in such a way so as to take care of their reasonable everyday survival on planet Zero, their minds likewise prefer to deal with and understand only subjects related to this survival or to the practical issues of that survival. Such things are familiar to them. This was a purposeful setup by the original fabricators of humans, so that humans, in most instances, would have inherent difficulties understanding the subjects of multiversal significance, requiring spiritual-philosophical thinking; and for that reason would avoid, or even entirely reject the need for such thinking, so that in the process of pondering about them, they wouldn't, inadvertently, discover the real truth about everything in being and existence. If they were able to do that, no chance would exist for the negative state to establish its pseudo-life for too long a period of time.

However, in your particular case, as My true representatives on planet Zero, you need to train yourself in a mode of thinking which would transcend a typical human mode — familiarity and practicality of your external everyday type of life. Those of you who may have difficulties in this respect, during the reading of these types of Dialogs, should ask Me personally to help you to acquire the proper understanding of what they contain and how such topics could contribute to your spiritual progression and the betterment of your overall life (spiritual, mental, social, professional, physical, material, etc.). Don't ever forget that within you a special type of intuition exists which can help you to properly and fully comprehend what is contained in such Dialogs. By asking for My help in this respect, I will trigger that portion of your intuition which is devoted to such comprehending abilities.

On the other hand, there is a certain spiritual danger in discussing purely practical issues of your everyday behavior and living. As you know, everyone's behavior and lifestyle are inherently personalized and individualized. For that reason, it is the responsibility of everyone to discover, on his/her own, what would be the best type of behavior and lifestyle for each particular individual. In this sense, to give people blanket, all-inclusive guidelines of how to live their life, would support their dependencies on the external input. In that case, you would be dealing with impositional factors, so typical of the nature of the negative state and human life. As you are aware, the majority of humans like to be told what to do, how to do it, how to behave, how to relate, etc. They don't want to think for themselves and they don't want to take responsibility for themselves. This is the way human life was originally structured. As you also know, all methods, guidelines and practices, which have this all-inclusive blanket type of nature, have been totally and completely subsumed by the negative state. For that reason, to advise someone on how to resolve their problems or how to live their life, or how to behave or what kind of attitude to take, would signify inviting the negative state into your life and being dominated by the negative state. This fact fully applies only to My representatives. We are not talking here about other humans who have no other mode of functioning at the present time. First, they need to become aware of their predicament in this respect and be given an alternative for the resolution of their problems, whatever they may be. If they take that alternative, then and only then can you apply to them the factor of individuality and personalization.

The other danger in discussion of these practical issues is that you, as My representatives, could, inadvertently, trigger the need of your typical human nature to be dependent on what you are being told by the means of these Dialogs. Because the human portion of your nature is prone to expect to be told or to be advised on these practical issues, it would trap you into reverting back to the way you used to be before becoming My representatives. In other words, you would not make any move on your own, or you would not try to resolve your own problems by your own efforts, without asking someone else to help you to do so.

Take, for example, your experience, Peter, in this respect. A few days ago you were asked for help or for advice in resolving someone's very personal problem. Despite the fact that every one of you were told that it would be your own personal responsibility to work on your problems in your own way, with help from Me and from the members of your spiritual family and of the New Universe in you, nevertheless, some of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

you still show a tendency to run to Peter, or someone else, so that they can resolve your problems on your behalf or at least, point you in the right direction for their resolution. A twofold danger exists in such a tendency. First, it fosters your dependency on someone else, atrophying in the process your own ability to resolve your own problems, and thus, making you a slave of the negative state; and secondly, you wouldn't dare refuse any such advice, even if it were to be totally wrong and inappropriate in your particular case, because if it is coming from Peter, for example, and if Peter is the transmitter of My New Revelation, then, in that case, to oppose him would mean to oppose Me. And who would dare to oppose Me?

Now, this doesn't at all mean that you should avoid sharing your problems, or anything else for that matter, with other members of My representatives. For learning purposes it is appropriate to share them. The problem begins only when you don't make even one reasonable attempt to solve your problems on your own, asking Me personally, independently of anyone, to help you to deal with your life in accordance with your best abilities and to the fullest of your potential.

However, you need to be careful in the process of sharing your issues and about the ways you were able to resolve your problems or whatever you had. What could happen in this case? Let's say that you received some type of insight and understanding about the nature of your problem and how to go about resolving it. Then you ask someone else about it, or you share the input you received on your own with someone else who is, in your eyes, a greater authority on resolving problems than you think you are. For example, if it would be Peter, who is the transmitter of My New Revelation and who therefore, in your eyes has much greater credibility in this area than you think you have. Moreover, he was also a psychologist which only reinforces your respect for the way he would evaluate your problems and his suggestions on how to resolve them. In that case, you would have a dangerous tendency to overrule your own discoveries and the mode of the resolution of your problems and you would give preference to Peter's. Peter, of course, being compassionate and having difficulties in saying 'no,' would be reluctantly obliged to tell you something about your problems and how to resolve them. Even if he were to be wrong, which might be very much the case, and your original conclusions were right, you would still have a tendency to listen to Peter, or someone similar, rather than go along with your original understanding of your issue and how to go about resolving it to your full satisfaction.

Now, these are the real dangers of discussing practical issues of everyday life, which, in most instances, have a very much personalized and individualized character. Yes, there are some practical issues which don't have this character. They relate to the general nature of what it is, for example, to be My true representative. If any of My true representatives, by his/her spirit and soul, is positioned in the midst of the positive state, then it is obvious that we need to define all general signs of being such a representative and how it differs from someone who is in the midst of the negative state or who is a typical human or a typical agent of the negative state. However, in their concrete application in everyone's life, and how these signs are manifested within each and every one of My representatives, it is solely between Me and him/her and it is a matter of his/her own unique personalized and individualized nature. No specific traits of such character and behavior could be given or defined because it would be everyone's personal responsibility to establish this factor from his/her own within — directly from Me or by My personal input.

As you see from this discussion, it is very obvious that the Dialogs which have a purely spiritual-philosophical nature, and which deal with the general issues related to the multiversal state of affairs and especially to My Absolute New Nature, don't have the type of danger which the Dialogs have dealing with so-called specific practical issues. Therefore, you are encouraged to have a little more willingness to study them more intensely and more attentively than those which are clear-cut and don't pose any problem in your understanding of them. Also, don't forget that you are studying them not only for yourself but for everyone else connected to you, especially from the negative state. Don't underestimate their ability to comprehend what these Dialogs are all about even if you, sometimes, grossly underestimate yours. Remember that!

One more thing I would like to remind the readers of these Dialogs about before going concretely into answering some of the European individuals' questions. Although this issue was emphasized very strongly before, nevertheless, some of you still are not taking heed about it and continue violating the requirements in this respect. First of all, you were asked, in all My humbleness and humility, not to ask questions about nationalities, countries, places, etc., and what they represent or to what they correspond because of the spiritual danger for them and for you if such answers were to be given to you. Secondly, you were asked to explore very carefully if your questions really have multiversal significance and are needed to be responded to for the benefit of all or if they are of a purely personal nature or if they stem from some kind of idle curiosity. It was indicated to you very clearly, that it is your personal

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

responsibility, and not Peter's, to find out from your own within whether your questions have such a multiversal significance and therefore, should be asked through Peter or whether it could be answered from your own within because they don't have this significance. Obviously, some of you forgot about this request and because of that, you continue in asking these types of questions.

Take, for example, a question which came from Slovakia, from a very nice, kind and honest lady (Helena V.) about gypsies and their role. It is a very interesting question from the position of what is going on in the camp of the renegades and the pseudo-creators. However, the full answer to it would endanger the role which gypsies play in this respect. The only thing I can say about them at this time is that they represent and correspond to a certain faction of the renegades, whose role is to produce, cause and manifest all forms of the extreme face of the nature of the negative state on the lowest totem pole of humanity. There is a certain reversed parallel process going on between their illustration and demonstration and what the Jews represented and illustrated in the past. Whereas, in the past Jewish people represented and illustrated, among many other things, the significance of having My Word, which contained, in its internal sense, the highest possible level of spiritual awareness and the description of the true nature of the positive state; at the present time, the gypsies have been doing the same, only from the opposite pseudo-spiritual aspect of the negative state's life; that is to say, in the process of their own history, as they were being dispersed among other nations as the Jews were, gypsies were bringing with themselves everything contained in the lifestyle of the negative state, illustrating and demonstrating that pseudo-life by their own behavior and attitude. Because of their special role, at the present time, they function as an outstretched strong hand of the renegades to disturb, as much as possible, the pseudo-creators and those countries on your planet which are under their rule and/or influence. This is the reason why, in Eastern Europe, where the gypsies' population is the greatest, you are witnessing some kind of Diaspora, which is happening on their part and during and by which they are trying to disperse themselves amongst the nations and countries that are under the rule and influence of the pseudo-creators. So, it is not gypsies per se, but the faction of the renegades which is doing all that by the external means of the gypsies.

On the other hand, Helena's question about the meaning of human voice and why someone could get attracted to it or to be fascinated by it, is an entirely different story. It has a purely personal and individual connotation. Yes, it is true that the human voice, the way it sounds,

when someone speaks, can have an important impact on any listener. It can have a very attractive, pleasant, kind, positive, calming, hypnotic effect. Or it can induce a sexual or sensual arousal. Or it can be very cunning, deceitful, cold, rejecting, fierce, unpleasant, condemning, judgmental, sarcastic, and negative in general. What are these facts telling you? They are telling you that the human voice, in some way, reflects the nature of its carrier. However, why it has a certain pleasant, attractive, or negative, or whatever kind of impact on you personally, is too individual and too personal in order to have any all-inclusive, general meaning.

It is your personal duty and responsibility to explore the reason of any human voice for having such an impact on you. What would happen if I were to tell you the reasons for your sexual or some other type of attraction to someone's voice? After all, that reason would be applicable to no one else but only to you personally and individually. However, because I said it, and because I am the Absolute God, Who knows everything in the Absolute sense, whatever I say in any respect, no matter what it is, would be immediately applied by all of you to your own situation. In that case, you would be laboring under falsities and lies about your own personal and individual reasons for such attractions or whatever you would have. This is the spiritual danger of any such answers that have this individual and personal connotation.

You have to clearly distinguish between three types of questions: The first types are those that have purely multiversal connotation and the answer to which applies to everyone in being and existence, pseudo-being and pseudo-existence and on planet Zero because it contains the general multiversal Truth stemming from My Absolute Truth. The answers to these types of questions are very crucial and important because they give proper directions by which the multiverse is to go forth. The second types of questions are those, the portion of which could have some general, all-inclusive meaning either to My representatives, or to the positive state in general, or even to the entire Creation; and the other portion of which has a purely individual and personal connotation. In cases of these types of questions asked, the portion of them which has multiversal implication can be and will be answered as needed and if needed. However, the individual and personal portion of them, cannot be answered by Me, by means of Peter, because this portion can be answered by Me only by and through every individual who is asking them. The third types of questions have only and only individual and personal connotation. These types of questions should never be asked by means of mediation through someone, in this case, through Peter. The answers to them are a matter

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

of the relationship between Me and each individual. Therefore, learn to come to Me with them, facing Me face to face in your within or your intuition or whatever you have, and asking Me to enlighten you, to inspire you and to give you insight into the reasons or causes for anything that is on your mind in this respect. It is very important that you do so.

Or take, for example, one of the four questions that Monika J. of the Czech Republic (formerly of Slovakia) is asking. Her question is: Is such a physical phenomenon as snoring caused by a negative entity with whom you need to work in order to get rid of this problem? Is there any multiversal significance in a question like that? Sure, snoring is a disturbing phenomenon. Obviously, if it is disturbing, it cannot have a positive connotation. Therefore, it always has a negative connotation because any disturbance of the normal function of anything, in this case of sleep, is influenced by a negative entity. Yes, there is a contingent of negative spirits in the Hells who themselves specialize in inducing this condition by attaching themselves or by influencing human breathing organs, throat, mouth and all else in that area of the human body so that they can continuously maintain in human life all kinds of dysfunctions and disturbances and thus, to make someone's life miserable and uncomfortable.

However, why some people snore and some others don't, is a matter of their own individual and personal reasons. Should you work with those negative entities that induce that kind of condition? It entirely depends on your own individual and personal needs and preferences. Again, why not ask Me in your own communication with Me, how you should proceed in this case. Sometimes, it takes a simple change in your body position on the bed to stop this annoying condition. Or to take some external medical means which enable alleviation of this problem. Or something else which would work only for you and no one else.

At this point, Peter, I would recommend, that you formulate Monika's other questions so that they can be answered as they came.

Peter: Her first question relates to the condition of narcosis. During narcotic sleep, when some kind of medical procedure is being undertaken on Your representatives, where are their spirits and souls located or dwelling? In what dimensions or worlds are they situated, besides being in the positive state? Her second question: If our spirit and soul is in the positive state at the present time, and if some of us would choose to give up or recede from Your New Revelation, then where would our spirit and soul be? In the negative state? And if that spirit and soul, based on their

free will and choice, would make a decision to come back to Your New Revelation, what would happen with that spirit and soul? Her third question was given by phone: What is Your male representatives' role, if any, in working with the pseudo-creators in the New School as compared to the roles of Your female representatives, the roles of which were extensively discussed in one of the previous Dialogs? Her fourth question was answered above.

The Lord Jesus Christ: During any medical procedure, which requires a general anesthesia, your spirit and soul remain right next to your body, keeping vigilance over it in order to assure that nothing happens to that body beyond and above any agreement which was made in this respect before your incarnation on planet Zero. There is a paradox here: Narcosis is an artificially induced condition. It is not natural. Anything artificial is of a negative origin or source. However, in this case, it is used for a good purpose — healing. The spirit's and soul's vigilance is for the purpose of making sure that, if healing is chosen to take place, nothing interferes with that process. On the other hand, because of the negative nature of that process, it can also be used by negative entities to cause some damage, complications and similar negative conditions, to which no prior agreement was given. The spirit's and soul's presence is for the purpose of prevention of anything of this adverse nature from happening.

The answer to the second question should be obvious from one of the earlier Dialogs in which we were discussing the issue of mercy and forgiveness and the question of My disciple, Apostle Peter, about how many times one should forgive one's brother. First of all, if anyone decides to recede or reject My New Revelation, following its initial acceptance, the spirit and soul of that person cannot remain in the positive state. The residence in the positive state by anyone who initially accepted My New Revelation, is possible only by the means of My New Revelation. If you reject it from your life, you reject the positive state as well. Thus, by that factor, you position yourself in the negative state. If you decide by your own free will and choice, to return back to My New Revelation and thus, to Me, and if you ask for mercy and forgiveness, your spirit and soul are put back into the positive state. There is no limit how many times this mercy and forgiveness is available to anyone. Remember what I answered to Peter at that time and to Peter at this time? To Peter at that time: Not seven times seven but seventy times seven. To Peter at this time: Not seventy times seven but seventy seven times seventy seven. You may apply this answer to the scenarios asked by Monika.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

In response to Monika's third question about My male representatives' involvement with the pseudo-creators in the special division of the New School, besides My female representatives' involvement, let it be known that they likewise play an important role in the process of restructuring and transformation of the pseudo-creators. First of all, by the means of their reading and acceptance of My New Revelation, they teach the pseudo-creators about utilization of their brand of logic for understanding of all principles of My New Revelation and how it is possible by the reasoning process, to come to the right conclusions about anything related to the real truth. Secondly, they enable the pseudo-creators to see the proper connection between logic, reason, and intellect on one side and intuition, feelings, emotions and will on the other side. And thirdly, they illustrate the equality of principles of masculinity and femininity from the position of their own masculinity in the same manner as My female representatives do from the position of their own femininity. All these factors are very important to present to the pseudo-creators in the process of their learning to become co-creators. All My representatives, whether female or male, by their personal contributions in this respect, are instrumental in this process.

At this point, Peter, I feel the need to address some other issues, stemming from Helena V.'s letter. Although the content of that letter is primarily personal, some of her concerns may have applicability to all readers of these Dialogs.

A certain degree of misunderstanding can be detected in some statements or suppositions by some of you about the type of life My representatives should lead while on planet Zero. The impression from that could be that your life is very restrictive and limiting, not allowing you to do some normal everyday things which most people do or which they consider to be a necessary accompaniment of everyday living and/or relaxing, following a hard day's work. There are almost some guilt feelings about doing things which you think you should not do because it supposedly contradicts the requirements of My New Revelation related to the way you should live your everyday life.

Yes, there are certain things that you should never do or have. One of them is that, perhaps, two or three people amongst you still continue to smoke cigarettes or to have, now and then, a glass of some kind of alcoholic beverage, in whatever amount and degree of its strength. Now, this kind of problem is a real problem, posing a considerable spiritual danger to your spiritual, as well as mental and physical well-being. Anyone who continues in these practices (and you know, Peter, at least,

about two such people, who are otherwise very much devoted to Me and My New Revelation, who continue smoking cigarettes), are advised to expediently relinquish their devastating habit in order to preserve their connectedness to Me and My positive state. The situation at the present time is very serious in this respect. What you have to be clearly aware of, is that by means of your smoking or drinking alcoholic beverages, you are enabling negative spirits from the clan of the renegades to be attached to you for the purpose of undermining your mission in My services through and by the factor of undermining your physical and mental health, the taking care of which will rob you of all energies which are needed in the services of Our cause. In other words, unless you stop indulging in your habit, these negative entities have the ability to cause you all kinds of spiritual, medical and psychological problems which could lead to your demise. And we don't want that to happen. We need you where you are. Of course, this is being suggested only and only because you are My representatives and only because no one in the positive state, and especially not I, want you to unnecessarily succumb to the possible attacks of and destruction by the negative state in your life by the means of alcohol and cigarettes. You have absolutely no idea to what you are exposing yourself by your continuous use of these chemical substances. These are very dangerous times.

Due to this fact, those of you who still continue in these negative practices, are very strongly advised to use **any possible and available means** to get rid of them as soon as possible. You don't have too much time in this respect. As soon as you read these words, you will be given almost the last chance to cease in those practices. Unless you do that, you will be in grave danger of succumbing to the temptations of the renegades in this respect.

Now, these are the negative practices that really can and may not only interfere with your life and your mission, but they can and may destroy your spiritual integrity and turn you away from Me and My New Revelation. On the other hand, there are some practices or habits which don't necessarily have this kind of negative connotation. Yet, they may be considered by some of you that they do have it. Some of you feel very guilty if you watch television or listen to the radio, or go to movies, or to concerts, or some other type of entertainment; or read fiction or some other types of books; or do some other enjoyable, practical and fun things; or eat some food, containing animal protein (meat, for example) in a good restaurant. As you remember, in one of the recent Dialogs, we were talking about a useless and dangerous waste of your time and energy on reading books of **pseudo-spiritual nature**, the purpose of which is to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

sway you from your spiritual path or to detour you from My New Revelation. No other types of books were mentioned.

The issue here is the proper balancing of your everyday life. It is impossible for your human nature to spend all your time in one activity. There is a need for varieties of activities. This need stems from the nature of the positive state and from My Absolute Nature. It is a sign of positive influence on your life. For that reason, it is very much appropriate, from time to time, to read a good fiction, science-fiction or a mystery book, or watch a good television program, or listen to a good radio program, or go to movies or concerts; or read the newspaper or to be involved in some other types of leisure activities (walking, exercising, etc.) or entertainment. The problem with being engaged in these types of activities begins only when you become addicted to them, or become dependent on them or spend many hours doing nothing but watching television, for example. And then you may complain that you don't have time to read My New Revelation, or to meditate and commune with Me and the members of your spiritual family and of the New Universe.

Yes, there are less and less of such good programs in any media available to you. This unavailability reflects the negative state's hold over everything presented to humans in order to keep them in their negative, externalized and superficial lifestyle. However, by means of your intuition, you will know what programs to watch and how much time a day or a week to devote to these types of leisure activities. The best way to proceed is, as always, to ask Me to give you an indication of how much time and on what to devote that time in your own individual and personal case. Because you are all different, and have obviously different needs in this respect, your needs will vary from case to case.

Well, as you see, Peter, this Dialog is very much practical and has very little philosophical discussion. Hopefully, it will satisfy all who need these types of dialogs. And this will be all for today.

Peter: Thank You very much for these practical suggestions. I do have some other questions, posed by someone here in California, for a change, but, as I see it, I should bring them during our next dialoging.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. And yes, you are right; it would be more beneficial and appropriate to address them in the next Dialog, especially because they may have some spiritual-philosophical implications. In the meantime, have a nice afternoon and after eating, go for your long meditative walk.

One Hundred and Fifth Dialog

September 15, 1999

Peter: Today I would like to bring to Your attention two questions received from Richard Schumert of San Francisco and one question from Olga of Miami, Florida (Olga Barba's mother). However, before going into formulating these questions, I am humbly asking if You have anything to contribute this morning for our elucidation and enlightenment.

The Lord Jesus Christ: I would be happy to answer Olga's and Richard's questions. However, I would like to take this opportunity to talk about something else first. The first issue that needs to be brought to your attention, or to be reiterated, is something which is connected to the topic discussed in Dialog 102 as related to My temptation in the place called Gethsemane. As you remember from the content of that Dialog, in order to be tempted by the negative state, it was necessary for Me to separate Myself from My Divine Essence, called Father, and instead, anchor Myself in the human portion of My Nature. In that condition, I was able to experience everything that typical humans do: anxieties, fears, worries, doubts and similar mental states, so inherent in human nature. Why am I bringing these obvious facts to your attention at this particular time? There is a parallel process going on between My experience and what I was illustrating and demonstrating to the entire Creation, and what you, occasionally, experience in your own lives.

As you know, as My representatives, whenever you are in that function or role, you truly find yourself in the positive state and, during that time, you are in the positive state. In that state, you have no doubts, fears, anxieties, worries or any other similar unpleasant emotions or feelings. However, in the moment you come down from that state (symbolically speaking), you revert back to that portion of your nature which is typically human. In your human state, you begin to have doubts, you feel uncertain about anything and you behave, feel, think, relate, etc., as typical humans do.

Take for example, your personal situation, Peter, in this respect. One of your major problems is that you find yourself too frequently doubting about the verity of the claims of My New Revelation and whether it is truly Me who is dialoging with you or whether it is Me who gave you all those ideas contained in all the books of My New Revelation. Your doubts end, very often, in a state of anxiety, fear and almost terror that you might be misleading others and yourself. In moments like that, you anchored yourself in the human portion of your nature. Because of that,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

you feel, think, act, behave, relate, etc., as any typical human does. Or take for example, some of My representatives, who, as you learned today, have a tendency to mistreat their spouses who are likewise My representatives, but who respond to some situations not from being My representatives but from the position of their human nature. The paradox of this situation is in the fact that, if one spouse responds to something in the other from the position of his/her own human nature, then they both react to each other, not from Me in them, not from being My true representatives, but as typical humans. In this particular case, one spouse is sarcastic, cold, detached, ridicules the other, puts her/him down, is arrogant and exhibits similar negative, but typically human characteristics. The other spouse, in this case, responds with depression, anxieties, fears, feeling miserable, rejected, unwanted, desperate and doesn't know what to do and how to proceed.

As you see from this example, whenever you respond to someone's typical human attitude or behavior, not from being My true representative but from being a typical human, you open the door to the negative state to induce into your own behavior nothing but something which is not contained in the positive state. By the factor of your human nature, you place yourself into the midst of the negative state. Thus, you become negative. You succumb to the temptations of the negative state. On the other hand, Peter, when you are transmitting our Dialogs, or when you were transmitting other books of My New Revelation; when you are in the company of My other representatives, discussing important spiritual issues, you find yourself anchored in that portion of your nature which stems directly from Me. During that time, you have no doubts about who is the true Author of My New Revelation or about whether you are deceiving others or yourself. In times like that you are experiencing yourself as My messenger or My extension and process. You become truly who you are in your essence and substance without the human mask. This factor applies to all My representatives.

At this point in time, it is very important and crucial that you realize these facts and learn to respond to each other or to yourself only and only from the position of being My true representatives and not from the position of your human nature. You have been warned several times that, at the present time, the forces of the negative state are making an all-out effort to separate you from your role and position as My true representatives and permanently anchor you in your human nature. By succeeding in this effort, they disable your ability to perform your duties and responsibilities as related to being My representatives and instead, they will utilize your energies for their own negative and evil purposes.

If someone who claims to be My representative is still prone to fall into his/her human trap of mistreating someone by ridiculing, putting down, being sarcastic, inconsiderate, arrogant and mean to his/her own spouse or friend or whomever, then, by the factor of such behavior one relinquishes, during that time, his/her privilege of being My true representative. In that case, such a person removes himself/herself from being in the positive state and places himself/herself instead into the negative state. No matter how much such a person feels that he/she is right in his/her attitude toward the other; no matter how much justification and rationalization such a person would tend to offer for the rightness of his/her behavior; no matter how inappropriate the other person's reaction and behavior was or is, there are absolutely no justifications or excuses for such a reaction or behavior. If this were to be the case with anyone of you, you would be strongly advised to amend your ways immediately and rectify this adverse situation by asking for mercy and forgiveness of that person to whom you behave like that, as well as asking for My mercy and forgiveness and for mercy and forgiveness of your own true self. By doing that, you will subsequently return to your role and position of being My true representatives. Of course, as always, only if you choose to do so by your own free will and choice.

The above discussed issue can be considered a practical one because it deals with the everyday behavior, attitude and position of all of you. The second issue, which I would like to discuss, is more of a spiritual-philosophical one. In this case, you will have here a Dialog which would contain both practical as well as spiritual-philosophical aspects of our discussion. This particular issue relates to the important topic of intuition. For some time now, Peter, you have been pondering about whether there is more to the ways you can verify any truth at all than just by intuition. Two days ago, as you were reading the ***Writings*** of Dr. Pieter Noomen, this question came to your mind again and you felt appropriately that it is time to deal with this issue during our dialoging. In one of the earlier Dialogs, we have already defined the term 'intuition,' both from the spiritual standpoint and from a typical scientific one. At this time however, the issue is not about the nature of intuition, but whether there is something more than just intuition available to the sentient minds for arriving at the truth of any matter.

Let us look at this issue from a somewhat different perspective. What are the methods by which the sentient mind can and may arrive at finding out whether something is true or not, or whether it is so or not? Depending on the position and placement of the sentient mind in the structural frame of Creation or pseudo-creation, the very first method is rooted in the sentient mind's ability to be logical, analytical, intellectual and to possess a reasoning faculty. By the process of reasoning, logic, analysis and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

intellectual discernment, the sentient mind may come to the synthesis of the explored factors and make right conclusions about them. This important ability of the sentient mind stems from My Absolute External Mind, which I imparted on all sentient entities in order for them to be in a position to arrive at the right conclusions about anything at all by their own external mind. There is a corresponding factor here in play. As you know, the external mind of any sentient mind is in a corresponding position to My Absolute External Sentient Mind. That Mind generates the structural integrity to My Creation and to all its sentient minds. The natural structural integrity consists of logic, reason, intellect, rationality, analysis and synthesis. In this sense, you can say that, from the structural point of view, the way My Absolute External Sentient Mind operates, I am the Absolute Logic, Reason, Rationality, Intellect, Analysis and Synthesis in an absolute sense. From this Mind of Mine derives all knowable and unknowable laws, principles, order, elegance, harmony, cohesiveness and everything else by which and through which the proper function and maintenance of My Creation is executed.

Because of this corresponding factor existing between the Absolute Mind and the relative sentient mind, the relative sentient mind has the ability to deduce and/or to induce the right conclusions about any observable, as well as some other, phenomena. Unfortunately, it was this particular ability which was utilized for the purpose of activation and establishment of the negative state. Notice, please, that this happened in the most external position in Creation from the very external factors derived from My Very External Mind. Nothing of negative nature could come even remotely close for the purpose of its derivation from any other state and condition but by, through and of the means of the external mind. It is always the external mind which is in the position of being able to abuse anything contained in its reasoning repertoire. By the factor of this abuse, the external mind can justify, excuse, substantiate and rationalize at will any of its conclusions and positions about anything at all. This is how the sentient entities in the negative state and humans are able to effectively convince themselves about the righteousness of their cause. By this ability of the sentient mind, anyone can and may justify anything one wants.

Take, for example, the statistical correlation between some kind of cause and effect. Is the effect really the result of some kind of cause? Or is it incidental and accidental, not rising above the chance level? Any researcher who tries to measure such correlations, very often, gets the results that, usually, favor his/her own expectations. He/she can beautifully justify and prove that his/her point and/or conclusions must be right because of the results of his/her measurements. So, this factor becomes circular, because the expectations feed the results and the results confirm the expectations. No wonder that someone else who tries to

replicate the results of some other researcher in this respect, frequently comes to entirely different conclusions. This is how the endowed abilities of the external mind can and may be abused, misused and improperly used by anyone. And this is how the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state and human life are continuously being justified and rationalized.

At the present time, the only way you can get any right conclusions based on this particular method of exploration and verification, is by proper intentional and motivational factors, excluding all and any of your own expectations, projections and subjective needs and desires. If you approach by the means of this methodology anything at all for the sole purpose of learning the truth, for the sake of truth itself, for the sake of its real objective existence, this method can be very beneficial and useful. It can lead you to the discovery of real truth. Otherwise, you will arrive at only distortions and falsities.

The second method for discovery of truth and whether something is true or not; or whether it is so or not, is by means of intuition. Intuition, in its nature, essence and substance, transcends the first method discussed above. Or it precedes the logical, rational, intellectual, analytical, synthetic and reasoning processes of the external mind and then, subsequently, it utilizes them for further confirmation and verification of its own conclusions. This ability stems from the interior sentient mind (or intermediate sentient mind) which, in turn, gets this ability from My Own Absolute Interior Mind. During utilization of this particular method one turns oneself inward and seeks to find a so-called sixth sense which would indicate to him/her, beyond a shadow of doubt, whether something is true or not. There are various degrees and aspects to this particular method called intuition. Because it stems from My Absolute Interior Mind, in its very source, it has Absolute Mental Quality. This Quality generates Its nature to the level of any sentient mind relevant to each individual's personalized and individualized makeup and to the specific nature of his/her unique mentality. Because each individual is inherently different and unique, so is the level of his/her intuition unique and different, giving it the nature of being of various degrees and levels congruent to the needs of each particular individual.

Due to the factor of very specific individualization and personalization of intuition, it cannot be misused, abused or perverted by anything of a negative nature. However, it can easily be blocked, repressed, suppressed, overruled or disregarded by its carrier. So, in order for the effectiveness of this method to be in place, you need to listen to it and follow its direction, overruling any desires of your external mind to disregard the voice of your intuition.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Under presently existing conditions on planet Zero, this method is the only one which is able to truthfully verify and confirm anything related to the truth, or anything else, for that matter. As you remember, in your intuition, My presence in you and with you, from the position of My Absolute Interior Mind, is the most intense and the most discernable. This was purposefully established by Me, in order to give humans a tool, which would enable them to bypass their external mind's tendencies to distort and falsify things and then use its ability to rationalize and justify them by its pseudo-logic, convincing itself that it is true.

However, as you know, Peter, at the present time, under the presently existing conditions on planet Zero and in the negative state in general, this method was, in most of its components, deleted from their consideration. It was reserved only for My true representatives and for the covert members of My positive state, situated on planet Zero. Moreover, in order to sharpen their intuition, recently, I have released from My Absolute Interior Mind, a different aspect of intuition, related to that portion of their endowment which came directly from Me. This special type of intuition, or one of its many aspects, relates to your ability to read, understand, accept and apply everything contained in My New Revelation. From now on, anyone who will approach the reading of My New Revelation in any of its sources, if approached with positive and good intent and motivation, for the sake of learning, accepting and practicing the Truth, which it contains, will be endowed with this special type of intuition in addition to any other of its aspects. On the other hand, the rest of humanity and everyone in the negative state, is in the process of being anchored more and more in their external rationalization, justification, substantiation and pseudo-logical ruminations about the rightness of their pseudo-cause and thus, getting further and further away from anything intuitive and internal, thus, from anything which contains the real truth.

Now we are coming to the question whether there is something more than the above described two methods. Your intuition, Peter, was telling you that it is very much possible that there is more to it than just the first and second method for the acquirement of any type of knowledge and for recognizing, accepting and practicing the truth in all its aspects as related to anything at all. If the first method — logic, reason, intellect, rationality, analysis and synthesis — derives, in its original and genuine condition, from My Absolute External Mind; and if the second method — intuition in all its aspects and manifestations — derives from My Absolute Interior Mind, then it must be obvious that there is something which would transcend any of these methods and which therefore, would derive from My Absolute Most Within Spiritual Mind. And this is the truth of the matter. There are two important aspects to this third method. One is

derived from the overall State and Condition of My Absolute Spiritual Mind. This one was initially and originally imparted on all inhabitants of the most within spiritual dimension of My Creation. This method of knowing has not been available to anyone else in other dimensions or to humans or to you, My representatives. Their and your position required a different approach. If all of you have had this particular method, the negative state, and the human life in all its aspects, could never have been activated and could never have been able to provide for all one of the most vital answers to the multiversal question about the nature of the other type of life other than the life of the positive state.

In this particular aspect, the inhabitants of that dimension apply their own natural and inborn insight which gives them immediate grasp, understanding, acceptance and practice of all aspects of truth, bypassing any logic, reason, analysis, synthesis and intuition. Because of their particular state, they have no need for any of those methods. They simply know whether something is true or not; or whether it is so or not without any input from logic or intuition.

The second important aspect of this method of knowing is rooted in that aspect of My Nature which was previously designated in recent Dialogs as My Absolute Core. As you remember, it is this Core which is unnamable, incomprehensible and unapproachable to anyone, no matter where and when they are situated at any given time. This particular aspect, up to this point, has not been available to anyone. So far, it has not been released. However, as you know, with the ending of this cycle of time, with the establishment of the transitional period before commencement of the next cycle of time and with the preparation of release of the entirely new and different Aspect from My Absolute New Nature, this method will become available at that time. The preceding energies of all these factors influenced your intuition, Peter, and that of Dr. Pieter Noomen's, so that you could arrive at the conclusion that there must be something more in this respect than just intuition and logic, reason, intellect and all their other aspects by which they search and arrive at the truth.

Now, the full nature of this method, or any of its aspects, is premature to reveal. The only thing that can be said about it at this time, is that it will be the most special, the most unusual, the most beautiful and the most inspiring combination, integration, unification and application of the above described three methods, giving birth to the fourth method which will transcend all and everything available up to that point. At this point in time, under the presently existing conditions of your positioning and role, as humans, you have no possible ideas, words, concepts, images, pictures or whatever, which would be able to give you even the most remote notion about what this method will be like. The reason for this is

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

because it is integrally connected to the release of a new and different aspect of My Absolute New Nature. Because it will be entirely new, it cannot be comprehended from the position of the old, or from the position which precedes that new. You would have to be in the new position already in order to have some notion about the true nature of the new method of knowing. You are still far away from that new position. However, by this revelation, you are being prepared for that new to be established in your lives when the time comes. It will not be before your recall.

This is all, Peter, that I wanted to contribute today. You may go ahead and formulate your questions on behalf of the enquirers.

Peter: It is interesting to note that last night I was asked to inquire about the meaning, if any, of multiple births, such as, for example, twins, triplets, or even sextuplets; and this morning, when I scanned my daily newspaper, I found there an article titled “An increase in multiple births.” This factor is interesting in that, it talks about the desire of older women to get pregnant and, for that purpose, using fertility drugs. As a result, they get multiple births. Talk about coincidences, isn't it? Any comment on this phenomenon? This question came from Olga of Miami, Florida.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, by now you know very well that no coincidences exist. In the past, when, for the purpose of balancing out the negative state by the positive state, and the negative state balancing out the positive state, the birth of twins, and very rarely of triplets or even quadruplets, was by the influence of both the positive state and the negative state. As you know, twins can be either maternal or fraternal. At those times, sometimes, there was an agreement amongst those who wanted to incarnate on planet Zero either from the positive state or from the negative state, respectively; or by some ideas of two sexually engaged typical humans. They agreed, for some important spiritual reasons, to share the same genetic, familial, environmental, social and physical factors under which they would be born. One of these reasons was to illustrate and demonstrate the factor of spiritual and mental differences of one's spirit and one's soul. The issue here was to show the total independence of the spirit's and the soul's unique characteristics on any physical, genetic, familial, environmental, social or any other external factors. The way you have to understand this statement is in the fact that, no matter how externally similar the twins or triplets, or whoever were, even to the point that no one could distinguish them physically and externally by their physical appearance of who was who, nevertheless, in their spirit, soul, attitude, behavior, likes and dislikes, they were totally different.

This fact was necessary to illustrate to all in My Creation and pseudo-creation, in order to refute the notion that one can be exactly the same as any other individual. This was a tour de force of the negative state, trying to convince everyone that individuality is nothing and commonality and uniformity is everything. All those multiple births that were initiated from the negative state, were in an attempt to establish such a proof. The forces of the negative state were hoping that by enabling such multiple births, they could somehow accomplish such commonalities and uniformities and by that factor, they would be able to convince themselves and their followers that they were the true originators of their brand of pseudo-life and that I had nothing to do with it.

Moreover, this phenomenon demonstrated My Absolute Nature in that, My Life, and Energies of that Life, from which any possibility of any life, including the human life and the pseudo-life of all in the negative state was/is possible, was/is manifested in infinite varieties of presentations in the unique forms and contents of any sentient entity, and therefore, it is never redundant, no matter how much it looks the same, externally.

However, as you know, at the present time, the factor of balancing is no longer in place. No one is born on your planet from the positive state. Neither are any typical humans born any longer. The only births that are still possible are either from the negative state or by the negative ideas of two humans. Because the factor of pseudo-winning of the negative state on planet Zero is in place, an all-out effort is made by the forces of the negative state to populate your planet as soon as possible with its agents. For that reason, human women are infused with an irresistible desire, craving, and almost lust, to have children. This desire, Peter, unfortunately, you were witnessing even with some of those in Europe who read and accept ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***. For those women who have been infertile up to this point, the forces of the negative state, through their human scientific minions, came up with a fertility drug, which makes it possible for them to have multiple births. Still, the unique individuality and personality is preserved in all of them, no matter what. Of course, the purpose for this situation is no longer in trying to prove the above mentioned point. It is solely for overpopulating your planet with the negative state's own agents so that the lifestyle of a purely negative nature could be established.

One interesting factor of this pseudo-winning is in the fact that the resources of planet Zero, needed for maintenance of any life forms on it, are dwindling very fast. If they are gone completely, then no life could be supported on your planet. In that case, the negative state's pseudo-winning would be, at the same time, its own demise because the parasite would destroy its host on which it is feeding. Therefore, the negative state

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

would die likewise. This is one of the possible scenarios of how the negative state could end. As you see from this particular scenario, by its foolishness, stupidity and insanity, the negative state is capable of destroying itself from within itself without utilization of any outward force on the part of the positive state. And multiple births on your planet are an excellent contributory factor to this self-destruction. And this is all that can be said in response to Olga senior's question.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your meaningful answers. May we proceed now with Richard's questions? Also, in the meantime, I received an additional request for clarification of the concept or term 'Fire' which was used in description of Your Absolute New Nature. What is its positive connotation as related to Your Nature?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, you may.

Peter: Richard Schumert is asking about the meaning and significance of single cell life forms, such as, bacteria, microbes, germs, viruses, amoebas, protozoans and similar microscopic and submicroscopic entities. His second question is about Moses. Why was he not allowed to cross the river of Jordan, no matter how much he asked You for forgiveness for his one and only blunder?

The Lord Jesus Christ: The meaning and purpose of these single sub-life forms can be derived, in a general sense, from what was revealed about the animal life forms in the Eighty Fifth Dialog. These single cell or sub-cell life forms are correspondences of the most basic, sub-elemental components of thought processes of the sentient minds. In the positive connotation, originally they derived from My Absolute Thought Process as very sub-elemental and basic particles of that Process needed for the maintenance and proper function of all ideas of life in all its manifestations. In the relative sentient mind's thought processes, they are correspondences of their own needs to take care of the sentient environment in a functional whole in order to preserve the continuous flow of proper energies for the healthy and normal run of all aspects of life — from the most basic, sub-elemental to the most intricate macro life forms. These aspects of the sentient mind's thought processes, in the process of their projection to the most external or physical dimension, appear as various microbes, bacteria, and similar single cell life forms, that help maintain proper balance of the living organism. The consequences and outcomes of these sub-elemental aspects of the sentient mind's thought processes are generated on the least conscious level of that mind.

In the negative connotation of their meaning, as the originators and activators of the negative state begin to produce the negative thought processes on their very elemental and sub-elemental level, they gave rise to something which, in its essence, was directed toward the destruction of anything positive and good. In most instances, these sub-elemental products of the thought processes are unconscious. Originally, there was a tendency to imitate everything the way things were done in the positive state, only with an opposing purpose. Thus, in order to maintain the pseudo-life in its negative connotation, the way the true life has been maintained in the positive state in its positive connotation, by the factor of opposition and separation from anything positive, the sentient mind of the pseudo-creators, on its sub-elemental level, began to produce all necessary ingredients for such maintenance. As a result, through its corresponding factors, in the physical dimension of the Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero, these particular sub-elemental aspects of thought processes, appeared as life-threatening microbes, bacillus, bacteria, viruses, retro-viruses, and similar destructive single-cell sub-elemental organisms. The production of these very negative and destructive types of sub-life forms was originally utilized as a weapon for poisoning and destroying the atmosphere and sphere of the positive life forms. The originators and activators of the negative state, in their effort to establish a totally different lifestyle than that of the positive state's, were hoping to utilize these sub-elemental thought processes, through their corresponding projection into these sub-life forms, for eradication of anything positive from their domain.

Unfortunately for them, their effort in this respect backfired in the sense that once anything of this nature is produced, by its unruly nature, it has a tendency to multiply by the law of geometrical progression and subsequently, it becomes uncontrollable. And not only that, but it continuously mutates into some different combinations which are almost impossible to manage or eradicate by any known means. This factor clearly illustrates the very nature of the negative state. As opposed to the nature of the positive state, everything in the negative state is disorderly, unruly, unlawful and unmanageable. If you want to establish a lifestyle which is to be totally and completely opposing anything contained in that other life with which you don't want to have anything in common, you have no recourse but to become everything that is not positive, orderly, lawful, beautifully managed and elegant. This factor is reflected very well in the behavior of the sub-elemental single sub-cell life forms produced by such a negative design, stemming from negative and evil thought processes.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

On the other hand, in comparison with destructive ones, the positive sub-elemental sub-life forms, stemming from positive thought processes of the sentient minds in the positive state, don't have the same tendencies as the negative ones. In their own environment and function, they behave orderly, lawfully and elegantly, helping the living organism in its proper function. This fundamental difference in the behavior of these two sub-entities, clearly illustrates the true nature of the positive and good thought processes and the true nature of the negative and evil thought processes. And this is all that can be said about this issue at this time.

Now, to the question about Moses. As you remember, Peter, whenever you were reading that portion in the Bible which dealt with My refusal to allow him to enter the so-called Promised Land, located beyond the river of Jordan, you always felt very bad for Moses and you were almost angry at Me for not allowing him to have the privilege of entering that land. As you know, that was a typical human stance on your part. In other words, you were looking at the whole situation as it was played out on the scene and not behind the scene. But what was really happening behind the scene? The answer to this question can be found in to what Moses' position and role corresponded at that time. First of all, as you are aware, for those times, Moses was the most humble person on planet Zero. In that he represented My Absolute Humbleness, Modesty and Humility. Secondly, you can consider Moses as being My very first and the only representative on planet Zero at that time. Thirdly, he was the very embodiment of My Absolute Divine Law and Order by which the life of My Creation is maintained and runs its proper course. Fourthly, Moses represented both My Divine Essence and Substance as well as My Future Human Nature. His behavior, actions, mode of thinking, relating and conveying things were all representative of the nature of the positive state and My Absolute Nature in his relative condition. In essence, Moses represented the totality of all Divine Laws, Principles and Establishments by which any functional and positive life is made possible. This was a representation of the reality of the positive state.

On the other hand, don't ever forget with what kind of people Moses was dealing. As you remember, from his final song that he was to teach the children of Israel, shortly before I took him away and hid his physical body from them so that they wouldn't make an idol for worshipping out of it, he very vividly described their nature as the most stubborn, unruly, stiff-necked, disobedient, hard-core, inconsiderate, arrogant, and spiritually totally blind and fully externalized. Moses told them very straightforwardly that they were chosen by Me not because they were the best and most deserving amongst all other nations, existing at that time on planet Zero, but, in fact, because they were the worst. On them, My

infinite patience, long-suffering, mercy and forgiveness could have been demonstrated and illustrated the best.

At the same time, however, Moses was also a human, with all aspects of the nature of being a human. In that he illustrated the difference of what it is to be a typical human and what it is to be My true representative. In the role of being My true representative, his behavior was from the very Divine which he had in him from Me. In that position, he acted and behaved as the most positive and kind person. However, when he was provoked by stiff-necked and disobedient people in his ultimate ability to keep his role as My true representative, he slipped, for a moment, into his human nature and became furious at the children of Israel, not believing that I would be able to produce drinking water from the rock in the middle of the desert. So, instead of once, he struck the rock twice, hoping that no water would be coming from it. Instead, the water came out of the rock in unusual abundance. What are the spiritual correspondences here? The rock, in this particular connotation, represented the natural truth as manifested in its faith. Water was pure spiritual truth that is made available to anyone, based on the acceptance of the natural truth and having faith in its existence. Striking into the rock twice means denial of this substantial and life-giving faith and not believing in any spiritual truth. That nevertheless, water poured out abundantly from the rock signifies that My Divine Truth Lives and is available to everyone no matter how much it is denied and disregarded.

The consequence of Moses' unfaithfulness in this particular case was that he denied himself the possibility of entering the Promised Land or, in this case, to the positive state, because you can enter there only by means of the acceptance of pure spiritual truth through and by your personal faith into its power and potency. Moses represented, in this case, the consequences of rejection of Divine Truth and anchoring himself in the negative aspects of the typical human nature. Don't forget to what kind of people he was representing all these facts. In his case, any deviation from bringing about the consequences of his actions, would set up a very bad example for those people who were very evil in their nature. If I were to listen to Moses' request, and allow him to enter the so-called Promised Land, by not showing clearly the consequences of his wrong attitude, I would forever reinforce the evilness of the children of Israel, and they could never be saved or converted to the positive state. For the sake of their future saving, I and Moses agreed to play out this important scenario. Moreover, I and he knew very well, that the so-called physical Promised Land was not the real positive state but only an appearance of and correspondence to the positive state. Otherwise, the children of Israel wouldn't end up as they did, following their occupation of that land. Instead, after I, in a moment of time, showed Moses all aspects of the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Promised Land, I took him to the real one situated in the positive state of the spiritual world. So, personally, he didn't suffer any harm or he wasn't deprived of anything at all. All he was deprived of was putting up further with arrogant, stiff-necked and stubborn people and their unbearable disobediences and temptations to which they were continuously exposing Me and him. And this is all that can be said about Moses' case at this particular time. More on Moses will be in the next Dialog (106).

Now, the issue of the term "Fire" as related to My Absolute Nature. It should be very much obvious by now what the positive connotation of fire is. Take for example, your Sun which is a huge ball of constantly and unceasingly burning fire. By it, the life on your planet is made possible. The warmth and light of your Sun provides all life on your planet with the necessary conditions for that life to flourish. I am the Absolute Sun of My Creation. The Fire of My Love and its Wisdom continuously radiates and emanates warmth and light to all living, breathing and existing entities by which they are enabled to live, be alive and to properly function. This is the positive connotation of the term "Fire." Even in your everyday life, fire has many positive connotations. You cook your meal with fire; you boil your water with it; you heat your house; you utilize fire in many industrial and commercial enterprises. Of course, as anything else, fire also has its negative correspondences, utilized by the forces of the negative state for their negative and evil purposes. But even in that connotation, if you look at its meaning behind the scene, fire has a purifying effect, burning out all impurities, and setting up a new condition for building something afresh.

Have you ever experienced fire burning in your heart or chest? What about the fire of love, compassion, etc. or, in the negative sense, the burning fire of hate? The Fire of My Love ignited the very life of My Creation and all living and breathing in it. This is the reason I also can be called as Absolute Fire; and in this sense, Fire is Me and I am Fire. Does it answer your question, Peter, on behalf of Betty, Heather, Ardyth and Leilani?

Peter: Well, I have always known the answer to this question. To tell you the truth, I was a little surprised that they could even come up with the need for having the answer to something which is so obvious. But, after all, if it was asked, obviously it needed clarification because someone else would have the same question. Is there anything else today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, it is so. This clarification about the term "Fire" was needed to be clarified. And no, nothing more today. Go and rest now.

One Hundred and Sixth Dialog

September 19, 1999

Peter: For some time now several people have been asking me the same question. At first, I ignored it as idle curiosity, not seeing in it any particular relevance. However, after the same question was asked by a lady doctor from Ostrava, the Czech Republic, I decided to present it to You. You consider whether the question has any merit and multiversal significance. Of course, as always, before formulating that question, I would like to ask You if You have anything to contribute first. During my morning meditative walk it was indicated to me that You would like to make some further comments about or elaborations on the issues discussed in the One Hundred and Fifth Dialog.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for giving Me preference to talk about something which was contained in the previous Dialog, as well as about some other issues. Before going into your particular question, and determining whether it has any merit, or whether it would be useful and beneficial to receive an answer to it, we need to elaborate on three issues. Two of these issues relate to something which was contained in the previous Dialog. The third issue relates to the current condition of the conservative, far right branch of the pseudo-creators who are presently in the New School.

Let us begin with the two issues, discussed in the previous Dialog. The first issue relates to the existence of sub-elemental sub-cells, or single cell life forms, both on the side of the positive as well as on the side of the negative state, respectively. It would be difficult for your human mind to fully understand how the process of occurrence of these singular sub-life forms really takes place in the true reality of their manifestation. However, let us present to you the following theoretical construct, which may bring it closer to your understanding of how this process develops or evolves. Remember, it is only a theoretical construct, and not the true reality of the process itself.

Once any idea occurs in the sentient mind's thought process, it immediately proceeds toward its realization. The process of occurrence of that idea in itself produces tremendous energies. In the state of occurrence of that idea within the sentient mind, there is a general purpose for which that idea is born. The energies resultant from the occurrence of that idea proceed as they spread out from the center, or its core, to the circumference in a circular manner. You can imagine

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

something like throwing a piece of rock in a horizontal manner on the surface of a big body of water. As it hits the surface of that water, it creates circular motions that spread out in larger and larger circles all the way to the edge of the water. Something similar also happens in our case.

Now, the occurred idea, and energies produced by the process of its occurrence, consists of a nucleus or core which occupies the central, or the most inward position in the sentient mind or, better to say it, in one of its thoughts which is very specific and unique to the occurring idea and its content. Around this central nucleus or core, many layers are formed which could be considered as the mentality and body of that idea and its energies. As the idea proceeds to its realization, it penetrates all dimensions and their respective levels where it is manifested in the form of various sentient and non-sentient life forms. The closer to the core of that idea or to its nucleus, the more advanced the life forms are produced.

On the spiritual level, if that idea occurred in the thought processes of someone who is situated on that level, it produces unique sentient life forms. As its energies spread out throughout the spiritual dimension, they produce various consequences, results and outcomes congruent to the quality and content of that idea. The further away from the core of that idea its energies spread out, the less sophisticated non-sentient life forms are initiated. One aspect of that idea relates to the environment and its proper maintenance in order to provide the sentient mind with the most suitable conditions for its unique actualization, realization and creative effort. As a positive side effect of this particular aspect, various components appear that are very helpful in accomplishing this goal of maintenance. On the very elemental and sub-elemental level of this particular idea and its specific energies, or at the very remote state from the state of the very core or central nucleus of that idea, certain minute, sub-microscopic qualities are produced which give rise to the spiritual sub-cells or spiritual single cell life forms which are utilized as a contributory factor to the proper maintenance of the sentient organism and its environment. These particular spiritual sub-cells or spiritual single cell life forms are, in actuality, the minutest or most sub-microscopic particles of sentient energies of the sentient ideas of the sentient thought processes. Thus, they are the minutest possible components of the sentient thought itself. This is the reason we call them spiritual. In this case, on the spiritual level, they don't produce concrete and physical forms. However, their continuous and unceasing occurrence, with their very specific spiritual energies, give an impetus to such

concrete and tangible physical sub-entities to appear — by means of specific sentient mental processes of the sentient mind on the intermediate level.

As this particular idea, and its specific energies, enters the intermediate dimensions, from its very core or central nucleus, it likewise produces all sentient mental processes imparted on the newly created sentient entities, situated in this dimension. Through and by it, this idea, together with its tremendously potent energies, produces all its consequences, outcomes and results, relevant to the nature and quality of the content of that idea, as applicable to the needs of the intermediate dimension. As it spreads out in this particular dimension, in the process of its spread, it gives an impetus to the appearance of all traits, characters and aspects of the specific mental components, which, in turn, by their own specific energies, resultant from their occurrence, give birth to all other non-sentient mental life forms and their respective environments. As a positive side effect of this process, on the sub-elemental level of these mental processes, sub-cell mental energies begin to radiate which give an impetus to the occurrence of sub-cell or single cell mental life forms, which, by the impetus of their original spiritual quality and content, give rise to the appearance of concrete and tangible physical single cell and sub-cell life forms on the level of the physical dimension.

In the moment this idea, with its many times compounded and multiplied spiritual and mental energies, enters the physical dimension, it goes through the same process as described above with the only difference that on this level all its consequences, results and outcomes become externalized and physicalized. From the very core or central nucleus of this idea, now in its physical aspects, physical external life forms appear from the most physically, mentally and spiritually advanced sentient life forms to the most elemental, sub-elemental, single cell and sub-cell concrete life forms. As a positive side effect of this process, on the minutest possible level of these physical energies, all types of microbes, amoebas, protozoans, and similar sub-life entities are produced, which are subsequently utilized for the proper maintenance of the living organism and its environments. In between the most advanced life forms and the most elemental and sub-elemental forms, a myriad of other life forms are produced, such as, for example, animals, birds, fish, insects, etc., with all their respective habitats, relevant to their needs for the purpose of their proper function for which they were allowed to come into their own being and existence. The most external or outward components of the process of the occurrence of this idea and its energies

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

in the sentient mind, as their positive side effects are spread out, in the environmental considerations of its nature, they produce all organic and botanical life forms as seen in positive and beneficial fruit trees, flowers, shrubbery and all species of plants in general. From the thoughts of their needs, the energies of such thoughts produce for these organic and botanical entities a proper environment in which they can strive and reproduce, contributing, in turn, to the ecological balance and beautification of the living environment needed for the sentient entities and their creative effort.

In the positive state of My Creation, because only positive thought processes take place, and only positive ideas are being generated from sentient minds, only positive, beneficial and useful life forms are produced. They are the specific consequences, outcomes and results of these thought processes and their continuously and unceasingly occurring ideas. This factor reflects the Absolute Condition of My Absolute Sentient Mind and Its Absolute Nature, which unceasingly and continuously produces and generates only Absolutely Positive Ideas and their Absolutely Positive Energies and which enables similar processes to take place in all relative sentient minds.

In the negative state and its Zone of Displacement, and in the majority of cases on planet Zero, only negative and evil thought processes take place and only negative and evil ideas are being generated. As they spread out through their own pseudo-dimensions in the same manner as described above, they give rise to life forms which are prevalently negative, poisonous, harmful and destructive, not only to true life but also to their own pseudo-life. Such is the nature of any negative and evil thought, idea or concept. You can consider it as their own negative side effect which produces all kinds of sub-elemental, sub-cells and single cell life forms, which devour indiscriminately anything living and breathing, including their own producers.

Originally, upon the first step of activation of the negative state, its activators had no idea what such thoughts, ideas and concepts could produce, or what their results, consequences and outcomes could and would be. First of all, they needed to learn how to produce such negative and evil thoughts, ideas and concepts. Once they discovered how to produce them, as they were producing them, in the process of that production, tremendous energies were generated which, first all, established all kinds of regions of the Zone of Displacement and all its Hells, spread out in the same manner as described above; and secondly, they led to fabrication of all kinds of negative and evil sentient entities

who produced their own negative and evil thoughts, ideas and concepts which resulted, in the process of their own spread, in the appearance of negative types of animals, birds, fish, insects and negative types of plants and all other negative, poisonous and harmful botanical and biological entities all the way to the very negative, poisonous and destructive bacteria, microbes, viruses and similar sub-cell life forms.

On planet Zero, because it also contains in its environment My positive representatives, either covertly or overtly, because of their primarily positive, good and beneficial thoughts, ideas and concepts, you can find both types of life forms, which are in continuous struggle with each other. The negative life forms constantly attack, kill and devour the positive ones, and the positive ones are in the role of defending themselves and all living organisms as well as their environment against the negative ones.

The problem with this setup is in the fact, that once any thoughts, ideas or concepts are produced in the sentient mind, either in a positive or a negative sense, by their occurrence they generate tremendous energies which drive the quality and content of such thoughts, ideas and concepts to spread out in all directions (symbolically speaking) throughout all dimensions and all their respective levels. At the moment this process begins, it cannot be stopped by any means. The multiversal law requires that their occurrence must proceed to their becoming their own true (in the positive state) or pseudo-true (in the negative state's domain) reality so that they could and would produce all their consequences, outcomes and results.

So, as you see from these facts, the causative factors of all and everything in being and existence, as well as in the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, as well as on planet Zero, are the activities or thought processes of the sentient mind. In the absolute sense, and in their purely positive connotation, the causative factors of all and everything are the activities or thought processes of My Absolute Sentient Mind. Because the basic and fundamental structure of any relative sentient mind derives from the basic and fundamental structure of My Absolute Sentient Mind, the relative sentient mind may and can produce anything it wants by its own thought processes, its ideas, elements of thoughts and concepts. But by the same universal law, anything produced by the sentient mind not only results in its independent consequences, outcomes and results, but, by its feedback effect, it strikes back on its creator or fabricator, whatever the case may be, and causes the sentient mind to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

bear the consequences, outcomes and results of his/her own production — be they positive or negative, respectively.

The multiversal inter- and intra-connectedness and interaction of all sentient entities, as well as all positioned in the negative state and on planet Zero, is such that initiation and production of any elements of thoughts, ideas and concepts has influence on all and everything. Fortunately for the positive state, by its separation and complete insulation from anything initiated and produced in the negative state, no one there is affected by anything negative, bad or evil. Because of the negative states' pseudo-reality, illusions and appearances, whatever is initiated and produced in it, falls away from the positive state, without causing any harm or problems to anyone in it, and subsequently strikes back on the initiators and producers of such negative, bad and evil thoughts, ideas and concepts so that they can bear the consequences of their adverse activities.

However, within the negative state, because of this inter- and intra-connectedness of all and everything, you can easily have an epidemic of bad things happening to all who are in a position of the reception of such negative, bad and evil thoughts, ideas and concepts. On the other hand, on planet Zero, the presence of such negative and evil thoughts, ideas and concepts, has a widespread effect not only on all humans and agents of the negative state but also on My overt and covert representatives, who may suffer from their effects whenever they function not from the position of their being My true representatives but from the position of their human nature. However, even if they function from the position of their role as My representatives, because they carry on themselves a typical human body, it is subject to the influences of such negative, bad and evil thoughts, ideas and concepts and to everything they may produce and establish. This is the reason why even My representatives may get infected and effected by and suffer from all those zillions and zillions of microbes, germs, bacteria, viruses, retroviruses, etc., or by whatever they have there, which are the very negative side effects of all those evil, negative and bad thoughts, ideas and concepts produced by the sentient minds in the negative state.

This is how everything is created, produced or fabricated. Why are we talking about this complicated subject for your human mind? On planet Zero, by the majority of humans and by all scientists, there is a tendency to see everything independent of the sentient mind's activities and its thought processes. For them, it looks as if everything out there, be it organic, inorganic, sentient, non-sentient, zoological, botanical, geological

or anything else, developed and established itself without any connection to the thought processes, ideas, concepts, or whatever, of the sentient mind. This is the infamous view of looking at all events happening and on everything else living, breathing, organic or inorganic, as it is on or at the scene. On the other hand, the above described procedure of the occurrences of all and everything is looking at them as it has been, is and will be happening behind the scene. The difficult subject of this discourse is for your own education so that it can help you learn to look at all and everything as it is behind the scene. It will help you ascertain and understand everything in your life and the pseudo-life of the negative state in general and human life in particular, the way it really is and not the way it appears to be. Thus, it will contribute to your ability to avoid accepting distortions and falsities related to anything which is being presented to you on planet Zero. In an ultimate sense, it will contribute to the establishment of a condition in human life, and in the negative state in general, which will effectively eliminate the accursed position of humans and all other creatures and beings in the negative state, to look on everything from the position of their externals as being independent of their sentient mind. Thus, it will put responsibility for all happenings in sentient and non-sentient life, in all its forms and manifestations, where it belongs — on the sentient mind's thought processes and ideas, thoughts and concepts generated by them, whatever their nature may be. And this is all relative to this particular issue.

The second issue that needs a little further clarification is the issue of why Moses was not allowed to cross the river of Jordan — as discussed in the preceding Dialog. As you remember, Moses was asking Me to allow him to lead the children of Israel into the so-called Promised Land. I told him to stop bothering Me with his request. Well, the words I used at that time were not exactly “bothering Me.” Instead I said to him not to mention that issue to Me again. But for all practical purposes, they could sound to you as not bothering Me again. Can I be bothered with anything at all? Of course not. But we were dealing here with a very important illustration of how not to look at things. Again, the issue is looking behind the scene. Moses' request to Me was from the position of his external mind or from the position of his human nature. That position sees everything as it is on or at the scene. And what does he see from that position? He sees that there is a Promised Land which is the real paradise or, in this case, which is the positive state. But is this reality or only an illusion or appearance of reality? Externally, it looks like reality itself. However, internally, it is only a correspondence, or, in this case, a physical representation of reality itself or, in this case, of the positive state.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

So, what would happen, if, under those conditions, I would listen to Moses' request and allow him to enter the illusion or appearance of the positive state? By that factor, being in the externals, or seeing that Land from the position of his externals, he would wrongly assume that it is the real positive state and not its spiritual correspondence. What kind of example would he set up for the children of Israel in that case? Don't forget that their nature was the epitome of the most externals of their external collective mind. They had no concept of anything internal or truly spiritual. So, being in that position, if someone like Moses, who was My only true representative on planet Zero at that time, would enter that Promised Land, he would lock up the children of Israel into their external condition for good and forever. In that case, they would deny that anything truly spiritual exists at all and, at the same time, they would consider the external life, and the life in the Promised Land, as well as the Promised Land itself, as the true positive state beyond and above which nothing else exists. In that case, not one of the Children of Israel's clans could ever be saved. Moreover, a real danger from that permission existed also for Moses himself.

Consider this: Moses was a representation of the true spiritual state rooted in his internals where My Divine was present in him. However, he was asking Me from the state of his human nature, or from the state of his externals, to permit him to enter the so-called Promised Land. If I were to permit that to happen to him, I would lock him up likewise in the state of his own externals or in his own human nature. By that factor, Moses would have no choice but to consider his human nature and its external mode of functioning and perceiving reality as the true internals and the true spirituality; that is to say, he would assume it to be the true and the only reality. In the moment he would do that, he would lose any connection to Me, the presence of My divinity in him would be removed and he would cease to be My only representative. Do you really believe that he would want this to happen? Absolutely not!

What happened here was that it was necessary to establish an important illustration and demonstration to all in My creation, who were very carefully watching My interactions with Moses and his behavior, as well as the behaviors and reactions of the children of Israel, of how the situation was being set up for clearly distinguishing the true reality of being and existence from its corresponding factors as they appear on or at the scene. Do you realize what kind of danger existed at that time if I were to go along with Moses' request? By allowing him, from the position of his externals, and at the same time from the position of My Absolute Nature, to enter the so-called Promised Land, I would eternally establish

an upside-down position in My entire Creation. By affirming his position and the position of the so-called Promised Land as the true and the only reality of the positive state, I would definitely and irrevocably place the illusion and appearance of reality as the only reality, and the only true reality as an illusion and appearance. All inhabitants of the positive state, in that very moment, would have no choice but to consider themselves unreal, living in illusions and appearances, and those in the negative state and on planet Zero, as the only ones who have the true and real life. It would be a deception on the multiversal scale. In that case, all inhabitants of My positive state would commit existential suicide. By denying Moses' request, I firmly and convincingly established the line between what is real and what is only an illusion and appearance of that real. That way the reality of the true life of everyone in the positive state was eternally reconfirmed, and the illusions and appearances of the other life were reestablished and their claim to become real was denied. And this is the way it was supposed to be.

This discourse can again be considered as a good example of how things are if you look upon them behind the scene and not as they are being played out at or on the scene. And this is all that I wanted to contribute to this particular issue.

The third issue that needs to be touched upon at this time is the situation in the camp of the far right branch of the pseudo-creators. It concerns both those who are in the New School as a result of their conversion to the positive state as well as those who are not yet at that point. Those who are in the New School and to whom some of My female representatives were assigned in order to learn the truth about femininity, love, affection and equal value of all principles of femininity and masculinity, have now learned their lessons and consequently, their attitude in this respect is dramatically changing. In this respect, your interactions with each other, the interactions of My female and male representatives on planet Zero, are instrumental in this process. As you change your interrelationships to the true positive mode, treating each other with love and respect, so are the pseudo-creators doing that together with you. And vice versa: As they change in the positive direction, so are you enabled to do the same. This is the result of your synergetic work with them. We'll talk more about this issue sometime in the future when the time will be more ripe to go deeper into the meaning of this collaborative effort. For that reason, Peter, go ahead and ask your question.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Peter: I am somewhat reluctant to do so because the answer to that question should be obvious to every reader of Your New Revelation, especially of the Third Chapter of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***. It concerns Your disciple Peter, and the mode of his death. It is alleged that he chose to be crucified on the cross in an upside-down position because he didn't find himself worthy to be crucified the same way as You were. Is there any significance or message for us in that event? I know the answer to this question but people are asking and asking, so here it is.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are right, Peter, they should know the answer from the above mentioned Chapter in My New Revelation. As is obvious from that Chapter, Peter was representing the entire Christian movement or the entire Christian Church in all its religious forms and sects and what their fate is going to be. So, his choice of death was indicative of the ways of how that movement will be developing. As you know, the Christian Church, in their doctrines, reversed the order of the multiverse and distorted and falsified My Divine Truth. The external rituals and forms of worshipping they put on the top (feet on the top) and the internals, and the true spiritual factor of life, rooted in My Divine Love and Divine Wisdom and My Absolute Freedom and Independence, they placed on the bottom (head on the bottom). By doing that, they destroyed any spiritual, or any other meaning of anything related to the positive state and My True New Nature, as well as to My Old Nature. Thus, they established on this planet, as well as in some other regions of the Zone of Displacement, a dead spirituality which has no relevance whatsoever to anything at all the way things are in the true reality of My positive state and its spirituality. In other words, they crucified Me, in Peter, once more. And this is the true meaning of Peter's choice of death, apart from his own personal and individual reasons. At this time, momentarily, nothing more needs to be said about this event. I would suggest now to finish it for today. Go in peace and take care of some other pending business.

Peter: Thank You very much for everything You revealed to us today.

One Hundred and Seventh Dialog

September 21, 1999

Peter: Today, I don't have any specific questions from anyone or from myself. However, again, I feel mildly frustrated that the readers of these Dialogs are unable or unwilling or, excuse me, too lazy to utilize their deductive abilities, and deduce their own answers to their own questions without posing them to You through me. Now, I really don't mind at all if people are asking questions, the answers to which have not been included in any of the books of Your New Revelation, and especially in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***. Also, I can understand if there is a reasonable need to update or elaborate on some of them because there may be some additional information which can and may enhance our understanding of whatever is contained in any particular information or idea. Moreover, as it became obvious to me, some readers of these Dialogs, tended to make some wrong, or even false conclusions about certain statements that You made in one of the Dialogs. Perhaps You may have some comments about this situation or maybe You would like to talk about something else today.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Your mild frustration is understandable. However, don't forget about the typical human nature which you all have and with which you all have to put up on a continuous daily basis. From its position, for it, it is very natural to rely on someone else's input or answers to their questions and/or concerns. Please, do remember that the human mind was originally structured by the activators of the negative state and fabricators of humans in such a way so as to make it very difficult for them or to be unwilling to bother with searching for the answers in their own mind or in the material which has already been presented to them and which contains the answers to their questions, perhaps not directly, but is very much deducible from the content of that written material. After all, in their human nature, you have to look at them as small children who need to be given answers to the same questions over and over again, no matter how clear-cut the previous answers were.

On the other hand, don't forget another important fact, which has already been mentioned a few times before, that if the questions are coming your way, even if they have been answered before or if, at least, they are deducible from whatever has been written before, it is quite feasible that we need to look upon them from an entirely different perspective.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

At the same time, it can be expected that some readers may have come to wrong, or even false, conclusions about certain information discussed previously. Take for example, the very important information contained in The One Hundredth Dialog. In that Dialog, which can be considered a tremendous breaking point and more than just a milestone between what was before and what will be after, for the first time information was included regarding the ending of this cycle of time, instituting the transitional period and releasing an entirely new and different aspect of My Absolute New Nature, which will rule the incoming new cycle of time; and about their specific energies preceding all these steps. What could be the problem with this unusual information in the eyes of some readers of these dialogs?

One problem was in an inappropriate perception that these events will be happening in a reversed order by which My Creation is ruled and by which it functions. Thus, it was somehow assumed that these events will first begin on planet Zero in the lives of My representatives. And not only that, but the new and different aspect of My Absolute New Nature will be released first, following which all other steps would be taken. Now, this is really a very inappropriate perception or conclusion which was made from the content of the discussed Dialog. The reality of this situation is that, first, there is a preceding energy of these events. As that energy spreads out, it goes first to the most within spiritual dimension of My Creation and corresponding to it, the Spiritual Mind of every sentient entity. After it is registered there, it proceeds and is registered in the intermediate dimension and corresponding to it, the intermediate mind of every sentient entity. Following that, it enters the external and physical dimension and corresponding to it, the external mind of every sentient entity.

Once this particular energy was registered in those three dimensions and all levels of the sentient mind, then, and only then, it is made available to My representatives on planet Zero, and through them and by them, it is placed in the unconscious portion of the human mind, as well as in the unconscious minds of all inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement.

Now, these energies only bring information about these events, but not the events themselves, in order to prepare everyone for what is to come. Such preparation is a very necessary step in this process because it prevents everyone from any possibility of a fatal shock occurring.

Another problem in this respect, may be in an inappropriate perception that release of the new and different aspect of My Absolute New Nature precedes all these events. If this were to be the case, it would be released during the life of this particular cycle of time which is ruled and made

possible by an entirely different aspect of My Absolute New Nature. To release something new and different into something which has a totally different connotation, meaning, purpose and goal than that which is contained in that new and different, would mean to prevent it from completion of whatever it was designated to complete and accomplish. And not only that, but by such a premature release you would endanger the life of everyone situated in this cycle of time because their life and living is totally and completely dependent on the other aspects of My Absolute New Nature which rules and makes possible life of this particular cycle of time and all its inhabitants. So, in order to prevent this from happening, you first institute the transitional period during which everyone's mind and life is restructured, renewed and rebuilt and subsequently brought into alignment with the new and different aspect. Once it is at the point of successful completion of this restructuring, rebuilding and renewal, then and only then, I release My New and Different Aspect which will rule the incoming cycle of time.

The third problem could be detected in some of your tendencies to expect that all these important things will be happening during your lifetime on planet Zero. The possibility exists that you are making the same mistake as My disciples did, expecting that My Second Coming will be taking place during their physical lifetime. I can assure you that it is very unlikely that these things will be happening before your recall from planet Zero. Also, the timing is wrong. If you take into consideration the fact that this cycle of time, as counted in human temporal terms from our position (not the scientific one!), has been in its place for about 24 billion years; and if you divide its course into four equal phases, then each phase would continue for about six billion years.

Now, you were informed that this cycle of time entered its last phase. As a matter of fact, within this last phase, it entered into its last segment. If you divide this last phase into four segments, and if this cycle of time is at the point of being in its last segment, then you would still have about one and a half billion years for completion of its course. Of course, these are typical human measurements. In the true reality of the course of this cycle of time, it is not counted in human temporal elements but in the condition of its state and process. Remember, it was predicted by Me personally, that this very last segment will be considerably shortened in its manifestation and course because of the factor of the Great Tribulation, which is the pseudo-winning of the negative state. So, in this sense, the mentioned one and a half billion years could mean something entirely different, time-wise, than you all would tend to think. Thus, any speculation about time in this respect would be a totally futile and unproductive venture. You would be wasting your precious time.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

I see a question in your mind, Peter, about how My Second Coming fits into all of this.

Peter: Yes, you are right. Excuse me, but I am somewhat confused about the relevance of Your Second Coming to all of this.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You can consider the entire meaning of My Second Coming as a summary of all these happenings. As you remember from ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***, it was indicated there that the Second Coming has many phases. You can also consider the above described phases as the very specific phases of My Second Coming which will culminate in the closure of this cycle of time, in a permanent abolishment and elimination of the negative state and its end product — human life in its negative aspects. The completion of the release of the new and different aspect of My Absolute New Nature will be the very last segment of the last phase of My Second Coming. In that moment the new cycle of time and state will begin.

An important note of clarification: When we are talking about the various cycles of times, we are using the terminology of the physical multiverse. In the non-physical multiverse, which is non-time and non-space bound, the term that needs to be used is — cycles of states and cycles of their processes. This means that a new state is established and, once it is established, it begins its new process. So, whenever we are talking about cycles of times, at the very same time, we mean cycles of states and their processes. Remember that!

At this point I would like to address some other issues. In your Saturday's phone conversation with Tom Oudal, the issue of the Nine Circles of Creation was raised; also, a question came about whether I am going to create, at some point in state, process, time and space, etc., a Tenth Circle of Creation. In a general sense, your conceived idea is right about the process of continuous creation and maintenance of My Creation. As you remember, it was clearly indicated in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** that any time something new is being released from My New Nature; or when I acquired My New Nature, as a consequence of that process, from the very energies of that process, something new was being created, which was added on to the current Creation. This is a natural outcome of My very Nature. If I am the Creator, and if My Nature is such that it continuously and unceasingly creates, then, in that case, whatever is happening within Me is projected not only to all who already are in being and existence, but it also results in an entirely new creation. You can say for sure that the

process of creation is inherent in My Nature. There is no other state but the state of creation and everything related to it.

However, let me tell you something: When, a few years back, we were talking about the Nine Circles of Creation (in the book ***Reality, Myths & Illusions***), we were talking in a typical theoretical sense. We used a theoretical construct to depict, in terms understandable to your human mind, how My Creation is structured. Those terms were mere orientation points. They don't reflect the actual reality of the structure of My Creation. Based on that, some of you erroneously concluded that those Circles are factual concrete physical entities. It is time that you transcend this inappropriate understanding and the way you visualize the structure of Creation. In the reality of their structure and nature, they are pure states and their relevant processes, which reflect the spiritual factors of Creation, as they are perceived, conceived, manifested, appeared and applied in various dimensions of the overall multiverse.

In the moment My New Nature came to its fruition, and in the moment the building of the New Universe was completed, a transcending state, process, condition and all else was established. As you remember, both My New Nature in its Absolute State, Condition and Process, as well as the nature of the New Universe in its relative state, condition and process, reflect the unifying, integrative and harmonizing principle. This principle, and what it contains, was beamed out to all those theoretical Circles. As it surrounded, penetrated and was absorbed by all in those Circles, their differentiation, separation, boundaries or whatever they had up to that point, were removed and they merged into each other becoming One Infinitely Diverse State, Condition, Process and Manifestation of Creation. Thus, in this particular sense, no such circles are in existence any longer. What remained however, were their corresponding factors in a spiritual sense; meaning, the infinite diversity of everyone's manifestation has a spiritual correspondence to the various spiritual elements contained in the New Universe, and, in an ultimate sense, has a spiritual correspondence to the various Absolute Spiritual Elements contained in My Absolute New Nature.

This individual diversity may give an impression that such Circles still exist; while in fact, they are only aspects of the same source and integrative unity — My Absolute New Nature and the nature of the New Universe. On the other hand, you have been told many times in the process of the transmission of My New Revelation in all its sources that nothing is the same anywhere and anywhen. And yet, some of you still continue to cling to the old and outdated conceptualization of everything that you have been told about up to this point. It is the wisdom and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

maturity of your perception and understanding to recognize this fact and to move on to the transcending understanding of all concepts, ideas, words, depictions, terms, constructs or whatever we were talking about in the past.

Yes, before My New Nature was established and before My New Universe was created, the separation, isolation, distinction, boundaries and differences did exist to a certain extent. Along the line of these boundaries, the impression could easily have been made that they are concrete and tangible Circles. And in some ways, at least from the position of anyone's external mind, they were. However, this is no longer the case. Otherwise, the acquirement of My Absolute New Nature would be an unproductive and futile venture. What would be the purpose of undertaking such an important and crucial step, if, as a result of that change, no one and nothing else would change? If My Creation, in all aspects of its being and existence, is in the condition of absolute dependence on whatever is happening with Me and in Me, then, in that case, any change in Me and with Me, would have an immediate tremendous impact on all and everything in My Creation and, as a result of that, My Creation, in its relative condition, would fundamentally change likewise along the line of My Absolute Changes.

Even in your pseudo-world and in the negative state in general, nothing is the same as it was before I changed. You can attest to it yourself. Just compare how life used to be in the last century, or even twenty years ago, and you'll see that nothing is the same. All these changes, whether positive in the positive state or negative in the negative state, reflect and are the consequences of the change in My Absolute Nature. As you remember, any change in the positive state, which always results from the change in My Nature, has a painful ripple effect on everyone in the negative state and in human life. Because of that, the inhabitants of the negative state and planet Zero, must do something to remove that painful ripple. As you know, they don't want to change anything. But, by the law of cause and effect, they are put in a position of reaction to anything happening in the positive state. Because of that, they fundamentally change likewise. Usually, they become more negative, evil, vicious, murderous, cunning, sophisticated and pretentious. In the external technology, they make their own progress.

Now, this factor in the negative state reflects its opposing trend to anything happening in the positive state. Therefore, whereas everyone in the positive state, as a result of the changes in My Nature, becomes more and more productive, constructive, creative, useful, beneficial, helpful, positive, good, loving, wise, kind, understanding, accepting, compassionate, empathetic, objective, righteous, just, merciful, forgiving,

joyous, happy, having fun, being at ease and at peace; in the negative state, the same changes accomplish exactly the opposite of these traits and characteristics. As you know, they trigger only that which is inherent in the nature of the negative state.

So, as you see from these facts, nothing, absolutely nothing is the same in anything and anyone. The sameness which you experience in your human life, and in the negative state in general, only looks the same from the external observation as it appears on or at the scene. However, behind the scene, it is not the same and can never be the same again. And this is the way it is. So, as you see, Peter, your mild frustration, which you expressed in the opening remarks of this particular Dialog, brought out the need to talk about these facts. Therefore, it served a good purpose.

Peter: I would never have thought that we would end up like this. However, I see the tremendous importance of this reminder. Is there anything else today that You would like to talk about or to bring to our unreliable and narrow attention?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, there is. We need to talk about something else. But first, I would like you to take a break.

Peter: Very well, I will.

(After the break)

Peter: This break ended up being a very long one. As you know, our area had a problem. We were without electricity for more than 14 hours. Nothing could be done during that time. In the meantime, I received two questions from Dr. Ardyth Norem, who is asking for clarification about some issues discussed in Dialog 106. Any comment about this unusual interruption?

The Lord Jesus Christ: This event points out very clearly the nature of human life. If you carefully analyze all aspects of the structure of human life, you will find not one area, yes, not one, which wouldn't be dependent on some external factors. You lost your electricity and everything became almost paralyzed. Basically, you couldn't do anything because whatever you wanted to undertake, was dependent on that electricity. So, you have here an excellent illustration of an upside-down position of everything which comprises human life and the life of the negative state in general. Instead of the environment being regulated by and dependent upon the sentient mind, as is the case in the positive state of My Creation, in the negative state and human life the majority of factors derive from and are

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

dependent on some external environmental input. The entire technology of human life is a good testimony to this fact. Everything is made in such a manner so as to make human life dependent on some gadgets or some constructs of technical and/or technological nature. Whenever a failure in any of them happens, your everyday life is disrupted, and everything comes almost to a standstill. As a result, you sit around very much frustrated waiting for the repair to be made. What a wasteful and futile arrangement this is!

However, if you take into consideration the need for activation of the negative state and fabrication of human life, then in that case, you would have no recourse but to substantially deviate from the ways by which life in the positive state is structured. This relates to the factor of how the human mind is structured as compared with how the sentient mind in the positive state is structured. If the fabricators of humans would follow the blueprint of the sentient mind as it is in the positive state, they could never establish a lifestyle which would totally differ from anything as it is in the lifestyle of the positive state. In that case, illustration and demonstration of the typical human life, and what it is like to be a human, could never have happened.

As you know, in the positive state the sentient mind of all its inhabitants is structured in such a manner so as to have total and complete control of their respective environment. The specific energies, which are being unceasingly discharged in the process of the activities of any sentient mind (by its thought processes and all other mental processes), are directed, among many other things, toward the regulation of its environment, making it dependent on what and how the sentient mind desires it to be. So, any internal spiritual, intermediate-mental or external-physical environment fully reflects this regulatory principle of any sentient mind.

In human life the situation is different. Although originally, all inventions of any technological constructs stemmed from the discoveries of the human sentient mind, they were/are directed to their external positioning in such a manner so as to make human life dependent on them, instead of their being dependent on the energies of the human sentient mind. Thus, as you can see from this, those external technical gadgets regulate most aspects of everyday living of humans, and humans become dependent on them.

This situation is the result of the structure of the human brain and its nervous system, through which and by which the human spirit and its mentality is allowed to discharge its specific and unique life. As you know from your physiological and neurological science, the human brain

is functioning only at about five percent of its capacity. The rest of it is dormant or asleep. In some rare instances, in the so-called geniuses, it may function at about ten percent of its capacity, but never more. However, also in this ten percent capacity, there are certain limitations of how such a respective human genius will manifest his/her abilities. It is almost impossible to find a genius who would be *equally* able to function in all areas of human endeavors. Usually, his/her genius is limited to one or two, rarely three, areas of his/her expertise.

So, how potent are the energies that human thought and mental processes can emanate and radiate into their environment in order to be able to regulate it without using any external means for that purpose? From the five percent, or even from ten percent, such energies are so feeble that they have very little impact on their surroundings. Could you imagine what would happen if the human brain were to function at the level of 80 to 90 percent of its capacity — as is the case in the positive state? In that case, the human spirit and its mentality, by the means of its brain, could produce such potent energies that it would very easily be able to regulate all its environmental needs from within itself and not from outside itself (as is the case at the present level of its functioning).

Take, for example, your electricity. The energy of any spirit and its mentality and, consequently, of the physical brain, is very much electric energy or to what it spiritually corresponds. In a higher sense, the electric energies are the offshoot of the spiritual sexual energies which are transmitted to all living and breathing sentient, as well to all non-sentient entities, in order to convey to them their individualized and personalized specific life. So, if you have at your disposal 80 to 90 percent of your brain function, in the process of its spiritual, mental and physical activities, it would produce such potent energies that, by directing them into the circuitry of electric wiring, it would produce electricity of such a magnitude that it could support an entire city as large as Santa Barbara, for example, for about five continuous and uninterrupted years. In that case, you wouldn't have to wait on some specialist to repair the fallen electric wires, or whatever was causing an electric outage, but instead, you would direct a certain portion of your spiritual, mental and physical energies into the electric circuitry of your house, for example, which would instantly restore the needed electricity for you. And this is the way how things are in the positive state of My Creation at all its levels and in all its dimensions. By and through the corresponding factors of these processes, they are spread out in this manner from the most within spiritual dimension to the most without physical dimension.

Of course, as mentioned above, should the human brain find itself with such a capability, the illustration and demonstration of the nature of the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

negative state, or of the nature of that other type of life other than the life of the positive state, could never be accomplished. In that case, by its ingenious abilities, it would be able to discover very fast what the true nature and purpose of the negative state is all about. If it were to find out the real meaning of and purpose for the activation of the negative state, it would instantly invalidate the entire experimental process. In that case, no genuine and true learning could be produced from the entire setup of the negative state and its pseudo-life as well as human pseudo-life. This is the reason why it was necessary to limit the human brain function to 5, or extremely rarely, to 10 percent of its capacity.

Another important factor of this negative setup was how the human body and its genetic code, by and through its genes, was fabricated. If you carefully analyze the human genetic code, as it is also known to your genetic scientists, you will find a very interesting phenomenon. Ninety nine point nine (99.9) percent of human genes, in all humans from the very beginning of their fabrication to every single human presently alive, regardless of their race, color of their skin, environmental, familial, social or any other factors, is exactly the same. Any diversity in this respect stems only from that meager .1 percent. Moreover, most of the variations in the remaining one-tenth of a percent don't appear as bunched up into geographic regions or racial groups but instead, are spread out around the globe. To say it differently, this one-tenth of a percent that makes one person unique is scattered about in other unique genomes all over your planet, binding all humans in a complex tangle of interrelationships and interdependency. This tangle spreads up from far below. All the anatomical differences between humans and chimpanzees for example, including the uniqueness of human mental processes, arise from slight changes in a few genes which regulate fetal development. Nine-tenths of human genes are identical to those of a mouse; more than a third of the genes of the worm are shared with humans, and genomically speaking, even bacteria are your relatives.

What is this situation telling you? Why would such a setup exist at all, making your human bodies, genetically speaking, so uniform not only with each other but also with all animals beginning from primates, all the way down to a sub-cell, such as bacteria, for example? This setup was a purposeful design by the original pseudo-creators. Two primary reasons existed for this choice (among some other secondary reasons). The first one was a scientific need to differentiate from resembling anything at all as it was set up to be in the positive state. Any similarity, scientifically speaking, would invalidate the entire experiment. In no way could the negative state be activated if it were to follow the same structure as it was in the positive state.

In the positive state of My Creation, every single sentient entity, no matter where, when or at what level of being and existence he/she is situated, is unique in all aspects of its being — from the most within of its spirit to the most without of its body. Not one gene, or to what such gene corresponds on the spiritual and intermediate level, is ever the same as in any other sentient entity. Yes, these unique genes, or their spiritual correspondences, stem from the same source — Me. However, as you know, each sentient entity is originated from a unique element or its idea, contained in My Absolute Structural Integrity, giving that entity a unique life. In My Absolute State, all such elements, present in their infinite and inexhaustible numbers, are infinitely unique and different in their nature and content, so that there is not one, no, not one, which would have the same genetic identity (symbolically speaking) or even similarity with any other one, the only exception being that they all stem from Me. As you see, nothing can be redundant in Me. Otherwise I would not be Absolute. Any redundancy, even in the minutest element, would preclude the State of My Absoluteness.

With such an arrangement, if the pseudo-creators were to follow the same design, should it be possible to do that, they could not activate the negative state, ever. In that case, there would be no difference between the two. So, if the positive state is founded on the fundamental principles of uniqueness, individuality, personalization and independence on any external or interdependent factors of every single entity, no matter where and when he/she is situated, then, in that case, in order to activate the negative state, you need to come up with an idea of commonality, uniformity, interdependency and dependency on the external factors.

It is said above “should it be possible to do that.” The reason it was formulated like that is in the fact that no matter how hard anyone would try to produce or to fabricate any type of life by his/her own design or idea, no matter how perfect it would seem to be, it would end up in the same type of commonality, uniformity, inter- and intra-dependency and dependency on the external factors as the pseudo-creators did. The reason for such an outcome lies in the factor of relativity of any sentient mind. Anything relative cannot contain infinite and inexhaustible varieties of all elements which would give the new life forms infinite diversity, individuality, independency or anything at all contained in the life forms originated in My Absolute State.

The second reason for this negative setup is in the fact of the scientific experimental design itself. In order for any experiment to be valid, you need to establish exactly the same conditions for each subject of the experiment so that you could manipulate and influence them all at exactly the same level and in exactly the same degree. Can you imagine

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

the scientific nightmare if each fabricated human, in its physical endowment, or in its physical wrappings, represented by his/her human body, would be totally and completely different in its genetic makeup from any other human body? If this were to be the case, the pseudo-creators could not follow the development and function of humans the way they designed it to be. And not only that but they could not manipulate and influence human development according to their well-designed scientific plan. The entire setup would be out of their control. And even though the spirit and soul of each such human individual would be different and unique, nevertheless, they would be forced to function and to manifest themselves by and through the means of the very same type of body, which would limit their ability to come through in their full capacity and which would make them dependent on the capacity and limitations of that body and not vice versa, as the case was in the positive state.

This setup was one of the main purposes of the scientific experimental design of the original pseudo-creators. As you know from ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***, the question they had at that time was exactly that: What would be the outcome if they were to fabricate certain very specific types of physical bodies which would have the same genetic makeup, across the board, and into such bodies they would force the spirit and soul, limiting their function to the limitations of those bodies, exactly the same genetically and, at the very same time, making those bodies dependent on their external environmental factors?

Moreover, what would happen if they would give the same genomes to all animals, all the way down to bacteria, microbes, single cell sub-life forms, etc. as they are contained in those human bodies? Or the other way around: if they would use all animal genes and fabricate all human bodies in the same genetic structural design as the animals have, from the single cell life forms or sub-elemental sub-life forms all the way up to primates? They started with single cell sub-life forms and developed from them in an evolutionary manner all other animal life forms until they arrived at primates from genes of which, containing now all the genes of all other life and sub-life forms, they fabricated a typical human body into which they forced their spirits and souls.

From this design one of the most important factors could be derived. Life on planet Zero evolved in an evolutionary manner without any involvement of any God or His/Her spiritual factors. No spirituality, no individuality, no personality, no independence, no free will or choice, no internals and nothing of that nature existed or was taken into account during this development. Instead, only inevitability, commonality, uniformity, dependency, external factors and similar characteristics were

the main driving force of human life. And this is the way how the negative state and its end product — human life, could be established. In order to preserve some semblance of diversity, one-tenth of a percent of those genes were allowed to be its factor, giving rise to different races, colors of skin and relevant to them, social and cultural differences. But they are all superficial and external, having no impact on or having no ability to change the original structural design of the human genetic code. No matter what, the human spirit and soul have no choice in the matter but to function by and through that specific human body. Hence, all limitations and problems of human life. At this point I would like to stop talking about this issue and address Ardyth's questions, if I may.

Peter: Of course You may. She would like to have clarification on the following issues: 1. Discussion is provided on the outcomes of the positive and negative thoughts. New Age people have been saying that our thoughts create our reality and the events in our lives — for years. What is the difference between what is being taught here and what they have been proponents of? 2. In the discussion about Moses, how can it be that one person's perspective is able to determine the outcome for the whole of Israel? Are they not also unique and independent sentient beings? Doesn't this give too much power and influence to one person and one role? What if that person made a serious error? Would all of Israel really be locked into the negative state?

The Lord Jesus Christ: How many times, in the process of transmission of My New Revelation, has it been indicated to all of you that the negative state likes to take some ideas contained in My Old Revelation, as well as now in My New Revelation, and utilize them for its own negative and evil purposes, embellishing them by its own distortions and falsities so that it could corrupt all those numerous followers of its teachings or ideas? And how many times have we used the metaphor of a barrel of brimstone and honey in order to illustrate what happens to something good and positive if it's absorbed, swallowed and buried under mountains of distortions and falsities, becoming totally useless, impotent and unproductive? What is this fact telling you? That any teachings, presently existing on your planet, including the so-called New Age movement, can and may contain in them such ideas of truth which they use in order to corrupt, mislead, confuse and brainwash people into believing that, if they contain such truthful ideas, then everything else in their statements must be true and proper? And this is the exact purpose for having such stolen positive and true ideas in order to make all their distortions and falsities be accepted as true, reflecting the true reality of the positive state. Don't be taken in by any of that. Moreover, their definition of what is positive and negative, respectively, is not the same as ours. They come from the externals, from the position of the negative

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

state, in which they are embedded. We come from the internals, from the position of the positive state, where no distortions and falsities are conceived. Such a different stance gives an entirely different meaning to the same proclamations.

As far as Moses' case is concerned, Ardyth's position is from the perspective of the present time and not from the perspective of that time. Such concepts as uniqueness, individuality, independence, freedom of choice and similar characteristics were unknown to anyone. In fact, they would be laughable at that time. At that time, to the time of My First Coming, everyone was coming to planet Zero (and we are repeating this over and over again) to illustrate life and living by necessity and no freedom of choice as well as by external examples only. Under those conditions, one person could influence the destiny of an entire nation for many centuries to come. Your human history is full of such examples. In the case of Moses, the situation was much different and much more dangerous because he was My only representative. In the eyes of the children of Israel, he spoke and behaved on My behalf. As you know, they were very much afraid of him because of My intense presence in him and with him, and whenever he came out to speak to them, he had to cover his face so that they could look at him and listen to what he was telling them. Because of that, whatever he said or any way he behaved, it was perceived as I who was saying that and behaving like that. So, it was not Moses per se, who would cause their lockup in the negative state, but I personally. So, when Moses made his only mistake, if I were not to take away his privilege of entering the so-called Promised Land, it would be assumed that it was I who made that mistake. In that case, the children of Israel would have no choice but to conclude that I am not Absolute, that I am limited as they are and therefore, they have no need to change anything about themselves. Hence, being locked up in the negative state indefinitely. So, it is not as if one person would have such tremendous power over all (although in your history there are plenty of examples for this to be the case), but it was I who would have this ultimate power, represented in Moses' role and position.

Peter: Thank You very much for this response and for everything which You revealed to us in this Dialog. Is there anything else You would like to talk about today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. No, not today. There is one topic that we need to discuss but it is very sensitive, touchy and troubling for you. Because of that I would recommend to take it up in a separate Dialog. For now, go and do other chores that you need to take care of. Have a nice and peaceful day.

One Hundred and Eighth Dialog

September 24, 1999

Peter: To tell you the honest truth, I am approaching this particular Dialog with great reluctance and trepidation. The issue which You would like to address may cause problems to some of the readers. I am very much afraid that it may turn some readers off, discouraging them from reading these Dialogs further or even entirely rejecting Your New Revelation. As you see, I am considerably blocked from proceeding further.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, I understand your human predicament. You don't want to be rejected and even more, you don't want any reader of these Dialogs to reject My New Revelation or to stop supporting it by whatever means available to and preferred by them. Let me tell you, and all readers of these Dialogs, something important. **Whatever will follow, in no way is it for the purpose of condemning, judging, rejecting, turning off or hurting anyone in any way.** Instead, it is for the purpose of clarification, enlightenment, understanding and seeing things behind the scene so that an opportunity is given to everyone involved for the appropriate amendment and correction of their insights and the way they have perceived and accepted some other persons' roles, positions and assignments, being under their influence or considering them to be what they, in the true reality of their function, are not. Also, to give a very feasible opportunity for these persons' function to change and accept them into the new role of becoming My representatives on planet Zero. Of course, all these needed corrections and amendments have to be made by all involved only and only if they choose to do so by their own free will and choice, recognizing and accepting the fact that they do need to make them or that some of them do need to recede from their present negative role and function and accept from Me a new one.

The important point here to realize is that you have entered a very crucial time in the history of humankind and in your own role and position. In order for everything to proceed the way it should proceed in accordance with My plans, it is very important that everything and, most importantly, everyone in your perception and understanding is recognized as who/what they truly are and what their original purpose was for becoming who/what they truly are and for accepting the role and position in which they presently are finding themselves.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

In other words, in order to proceed further, you need to make things right and correct all inappropriate perceptions about anyone or anything. The issue and the need here are to recognize the truth of the matter and to accept it on face value, regardless of how you feel or think about or consider someone or something in your own mind; and regardless of what your current relationship with those persons is.

Consider this factor: What could happen if you continue in believing and accepting someone or something to be who/what they are not? In that case, you would be accepting outright falsities and you would have a totally distorted view about those persons' roles and positions. If, in all other aspects of your life and attitude you are on the right track, but if, in relationship to some other persons you hold to the incorrect view about who they are and what their true role in all of this, or in relationship to My New Revelation is, then, in that case, by means of holding on to this inappropriate view, you would become a target for the renegades and they would begin to imperceptibly influence your life, and they could sidetrack you from your proper spiritual path and from continuing to be My true representatives. Because of this very realistic danger, we need to talk about this issue at this particular time, even though you, Peter, are so reluctant to go into it, anguishing and being miserable about the need to do so.

Well, at each junction of something new and different coming into focus at all levels of being and existence, as well as at all levels of pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, everyone is put into a position of choice by their free will — either accept the need for change, and subsequently and accordingly change, by removing from their mind and life any possible inappropriate views, perceptions, thoughts, feelings, or whatever they have in this respect; or reject the need for change and continue to hold on to what they thought was right and proper, even though it was not so in any aspect of its manifestation. Unfortunately, by the nature and law of any choice, it bears its consequences, outcomes and results. Now, this is being said not as a threat or some kind of imposition in order to force you into choosing this vital change, but it is said solely for the good of your own life.

Having said these preliminary warnings, we may proceed toward the discussion of what this is all about. However, before going into a concrete example of the discussed issue, we need to precede it by its history. This history will be, to a certain extent, a reiteration of what was revealed before in the ***Corollaries...*** and in some of the previous Dialogs. We need to repeat some of it in order to build a foundation for the

understanding of what really happened a few years ago with you, Peter, and with some others who broke away from you at that time or from whom you needed to dissociate yourself for some of your own important spiritual reasons. This will be looking behind the scene and not as it happened at that time on the scene.

As you remember so well, when the pseudo-creators returned and took over the entire Zone of Displacement and planet Zero, two things happened at that time: First, they had noticed that certain humans didn't behave, act and live their lives the way they were supposed to as any other humans, the way they were fabricated by the pseudo-creators. This fact aroused their curiosity and they decided to observe, as well as to experiment with this particular brand of humans. These humans were all, in some way or other, connected to My New Revelation. The major shock they experienced upon their return was from the fact that it was possible that something like ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** existed on planet Zero at all. The shock was about its straightforward literal meaning which didn't contain any hidden, secret information which would make it impossible to understand anyone from the position of their external human mind, from which position all humans function and which is the only one available to them. The pseudo-creators didn't care at all about My Old Revelation, as recorded in the Christian Bible, for example, because it was written in pure correspondences, the true meaning of which was eluding everyone. As a matter of fact, they liked for humans to have these so-called Holy Books, because humans have been taking everything in them literally, and not spiritually and correspondentially. By such an approach, humans were kept in distortions and falsities of the meanings conveyed by those books. This assured their continuous presence in the negative state or, at least, being under its influence.

And yet, to their greatest dismay, they discovered the written form of this New Revelation which, for the first time in known history, was talking or revealing the truth of the reality of the positive state, as well as of the negative state, as well as related-to-them spiritual, mental and external matters, not in some kind of obscure, convoluted, complex, hidden, disguised or secretive, puzzling and riddle type of language as the Old Revelation did, but in an understandable external language for all who read it. And not only that, but that some humans, upon reading it, were able to understand it, to accept it and to live it as pure truth revealed directly by Me. As you remember, the assumption was that no human could do so on his/her own without some kind of spectacular internal experience which would bypass their external human mind.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

It was very much shocking for the pseudo-creators to realize that someone like you, Peter, who had nothing special and unusual in his inner repertoire which would enable you to see Me and hear Me directly and which would give you all that pertinent and truthful information, was chosen by Me to be the transmitter of My New Revelation on the multiversal and in an all-inclusive level. This was something unthinkable. What was most puzzling for the pseudo-creators in this respect, was that your ways of coming to all this unusual, meaningful and truthful information, were paralleling their own ways, the ways of pure logic, reason, intellect, deduction, induction, analysis and synthesis without any other available means which would make it easier and more convincing for you to arrive at all this information. The pseudo-creators incorrectly assumed that by such purely scientific means, which they utilized in their own experimentation and search for the Absolute Truth, it would be utterly impossible to arrive at any correct, right and truthful conclusions about spiritual and internal matters. This was especially difficult for them to understand in view of the fact that they purposefully limited the human mind in its ability to properly utilize such methodology for discovering the real truth about anything, and not only about inner, spiritual matters.

And yet, here you are, sitting in your room, or in your backyard, or in front of your computer, writing about all these things without any spectacular, pomp-and-circumstance type of input by the means of My materialization before your eyes so that I could dictate to you directly what to say and how to say it. And not only that, but, and this is the most surprising fact of all, whatever you have written so far or whatever you are writing at any given time, it is pure Truth coming directly from Me. This fact was the most mind-boggling for the pseudo-creators, which kind of forced them to do some of their own experimentation and manipulation, both on you, Peter, as well as on some other carefully selected readers and practitioners of My New Revelation.

At the same time the pseudo-creators, at that time, had difficulties accepting the fact that not only you, Peter, had this ability, but that many other readers of My New Revelation were able to read it, understand it, accept its principles and practice them. As they were observing and exploring all of you, it was at that time that they discovered your 'peripheral' wiring which made you different from regular human beings. When they discovered that, they decided to perform special experimentation with your minds. We'll talk about it in a moment.

However, even more puzzling and surprising for the pseudo-creators was a discovery that so many human females were able to understand, to accept and to practice everything contained in My New Revelation. That males were able to do so didn't have such a great impact on them, although this fact was also surprising, because the males' mind was naturally inclined to use logic, reason, rationality, intellect and similar factors which, in their view, human females didn't possess in the same degree as males. As you remember from previous Dialogs, one of the major thrusts during the initial activation of the negative state, by which the negative state was able to be established, was separation and split of feminine principles from masculine principles and masculine principles from feminine principles. In the process of this separation, femininity was put into a subservient, degrading, less valuable and less significant and needed position than masculinity. This was a necessary arrangement if the activation of the negative state were to succeed. As you remember from those Dialogs, with love, goodness, kindness, affection, positiveness and similar characteristics of femininity, to continue having them in an equal to and a dominant position with masculinity, the activation of the negative state would not be possible. Therefore, women and their position were one of the major targets of restructuring by the pseudo-creators.

This factor was also reflected in Christian philosophy, based on the teachings of Paul and his Epistles, as well as on the teachings of Islam and other pseudo-spiritual philosophies and their respective religions, which prohibited women from participating in any important decision-making factors of spiritual, political, cultural and social life. Even at the present time, in some Islamic nations, this abomination continues to be one of the major factors of their lifestyle. After all, this is how the human lifestyle was originally established by the pseudo-creators. As you see, it still has a very strong impact on the lives of many in all human societies and countries and not only in Muslim countries.

So, when the pseudo-creators saw these women who not only were able to read and accept My New Revelation, but, in some ways, very often, they were able to intuitively understand it even better than some men, they became so puzzled and so curious about this unusual phenomenon that they decided to do some of their own experimentation, observation and testing on both women and men connected to My New Revelation. Most of these efforts, taken by the pseudo-creators, although not all of them, eluded the attention of those who were under scientific scrutiny of the pseudo-creators. In other words, they had no conscious awareness that

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

they were being experimented upon. Again, we'll speak about this issue in a moment.

The second thing that happened upon their release and take over, was that the rulers of the Hells, who were put in charge following the lockup of the pseudo-creators, and who suddenly found themselves stripped of their power, rule and dominion, rebelled against the pseudo-creators and became the renegades, considerably complicating the entire situation. Now, the renegades, in their effort to get back their position and power, and in their competitive position toward the pseudo-creators, became determined to do their own experimentation, testing and observation but with an entirely different purpose in mind.

And here comes the difficult part for you, Peter, to write about. Who, how and what were the subjects of this experimentation, observation and testing and what was the role, position and degree of participation of those who were under the scrutiny of both the pseudo-creators and the renegades; and what were their results, outcomes and consequences for all involved? Also, what was the major purpose of this experimentation, observation and testing on the part of both the pseudo-creators and the renegades at that time?

The pseudo-creators wanted to determine the following facts: What was it in the human mind of those connected to My New Revelation that made it possible for both women and men to be able to understand it, to recognize its truthfulness and accept its principles into their lives? How much and to what extent were they different from any other humans in this respect? At the same time they wanted to determine the following: How different, if at all, was the perception, understanding and the mode of arriving at the proper and right conclusions about the verity of My New Revelation for that of women as compared with men? No other specifically malicious purpose was on their mind.

The far right wing of the pseudo-creators also added to their own design an additional purpose for their brand of experimentation, observation and testing. Not having enough confidence in the ability of typical humans to sustain any acquired new knowledge and understanding, and live in accordance with its principles, especially of something like The New Revelation, the ideas of which went against everything known to humans during their turbulent and violent history, they made a wager with other wings of the pseudo-creators' clan. They were curious about how long it would take for these humans, and especially for females, to be sidetracked from or to entirely relinquish their devotion to and continuous acceptance of everything contained in My New Revelation?

And how long it would take for some human females, connected to My New Revelation to trigger in them an inborn, irresistible, almost lustful desire to become pregnant and to have children, despite the fact that they knew so very well that the only types of children who could be born were coming from the negative side? Also, how long it would take to stop you, Peter, from continuing in transmitting anything further related to My New Revelation and for you to revert back into your typical human nature which would force you to give up your role and position as the multiversal transmitter of My New Revelation or even to denounce anything contained in My New Revelation? They said to themselves, “If we could manipulate their minds, as well as their roles, positions and everything they have; and if we could implant into them some different ideas than those contained in The New Revelation; and do it under the disguise that those ideas are coming from The Lord Jesus Christ or from someone in His/Her positive state, particularly from any members of their true spiritual family, then, how long would it take for any of them to fall into this trap and start believing in the righteousness of their cause and gradually, to denounce The New Revelation as outdated and no longer having any true meaning for the present time, with the exception of reflecting the historical course of events?”

The far right branch of the pseudo-creators made a bet with the other ones that it wouldn't take that long to accomplish this goal. If they were to succeed in proving their points, then, in that case, all of them would have to conclude that no actual and significant differences exist between the followers of My New Revelation and all other humans. In that case, their acceptance of My New Revelation was superficial, without any internal and lasting impact on their lives and they still succumbed to their human nature which forced them to revert back to their so-called natural state in which they see things the way the original pseudo-creators wanted them to see or understand.

On the other hand, the renegades' purpose in their own brand of experimentation, observation and testing was entirely different. By the time they recognized that the pseudo-creators had lost any desire or need to establish the rule of the negative state over all of My Creation, and that their purpose of activation of the negative state was an entirely different one than what the renegades thought it to be (for their true purpose, see Dialogs 89 and 90), they decided to destroy you, Peter, personally, and to corrupt, to break up and to pit against each other all those connected to My New Revelation. The renegades recognized that the major danger for their continuous rule and for the indefinite preservation of the pseudo-life of the negative state, was in My New

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Revelation and in the position and role of My Representatives (at that time, the agents of My positive state).

So, you had here two parallel efforts, going on approximately during the same time but in a different realm and with a totally different purpose. In your particular case, Peter, from the very beginning of your life on planet Zero, the forces of the negative state were relentlessly trying to destroy you, even to kill you or, at least, to corrupt you or influence you by all available means in order to deter you from your mission. Later on, they were sending all kinds of people to your workshops, which you held at the University of California, as well as to your home, as your patients and pseudo-friends for the purpose of misleading you and sidetracking you from your role and from the main purpose of your life. However, even though in some external sense, materially, for example, they temporarily and superficially succeeded in their effort in this respect, it never lasted too long before you were able to recognize the danger and reject all their efforts in this respect. For that reason, to the greatest disappointment of the forces of the negative state, those people fall away very fast from the circles of your friends and students.

However, as time went by, and as more and more was revealed to you by Me, and in the moment you finished the writing of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***, upon the return of the pseudo-creators and establishment of the opposition in the form of the renegades, many more cunning, effective and sophisticated ways were devised by them to accomplish their goal in this respect. Before the release of the pseudo-creators, all those efforts were made by the renegades, who at that time had not been in the position of the renegades but in the position of the rulers of all the Hells.

So, how would the experimenting and testing be designed for testing you, Peter, as well as those connected to My New Revelation who were selected for that purpose, and for proving the conservative pseudo-creators' hypothesis or wager? How would they go about it in order to find out if they are right or not?

In the first step of their endeavor in this respect, they carefully and very thoroughly studied the genetic, physical, psychological, familial and environmental history of all those connected, in some way or other, with My New Revelation. This history was available to them from everyone's stored memory cache, from their conception to the time of the beginning of the experiment. At the same time, they looked into the possibility that some of the members of The New Revelation might be former or even current agents of the negative state, who were either converted to the

positive state by means of My New Revelation or who attached themselves to it for some of their own ulterior reasons; or who came to it so that, either covertly, or even overtly, they could pollute, distort and falsify it; and for the purpose of corrupting or misleading those who were typical humans or even those who were incarnated originally from the positive state.

If they were to detect that some of the followers of My New Revelation were former or even current agents of the negative state, in that case, they would also have access to their pre-history in the place and state from which they incarnated on planet Zero. From the personal archives of these agents, stored in that pseudo-world, they could discover the original purpose for their incarnation as well as all their strengths, weaknesses and problems which they could utilize in order to sway them back to their former negative condition, state and role. As far as those who came from the positive state were concerned, in their case, they would carefully study and analyze their personality makeup, their human psychological, physical, social or any other problems, their weaknesses, vulnerabilities, relationships, attachments, habits and similar factors which could be effectively utilized in order to sidetrack them or even to corrupt and mislead them into believing something which would not be coming from Me but which would be assumed as coming from Me, because the experiment was designed to be conducted in My Name, and any false ideas implanted into their minds would be considered as ideas coming from Me.

The issue here was to find out how long it would take for those who were originally of the positive nature, and who incarnated on planet Zero from the positive state, but who were/are burdened by a typical corrupted and corruptible human nature, to detect or to recognize that what was presented to them as coming from Me was, actually and factually, coming from the negative state (either from the pseudo-creators or the renegades). On the other hand, if they could find anyone amongst the followers of My New Revelation who originally came from the negative state, or who were attached to it for the wrong reasons or with improper, or even negative or evil intent and motivation, whether they were consciously aware of this fact or not, then they could utilize them as a resource and means, by putting them into an elevated position of the speakers of either the pseudo-creators or the renegades (of course, as always, in My Name), from which position they could exert influence on those who, for some reason or other, because of their own personal problems or some other needs, could more easily be sidetracked from their proper spiritual path and who could be put into a position of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

neglecting My New Revelation and its transmitter and instead, listening to those negative agents, considering them now to be My chosen ones.

At the same time, one important aspect of this design was putting an emphasis on the role of females in order to test their assumption that females would be more easily influenced in order to be in the role of My alleged speaker rather than males; but also, to see if some males could be swayed likewise by such a female setup. Here the assumption was that, if the followers of My New Revelation have the ability to recognize and to accept a full and indisputable equality of femininity and masculinity than males, then, from the position of their human nature, they could easily be convinced that the female-speaker is really My messenger and because of that, they would gladly listen to her and follow her bidding or, at least, consider whatever she would say to be the words of God.

In order to have an equal representation on both sides — female and male — the ideal situation would be if the pseudo-creators, and in their footsteps, the renegades, could find at least one female and one male who originally came from the negative state, or who were still agents of the negative state without knowing or being aware that they were such agents; and whose major role and assignment was to get involved with the people of My New Revelation, now My representatives, in order to disrupt, to confuse, to mislead and to negatively influence anyone involved in and with My New Revelation (again, without their being consciously aware that this was their major role); but who would be convinced, without a shadow of a doubt, that they were/are, in fact, an integral part of My New Revelation and that they were/are devoted followers and practitioners of its principles as well as of Me — The Lord Jesus Christ.

If they could find such a couple, especially if the female part of that couple was giving and given an appearance of being very loving, kind, radiant, angelic, positive, meek and lovable; and if the male part of the couple would be giving and given an appearance of being very assertive, intelligent, logical, rational, a good speaker, seemingly wise and making much sense and likewise lovable, then this couple could be utilized very well for their purpose. With such a couple, the possibility of misleading and sidetracking other followers of My New Revelation or falling into their trap would be much greater than with someone else.

The welcomed pseudo-positive side effect of this effort, should such a couple be found, would be that by their successful effort, they would discredit you, Peter, as the only true transmitter of My New Revelation; and that others, who would now be listening to this couple or at least to

one of them, would reject you or stop associating with you, considering you either being taken over by the negative state or no longer being the transmitter of My New Revelation. However, in order to discredit you, it would be necessary to convince some females, or even males for that matter, that, from that point on, The Lord Jesus Christ was choosing to speak through a female (the female part of the hypothetical couple), and therefore, you, Peter, are out on green pastures (symbolically speaking).

So, this was the original experimental design. In the process of their thorough search, and in the process of studying historical and pre-historical material of all connected to My New Revelation, to their greatest delight, they were able to find a couple, both suitable for that purpose, and some other sensitive and vulnerable individuals, who were from the positive state but who were willing to listen to someone else due to misunderstanding of the concept of the infinite varieties of individualized and personalized approaches toward spiritual issues and life issues in general. It was assumed by them, that in applying such an approach, it was possible or feasible to deviate from the principles of My New Revelation and establish their own brand of spirituality (pseudo-spirituality, in fact). In such an assumption was hidden a spiritual danger because any deviation from the principles of My New Revelation leads one into the acceptance of the pseudo-principles of the negative state. This confusion stemmed from an inappropriate application of the principles of individualized and personalized understanding and application of My New Revelation and My Absolute New Nature as opposed to deviation from them. To individualize and personalize something within the scope of My New Revelation means to be in a personal and individual application of My New Revelation. And this is spiritually appropriate and a highly desirable approach. However, to deviate from it, means to reject its principles, replacing them with distortions and falsities of one's own design. Remember that!

However, the issue here in this respect was to find out how long it would take for My representatives (at that time, the agents of My positive state), to recognize this important distinction and to return to the proper understanding and conceptualization of all principles of My New Revelation and what they are all about. Also, who would be the first to recognize this deception or subterfuge — My female representatives or My male representatives; or both, simultaneously?

At the same time, the question was: Would any one of them, who fell under the influence of that couple or at least one member of that couple, be able to recognize and to accept the painful fact of who, in reality, that

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

couple was, or what their true role was in this setup by the forces of the negative state; or, after recognizing their mistake (if they would!), although they would return to My New Revelation, would they still consider that couple, or at least one of them, to be My representatives; thus, holding to the wrong idea about their true nature and about their true mission in this respect?

Now, from our position, the recognition and acceptance of the true reality of this fact regarding the true identity of that couple and regarding their true role and mission, doesn't mean at all that they are being condemned, judged, rejected, written off or expelled from our awareness. It only means that you need to learn to see things as they are behind the scene so that you may avoid laboring under the false impression about who is who or what is what. Otherwise, you would give a great opportunity to the renegades to invade you by utilizing the results and outcomes of this experiment and what it produced. No other purpose exists for this Dialog and what is revealed here. Also, don't forget, that by revealing these facts, we are giving again and again a great opportunity for that couple themselves to, first of all, recognize and accept these facts about who they are, what their true mission is; and, secondly, as a consequence of that, to relinquish their negative role and assignment and become My true representatives on planet Zero. By their tremendous resources, talents, gifts and abilities, they could become great assets to our cause in the process of elimination of the negative state. At the same time, by this revelation, we are giving a great opportunity for those who are connected to My New Revelation but who still continue to be under the influence of one or another or both of that couple, considering them to be who they are not, to get back on the right track from which they were sidetracked by them and to purify and cleanse themselves from their negative influence.

Once the pseudo-creators discovered that couple, they proceeded with their experiment and testing. The first step in this respect was to bring that couple together. So, they stirred the male in question to become interested in The New Revelation and to request all the books written by you, Peter. Following the reading of My New Revelation, he was stirred to undertake its translation into his native language (Russian). Because of that, you invited him for a visit to Santa Barbara, and decided to give him financial support via the TNR Foundation, so that he could devote all his free time to nothing else but to his work on the translation. When he arrived in this country, at one point in time, you introduced him to the female in question. It was amazing to see how fast they connected and became, what you could call, consorts. In the moment they got very

closely involved with each other, things about them and around them began to change and, from your position, Peter, their attitude, behavior, ideas, and everything else were gradually and perceptibly deteriorating, becoming more and more questionable and negative.

At that point in time, the pseudo-creators' effort, and later on the renegades', was primarily in testing, experimenting and planting all kinds of strange, unusual and confusing ideas into the female with eager support and help from the male. Gradually and slowly, in the process of this experimentation, both the female and the male were completely and totally taken over by everything which was infused into them by the pseudo-creators, and later on, by the renegades. Because both of them identified themselves with whatever was implanted into their minds, I, as the true Lord Jesus Christ, was replaced with a false one and all members of their true spiritual family were replaced with false ones likewise. From that moment on, all their actions, behaviors, attitudes, ideas, or whatever they acquired, were directed toward undermining the truth of My New Revelation, as well as your credibility, Peter, as its transmitter, replacing it with distortions and falsities under the banner of My Name and that of My positive state. Because of their seemingly very loving, kind, gentle and wise attitude, several members of My New Revelation, including some of those who were very close to you, Peter, fell under their influence, giving them spiritual, mental and financial support and dropping you and the TNR Foundation from that support.

In your particular case, Peter, very soon, you became very uneasy about the whole situation and therefore, within yourself you began to question the verity of their claims and behavior. However, not wanting to hurt anyone, and being under the influence of your closest ally, through whom I frequently spoke with you, you continued to doubt your feelings and your intuition in this respect and you suppressed them as inappropriate and ego-driven concerns as if you were jealous that I had decided to drop you as the transmitter of My New Revelation and give that role to the female in question. However, following a very vivid and convincing vision that you had about that couple, especially about the female, it became obvious to you that they were taken over by the forces of the negative state. For that reason you had taken steps to rectify that situation. You had sent out a letter informing everyone about that situation (that letter was included in the *Corollaries...*), and, most importantly, giving both that couple and everyone who fell under their influence the opportunity, to amend their ways and to get back on the right track. Because they refused to do so at that time, you felt that you needed to distance yourself from them so that everyone of them would have an opportunity to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

establish their own understanding and insight of what that situation was all about.

Once your letter went out, the conservative pseudo-creators lost their wager as far as you were concerned, Peter. Simply stated, you didn't buy into their scheming. However, the renegades have continued to harass you, inducing all kinds of anxieties, doubts, fears, sadness and similar negative emotions into your mental condition in order to keep you in a state of despair, futility and misery, thus, preventing you, for some period of time, from doing anything more on My behalf. You seriously started to doubt the verity of My New Revelation, telling yourself that, if the readers and practitioners of My New Revelation could behave like that, if in relationship to each other they also exhibited typical human attitudes, not being able to get along with each other, and not being willing to listen to reason, then, what was the difference between them and typical humans whose strife with each other is a way of their everyday life? In that case, My New Revelation was impotent, having no lasting impact or effect on those people. So, why even bother to continue in anything in this respect? And not only that, but you were questioning whether your understanding of the whole situation was correct and whether the other side, and especially the female in question, was in a position to recognize the truth of the matter much better than you, Peter.

Also, in your case, Peter, you continued to have a somewhat hesitant impression that maybe, both the female and the male in question were not agents of the negative state, but only innocently misled by the pseudo-creators, and now by the renegades, members of the positive state. It was not until a few days ago, that you had to change your mind in this respect after you received a call from Lyudmila in Moscow, sharing with you a frightening vivid vision she had in which the male in question appeared to her in a demonic form, yelling at her and accusing her about cutting him off from you, Peter, thus, preventing him from his mission to exert negative influence on you and to siphon the TNR Foundation from its meager financial resources, making it unable to support My cause in the form of publication and spreading of My New Revelation on planet Zero. With that information, the full circle of the experimentation is coming to its end. And although some of you still continue in believing that the couple in question are positive, having only My cause on their mind, nevertheless, the majority of those who were under their influence, are seeing the light at the end of the tunnel.

So, apart from you, Peter (who in the experimental design of the pseudo-creators and in the renegades didn't and doesn't count), who was the first

one to recognize that something was very wrong with the ideas propagated by the female in question? The pseudo-creators' and the renegades' assumption was that it would be either no one or it would be one of the males who was/is under her influence. Their assumption was based on the wrong premise that only a rational, logical, intellectual and analytical male could discover or see through this subterfuge. On the other hand, the females, in the pseudo-creators' and renegades' view, being so irrational, emotional and impressionable, by their own design, would not be able to see through it. It was to their greatest surprise when they saw that it was a female who was the very first one to recognize these facts. Of course, she, and everyone else, still is giving the benefit of doubt to the position and role of the female in question, not fully recognizing who that female, as well as her male partner, originally was.

This important outcome of the entire experiment and testing confirmed for the pseudo-creators very clearly and unequivocally that females, or femininity, are capable of coming to the right conclusions, as much as any male, or, in some cases, even better than males. Therefore, they concluded, that their view on and attitude toward females is totally and completely faulty, having no basis in the reality of My being and existence; and that it was only their own tinkering in the genetic makeup of females that made some of them, but not all of them, what they became on planet Zero through its bloody and insane history. The result of their experiment is helping them to change their attitude and, with the help of My female representatives, in a collaborative effort with My male representatives, they are establishing a very meaningful, fulfilling and satisfying relationship with them as well as with the feminine aspect of their own personalities and individualities. As you know, in the process of their own experimentation on themselves, they repressed, suppressed and separated it from their genetic endowment, fallaciously convincing themselves that they don't need their femininity for anything.

Those pseudo-creators, who converted to the positive state, together with those who are presently residing in the New School learning all these facts, are very determined in their effort, with the help of My representatives on planet Zero, to convince the unconverted pseudo-creators to relinquish their view on females and femininity in general and on the role which females play in the totality-of-it-all. If they could succeed in convincing these unconverted pseudo-creators, they would likewise convert to the positive state. The converted ones acquired a clear knowledge and understanding that without the change of their attitude toward femininity and females in general, the true conversion to the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

positive state and the acceptance of My Absolute New Nature, which is equally comprised of My Absolute Femininity and My Absolute Masculinity, is not possible. This is the reason why the converted pseudo-creators and those currently attending My New School, keep very close contact with the unconverted ones, visiting them frequently, accompanied by the females—My representatives, in order to illustrate to them the true nature of femininity. This fact was confirmed by Alenka Benešová of Slovakia who had a beautiful vision depicting her interaction with a converted pseudo-creator who took her with him to the Hells or to that pseudo-dimension where the unconverted pseudo-creators currently reside, having dinner with them and illustrating to them the clear equality of femininity and masculinity.

So, as you see from this fact, the experiment and testing, although very painful to you, Peter, and to some others, turned out to be for the benefit of all. It is at this point that I would like to take this opportunity to specifically and particularly express My deep gratitude and appreciation to Dr. Beth Ann Voien, My dedicated servant and follower, for her willingness to go through all the turmoil, and coming out of it stronger, better, more loving and wise; and also for her more than generous spiritual, mental and financial support of My New Revelation and My Cause, of TNR Foundation and of you, Peter, personally. All in My positive state join Me in this gratitude and thankfulness to her. At the same time, I would like to express My deep appreciation for those individuals, who, although may still have the wrong impression of who the female and the male in question are, or what their true roles and positions are, or who still might be under their influence, are making an honest effort to read these Dialogs and to consider what they contain. The importance of their efforts in this respect cannot be emphasized enough.

At this point in time, although the pseudo-creators completed their experiment some time ago, and the conservative ones lost their wager, the renegades continue in their effort of undermining anything related to My New Revelation and to My representatives. They took over the couple in question and keep them under their influence, trying to reinstate their credibility which they have been losing considerably, due to the appearance of these Dialogs. These Dialogs are the thorn in their back, so-to-speak, because they undermine their effort to keep as many of My representatives as possible under the influence of that couple or at least, under the influence of the female in question. As of now, this particular female has not shown any sign of coming back on the right track. And we fully respect her choice. Those of you, who are in contact with her, with

this new knowledge about her role, without any imposition, could be of great help to her by illustrating to her through the mode of your behavior and attitude what these Dialogs have been able to do for you in a purely positive sense.

There is one more issue that needs to be touched upon before closure of this Dialog. It relates to your former ally, Peter, through whom, on some occasions, I used to speak with you. I want you to be aware of something which will not be easy for you to accept. During the time when you were questioning the role and position of the mentioned couple, he was considerably under their influence. Because of that, in the process of some sessions which you had with him at that time, at some point in talking with you, I was replaced by a false Jesus Christ, who was giving you the wrong information about no longer having any need, ever again, to use the written material for conveying My revelation or My information to My representatives (My agents at that time). Because you fully bought that the information in question was coming from Me, disregarding your own intuition, which was screaming at you that it was not true and that there was a misunderstanding about the meaning of that message and how it was related only and only to the **here-and-now** and to no other times, you blocked yourself for almost five years from communicating anything to anyone coming from Me. And although this situation was permitted by Me to take place for the purpose of its utilization and implementation of the plan for establishing the individualization, personalization and independence of everyone connected to My New Revelation, as it was revealed in the very first and second Dialogs, and which was very true; nevertheless, the renegades temporarily succeeded in their effort. Also, they succeed in still keeping your ally under the influence of the female in question, effectively blocking him from making any contact with you personally or from wanting to do anything with you at this particular time. As you are aware, he doesn't even have enough courtesy to acknowledge the reception of these Dialogs, which you have been sending to him, or to give you any type of feedback. Of course, as always, we accept his free will and choice to do whatever he wants to do, without judging, condemning, rejecting or writing him off, or anyone else for that matter.

In assessing this situation, the way as it was played out behind the scene, I would like you to recognize and to accept one important fact, repeated many times before: No one, yes, no one, is ever lost, no matter who she/he is or what role and position she/he has. And if, for some reason or other, someone decided, consciously or unconsciously, to utilize their life-force energies for some other purpose other than in My services

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

or the services of My New Revelation, nevertheless, it is only a temporary deviation from its proper, beneficial and useful utilization. At some time in the future, whether during their lifetime on planet Zero, or following their recall, they will return to Me. At that time everything that they did or didn't do will be blotted out from their minds and their memories. Also, don't forget one important fact: They, and especially the female in question, firmly believe that they communicate with the true Lord Jesus Christ and the true members of their spiritual family.

Under the influence of that belief, it would be very difficult for them, and especially for her, to recognize and accept the fact that the true reality in this respect could be very much different. This is the reason why, as of this date, she has refused to take heed and amend her ways. After all, if you are firmly convinced that you are in contact with the true Lord Jesus Christ, and if someone else, like you, Peter, for example, is claiming the same, then you would tend to conclude that your Lord Jesus Christ is the right one and the other person's (yours, Peter) is a false one. Also, don't forget that to herself, to her friends and to those who are still under her influence in some way or other, she appears to be very loving, kind, tolerant, meek, friendly, positive and supportive, giving the impression that she is not imposing anything on anyone. For that reason, it would be very difficult, if not impossible, to accept these facts about her nature and role. However, the appearances could be only appearances as they are seen on the scene. Behind the scene though, the reality of anyone's true nature and role in this respect could be very much different.

Due to this fact, what should be your attitude and behavior toward anyone who is in such a position? Full acceptance of who they are and what their true role is, without rejecting or dissociating yourself from them! As it was mentioned in one of the recent Dialogs, in which you were warned about the possibility of invasion into your circles of someone who is an agent of the renegades, it is not necessary to avoid them unless, of course, they choose to avoid you. Also, as mentioned above, your behavior and attitude, based on My New Revelation, could function as a contributory factor in their waking up and recognizing the true reality of their situation and as a result of that, they might choose to come back on the right track.

As we are discussing this unpleasant-for-you-issue, Peter, the renegades and their minions are furious for revealing all the secrets of their game-playing in regards to some of My representatives. They have no desire or need for you to know the truth about these matters. It undermines their chance to continue in misleading My representatives who are under the

influence of the discussed individuals. As mentioned previously, they are especially furious about the availability of our Dialogs. They consider them the major obstacle in their effort to establish their full rule and control over humanity and elsewhere. For that reason, they are forced into a position of regrouping their forces and redefining and changing their strategies. Due to the fact that they like to imitate certain strategies adopted by the members of the positive state, at least externally and superficially, they have decided right now, as you are writing these words, to rename all their agents and minions situated on planet Zero, their representatives. Thus, as of today, no longer will they be the agents of the negative state but its representatives.

And one final note in the conclusion of this Dialog and of this particular chapter in your history, Peter, and the history of that which happened five and a half years ago and which caused you so much pain, misery and suffering. Whatever happened here, in California, and whatever is revealed here about it, in no way should be applied to the situation that occurred at the same time in the New York area on the East Coast of the United States. That occurrence has an entirely different meaning and significance. It would be a gross error in judgment to try to analogize those events with these on your side, Peter. Any attempt to do so, would lead to an improper perception and understanding of its true meaning. In that case, whoever would try to do that, would be laboring under distortions and falsities about that event. Because you, Peter, were not directly and personally involved in that situation, it would not be appropriate to talk about it through you. If there were to be a need for clarification and understanding of that situation, as it happened in the New York area, My representatives involved in it would have full responsibility to find out the true meaning of that event.

However, sometimes, certain things, for some important spiritual reasons, cannot be revealed while you are still living on planet Zero. In that case, it is better if you wait until you come back to the spiritual world. Whether this is the case with the situation that happened in the New York area, is a matter for finding out by those in that area. The responsibility in this respect is theirs.

And thus, we came full circle and therefore, we may close this unpleasant history, learning from it beneficial and useful lessons for all. And if anyone, who reads this particular and unusual Dialog, will be turned off by it or will reject its content or anything else contained in My New Revelation, we'll respect that as well. For now though, we have finished this subject. I would recommend, Peter, to finish it for today. Have a nice

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

day and don't be anxious about the outcome or the impact that this particular Dialog will have on its numerous readers.

Peter: Believe me, it won't be easy. I am truly afraid that not all will be able to accept it as coming directly from You. After all, what could prevent them from claiming that it was not You who spoke about these things but my own imagination in order to justify my own attitude in this case? Nevertheless, I thank You very much for showing me, and all readers of these Dialogs, how things were played out behind the scene.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. And if any reader would come to such an erroneous conclusion, it would only mean that they failed to corroborate these facts from their own within, by their intuition, or by whatever means are available to them for such purpose. Has anybody at any time, besides you, Peter, attempted to ask Me personally about the true situation in this respect as it was/is behind the scene? Do it and you'll see My light and the truth of this matter. And now, Peter, go in peace and don't worry about anything.

One Hundred and Ninth Dialog

September 29, 1999

Peter: Although I personally don't have any specific questions, except for my concerns how some readers, and especially the couple in question (if they were ever to read it), will react to the content of the previous Dialog, yet, this morning, I have received some questions from Slovakia. It seems that our friends in Slovakia are quite busy with their questioning. Also, yesterday, later in the afternoon, I received a phone call, also from Slovakia, requesting some clarification on the issue of mutual male-female, female-male treatment who are supposed to be Your representatives. Something is still wrong with that mutual treatment, especially from the side of the men. Are we facing something here which is called stupid (excuse me for that expression!) macho man stuff? You know, sometimes I feel so tired and disgusted when I hear how our own people, who are supposed to be Your representatives, are treating each other in a manner which is degrading, rude, arrogant, belittling, sarcastic and inconsiderate. In that case, how different are they from any other typical humans, or even from the so-called representatives of the negative state/renegades? You know, very often, I wonder if they have truly read Your New Revelation at all; or if they have read it, to what extent have they even tried to apply any of its principles in their own life? If there are any objective facts in the reports I am getting about that type of mutual treatment, then I would have to conclude that Your New Revelation so far has had very little impact on their behavior or that their involvement with it was for some kind of inappropriate, ulterior reasons, with totally and completely wrong intentions and motivations. So, here I am, I have expressed my concerns and frustrations to You this morning. Would You like to comment on any of that or anything else that You prefer to elaborate upon first?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Let Me first address your concerns about possibly unfavorable reactions that some readers might have, or that the couple in question might have (if they were ever to read it), following the reading of the One Hundred and Eighth Dialog. After that we can talk about the mutually inappropriate treatment that still happens amongst you; and following that we'll address the questions from Slovakia.

Your concerns, Peter, as related to the content of the previous Dialog, stem from your noble desire to treat everyone with the utmost kindness, consideration, love and acceptance. As you remember, one of the members of your spiritual family represents some very important spiritual and personal traits with which you are totally identified and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

which you want to make the major ruling force of your life. They are, among other things: loving kindness, gentleness, tenderness, tolerance, appreciation, respect, consideration and acceptance of everyone the way they are, without hurting anyone, without judging anyone, without condemning anyone, without rejecting anyone, without bad-mouthing anyone, without expecting anything from anyone and without writing off anyone. So, based on these exquisite traits, you are afraid that some readers may get hurt or respond to that Dialog by being wounded by its content.

However, don't disregard the feedback that you have already received so far from four people who have had an opportunity to read that Dialog (people who have E-mail — Heather Oudal, Ardyth Norem, Dan Barba and Alice Good). They gave you very positive and supportive feedback. It had appropriate and positive impact on them. Do remember please, if you truly love someone, you want that person to be spiritually, mentally, physically, and in all other respects, in the best possible shape or condition. The wisdom of your love, and the truth of your objectivity, justice and righteousness, stir you toward bringing to those individuals' attention, if something exists in their lives, attitudes, behaviors, ideas, or whatever they have, which endangers that shape or condition. Yes, you may tell yourself that the individuals in question don't see that they are in any way endangered by anything, and especially by their ideas, attitude, behavior and lifestyle. They may tell you that the opposite is true: They are in perfect, or at least in a most reasonable spiritual, mental, physical and any other condition and shape; and therefore, they don't need anything from you.

But this is the very point of our discourse, Peter: If someone is of such an opinion about themselves and, yet, the reality of their situation, as it is behind the scene, is totally different, you need to bring it to their attention in order to rectify that situation. Whether they accept it or not, would no longer be your concern. It would be their own responsibility and a matter of their own choice to accept it, and subsequently to amend their ways or to reject it, and subsequently to continue a life of distortions and falsities. The love of your wisdom and the wisdom of your love want nothing but the best for all concerned. Their duty and responsibility in this respect is to bring to the attention of all involved if something is wrong. This is especially true if you consider someone to be what they are not. In that case, as mentioned in the previous Dialog, you would hold to the untruth of the matter, thus, giving the greatest possible opportunity to the forces of the negative state to influence you so that they could keep you in the clutches of the negative state. After all, if you hold to and accept something to be true but it is not, no matter who

or what it is, you are under the influence of the negative state. And because you know so very well, that it is very unhealthy for your spiritual, mental, physical, and any other type of well-being — or that it could be even deadly — to be under the influence of the negative state, you want nothing more than to bring this fact to their attention, so that they could be healed. Again, whether they take the means of the offered treatment or not, it is no longer your responsibility. You have discharged the duty of your love and wisdom. The rest is up to them.

If someone is comfortable the way they are, regardless of how spiritually, mentally or physically ill they might be, it only means that they love their negative condition. Do you remember from several statements which we made before about the need to love the negative state if the negative state could be activated and could illustrate and manifest the nature of its pseudo-life at all? How else could anything contained in the nature of the negative state, with all its atrocities and abominations, come to its adverse fruition if someone would not love it? It had already been Swedenborg who correctly proclaimed that life of everyone is in his/her love. If the negative state were to be what it was supposed to be, someone would have had to make it the love of his/her life. Otherwise, nothing of the negative state could have ever come to its activation and actualization.

If you carefully analyze some humans' lives on planet Zero, or if you could have an opportunity to analyze the pseudo-life of any of the renegades or their minions, you would be very much surprised to find that they wallow in their pseudo-life. They love it more than anything else. This is how the pseudo-life of the negative state is being maintained. And not only that, but they see it as the only positive life possible at all. Well, if you have a terminal condition, but you consider that condition to be normal, healthy and the only possible one, you would have no other desire but to continue being in that condition. In order to get you out of it, and to institute a reasonable cure for it, someone of authority would have to bring to your attention that your so-called love is killing you. At the same time, you bring to their attention the means for its cure and for replacement of that false love, with love of something which is truly healthy and most lovable — the positive state. Now, they have a choice in the matter. And this is what our previous Dialog was all about.

So, if you see someone seemingly very positive, very comfortable, very happy, very content, very loving, having no outward problems being in human life for example, and if that person has never experienced what it is to be in human skin, like someone who came from the positive state

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

does, does it really mean that such a person is truly positive, coming from the positive state? Or is she/he that way because he/she loves that type of the negative life or human life? Only someone who comes originally from the negative state, for the purpose of reinforcing the human life and its lovability, can end up loving this human life above all and above everything. Such a person will appear being constantly happy, positive, comfortable, content and without any apparent problems. And not only that, but such a person will most certainly tell you that this human life and everything involved in it, came likewise from God. So, in that sense, there is no difference between what is positive and what is negative. In essence, it is all the same.

Do you remember, Peter, what it was that you were told one day by one member of the couple in question about this situation? And how that member tried to twist the meaning of the words said when it was realized that the true identity of that member was being uncovered so that this identity would remain hidden? Of course, it was too late for that to remain hidden because the words were already said. The words were exactly in the spirit of what we have just said above: “It is all the same — positive or negative. There is no difference.” When your tremendous shock was registered by the author of those words, she tried very hard to cover it up by some incoherent justification and rationalization which would make you believe that she didn’t really mean it that way. Oh, yes, they were meant exactly that way.

Or take, for example, the male side of that couple. Do you remember how you, Wilfred and Dan were questioning the wisdom of his behavior when you were standing in front of the music store in New York where the male in question was frantically spending several hundreds of dollars, given to him by the TNR Foundation for his translation, on a questionable type of music (modern rock)? Or how many years it had taken him to complete the translation as compared to other translators of My New Revelation? What do you think was the purpose of those procrastinations and meaningless justifications and excuses why it was taking him so long to do that if there were no objective reasons for that type of behavior?

Those were all very vivid signs of their true identities, which you didn’t want to accept because you didn’t want to hurt or accuse them of anything. And how painful was it for you to do that after all when you saw that there was no ending of manipulations and using you and the funds of the TNR Foundation? Well, if those things, as well as many others of similar nature, weren’t telling you the truth of the matter, nothing else would. However, this is not the issue. The issue is to get out

of seeing things as they were played out on the scene and not behind the scene. And the true reality behind the scene was revealed in the previous Dialog. Also, the issue is, and we repeat this, to give them, as well as everyone involved at that time, the opportunity to come around and to see all those happenings in the right light so that they could make appropriate amendments and corrections in this respect. We are offering this opportunity to all involved because we love them and we care for them and we would like them to be with us and to utilize their precious energies in our cause.

Now, Peter, do you see the reason why it was necessary to deal with this issue, so painful for you?

Peter: Oh, intellectually, logically and rationally I perfectly understand this reason but emotionally, at the bottom of my heart, I still feel miserable for everything that happened at that time; for my many failures to heed my intuition; for my many stupid, foolish and dumb things that I did, wrote, or said; or for the present need to revive this issue. I am coping with those feelings as well as I can, but I'll need time, perhaps, a lot of time to overcome them and to be at peace for all of that and more.

The Lord Jesus Christ: And you'll have that time. I can assure you of that. And now let us address the issue of mutual treatment, especially of men to women and women to men, as it sometimes occurs amongst the readers and practitioners of My New Revelation. As you are aware, that treatment is not always in accordance with the principles of being My true representatives. Does it mean that those who, from time to time, succumb to the need to treat someone in such a negative manner as enumerated at the beginning of this Dialog, are not truly My representatives but only appear to be such? Not necessarily.

Do you remember from the previous Dialog a statement made that the renegades also did their own experimentation and testing in order to imitate the pseudo-creators but with a totally different agenda on their mind? Well, whereas the pseudo-creators abandoned their effort in this respect, after they got the answers they needed, the renegades continued in their effort further down the line, and decided to extend experimentation for an unspecified time. They have been continuing in their effort with the hope that they would see some results in accordance with their own purpose in mind.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Again, the target of their effort is the most devious but also the most promising one. The issue in their mind is to maintain, and if possible to deepen, a continuous split and animosity that has existed in some way or other from the fabrication of humans, between men and women, women and men, and masculinity and femininity and femininity and masculinity. They have one considerable advantage in this respect. As you know, in their genetic makeup, men have an inborn tendency, from the position of their typical human nature, to look upon women as somewhat inferior creatures who are needed only for sex and taking care of their children and households. On the other hand, women were originally genetically endowed above all and above everything with feelings of mothering, taking care of their children and related matters. With such a setup, it is not as difficult as it seems to stir up some conflict between the two genders and to maintain that proverbial split which made it possible for the negative state to be activated.

How does it apply to the men and women in question, who are supposed to be My representatives? The renegades are targeting the human aspects of their nature. As you remember from some of the previous Dialogs, it was mentioned there that the human aspects of your nature will be the strongest target of the renegades in order to get to you, to harass you and trigger your typical genetic endowment as related to your inborn attitude toward women or men, respectively. For many men it is especially difficult to see women as equal or even in some cases, superior to men. For many women it is difficult to see themselves as being equal or even superior to some men. These difficulties are being utilized by the renegades to considerably complicate your life and to influence your attitude toward and treatment of each other. Whenever it is possible, whenever some circumstance arises to trigger that type of attitude, based on that original endowment, the renegades do that, placing you in a position of your human nature from which you react. In such situations, you temporarily forget that you are not supposed to relate from the position of your typical human nature but from My original endowment in you. The more you are prone to succumb to such negative behavior, the more difficult it is for you to switch to the behavior which would be in accordance with being My true representatives.

There is a tremendous spiritual danger for you in this type of typical human behavior. As you are falling back more and more on your human nature, you become more and more a slave of the renegades and you'll lose your position as being My representative, even without knowing or noticing that this is what is happening to you. At one point in time, as you are behaving more and more like a typical human or a representative of the negative state, it will be more and more difficult

for you to behave in any other way. In that moment you will succumb to the negative state until the negative state is either eliminated or you'll wake up from your human nightmare, induced into you by your foolish behavior, and you'll come back to the positive state. However, each such coming back, by the nature of habitual negative behavior patterns, will be more and more difficult and more and more painful. When you are used to behaving in a certain way, that behavior becomes embedded into your brain path to such an extent that you don't even think it is possible to behave in any other way. Overcoming such negative behavior patterns, very often, is equal to or is worse than overcoming addiction to or dependence on heroin, alcohol, tobacco and similar chemical substances. This is the reason why we are saying that the more you are embedded into your negative behavior, the more difficult it will be for you to relinquish that type of behavior. This is the mentioned spiritual danger.

I can assure you that the renegades are making an all-out effort to induce you into that type of behavior in order to make you develop dependence on and addiction to behaving like that. This is the reason why they target your genetic endowment which came from the very original setup during the fabrication of the human race. They are very well aware that this is the most sensitive and vulnerable aspect of your human nature.

The problem with humans in general is that by the accomplished split and separation of masculinity from femininity and femininity from masculinity, within each gender its polar characteristics were not only suppressed but, in many instances, one becomes ashamed of having them. As you know, it is a well-known fact that each man contains within himself both masculine and feminine characteristics, with one being preferred and emphasized over the other; and each woman contains within herself both feminine and masculine characteristics, with one being preferred and emphasized over the other. When you are a man, you want to behave as a man is expected to behave. When you are a woman, you want to behave as a woman is expected to behave. There is a considerable degree of identification of each gender with these social, moral, religious, personal and various other expectations. Such expectations reinforce the need to behave in accordance with being a man or a woman.

In order to circumvent this accursed situation on planet Zero, as My representatives, you need to change your attitude, both toward the aspects of your own masculinity and femininity or femininity and masculinity and, at the very same time, toward your own spouses,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

friends and other individuals who are not of the same gender as you are. How do you do that? And this question brings us to one of the questions that you received this morning, Peter. One of those questions has a direct relevance to the issues discussed here. Before continuing, I would like you, Peter, to translate those questions into English and formulate them next.

Peter: Very well, here they go: (The questions came from Joseph Grygar): How do You, Lord Jesus Christ, function within Your own Absoluteness; for example, when You are considering our questions? What a question! What is Your attitude toward or relationship to Your own Self? Could You say something about the self-relatedness of us relative beings and toward others as well as toward You? We understand that there is an absolute necessity of integral oneness or unity of masculine and feminine principles within each sentient entity. Despite that, it is felt that, at least here on planet Zero, Your women tend to act more from the position of love and Your men more from the position of wisdom. In that case, under the presently existing conditions, what is the best and most appropriate way to introduce into the life of men the feminine aspects and into the life of women the masculine aspects?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Let Me begin with the answer to the last question because it directly relates to the topic discussed above. How do you equalize, unify, integrate and incorporate feminine and masculine aspects, respectively, within yourself? Or, at least, how do you go about not overlooking that you have such aspects within yourself? Of course, as you know, as long as you live on planet Zero in your human skin, the full integration, unification and incorporation of their respective aspects within each individual is not quite possible. This is the way your human body was made and this is the way you have to live out your life on this planet. However, their equalization within your mind is very much possible. Because, as you know, everything in human life is externalized and projected in an outward behavior toward someone or something, your self-attitude in this respect, has to be projected into the way you relate, treat, consider, think, feel and behave toward women if you are a man or toward men if you are a woman.

If you, in your attitude and behavior toward women are arrogant, rude, inconsiderate, rejective, belittling, putting down, degrading, nasty, sarcastic, looking at them with contempt, considering them less valuable, or having any other such negative expressions, then by the same token, your attitude toward your own femininity within you is exactly the same. By the mode of such behavior and feeling you reject your femininity. On the other hand, if you treat women with the utmost consideration,

respect, equality, love, kindness, gentleness, understanding, acceptance and similar positive characteristics, you treat your own femininity the same way. In that case, by the process of such external outward treatment of other women, you prepare the way for the integration and unification of your femininity with your masculinity so that they will reflect the condition which exists in the positive state. By doing that, you defy the split and separation imposed on you by your genetic endowment fabricated for that purpose by the activators of the negative state.

And the same thing is true for women and their own masculine aspects. The way they treat men externally, reflects the treatment of their own internal masculinity. In learning to treat each other in a positive manner, as outlined above, no matter under what conditions, you defy any attempts of the renegades to utilize your negative genetic endowment for keeping you in bondage to the negative aspects of your human nature and thus, making you their slave.

I can assure you that under the presently existing conditions on your planet, no other way exists to circumvent this situation. The way you treat each other determines the way you treat yourself as well, which brings us to answering the second question about how you relate to your own self. From a purely spiritual standpoint, it is impossible to relate to yourself in any other way but how you relate to others, no matter who they are. So, in essence, the same thing applies to your own self-treatment as it was indicated above in relationship to others. It is impossible for you, no matter what you say or feel, to truly love others, if you hate or don't love yourself as well. It is impossible to respect others, if you have no respect for yourself, etc. It is impossible to love Me or respect Me, if you don't exhibit the same feelings and emotions toward yourself and others. If you hate yourself, ultimately you hate Me within yourself or My presence within you and, at the same time, you hate everyone else. As mentioned many times before, it is impossible for you to relate from any other position but only from yourself. You don't have any other position or platform. Logically speaking, if this is the only position that you have, that position, and what it contains, will determine how you will treat others and Me in you and in others.

What do you think My Self-relatedness is like in My Absolute State? This is in response to the first question: In My Absolute State I Love Myself Absolutely. If I were not to love Myself in an absolute sense, I could not love anyone else. In that case, I could never create anyone or anything. But, also, as this is the most crucial fact, I wouldn't exist at all. I am Absolute Love and Absolute Wisdom. The factors of their absoluteness determine the nature and content of My Self-behavior, Self-treatment

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

and behavior toward and treatment of all in My Creation and pseudo-creation.

Of course, the way I function in My Absoluteness, cannot be comprehended, even remotely, by any means by any relative sentient mind. The only thing that can be said about it, is that I always unceasingly function from the position, **and only from the position** of My Absolute Love and Absolute Wisdom. There is no other state or condition from which I could or would function. Therefore, whenever I consider your questions, their consideration is always from the position of My Absolute Love and Absolute Wisdom. If those questions are of multiversal significance, and the answers to which could be beneficial to all in My Creation and pseudo-creation, and if these answers are of such a nature that they can be comprehended by any relative sentient mind, they stir within Me tremendous delight and pleasure, giving Me a great opportunity to provide you with something new and useful. Believe me, I love to do that.

And this is what it is all about: Treat yourself and each other as I treat Myself and all in My Creation and pseudo-creation. If you do that, you'll begin to intuitively discern what it is to be Absolute. The secret of this discernment is in such self-treatment and treatment of each other. You all have predispositions to do that. I personally endowed you with such an ability. But you have to overcome your habitual tendency to treat each other from the position of the negative aspects of your human nature.

At this point, Peter, I would stop right here and close our discussion for today. Have a nice day and don't be miserable.

Peter: Thank You very much for sharing with us all these beautiful ideas.

One Hundred and Tenth Dialog

September 30, 1999

Peter: As of this moment, no questions of multiversal significance have been received from anyone. However, I would like to ask You, if I may, to elaborate further on the issue of the differences which may exist between how Your representatives behave, react, relate and feel about You, the positive state, the negative state, the human life and their living in this world, full of misery and suffering, and how the representatives of the negative state/renegades do. Of course, as always, if You would like to talk about something else first, before answering my question, I would be more than happy to yield this time to You.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Of course, you may, Peter. And thank you for yielding this introductory time to Me. Before answering your question, I would like to elaborate on something else. As you know so well, the most important issue in the multiverse is how its members or inhabitants conceive My Absolute Nature and how they relate to Me, based on that conception and knowledge. On your planet, before ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** was granted, there has never been an appropriate or correct perception, conception, knowledge and understanding of My true Nature and how humans should relate to Me. In the majority of the cases on planet Zero, this situation continues without any change in sight. If it were not for My New Revelation, and if it were not for you, My representatives, who read, understand, accept and practice My New Revelation, no form of life or pseudo-life could be sustained on your planet.

As you see from this statement, it is vitally and crucially important that someone on your planet has the correct perception, knowledge, understanding and acceptance of Who I Am, what My true Nature is and how I relate to all sentient entities. At the same time, parallel to this factor, and as important as this particular factor is how those of you, who are My representatives, relate to Me, how you feel about Me, what you think about Me, how you represent Me and My Nature and how you behave toward Me.

As you remember from the previous Dialog (109), the factor of relatedness to anyone, and not only to Me, is determined by your self-relatedness. This is a fundamentally important issue. If you have no base or platform from which you can and may relate to anyone but only yourself, then, in that case, your self-attitude, self-relatedness, self-

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

acceptance, self-perception, self-feeling, self-thinking and everything else in this self-whatever, will be the most important factor of your relationship toward Me and anyone else.

So, in order that life on this planet, in whatever form and condition, continues unabated so that it may fulfill its purpose for which it was established or allowed to be fabricated in the first place, it is necessary that someone on it has the right conception, perception, knowledge, acceptance, attitude, behavior, thinking, feeling, willing, relatedness and anything else in this respect, toward Me. Otherwise, no one could survive here. By the means of My New Revelation, you, My representatives, were put into this vital and crucial position. In this respect, your responsibility is great, greater than you can imagine by your human mind.

Now, if this most important, vital and crucial factor is determined by your self-relatedness, then you have to carefully examine how you relate toward yourself, how you feel about yourself, what you think about yourself, what your behavior is toward yourself, and how you relate to yourself in general. If all these factors of relatedness toward yourself were to be negative, in that case your relatedness toward Me and everyone else would be negative likewise. Therefore, you need very urgently to look into yourself and discover the truth about the ways you relate to yourself. After all, if I am in you and you are in Me, then any mode of this self-relatedness applies to how you relate to Me likewise. And by association and connectedness to everyone else through Me, your self-relatedness applies to how you relate to everyone else, regardless of what your outward, external, pretentious behavior might be, or what you would be saying about it to others.

Let us take, for example, the following hypothetical situation: You are very angry at yourself; you feel miserable about yourself; you despise yourself; you feel very inferior about yourself; your self-image, self-concept, self-perception, your sense of self-worth are very negative and therefore, self-rejective. Based on these negative self-characteristics, what do you think your attitude, behavior, feeling, thinking and relatedness would be toward Me and others? Could it be any other way or any different than how you feel about yourself? In no way could it! You would have no recourse but to project such negative behaviors and attitudes onto Me and others. Such a projection could go so far that you would ultimately claim that I, as well as all others, am that way. So, it would be claimed that I, as well as everyone else, am angry, rejective, inconsiderate, intolerant, impatient and negative in general.

This is how a false, distorted and totally unrealistic perception about Me, My Absolute Nature, My behavior, My attitude, My relatedness, etc., came about in human life and in the negative state in general. In the reality of this situation, if you are angry at Me, for some reason or other, it only means that you are angry at yourself, etc.

However, there is another point to this issue. The issue is: How do I respond or relate to such an angry outburst, or whatever negative behavior, toward Me? Knowing the source and the reason for such behavior in an absolute sense, in My Absolute Condition, in relationship toward Myself, I accept it with the utmost understanding, love and wisdom. I don't respond with a similar negative attitude or behavior. However, the situation is somewhat different as related to the needs of amendment of such negative self-behaviors on the part of anyone who is in such a negative self-attitude. At the same time, everyone in My Creation would like to know how I react in any particular case, of such negative behavior. Due to the fact that in My Absolute State, Condition and Process I set up proper examples for any behavior and response in the positive connotation, and only in the positive connotation, every sentient entity in the positive state looks toward Me to see how I respond to it so that they could learn something for their own responses in situations like that.

So, as everyone else, I have an absolute choice in this matter. I can choose not to respond at all or to respond in a manner that would give the one who is behaving in such a negative manner an opportunity to recognize the true source of his/her need to behave like that, so that the individual in question could amend his/her behavior. Because of My Absolute Unconditional Love and Wisdom, I never choose not to respond. My response in this positive manner can come in many ways, congruent to the needs of every unique individual and to the availability of resources and endowments which each individual has from Me. If this situation occurs with someone who is not My representative, either overtly or covertly, My response can be only by setting an example of the appropriate behaviors in this respect by means of My representatives. The way you have to understand this statement is that My representatives, by their positive and appropriate self-attitude, by means of My input into them about it, project into humanity's universal consciousness such positive behaviors and attitudes. Even though in many instances, other humans may not be consciously aware of your positive self-attitude and self-behavior, nevertheless, it is registered in their unconscious mind from which they will be able, at an opportune time, to change their own negative self-behavior and self-attitude and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

consequently, their attitude and behavior toward Me and all others as well.

The situation is entirely different if such negative self-attitude and self-behavior is found in someone who is supposed to be My representative. Because of the special and unusual position that any of My representatives has in the eyes of all in My Creation and pseudo-creation, their behavior in this respect is watched very carefully by all. At the same time, My response or reaction toward such behavior and projections is watched likewise very carefully. Because any type of behavior of My representatives has a multiversal impact and meaning, My response to it is very needed and crucial. By what means do I respond in situations like that? If anything of that nature comes across your desk, Peter, (symbolically speaking), or if you become aware of such behavior on the part of anyone who reads, accepts and considers My New Revelation and who, at the same time, exhibits such negative behavior, I choose to respond through you, Peter. Because such a response always has a multiversal significance, setting up examples and patterns of proper behavior and attitude, it is needed to be conveyed through you, because it is your role and position to do so by the means of these Dialogs. As you remember, it was indicated to you before in these Dialogs, that they are given to all of you, among many other things, exactly for this purpose. However, if such behavior occurs privately, and it is not brought to your attention by whatever means and ways, it means that it doesn't have this multiversal significance but it is solely between that individual and Me. In that case, My response is needed to that individual only and to those in other dimensions who are maintaining connectedness with the individual in question.

So, in this respect, any time anything of this nature is brought to your attention, even if it were not meant to come to it, it means that it is not personal but multiversal. In that case, the individual in question would have to accept the fact that there is something very important and needed about the whole situation of that nature and therefore, a response from Me is needed not only on a personal level, but at an all-inclusive, multiversal level. The original choice, and not the interim one, was to have it be manifested in that manner. The only choice the individual in question has, is that the identity of that individual will remain concealed from all My other representatives and anyone else unless, of course, that individual chooses by his/her own freedom of choice to divulge his/her identity.

Now, any such individual has, at least, two choices. One, he/she can choose to be hurt by and to sulk about our bringing to everyone's attention, by the means of these Dialogs, the issue of such negative behavior, attitude, relatedness, or whatever he/she has in this respect. In that case, we'll fully accept the individual's need to be hurt and to sulk or whatever negative response he/she chooses to have. None of us will judge, condemn, reject or avoid him/her; unless, of course, that individual chooses himself/herself to reject, condemn, judge and to avoid us. In any case, we'll respect that individual's choice in this matter.

Two, that individual chooses to see things from our, that is, from the multiversal perspective, as something very important and crucial for the learning of everyone; as a contributory factor toward the proper understanding of all aspects of humans' behavior and how it determines their attitude and relatedness to Me and to them. In this case, I and everyone in My Creation, at all levels of its multiverse, would be immensely thankful, grateful and appreciative to that individual for becoming a crucial and important means by which this factor could be brought to everyone's attention. At the same time, by this positive and meaningful choice, that individual would be given a great opportunity to change his/her negative self-attitude, self-relatedness, self-perception, self-image, self-identity, and self-whatever in this respect, into a positive one, and consequently, to change it, in a positive manner likewise, toward Me and everyone else. This second choice would confirm that this individual is, in fact, My true representative who is willing to learn from all of this, not only for himself/herself (which would be, to some extent, selfish), but for the sake of all. And this would be what My true representative would want and desire anyway.

In some way, you may say that the choices that any individual would make in this respect, would determine to what extent that individual really is My true representative; as well as to what extent that individual truly accepted and incorporated in his/her life the principles of My New Revelation. Due to the fact that everyone's acceptance and practice of My New Revelation is determined by how anyone behaves toward himself/herself and consequently, toward Me and others, under presently existing human conditions, the way human life is set up to be and to function, the only way this most important factor can be determined is if all My true representatives are exposed, from time to time, to situations in their own everyday life which would require from them to make such choices as described above.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

How is this situation played out? Because of your human shell or skin, from time to time, your behavior could be very much humanlike. For example, you could get angry at yourself, at Me, at others. You could get so upset that you scream and yell and argue with yourself, with Me or with others, or all of the above. Following such a negative outburst, whatever it may be, you could end up either resolving that problem individually with Me — it would be between Me and you and the members of your spiritual family and everyone connected to you from the other dimensions; or, should that type of behavior come to the attention, by whatever mode, to Peter, it would mean that something in your behavior and your response, because it inadvertently has come to his attention, has a deeper meaning and is needed to be resolved or answered, or whatever is the need in this respect, on a multiversal level.

And here comes the determination of whether your reaction to such a necessary exposure would be by the means of the first choice or by means of the second choice — as described above. In other words, as My true representative, you would, without any hesitation, make the second choice. If your reaction were to be by the nature of the first choice, the negative one, it would be indicative of your not yet having become My true representative. So, in essence, situations like that function as a vital test of determination of where you are in your own life as far as being or not yet being My true representatives on planet Zero. From the standpoint of the needs of the positive state, in cases like that, your response or reaction, as well as choices in this respect, are no longer personal only, but they are of multiversal nature. Remember that!

Another brief clarification that needs to be offered to you, is the issue of understanding of what it is to be Absolute. It was indicated to you in the previous Dialog (109) that if you treat yourself, others and Me as I treat Myself, you and all others, such treatment can and may bring you closer to the understanding of your relative mind what it is like to be Absolute. When you treat yourself, Me and others only and only in all possible positive manners, which are of the utmost love, respect, understanding, acceptance, kindness, gentleness, tenderness, consideration, objectivity, righteousness, justice, mercy, forgiveness, empathy, compassion, and sometimes, if needed and when needed, with loving-kind firmness, as well as with all other positive characteristics of true love and its true wisdom, then, in your behavior, you reflect Me and My Absolute State. The dynamics and the processes of My Absolute State are rooted in these characteristics. In fact, they comprise My Absolute Nature. As you remember from My previous statements in these Dialogs, they are Me and I am them. For that reason, in the logical construct of this setup,

anyone who strives to be like that in his/her own life, as related to himself/herself, Me and others, reflects this Absolute Nature in his/her relative condition. This reflection brings him/her closer and closer to the understanding of what it is to be Absolute. The less and less such positive characteristics are contained in one's self-behavior, in behavior toward Me and in behavior toward others, the less and less understanding one has or is able to acquire about who I am, what My true Nature is all about and what it is like to be Absolute. In that case, one gets more and more remote from being with Me or in My presence. At the same time, because of such negative self-behavior, not giving himself/herself an opportunity to know Me and others better, one loses a true perspective of who one is and what his/her true nature is likewise.

So, as you see from the described situation, your self-knowledge, self-concept, self-identity and everything else related to them is tied in directly with your knowledge and acceptance of who I am and what My true Nature is. Thus, the more you know Me, the more you'll know yourself and others. And vice versa: The more you know yourself, the more you'll know Me and others. In ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** it was clearly indicated to you that the most important knowledge of all is the proper knowledge of yourself, the reason being that the true knowledge of Me is contingent on the knowledge of yourself and vice versa: Only the true knowledge of Me and My Nature can and may lead you to the discovery of your true self or your true identity the way you are behind the scene and not as at or on the human scene.

In response to your question, Peter, it is obvious that the fundamental differences between someone who loves the negative state and considers it to be the same as the positive state, and My true representatives, is that whereas the lovers of the negative state don't possess a proper knowledge of themselves and, most importantly of Me, My true Nature and anyone else's nature, My true representatives do so. Moreover, My true representatives recognize the true nature of the negative state, of human life and their position. Yes, from their position of being in and functioning from the midst of the positive state, while by their bodies they live in the negative state or human life, they can be as happy, as comfortable, as joyous and as delightful and everything else, as the lovers of the negative state are. But they never ever consider the negative state as being the same as the positive state. Whenever they descend (symbolically speaking) into their bodily functions and the human aspects of their nature, they feel the pressures, the negativity, the inappropriateness, the evilness and everything else so much inherent in the negative state and in their human life. However, from the position

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

of their positive nature, which they have from Me, they are able, in most instances, to cope efficiently with all turmoil and tribulations of their human life without succumbing to it and without being taken over by it. The lovers of the negative state don't experience such feelings. After all, they are comfortable being in human life. This is one of the signs of how you can distinguish between someone who is a lover of the negative state, thus, being its true and genuine representative and someone who is not.

By the means of these Dialogs, you have been given a tremendous tool to know all these things and to cope with everything in your life in the most efficient and successful manner. All you have to do is to accept, incorporate and internalize all this knowledge into your life and to consider it as a beacon which shows you the right way by which you can travel the road of your life. Take it and travel with it! And this is all for now, Peter. Go and rest and have a nice day.

Peter: Thank You so much for these encouraging words and ideas.

One Hundred and Eleventh Dialog

October 2, 1999

Peter: Today, I personally don't have any specific questions of multiversal significance. However, some questions were asked from Slovakia (by Joseph Beneš and his wife, Alenka). During my meditative walk this morning, it was indicated to me that You would like to make some comments about the meaning contained in those questions. Joseph's question is a simple one. He is asking whether the renegades are also asking questions or whether we are the ones who, by the positive examples of our own life, set up a condition for them under which they will be able to eventually convert to the positive state. Alenka's question, I believe, was answered in some way or other in one of the earlier Dialogs which dealt with the issue of near death experiences. She would like to have some further clarification on the concept, contained in Indian philosophy — 'Nirvana.' Would You like to address these, or any other issues, this morning?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, I would. As you know, one of the reasons why the pseudo-creators activated and put the negative state into pseudo-life, was because they were asking questions. Those questions, in fact, were asked on behalf of all then existing sentient entities. Whenever you ask questions that have multiversal significance, the answers to them can be and need to be given on a multiversal level likewise. If their questions relate to the nature of any other type of life other than the life of the positive state, the answer to them, which would be fully and completely impactful and meaningful, could be given only in one mode — by illustration and demonstration of that other type of life on the concrete lives of certain sentient entities who would volunteer to be such exemplifiers.

So, the original activators of the negative state did so because of the need to get answers to vitally and crucially important and significant questions in this respect. But how do you go about establishing such a life, which would have a chance to appear to its participators as the real one, and in fact, the only one which is tangible and possible? You fabricate all kinds of creatures who possess a sentient mind but who, by the structural nature of their own mind, have no desire or need to ask any questions of multiversal, or even individual nature. Why is it so? The reason for such a fabrication is in the fact that, if you give them an option of asking questions of such a multiversal significance, they not only would ask such questions, but they would also most definitely get

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

answers to them. If they were to get such answers, in no way would the negative state have any chance of establishing its pseudo-life. In that case, the answer to the original question posed by the pseudo-creators on behalf of all, could never be answered. Again, in that case, the sentient entities would never acquire knowledge about any other type of life but their own and they would remain eternally in doubt whether their life is truly the life of the positive state or whether it is something else. In other words, as mentioned before, they would have no possibility of comparing their life with some other type of life and thus, they would end up without having any choice in the matter but only the necessity to be locked up in one choice.

As you know, Peter, to have one choice means to have no choice. In that case, what kind of life would it be? If you live in constant doubt about anything, and especially about the type of life you have, then, you cannot very well consider your life as a positive one because doubts can be very torturous. The positive state doesn't contain any state of torture or doubt. Otherwise, it would not be the positive state but the negative one.

So, in order to avoid any possibility of failure in providing the answers to their questions, the pseudo-creators fabricated everyone in their domain, as well as, initially, humans, without any need or desire to ask any questions of that nature. As a matter of fact, the fabrication of their creatures was based on two fundamental principles: One, the pseudo-life of the negative state is, in fact, the true life of the positive state. It is the only possible life that has any meaning and significance and therefore, nothing else or different is desirable or needed. Because of that, no need to ponder or ask questions about the possibility of any other type of life is necessary and needed or even feasible at all. Two, whatever other type of life exists, it is, in fact, a very bad life, a very restrictive life and therefore, that life, which claims to be the positive one, is, in reality, the true negative state. The true purpose of that other life was/is to destroy our life and therefore, we need to defend ourselves against it and to destroy it first so it won't succeed in destroying us.

This was the rationale behind the establishment of that other type of life. Only with such a rationale and setup could the pseudo-life of the negative state be established. No other possibility would accomplish the necessary goal for which the negative state was permitted to come to its adverse fruition.

So, if you are one hundred percent convinced that your life is the only possible and feasible one and only positive in its nature and that any other type of life is very much negative, and that it is after your throat

so-to-speak, then, in that case, you don't question anything about your life and you want it to be preserved to eternity by whatever means are available to you. And because the other type of life is in your way of accomplishing your goal in this respect, you commit all your resources, abilities, or whatever you have to the destruction of that other life. This is how all in the negative state were brainwashed into believing this fable.

The renegades are the embodiment of this pseudo-philosophy. Therefore, at this point in time, they don't ask any questions about their life or anything else related to the nature of any other type of life. They are completely and totally, without any exception or exclusion, committed to the destruction of the positive state and to the preservation to eternity of the negative state or of their brand of pseudo-life.

However, at the present time, the situation with some creatures in the Hells is somewhat different than with the renegades and their minions. Thanks to My New Revelation, and especially to these Dialogs, many of them, who are attached to My representatives, are hearing all these things the right way. For the first time they have information that substantially and diametrically differs from what they have been offered all this time by their rulers. Based on this factor, they have begun to ask their own questions and, by the means of these Dialogs, if My representatives read them with Me and them on their mind, they are getting the right answers. This factor established a very peculiar situation in their respective Hells. On one hand, there is a propaganda drum beat continuously going on, which is trying to convince these entities to continue in their lifestyle, which was established many millions of years ago and which has been perpetuated until this time and which has been the only life they have known and experienced and which they have considered to be the ultimate in positiveness and goodness; and to continue fighting against anything of the positive nature, considered by them, in that nature, to be the ultimate-ness of negativity and destructiveness. On the other hand, they hear this new information, which is coming to them in My voice by the means of these Dialogs, which is telling them something entirely different. As a matter of fact, it is telling them just the opposite of what they have thought was true but, according to this information, it was a total falsity.

The moment you begin to receive two contradictory informations, for the first time, you are placed into a position of starting to ask your own questions. Once you start to ask your own questions, it means that now you are really beginning to doubt whether your prior and only

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

information and conviction is true or not. And this is the very first step taken toward recognizing the fact that maybe, just maybe, your life is not what you have thought it has been up to this point. And perhaps, in that case, what you were told or what you believed about the nature of that other type of life, has not been true either.

Now, with humans on planet Zero the situation was/is somewhat different. Originally, before My First Coming, humans were in a similar position as were/are all other creatures of the Hells. They were likewise not asking questions because, as you remember, the forces of the negative state convinced humans that their life is a positive one, the only feasible one and that planet Zero is the place to be because it is the best and the most desirable place in the entire universe. Nothing better has ever existed or will ever exist. With such a conviction, who would have any need or desire to question anything about their life or anything else important for that matter? The formidable task for the fabricators of humans in this respect was to combine two factors: One, to establish human life on the principles of necessity and no freedom of choice. Two, at the very same time, to convince humans, or to place into their genetic makeup a code that would make them believe that their life is the best possible life and that planet Zero is the only good and desirable planet to live on in the entire visible and invisible universe. Thus, based on this conviction, humans would fall in love with their human life and therefore, would want nothing more and better than to be here as long as possible and to cling to their human life by any means available. Under these conditions no questions would be asked.

My First Coming on planet Zero, as you know, put an end to this necessity. For the first time, humans were given a choice in this matter: Either to continue to believe in the falsities about the true origin and nature of human life or to recognize the truth about it. However, in order for the negative state and human life to establish their lifestyle based on free will and free choice and not on necessity, it was necessary to permit them for some time to continue in their former lifestyle, still considering that this life is the best one to be in. At this time however, by the factor of freedom of choice, a foundation was built on which it was made possible for humans to ask their own questions and to get their own answers. The forces of the negative state however, knowing what a tremendous danger in this new possibility was for their cause, devised a different way of preventing humans from asking their own questions. As you know, many religions and various pseudo-spiritual trends were established on planet Zero and elsewhere, which took over the role of enforcement of their own belief systems into humans which would not

allow humans to ask their own questions and get their own answers. Instead, humans were made to believe that all the answers they needed were contained in the dogmas and doctrines of their respective religions or pseudo-spiritual movements. Thus, the followers of these trends and movements, were successfully blocked from the need or desire to ask their own questions and get their own answers. And if they were to have any inclination to ask such questions, they were made to believe that the answers to them can be found in the dogmas or doctrines of their respective religions or in whatever they adopted as their own preferable belief system. This was a very effective way of preventing humans from thinking on their own and making them believe that whatever was contained in the dogmas and doctrines of their systems, was the only truth and nothing different could have any truth. Because of that, humans, up to this point, have been kept in distortions and falsities about their life, about Me, the positive state and everything else.

This is exactly what happens if anyone is kept from the need and desire to ask their own questions and get their own answers. As you clearly see from this setup, prevention of asking your own questions and getting your own answers lead to the establishment of evils and falsities, that is to say, it leads to the establishment of the pseudo-life of the negative state. And this is the reason why, in the initial setup, whoever or whatever was fabricated by the pseudo-creators, was fabricated without any need or desire to ask any questions and to get any answers. Otherwise, no negative state could be established.

It was not until My New Revelation had begun to be transmitted through you, Peter, that these facts have started to, gradually, and in progressive steps, be brought to your attention and to the attention of all its readers. The very first step in this respect was the necessity to reveal the truth about the origin of humans and of the negative state in general. As more and more was revealed in this respect, by the factor of that new knowledge, you were prepared to receive the most important news — the acquirement of My New Nature. Once My New Nature was established, and once you accepted it as the most important factor of any sentient life, the next step was, again, gradually and one step at a time, to build the next important foundation for your actions — preparing you for learning to ask your own questions and get your own answers. In the first round of this learning, you needed to acquire an ability to individualize and personalize your life so that, from that position, you could ask your own *individualized* and *personalized* questions independently, on your own, without any input from anyone. These types of questions always relate to your own personal spiritual or any other needs, as well as to the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

needs of all those in other dimensions and pseudo-dimensions who were connected to you for that very purpose.

Once you anchored yourself in this mode of individualized and personalized life, the next step was to activate your ability to ask questions which would have a multiversal significance or importance. Such questions, and their answers, always relate to and are of interest, in some way or other, to everyone in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. Because of the multiversality of the content and meaning of such questions, the only one through whom they could have been asked and the only one through whom the answers to them could be received, was someone who was put into the position of the multiversal link — the transmitter of My New Revelation. Nevertheless, even in this case, you are the ones who are asking your own questions, as they come to you by the very inspiration from Me or from the members of your spiritual family, or from the members of the New Universe, and you are getting your answers directly from Me through Peter. The reason why it is through Peter, is, so that your questions and the answers to them could be heard and registered by everyone in My Creation and pseudo-creation without exception or exclusion. Only someone who is in the position of this multiversal link, established by Me for that very purpose, can be heard and registered by everyone.

By setting up such a method of conveyance of the New Ideas of My New Revelation, or ideas which are constantly being in the process of their renewal and regeneration, a totally new situation is being established not only everywhere in My Creation, but, most importantly, on planet Zero and via planet Zero to the entirety of the Zone of Displacement with all its respective pseudo-worlds, pseudo-dimensions and all the Hells. From this totally new situation, gradually and slowly, everyone in the negative state is learning about the usefulness and tremendous benefit of asking their own questions and getting their own answers, independently of any available dogmas, doctrines or whatever they have in that respect which has been ruling and dominating their pseudo-lives. Under the influence of this new situation, a desire and a need is being stirred up in everyone in the negative state to go ahead and ask their own questions and get their own answers.

So, as of this moment, do expect that you will be inspired by them also to ask their own questions which would have a multiversal significance. Should they have some individualized and personalized questions, related to their own private needs, those types of questions will be answered either through your own effort of asking your own individual

and personal questions (your questions would be congruent to their needs as well) or by some members of the positive state who are posted at the outposts established in their respective pseudo-worlds exactly for that, and many other purposes. In the case of questions of multiversal significance, the answers to them would come from Me by the means of the multiversal link — the transmitter of My New Revelation. Either way, you would be inspired to ask them on their behalf but as if they are coming from you.

As My true representatives on planet Zero, you are being humbly asked by Me to accept this particular mission in addition to anything else that you are to do. It will become one of the important aspects of your role and mission. Of course, consciously, you won't always realize that some questions coming to your mind would be coming from the members of the negative state who are learning to ask important questions. In their ability and willingness to do so, is rooted their future salvation and conversion to the positive state.

As far as the renegades themselves and their minions are concerned, as of this moment, they are very far from any desire or need to follow this suit. As a matter of fact, they are furious that this situation has also been effectively established and grounded in their domain and world. They'll make an all-out effort to discourage both you and their own people from asking any questions at all and getting any answers as well. But, at one point in time, when everything regarding the negative state and its pseudo-life will be coming to its final end, the renegades will wake up and will begin asking their own questions, especially about why it has been that, no matter what they have been doing, no matter how much effort they have been making, no matter how many kinds of tricks they have been coming up with, no matter what at all, they could never succeed in any of them on a permanent basis. Even if sometimes they have been successful in some of their endeavors in this respect, nevertheless, in the end they ended up in total failure and defeat.

When you constantly experience total failure in everything that you do, no matter what it is and no matter how much effort you put into it, at one point in time, you really have no recourse but to ask yourself questions, why is it so and what it is that you are doing wrong? And here comes your role, My true representatives, in relationship to the renegades. By establishing many examples with your own behavior, attitude and willingness not only to ask Me questions but also to listen to the answers and to implement in your own lives what those answers indicate and contain, you are showing to the renegades and their minions

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

the way how to do it and how to implement it. This illustration and demonstration on your behalf, because it is of such an individualized, unique and personalized nature, will lead the renegades and their minions to the process of their own individualization and personalization. Because such a process is a process of the positive state, they will wake up from their illusions, delusions and nightmares and will accept into themselves the life of the positive state.

Of course, we are still far, time-wise, from this to happen, but, nevertheless, we are heading in that direction. And you, and your life as My true representatives on planet Zero, are instrumental in this process. The grounds for this to happen are being established right now.

Peter: Thank You very much for this very exciting revelation. As you know, something very important and elating happened in the process of recording this Dialog. Would You like to address this event now or would You like to talk about Alenka's question about Nirvana first?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Let Me first talk about the concept of 'Nirvana.' Basically, the answer to this question could be very easily derived from some of the previous Dialogs which dealt with the issue of near death experiences, the pre-entrance area into the spiritual world and about what happens after one dies and can no longer return to his/her physical body.

However, let us look at it from the current perspective. Basically, Nirvana, the way it is conceived by Indian philosophy, doesn't exist. On the other hand, what does happen to people who come to the spiritual world, after they are recalled from planet Zero, with certain accepted, internalized and professed-by-them ideas, the verity of which they are so sure that no one can convince them that the true reality is different from what they confessed and believed during their lifetime on this planet? Of course, as you know so well, Peter, they expect, by the totality of their own being and existence, to find that world exactly the way they believed it to be. Their expectations, at that point in their state or time (from the human conceptualization of time), projected outwardly, create for them an illusion of being in a world of their own making. Thus, if you believed in and identified yourself with the concept of Nirvana, reincarnation, or anything else for that matter, but which does not reflect the true reality of the spiritual world, you assume your illusions as being the true reality and you'll experience yourself subjectively as being in Nirvana or in the area which is allegedly preparing you for reincarnation back on planet Zero. These false belief systems, because they are false, and because you are in an illusion of reality but not in reality itself, attract all kinds of

negative spirits from the Hells who are able to enter your illusions, and feed you a sense of reality of your illusional world. For that reason, for a long period of time, in your own subjective perception of time (within the allotted three years in human planetary time but in your own time it could be many centuries or more), you have no other idea but that you are in Nirvana or any other place of your belief system.

When you are in that state, with the exception of the negative spirits, no one can hear you or understand you as long as you are clinging to your illusions. This is the reason why Alenka, in her vision, saw people in such places, who were trying to communicate with her but whom she couldn't understand. Because they tried to communicate with her from the position of their illusions, their words couldn't be comprehended by someone who functioned from the position of being My representative, the position which is real.

However, at one point in time or state, as they are living out their illusions, and waiting and waiting and waiting for something to happen (to merge with God, for example, or to reincarnate), and in their endless waiting nothing of the expected nature is taking place, they become bored almost to death. It is at such a point that they cry out for help. Because those people could hear and understand you, even if you don't hear or understand them, you could be helpful to them by telling them to ask Me — The Lord Jesus Christ — for help and for liberation from their illusions and from all negative spirits attached to them. If they heed your advice, and ask Me for help, then they are freed from their illusions and subsequently, they are introduced to the true reality of the spiritual world. So, if any one of you were to have such an experience or vision, from now on, you would know what to do in this respect. And this is all that was needed to be said about the concept of Nirvana.

And now a few words about what was happening today in the process of recording this particular Dialog. In the midst of this recording, a phone call was received from Margaret Buhr. Her call was one of the most joyous events in recent years on all levels of being and existence and on your own level, Peter. She fully accepted the content of the One Hundred and Eighth Dialog and had made a most desirable and positive choice to come back to Me, to My New Revelation, to you, Peter, and to all of us. The significance of this event is enormous. Something new and different, only in the positive sense of those words, is being accomplished and established. Because this new and different is in the process of being unfolded, its true and significant meaning cannot be revealed as yet. Some other things need to happen before the full impact of this event, as

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

well as of everything else related to it, and to some other people who were involved in that situation, as described in the above-mentioned Dialog, could be properly ascertained. We'll return to this topic later on, either during Manfred's, Margaret's and some other individual's visit with Gloria and you, Peter, in Santa Barbara, or after their visit. You'll know when we should address this one of the most important issues and its most positive and desirable meaning and significance. Also, how this event will be impacting the pseudo-creators, the renegades and their minions, will be revealed later on.

In the meantime, if you receive any questions of multiversal significance, they will be answered via the subsequent Dialogs. For today though, I would recommend to finish this Dialog and take up some other work that you need to do. Go in peace and rejoice in everything that has happened today and that will be happening as of now.

Peter: Thank You very much for every word contained in this Dialog. As I clearly see it, our dialoging has a tremendous positive effect on most of its readers.

The Lord Jesus Christ: It is really so, Peter. This is one of the major reasons why we are having these dialogs.

One Hundred and Twelfth Dialog

October 3, 1999

Peter: After I recorded the One Hundred and Eleventh Dialog, and reread it, a question came to my mind about the nature of the differences between what the followers of all those numerous religions, their sects and various pseudo-spiritualistic movements are being fed by their respective dogmas, doctrines and so-called Holy Books, and us, Your true representatives who are receiving these Dialogs and what they contain as well as what is contained in the entirety of Your New Revelation. Also, during last night's sleep, I had very disturbing and anxiety provoking dreams which left me totally baffled and uneasy. Of course, before answering my questions, perhaps, You would like to contribute something which is more important than my puny problems or questions.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for allowing Me to talk first. Yes, I would like to contribute something before going into answering your question and the reason for and source of your anxiety provoking dreams and uneasiness.

Let Me begin with something which has been on your mind but about which neither you nor anyone else have asked Me by direct questions. Although you were discussing this issue amongst yourselves, you were reluctant to ask about it. However, this issue needs to be briefly commented upon. It relates to the unusual, back-to-back occurring disasters that have been happening on your planet. As you know, recently you witnessed four major earthquakes that happened in different places on the Globe. All these earthquakes were of unusual power, with numbers of victims that in two places reached many thousands. Two of these earthquakes happened in the so-called non-Christian countries, with the greatest number of victims in them, and two in the so-called Christian countries with very low numbers of victims not congruent to the powerful tremors that those earthquakes measured. Moreover, in Japan, a very dangerous situation occurred with a radiation leak during an accident in a uranium processing plant.

Is there any spiritual significance to these tragic events? When you have such a huge number of victims, who succumb to those accidents, obviously, those so-called accidents are not accidental at all. As a matter of fact, to your dismay, such occurrences are usually well planned out. Of course, sometimes situations do occur during which a botched up mishandling of some kind of experiment is taking place and which, by

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

the means of its spiritual correspondences and positioning to some place on planet Zero, causes a disastrous event, in which several hundred or even thousands of humans perish. However, in the case of the above mentioned events, no such situation occurred. As a matter of fact, they were reflections of something which was going on in other pseudo-dimensions where the pseudo-creators and renegades are located in their own state and condition. The regions of those pseudo-dimensions have a corresponding proximity to the places on planet Zero where the mentioned earthquakes and disaster occurred.

Although it is not spiritually appropriate for you to know what the specific meaning of those correspondences is, — it could be even spiritually dangerous to have such knowledge, — you may know that those events, and many more which are forthcoming, are the results, among some other spiritual reasons, of the civil war which is going on between the pseudo-creators and renegades, as well as amongst various factions of the renegades themselves. At the same time, the factor of retribution and punishment is in effect.

In an ultimate sense, all such disastrous events, regardless of who or what are their causative factors, are the consequences of improper, false or distorted spiritual conceptualizations of life, any life, which fulfilled the measure of its application and internalization and the continuation of which, in the lives of those who succumb during those disasters, would endanger not only their own future position and salvation in the spiritual world, but everyone on your planet as well. Once the measure of such improper spiritual conceptualization is fulfilled, it triggers the process of retribution and punishment for holding to something which is false and consequently evil. This process assures that on a multiversal scale, as well as in the domain of the originators of those falsities and evils, the specific false and distorted spiritual concept is completely and totally wiped out from the minds of all sentient entities. It also places the perished ones into a position of receiving mercy and forgiveness for holding to such false concepts, giving them an opportunity to amend their ways and to convert to the positive state.

Whenever such wiping out takes place, it considerably weakens the position of the negative state because, at that moment, all its inhabitants lose something important from their arsenal of evils and falsities by which they were seducing, flooding and brainwashing their members both in their domain and on planet Zero. As you know, the majority of falsities, distortions and improper spiritual conceptualizations are contained in the so-called non-Christian philosophies. The reason for this

is because they either deny My Absolute Existence entirely or they reject My Divinity and My Absolute New Nature. As you know, the improper conceptualization of My True Absolute Nature, when it is compounded to proportions unbearable for the multiverse, triggers the need for retribution and punishment, the result of which is the relief of tremendous pressure and burden which such negative and evil conceptualization causes in the fabric of the multiverse.

Now, this doesn't mean that the so-called Christian philosophies are any better than the non-christian's. The only redeeming quality they have, is that they do accept Me as the only begotten Son of God who has His/Her own Divinity. This factor of My acceptance, cushions the shock from such disastrous events so that, so far, the number of victims resulting from such events was not as high as in the non-Christian countries. However, this situation cannot be tolerated for too long because of their current tendencies to compromise with other non-Christian religions and degrading My Nature to that of a simple human, bringing it down to the level of a prophet without any divinity. This compromise will flood all the Christian countries with an equal measure of evils and falsities as in all other countries, which may put them into a position of the same level and degree of the need for retribution and punishment as all others. So, don't be surprised if in the near or far future, these so-called Christian countries may also experience similar conditions in this respect as the non-Christian ones.

Of course, this is the view which perceives things as they are played out on or at the scene on planet Zero and in humans' lives. Behind the scenes, during such events, as well as during anything else, the situation is entirely different. In the past, before the process of condensation of the negative state was put in motion, and when the entire efforts and energies of the negative state, as well as of the positive state, were directed toward balancing each other out; any time the balance was tipped in favor of the negative state, a shift needed to take place, during which a redistribution of the numbers of sentient entities was initiated in such a manner that the lacking number on the positive side was filled out by newcomers either from planet Zero, in the case that the human positive qualities were getting out of balance in the spiritual world, which, in turn, would endanger the life of the entire humanity everywhere; or from some other places, states and conditions which were suffering from lopsidedness of their condition as compared to the negative state.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

If this balance was tipped in favor of the positive state, the forces of the negative state would initiate some disasters on your planet or on some other regions of the Zone of Displacement which were getting out of balance, during which many entities would perish and be brought to their domain, balancing it out against the positive state.

However, as you know, the process of balancing is no longer in place. A different situation was set up in all involved dimensions and pseudo-dimensions. All energies, efforts and everything else in the negative state are directed toward its pseudo-winning on planet Zero and elsewhere. On the other hand, all energies, efforts and everything else in the positive state are directed toward elimination of the negative state and toward establishment of its life, in the fullness and completeness of its content.

This new situation puts everything in a totally different perspective. As the renegades are losing one position after another, in the process they are depleted of the needed resources for continuation in their wars with the pseudo-creators, with each other and with the positive state. So, as you see, you have here a very peculiar three-way front which is taking place in this respect. Because of this condition, or these three fronts, the renegades' resources are being depleted very fast. In order to replenish them with new blood, so-to-speak, they stage various massive disasters on your planet and transport thousands of humans into their pseudo-realm, thus, reinforcing their position as represented by the specific qualities of spiritual distortions and falsities, internalized by those who perished during such disasters, staged by the renegades.

What you have to clearly understand in this respect, is, that their wars are of a spiritual nature. What does it mean — spiritual in nature? It means that these wars are waged by various concepts, ideas, thoughts, feelings, emotions, will, which are of a totally evil and negative nature. Each such negative, evil, false and distorted trait or characteristic has its own very specific pseudo-qualities that have their own pseudo-potency. So, whenever some of those pseudo-qualities are depleted, as a result of their overuse during such spiritual wars, they need to be replenished. In order to do that, the renegades seek out those regions on planet Zero, and the respective humans who occupy them, which carry those spiritual pseudo-qualities, very much needed for the continuation of their spiritual war. Once they find such regions and humans, they stage some kind of disaster which takes out those humans into the intermediate dimension. During their transit to that dimension, the specific pseudo-qualities of those humans are extracted from them and transposed into their domain

where they replenish the exhausted portion of the needed pseudo-energies.

As you see from this description, it is not that much that they need human spirits and souls, or the quantities of human bodies per se, but they utilize the factors of their specific spiritual correspondences which contain the needed specific pseudo-qualities of their very specific false, evil or distorted ideas. As far as each specific individual is concerned, who perished during such a disaster, his/her destiny, as an individual, is determined by the choices he/she made and by the factor of his/her internalization and identification with any such negative ideas, thoughts, feelings, emotions, will, concepts or whatever he/she had in that respect.

In the case of any positive entity, who perished during such a disastrous event, the choice was to exit planet Zero in this particular way for the major purpose of helping those who perished with him/her and who are in need of assistance from someone who came from the same region, state, and condition as they did. By the examples, illustrations and demonstrations of their behavior, attitude and willingness to help, these positive entities provide very important assistance for all others who find themselves in a state of the greatest possible confusion, anxiety and fear. Because of such important and needed services, among some other more personalized and individualized reasons, these positive entities agreed to perish with all others during such disastrous events.

However, the problem with this process is in the fact, that, it is also utilized to trigger the needed retribution and punishment, which is reflected in the nature of death by which all perished individuals, with the exception of the positive ones, are being punished. At the same time, as mentioned above, the specific spiritual pseudo-quality represented by each individual, upon completion of the specific retribution and punishment, is being wiped out from the cache of the multiversal consciousness. This factor complicates the entire situation for the renegades and their minions. In order to resolve this problem, they need to combine, recombine, mutate and manipulate various extracted false, distorted and evil ideas, or the pseudo-qualities of each individual, into a new strain which would be more effective in combating the forces of the positive state, the pseudo-creators and each other's numerous factions. In the process of such manipulation, many failures may occur which on your planet are reflected in various local disasters, accidents, incidents, and similar events akin to something that happened in Japan a few days ago. The pseudo-spiritual factors of such manipulations evoke a response in those countries and individuals, which/who are in a corresponding

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

position and proximity to the nature of those factors. Their interconnectedness causes those manipulations and their possible failures to appear on planet Zero and in its specific locations in a concrete, physical and tangible manner — the actual physical disasters.

From the above description it becomes obvious how dangerous it is to hold to, to identify yourself with and to consider as true any false, distorted or inappropriate ideas, concepts, perceptions, feelings, thoughts, attitudes, behaviors or whatever you have in this respect.

And this brings us obliquely to answering your question, Peter, about the differences between what you, as My representatives, have in My New Revelation and what the majority of humanity has in their dogmas and doctrines. Your question, Peter, contains a grain of fear that My New Revelation, or whatever is written in all of your books and in these Dialogs, could be considered a dogma or doctrine likewise. If this assumption were to be true, then, obviously, no difference would exist between them.

However, consider this factor: From the very beginning of your awareness that something was wrong with the traditional religious conceptualization of life, the positive state, My Nature and everything else, you were desperately asking questions and seeking answers, recognizing the fact that a New Revelation is needed in order to receive proper, correct and true answers to all these issues and with the explanation of why all things, that have been happening in the process of humanity's history on planet Zero, have happened the way they have or have been happening up to this point. You began to ask questions. Initially, you were seeking the answers to them in all the books of traditional religions, and various other pseudo-spiritual resources, which led you nowhere. At that point in time, you recognized very clearly that they didn't contain any answers to your questions. So, you turned yourself directly to Me and asked Me your very first question: Will there be a New Revelation given which would explain all these mysterious things about anything at all, including about Me and My True Nature? Because you asked your questions, they opened the door for the answers to them, not from the dogmatic, doctrinal and traditional sources but directly from Me. As you were recording My New Revelation, in its process you were in a perpetual state of asking questions and receiving the answers, again, directly from Me, bypassing any other sources in this respect.

However, look at the process of transmission of My New Revelation. It is a process of a buildup, going further, transcending anything previously

revealed. It is a process of constantly either bringing something new and different or renewing and regenerating previously revealed concepts so that nothing in them would remain old or outdated. And not only that but, during the recording of these Dialogs, many other of My representatives joined you in asking their own questions, very often of multiversal significance, which would bring further new insights and understanding of many other important and vital spiritual issues which concerned everyone in My Creation and pseudo-creation. By doing that this way, by constantly updating, upgrading and transcending anything that needed to be brought to a higher level of understanding, we prevented anything in My New Revelation from becoming dogmatic, doctrinal, old and regressive.

On the other hand, look at what is going on in all other religious systems. They base all their teachings on something which was proclaimed many thousands of years ago without allowing anything new or different to enter their consideration. If any questions are coming their way, the interpreters of those dogmas and doctrines are always trying to seek answers to those questions within the frame of those dogmas and doctrines. In no way are they allowed to deviate from them. And if someone does so, that one is proclaimed to be a heretic and is expelled from his/her church. So, everything in them is perpetually maintained the same and, by that factor, whatever questions and answers they get, they become circular in the sense that they never ever deviate from what was said about it a few thousand years ago. Thus, not only do they become stagnant in their condition, but they are in the process of continuous regression, going spiritually backward. Nothing of this nature is conceivable in My New Revelation; and this is so, thanks to your need and desire to ask your own questions and get your own answers. For that reason, the advice is, please, continue in the same direction without ever stopping to ask your questions and to get your answers.

And finally, Peter, your anxiety dreams and uneasy feelings were induced by the renegades who are very much angry at you for giving, by the means of these Dialogs, an opportunity to all, who were to some degree under their influence, to get out of their control and to return back to Me and to My New Revelation. The willingness on their part to do so means a tremendous defeat to the renegades and their pseudo-cause. They see you as the culprit of their failure to maintain the status quo. So, in their impotent rage, not being able to do anything else to you, they utilize your doubts and uncertainties, as well as your fears that you might be wrong in your conclusions about anything revealed in My New Revelation, as well as about the true identity of individuals who were in

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

some way or other under their influence, to induce those types of dreams and uneasy feelings during your sleep and wakeup periods. Those times are your most vulnerable and sensitive. Don't be taken in by any of it; which you do not, anyway. Otherwise, right now, you wouldn't be sitting in front of your computer, recording this particular Dialog.

And with these words I would suggest to finish for now and go into the sun to work out your fears, anxieties, worries and uneasy feelings. I can assure you, Peter, that things will work out in the best possible and the most needed way in all respects. Be at My peace.

Peter: I am expressing my gratitude and appreciation for everything that was elaborated upon in this Dialog. I'll take Your advice and do what You suggested.

One Hundred and Thirteenth Dialog

October 9, 1999

Peter: Well, for a few days we haven't had any dialoging. You know, it always feels somewhat strange and unfulfilling whenever we stop doing our Dialogs. As You are aware, the other night, I even had a dream in which I resumed our work together. On the other hand, I haven't received any questions of multiversal significance from anyone, at least not until yesterday.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Such breaks are very necessary and useful to have for all readers of these Dialogs, Peter, and not only for you. They need to assimilate and internalize whatever is contained in them. This takes time. In your case, Peter, you yourself were saying that because of continuous dialoging, you have no time to read them. Having a typical human memory problem, you are very well aware that you don't remember too much about anything which is contained in these Dialogs. Don't forget that, so far, we have recorded 112 Dialogs. It is a tremendous volume of information, very important, crucial and significant information, that needs to be understood, accepted, applied and from which many meaningful consequences need to be derived for every reader. To do that, you have to give them time. Moreover, Manfred from Ulm, Germany arrived, and it is important that you spend some time together. His visit with you and others has an important spiritual significance. This importance will become obvious upon completion of his visit with you.

As far as your dream is concerned, it was only signaling to you that it is time to talk about something that needs to come into the foreground of your attention (all readers' attention!) in order to be applied, by your free will and choice, of course, into your everyday behavior and into how you relate to each other and to all other humans and/or to the typical representatives of the negative state with whom you occasionally come in contact during your everyday life.

Peter: I understand. And I fully accept this necessity. Personally, I don't have any questions. Yesterday, I received a beautiful E-mail letter from Dr. Beth Ann Voien, in which she describes some of her important experiences as related to her own self-acceptance as a woman and about her attitude to masculinity and femininity in general. This was in response to something that was contained in Dialog 109. In conclusion of her letter, she was submitting a request for clarification of the term "co-creator" — if needed, appropriate and agreeable with You, of course. However, before going into any answer related to this term, I

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

understand, that first You would like to bring something to our attention.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, you are right. Also, it is appropriate to elaborate a little more on the term “co-creator.” As a matter of fact, one aspect of our discussion this morning will have direct relevance to Beth Ann’s request. So, as you see, it is not by coincidence that she was asking about it.

Today, I would like to bring to your attention some other attributes of the lifestyle and behavior of all inhabitants of the positive state, as well as of My Absolute New Nature, and how it concerns all of you as My representatives on planet Zero. As you remember, during our dialoging, we extensively discussed such attributes as objectivity, righteousness, justice, judgment, mercy, forgiveness, compassion, empathy, understanding and acceptance. During our discussion of these important spiritual and behavioral attributes, it was also pointed out to you that in your position as the agents of the positive state, the emphasis was primarily on objectivity, righteousness, justice and judgment. At that time, this emphasis was very necessary in order to establish awareness of and the need for recognition of all consequences, outcomes and results of any behavior, attitude and relationship based on the pseudo-principles of the negative state as reflected in the lives of humans and all inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement. Such a requirement was based on the law of cause and effect. You cause something by your behavior, attitude or relationship and as a result, you get an effect. The consequences of these factors result in the impact they have on your life in general.

Once these factors were fully established and registered in all sentient entities’ minds, (in humans and others in the negative state on the level of the unconscious portion of their minds), and once your role as agents of the positive state exhausted its usefulness, in this respect, the monumental shift took place, the nature of which required a change in what you needed to establish and adhere to during this shift and all its phases which was instituted at that time. Whereas, preceding that shift, in the previous time, objectivity, righteousness, justice and judgment, and a consequent reward or retribution or punishment were in the foreground; during the currently ongoing shift, in its very initial establishment, something entirely different needed to be put into the foreground of everyone’s awareness and attention. This factor was reflected in the change of your roles and positions from being agents of My positive state into becoming My true representatives on planet Zero. As My true representatives, in your attitude, behavior, relationships and lifestyle in general, you were requested to begin to exemplify the true

nature of life in the positive state and, especially and particularly, of My Absolute New Nature in your relative condition. Hence, the request to shift your awareness and behavior from emphasis on objectivity, righteousness, justice and judgment to the emphasis on mercy, forgiveness, compassion, empathy, understanding and acceptance.

These most important and most significant attributes of My Absolute New Nature, as well as of the nature of My positive state, were needed to be established in your life on planet Zero also, in order to build a foundation on which salvation and liberation of all trapped in the negative state, no matter who it was, could become possible. As you know from My New Revelation, based only on such positive attributes, liberation from and salvation of all in the negative state and human life are possible at all. No other factors could do it.

What would happen if we were to continue to emphasize the attributes of objectivity, righteousness, justice and judgment? In that case, based on their nature and requirements, no one could ever be liberated and saved from the negative state, because, by their negative and evil deeds, and by the nature of the negative state itself, and by their denial that they are negative and/or evil, and by not recognizing the true non-reality of their pseudo-life, and by the unwillingness to accept the fact of their evilness and negativity, everyone in the negative state and in a typical human life, would have to be locked up in their mode of pseudo-life to eternity. In that case, the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state could likewise not be established to eternity.

The way you have to understand this statement is in the fact that if objectivity, righteousness, justice and judgment were to be continuously applied, by their very nature, they wouldn't give you a choice in the matter because they don't show you the way out of the negative state. They only tell you that you need to bear the consequences of your actions, behaviors, attitudes, relationships or whatever you have in this respect. If you don't see a way how you can get out of your negative and evil ways, you don't acquire any incentives or even a need to change your lifestyle. Simply stated, you have no foundation on which you could change your negative and evil lifestyle. And not only that, but by bringing to your awareness and recognition all consequences, results and outcomes of such a pseudo-life, you would fall into strong feelings, and even a desire, to be punished to eternity because, based on the principles of objectivity, righteousness, justice and judgment, you don't deserve anything else but eternal punishment. In that case, the issue of liberation and salvation could not come to your awareness at all. As a consequence, you would have to stay in a punishing and retributive mode forever. This is how the concept of eternal punishment in the Hells of the negative state came

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

about and was subsequently recorded in the Christian Bible, for example, as well as in some other so-called Holy Books.

Your role as My true representatives on planet Zero, by your examples, the way you behave toward yourself and others, was/is to bring to everyone's attention in the negative state and human life, that there is a way out of the negative state. This way is clearly contained in an all-out application of My Absolute Principles in your relative condition which are rooted in My Absolute Mercy, Forgiveness, Compassion, Empathy, Understanding and Acceptance. These Absolute Attributes were/are continuously being generated, emanated, radiated, and extended to all and everything in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. You, as My true representatives, became their carriers in your relative condition. Of course, only if you have chosen to carry them in your own life, the way you behave, act, relate, think, feel and consider yourself and all others, no matter who they are or what kind of individuals they are.

However, with the arrival of Manfred to your physical place in Santa Barbara, Peter, and with the factor of what he represents, which factor is contained in the correspondential meaning of the name 'Manfred,' a new phase of the currently ongoing shift is being put into motion. The nature of this shift requires bringing to your attention the need for supplementing the attributes of mercy, forgiveness, compassion, empathy, understanding and acceptance with some additional and very important ones, which need to become an integral part of your self-relatedness and relatedness to others — no matter who they are and what kinds of individuals they are. This factor has now become a very important and crucial one.

What are these new attributes and how should they be applied in your own personalized and individualized lives? As a matter of fact, they are not new, but they need to be brought very sharply into your focus and awareness. These attributes are contained in My Absolute New Nature in their absolute condition. They are constantly being extended to your relative condition. They are: **kindness, tolerance, respect and appreciation**. They are to be fully applied both to yourself and to all others.

As you know, it would be very difficult, if not impossible, to extend such kindness, tolerance, respect and appreciation toward others, if you were not to be that way toward yourself. It is so, because as mentioned many times before, your attitude, behavior, action, relatedness and everything else toward yourself, fully determines how you behave toward others. It really doesn't matter at all how you behave externally toward others, if

internally you feel just the opposite of what you pretend externally in this respect. Your internal dispositions, feelings, attitudes, thoughts and considerations, those are what count and not what you pretend externally by the factors of impositions of your social, or whatever requirements as they are established and expected from you in your human life.

As you know, the nature of the negative state was established on the opposite factors: unkindness, intolerance, disrespect and spitefulness. If you are ever to eliminate the negative state, you need to bring into the focus and awareness of all in the negative state and human life the characteristics or attributes which are the opposites of their pseudo-lifestyle. Hence, the need to illustrate and demonstrate an entirely different life based on, — in addition to objectivity, righteousness, justice, judgment, mercy, forgiveness, compassion, empathy, understanding and acceptance, — **kindness, tolerance, respect and appreciation.**

Your role as My true representatives on planet Zero, is to become such illustrative and demonstrative examples. Now, I am not saying that it will be an easy task to behave like that, either to yourself or to others. But, on the other hand, it is not impossible to achieve this goal if you know the importance of such attitude, behavior and relatedness toward yourself and others.

Take, for example, someone, even amongst you, who appears to you as aloof, cold, detached, strange or weird in your conceptualization of his/her personality or nature or overall makeup, the way the individuality and personality of that person is or appears to you. In the company of such individuals you feel very uncomfortable, uneasy, restrictive, blocked, or whatever. Because of that, you avoid their company, you don't want to be around them or have anything to do with them or associate with them. It is extremely difficult for you to tolerate their presence, to show kindness to them, to respect them or to appreciate them. What kind of attitude is this? Obviously, if you feel uneasy, uncomfortable, blocked or whatever, you are experiencing negative emotions. Such emotions are of the negative state or they originate in the negative state. Due to the fact that they are of the negative state, if you feel them, if you experience them, if you exhibit them, regardless of how much you think that they are justifiable in relationship toward such an unbearable individual, you are under the influence of the negative state. In that case, you are endangering yourself and your mission, because the door is wide open to the influence of the renegades who desire nothing more than to have such an opening in order to divert your energies from Me and My cause, to them and their cause.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

During your visit in Europe, Peter, as well as with some individuals in this country, you encountered this problem with My representatives. Even in your own case, Peter, you feel very uncomfortable with these types of individuals and you tend to avoid them as much as possible, or to talk to them on the phone, or otherwise. Up to this point, such behavior and attitude was tolerable on your part because it was necessary to avoid wasting your time and energy on someone who, in your view, was of that unbearable nature. However, as of now, as of this very moment, that kind of behavior and attitude is no longer feasible, tolerable or acceptable. It is very important that you all learn kindness, tolerance, respect and appreciation in your own self-attitude and attitude toward others.

As you remember, Peter, from your visit in Europe, in two cases, both you and everyone who participated in meetings with you, had such an uneasy, uncomfortable and avoiding type of behavior toward two individuals in two different places. The interesting thing in this respect was that, outwardly or externally, they didn't show any such avoiding type of behavior. However, one by one, they were coming to you and complaining about the way those individuals were or behaved. And the same things exist in relationship to someone who is on your side of the world. In other words, it was extremely difficult for them, as well as for you, Peter, to be in the presence of the individuals mentioned.

The problem with this type of understandable behavior and attitude is that it not only puts you in a position to be under the influence of the negative state, but your avoidance reinforces and enables the way the individuals in question are. And we are talking here only about those individuals who are considered to be an integral part of My New Revelation or who claim to be such. How much more could such an attitude be manifested toward someone who is not connected in any way to My New Revelation! Just examine yourself and all individuals of whom you know, whether they are or are not connected to My New Revelation, and find out how many of them would fit this category designated as intolerable, unbearable and avoidable? If you continue in your old attitude toward them, no matter who they are, you are depriving them of seeing the examples of kindness, tolerance, respect and appreciation, and thus, you are making it impossible for them to change in this respect or at least to see a different type of attitude than that to which they are accustomed. Don't forget one important fact, mentioned many times in My New Revelation, that any possibility of changes in human life are possible only on the illustrative and demonstrative examples of someone else's behavior and attitude. If you don't have such examples, no changes could take place in human life and the pseudo-life of the inhabitants of the negative state in general. Why do you think you

are called My representatives? Exactly for that purpose. By examples of your own life, the way you treat yourself and others, you are setting up such important examples that will be utilized to initiate fundamental and substantial changes in the behavior of all others who are presently, in your view, unbearable, intolerable or whatever nature.

However, there is another point to this issue. As you know, each individual agreed to become whoever they are and whatever behavior and lifestyle they exhibit or lead. There is a well-defined purpose in such a choice. Because it has such a purpose, and it serves some use, in order to make it possible for it to be manifested, you need to show kindness toward their need to be the way they are. You need to be tolerant, respectful and appreciative of their lifestyle, personality and individuality no matter how hard it would be for you to be that way.

What you have to understand in this respect is that in some mysterious ways, you are in the phase of life which is at its very end — objectively and subjectively (in a non-time, non-space sense). This ending also denotes the ending of the roles and positions of the individuals in question. In order to bring about this ending, and to make something different available for them, more congruent with the nature of the positive state, someone has to set an example for them of how to be from now on and how no longer to be. Because of this ending, their old lifestyle would no longer be tenable because it is at the point of exhausting its usefulness due to the fact that it has served its purpose. Therefore, to continue in its life would be very unproductive. And not only that, but it would impede the possibility of elimination of the negative state.

Another point of their volunteering to be in such an unpleasant, in your view, role, is to trigger in you the need to learn how to be kind, tolerant, respectful and appreciative of everyone. After all, they have been doing exactly what they were supposed to do up to this point. So, in an oblique way, their individuality and personality, the way they are, is a contributory factor in triggering in you, or making it possible for you, to bring about the attributes of the positive state and thus, My Absolute Attributes by which I treat and relate to everyone regardless of what kinds of individuals they are. Because you are My representatives — if you agreed to be such by your own free will and choice — you are a very important means by which I manifest My Absolute Attributes in your relative conditions. By your new lifestyle, you are making it possible, when the time comes, to help those individuals become an integral part of My positive state — if not now on planet Zero, then after they come to the spiritual world.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

In order to make it easier for you to relate to individuals of this nature, regardless of whether they are or are not connected to My New Revelation, you would be advised to apply the methods as indicated to you in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***. As you remember, it was said there that in cases of that nature you relate to Me in them. As you know, I am fully present in everyone's ability to choose and to change. If you concentrate on this factor, even if it is sometimes difficult to imagine My presence in the individuals of such an adverse, in your view, nature (remember, Peter, the case of a man whom you encountered in the streets of Moscow?), it will be much easier for you to be kinder, more tolerant, more respectful to and more appreciative of them than would otherwise be the case.

After all, please, do remember this important factor: If I am in everyone's ability to choose and to change, on which ability their life depends; or to put it in another, more precise way, if everyone's life depends on My presence in them, then, in that case, if you are unkind, intolerant, disrespectful or unappreciative to individuals of this nature, you are ultimately unkind, intolerant, disrespectful to and unappreciative of Me in them. And even further down the line, deep inside of you, if you are that way, in that case, you are ultimately unkind, intolerant, disrespectful to and unappreciative of yourself and Me in you. Remember, please, as it was mentioned in one of the latest Dialogs, the way you treat yourself, you treat Me and others and vice versa: The way you treat others and Me, you treat yourself. On a higher spiritual level, there is a continuous interconnectedness of all of you through and by My presence in everyone — the common denominator of all and everything in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. This is the reason why we are saying that the way you treat yourself, you treat others and Me; and the way you treat Me and others, you treat yourself.

Another important point in this respect is the issue of individuality and personalization which has been brought to your attention so many times. As you know, the true life of the positive state and the function of everyone in the positive state, the way their role, position and placement is determined, is based on individualization and personalization. All of you here and there and everywhere, are unique and different individuals before Me. None of you is the same. The reason for this fact can be found in the manner by which the process of My creation proceeds and takes place. As you are aware, I contain infinite and inexhaustible numbers of elements and their respective particles from which and by which each individual is created or enabled to come into his/her being and existence. These elements and particles are infinitely unique and different. There is not one element or particle that would be the same or of a similar nature. Therefore, it is impossible for any individual, whose nature derives from

this or that element or particle, to be the same or similar in his/her own nature as any other individual. All incentives, motivation, willingness, creativity, unique contribution to life, and everything else imaginable and unimaginable of each individual stem from this factor of infinite uniqueness and difference. This is how My Creation and all its inhabitants or sentient entities are structured. This structure reflects My Absolute Nature. The Absoluteness of My Nature is projected into the relative by establishment of infinite varieties of uniquenesses and differences in their own mode of function.

However, if that kind of mode were to continue uninterrupted, the negative state, with all its relative manifestations and pseudo-lifestyle could never have been established. So, in order to activate the negative state, it was necessary to deviate from this arrangement as much as possible. Although in the ultimate outcome of the establishment of the pseudo-life of the negative state, it was impossible to come up with the complete sameness and uniformity of the creatures and humans fabricated for that purpose by the pseudo-creators, it was possible to put emphasis and importance of life values somewhere else as opposed to how things are in the positive state. The reason why it was impossible to establish such sameness and uniformity, which would totally and completely defy or eradicate the nature of the true life, reflected in these infinite varieties of uniquenesses and differences, was because, as you remember, any type of life or pseudo-life was not allowed to be established under any other conditions but under the condition of freedom of choice and ability to choose and to change. No matter how much and with what advanced sophistication the fabricators of that other type of life were trying to come up with something different, any of their fabrications, based on the exclusions of that factor, ended in a spontaneous abortion. This is the rule of any creative or pseudo-creative effort. No other possibility exists. Simple as that — period. Whoever would like to create and fabricate any type of sentient life, would have no recourse but, in order to succeed, he/she would have to base his/her creative or pseudo-creative effort on those prerequisites of life — freedom of choice and ability to choose and to change.

So, in order to make the negative state flourish and demonstrate its nature and its pseudo-life, it was necessary to deviate from the proper hierarchy of the spiritual organization of life in such a manner so as to proclaim that individualities, uniquenesses and differences are nothing, or at least that they are the least important factors of life, and instead to proclaim that the collective, the whole of any society, the uniformity, the sameness, the commonalities, and similar factors, inconsistent with the life of the positive state, are everything. Thus, individuality, uniqueness, differences and everything else, so inherent in the life of the positive

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

state, had to be sacrificed to the commonalities, to the collective and similar factors of the negative state which rule all its inhabitants.

The attempt to establish such a life is reflected to some degree in the structure of some species on your planet — hives of bees or anthills, for example. On the human level, this tendency was reflected in the communist countries, especially in the former Soviet Union, and in former fascist countries, especially in Nazi Germany. It is also reflected, to some degree, in all dictatorship types of political systems.

However, as you know, to maintain such a destructive political system took a lot of effort, power and force with an intricate system of spying and control over the citizens of such countries. In the moment such control weakened, it was the end of those systems. The individuality and differences were reaffirming themselves in the lives of all members of the countries in question. So, in essence, those systems never worked too well. Not only didn't they work too well, but ultimately they suffocated and suppressed any incentives, motivations and creative efforts of each individual in those countries. The true creative efforts, incentives, inspirations and motivations to do anything useful can come only from each individual's uniqueness and difference. And the reason that it is so, is that I am reflected in My Own Nature in that unique individuality and infinite difference of each sentient entity. This fact brings us to the proper understanding and perception of what My True Absolute Nature is all about. If every sentient entity is a unique and infinitely different individual and personality in his/her own right, and if, in the true reality of being and existence, as well as in pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, no one can be the same or uniform, then, from where do they get this unique individualized and personalized nature? From the One and the Only Absolute Individual, Who is His/Her Own Absolute and the only Individuality, Uniqueness and Difference in all infinite numbers of aspects of His/Her Nature — Me — The Lord Jesus Christ. All sentient entities thus, reflect this Nature in their own relative condition.

This factor tells you another story about how to distort, deny or reject Me and My True Absolute Nature. If you reject or underestimate or degrade or put down individuality, differences, uniquenesses of each and every individual, and if you elevate and put above all, the so-called collective, sameness, uniformity and similar characteristics, then, in that case, you deny Me and My Nature. This was the reason why so much emphasis was put into the superior meaning of the collective and society as a whole and why individuality and differences were looked down upon. As of recently, this tendency has been very much in the foreground of all efforts on your planet, including in the United States. All you hear about now is so-called teamwork, the collective effort and common ground. All

else is frowned upon. You can even be fired from your job with the reason that you are not a good team player and that you are much too different from them and much too individualistic. This situation is heralding the complete pseudo-winning of the negative state on your planet which is based on such teamwork philosophy.

But to go back to the issue of kindness, tolerance, respect and appreciation. These characteristics, attributes and traits are very much needed in order to defy the tendency of the negative state to erase individuality, differences and uniquenesses of humans and everyone else in its domain. If you develop within your own life these attributes of the positive state, and ultimately of My Absolute New Nature, you will be able to accept with full understanding everyone the way they are in their own unique manifestation and role, no matter how weird or strange, or different, or cold, or aloof, or detached they are, and no matter how uncomfortable, uneasy and miserable you feel in their company; and no matter how much you would like to avoid their company or to reject them from your life. Please, do understand, that, for you, in some mysterious ways, individuals like that are in defiance of the establishment of the negative state which is trying to force them to be like everyone else in its domain. They are non-conformists who, by their typical individualistic behavior, reject the lifestyle of the negative state. That they go about it in a somewhat negative way, or in an entirely negative way, is a different story. In this respect, your role as My true representatives, is to set up an example for them of how to be individuals before Me in a positive way. This positive way is contained in your being merciful, forgiving, compassionate, empathetic, understanding, accepting, kind, tolerant, respectful and appreciative of their and your own position, destiny, role, individuality, uniqueness and difference. By being that way, you bring into their life, as well as into your own life, My True Nature which is rooted in My Absolute Individuality, Uniqueness and Difference, being that I Am the only One Absolute Individual from Whom all other individualities, uniquenesses and differences derive and are established. By this factor you are preparing the way for the successful and effective elimination of the pseudo-life of the negative state and human life in its negative aspects.

And this brings us to the answer of Beth Ann's question. If every individual is not only unique, standing in front of Me as an infinitely different and unique sentient entity, but as someone who not only carries in him/her My unique and different element and particle, but whose life depends on that element or particle, and whose ability of being who he/she is totally and completely depends on that uniqueness and individuality, derived from My unique and different element or particle, then, in that case, all his/her incentives, motivations, strivings and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

creative efforts will be determined by the nature of the Source from which he/she was created. He/she will fully reflect the nature of that specific, unique and different particle or element. Due to the fact that I am contained in My Absolute fullness in any such element and particle, the specificity and uniqueness of any creative effort on My Part will be manifested by and through the unique individuals who are the carriers of that specificity and uniqueness. How do I create? From, by, through and of Myself and at the same time, by, through and with all others whom I endowed with My Specific, Unique and Different Element or Particle for exactly that purpose — to co-create with Me.

The issue here lies in the fact that, because of the very unique, specific, different and unrepeatable or non-duplicable nature of any such element or particle, My Personal Creative Effort, which is continuous and unceasing, is spread out amongst all sentient entities. Because of that, each sentient entity is responsible to Me and to himself/herself for creating from the position of that unique, different and individualized element or particle, which is contained in him/her and which makes him/her what he/she really is in his/her own individuality, uniqueness and difference, always something new and different. This specific new and different, by its very nature, cannot come from anyone else but only from each individual in question. In the totality of all sentient entities' creative efforts, in their own specific unique and different positions and roles, My Absolute Creative Effort is fully manifested. Because by My Very Nature I am the Absolute Creator, everyone who derives from My infinitely unique and different creative elements or particles, by that factor, becomes My co-creators. This is how you need to understand the term 'co-creator' and what it signifies.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation and for everything which was conveyed to us in this Dialog. Is there anything else that You would like to bring to our attention today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. No, not today. Some other time, soon. Spend some time with Manfred. Have a good time together.

One Hundred and Fourteenth Dialog

October 10, 1999

Peter: During my early morning meditative walk, it became obvious to me that You would like to continue in our discussion about the issues which were raised in the One Hundred and Thirteenth Dialog. Personally, I felt as if something was not completed about the issues in question. So, I would like to humbly ask You if You would like to continue in our discussion of the topic raised in the previous Dialog.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, you are right. We need to continue with the mentioned discussion. And I thank you for making yourself available to do that this Sunday morning.

There are basically two aspects that we need to touch upon. One of those aspects relates to the spiritual-philosophical placement of the discussed attributes, the way they fit into the totality of My Absolute Nature as well as into the totality of your relative nature. As you remember, in that Dialog we raised the issue of the importance of the mentioned attributes as related to My behavior toward Myself and others and to your behavior toward yourself and others. They were, in addition to all others: **kindness, tolerance, respect and appreciation.**

The other aspect relates to inter- and intra-relationships which take place amongst all of you, the way you relate toward Me, toward yourself and toward each other. Let us begin with the first aspect, and following that we'll touch upon the other aspect.

If you look at the true meaning of the discussed attributes, the way their nature is and how they fit into the totality of My Absolute Nature and your own nature, then you will come to the conclusion that they integrally relate to the two major components of which not only My Absolute Nature consists but the nature of all sentient entities as well. As you know, these two components are: My Absolute Femininity and My Absolute Masculinity. In a broader and higher sense, you can conceptualize My Absolute Femininity as of My Absolute Divine Love and Divine Good, and My Absolute Masculinity as of My Absolute Wisdom and Absolute Truth.

So, if you apply the discussed attributes to these components, then you can come to the right conclusion that **kindness** and **appreciation** are of My Absolute Divine Love and Divine Good and of My Absolute Divine

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Femininity; and **tolerance** and **respect** are of My Absolute Divine Wisdom and Divine Truth and of My Absolute Divine Masculinity. In applying these attributes to your own individualities and personalities, they likewise are related to your own femininity and masculinity and to the type of your own love, good, wisdom and truth by which your ‘I am’ is structured.

If you are filled with true love, good, wisdom and truth, which derive from and are imparted upon you from My Absolute Divine Love, Good, Wisdom and Truth, then, in that case, you naturally will possess and exhibit in your everyday life, function, attitude, thoughts, feelings, will and behavior nothing else but kindness, tolerance, respect and appreciation, as well as all other attributes of the purely positive nature (objectivity, righteousness, justice, judgment, mercy, forgiveness, compassion, empathy, understanding, acceptance and all other positive traits and characteristics which derive from and are of My Absolute Absolutely Positive Nature).

So, what does happen if you find yourself in a situation or in a relationship which produces within you uneasy, uncomfortable, intolerable, disrespectful, unkind and unappreciative feelings, forcing you to avoid people causing you to feel like that? Obviously, in that case you are not functioning from Me in you but from that aspect of your endowment which didn't come from My Positive Nature. In other words, in this case, you function from the position of your typical human nature or from the position of the negative state. After all, don't ever forget that such feelings as unkindness, intolerance, disrespect and unappreciativeness were invented by and placed into the sentient mind by the activators of the negative state. Because these types of negative attributes don't exist at all within the life of the positive state, if you have them, then you are under the influence of the negative state. I know that this is a very unpleasant statement for you. After all, being in human life, from time to time, you all experience and exhibit within yourself such negative emotions, states and conditions. So, the logical conclusion from this is that whenever you feel them or exhibit them, you are inevitably under the influence of the negative state.

As you see from this statement, it is not easy at all to be in the human skin. The human portion of your nature was purposefully structured in such a way so as to make you unkind, intolerable, unappreciative and disrespectful, as well as everything else which is the opposite of the above mentioned traits and characteristics of the positive state. One of the major reasons why human nature was structured that way, was to

eradicate the concept of individuality, uniqueness and infinite differences. Because each and every one of you, no matter where and when in Creation, pseudo-creation or planet Zero, are infinitely unique and different individuals before Me as the One and The Only Absolute Individual, in order to defy this structure of the positive state, it was necessary to develop, establish and implement something which would make people uneasy, uncomfortable, intolerant, unkind, disrespectful, unappreciative, hateful and spiteful of each other and their unique individualities. Because you are different than someone else is, your obvious difference from them becomes a sufficient foundation for rejecting them, hating them, despising them, avoiding them, not wanting to do anything with them, being intolerant of them, being unkind toward them, being unappreciative of them, being disrespectful toward their own individuality and being everything else which gives you enough justification and rationalization for your negative behavior, attitude and relationship toward them and their differences.

And this brings us to the second aspect of our discussion. In relationship toward others, the way you think, feel, act, behave and consider all others, you have to take into consideration the factor that any relatedness is always a two-way street. What do we mean by this statement? Consider this fact: In someone's company you feel uneasy, uncomfortable, miserable and you do everything in your power to avoid the company of such people, by refusing to communicate with them, etc. In other words, no matter what you think, by such an attitude you are being unkind toward, intolerant, disrespectful and unappreciative of such an individual. However, has it ever occurred to you how someone else feels about you, about how you are, what kind of person you are, how you behave, feel, talk, relate, walk or whatever?

So, as you see from this fact, it is not only how you feel about someone else but it is also how someone else feels about you. Have you ever questioned yourself in this respect why some people might be avoiding you, feeling uncomfortable and uneasy in your company and about the way you are, the way you talk, behave, act or whatever? Think about it, examine yourself in this respect and ask yourself what it is in you, in your attitude and behavior that turns some people off. From the position of being a typical human, your tendency would naturally be inclined toward finding fault in someone else and not in yourself or the way you are or behave. It is much easier to see the problems in other individuals, the problems which turn you off, rather than to see, at the same time, the problems in yourself which may very well turn some other

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

individuals off. In their opinion it is you who is unkind, intolerant, disrespectful and unappreciative and not them.

The problem with this situation is that it is impossible for you to step out of yourself and watch or observe yourself, or your own behavior, attitude, actions or whatever you do. You see only how other individuals behave, act, relate or are. For that reason, your tendency would be to justify and rationalize your behavior and the way you are, disregarding the fact that it could be you or your individuality and differences that also induces into other people the need to avoid you, to reject you, not wanting to have anything to do with you, to be unkind to you, to be disrespectful of you, to be intolerant of you, to be unappreciative of you, etc. And then you wonder why some people, whom you even love and feel very close to, are avoiding you, not returning your phone calls, or not responding to your letters, etc.

What is the real issue here? The reason we are discussing this issue is that, as My true representatives, you need to learn not only to look at others, but, most importantly and in the first place, to look upon yourself in order to determine what it is in you that may turn some people off. As you know, you cannot change other people. The only one you can change is you. By changing yourself in this respect, you are giving an example to others how to change. At the same time, by changing yourself, you are giving the opportunity to others, whom you turned off previously, to change their attitude toward you. My true representative, by the nature of being My true representative, will first always seek out if something in him/her still exists that makes it impossible for other individuals to relate to him/her in a purely positive, loving, kind, respectful, tolerant and appreciative manner. Instead of trying to determine what it is in others that makes this impossible to happen, he/she will turn his/her attention upon himself/herself and will rectify the situation at his/her end without waiting for someone else to change or to do this self-exploration first.

We have entered the phase of this shift, heralded by Manfred's arrival to Santa Barbara, which crucially and importantly requires from all and everyone, who accepted the role of being My true representative, to reexamine their own behavior, attitude, feelings, thoughts and everything else regarding how they relate toward others, themselves and ultimately toward Me. As you remember so well, and we are repeating this again and again, you cannot relate in a loving, kind, respectful, appreciative, tolerant and positive way in general toward Me if you don't relate the same way toward others and yourself. We are all

interconnected in this respect. Because of that you have to learn very fast to tolerate, respect, appreciate and to be kind toward your own uniqueness, individuality and difference, as well as in an equal measure toward other uniquenesses, individualities and differences and, in an ultimate sense, toward My Absolute Uniqueness, Individuality and Difference. This is your most important common denominator. As you see from this fact, your most common denominator, besides what was said about it before, is your infinitely diverse uniquenesses, individualities and differences. In that you are all absolutely equal. And in that, in your relative condition, you approximate My Absolute Nature which is Absolutely Unique, Absolutely Individual and Absolutely Different, transcending all and everything.

So, in order that a condition is set up on planet Zero for it to become planet Positive Number, or in order for the Zone of Displacement to become the Zone of Placement, it is necessary to establish a different foundation on which any type of relationship of its inhabitants could be formed. If it is ever to become of the purely positive nature, the way it was supposed to be in the first place, it would be necessary for all its inhabitants to learn to relate to each other in the manner as it is in the positive state. Based on what has been said above, such a relationship needs to be formed from the position of one infinitely unique and different individual to another infinitely unique and different individual. No matter how different each individual is, as compared to your own individuality and difference, that individual reflects that aspect of My unique and different element or particle, which doesn't exist in anyone or anything else. Because of that it is very vital and crucial that you learn to respect, to appreciate, to be tolerant and to be kind toward every such individual no matter how he/she appears to you or no matter how remote, unacceptable, intolerable or incomprehensible his/her behaviors, actions, attitudes, or whatever are. Your role, as My true representative, in this respect is to establish in your own life, and in all aspects of your relatedness toward others, this type of positive behavior, attitude and lifestyle. By doing that, you are preparing this planet, as well as the Zone of Displacement, to get rid of its accursed position.

On the human side of your life, as well as in the negative state in general, the situation is somewhat different. In order to undermine or circumvent your ability of becoming kind, tolerant, respectful and appreciative of others, as well as of being able to accept others the way they are in their own unique individuality and difference, without expecting anything different or more congruent with your own image of how they should be or behave, the negative state came up with different

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

tactics in this respect. As you know, all their attempts to eradicate individuality, uniqueness and difference, and establish instead commonalities, uniformity and sameness, were thwarted by the factor of the principles and laws under which any sentient life could be created or fabricated, respectively. Because such life could be established only on the basis of freedom of choice and ability to choose and to change, and because in that ability and condition of everyone is My unique, different and individual presence, by the factor of that presence of Mine, being that I am infinitely Individual, Unique and Different, no matter what you do, no matter how much you would try to manipulate any spiritual, mental, genetic, physical, or whatever factors, each such individual would come out as infinitely unique, different and individual in his/her own right.

However, although you cannot eradicate this important factor and condition of life, nevertheless, you are able to alter the mode of behavior, personality traits and characteristics by which you will establish your own brand of unique, different and individualistic behavior patterns by which you'll relate to other individuals. So, knowing that, the forces of the negative state came up with many different negative types of personalities and their patterns, behavior modes, and attitudinal makeup, which they imposed on many humans. One of the purposes of this setup was to undermine the ability of humans to relate equally to all others in a kind, respectful, tolerant and appreciative manner. So, you have amongst you individuals who are barren, cold, aloof, detached, unable to properly communicate or to express themselves; some of them are obnoxious, overpowering, overwhelming, rude, inconsiderate; others are socially, mentally and professionally inept; still others are too introverted or too extroverted, or too mentally deranged, or too something. Whatever the case may be, to be in the company of such individuals, to associate with them, to communicate with them or to do whatever with them, is either very difficult, or utterly unbearable, uncomfortable, uneasy or outrightly miserable for you.

On the other hand, as mentioned above, your own individuality, the way you are, the way you behave, act, relate, or whatever, could be as unbearable, uncomfortable and miserable for someone else in the same manner as that of someone else's for you. In either case, if you are at this point, it only means that you are responding favorably to the negative state's setup which fabricated such negative differences in order to undermine your ability or willingness, or at least, to make it very difficult, if not impossible, for you to be kind, tolerant, respectful and appreciative, and everything else in the positive sense. With this

important awareness, it is necessary to dispense, once and for all, with that kind of attitude on your part. If you really care about the elimination of the negative state, and of all the negative aspects of the typical human nature, and if the establishment of the fullness and completeness of life of the positive state is truly on your mind and in your heart, then, in that case, you have to learn to be tolerant, to be kind, to be respectful and to be appreciative of others, no matter how weird, strange, cold, aloof, detached, obnoxious, unbearable, overwhelming or whatever they are.

Very often you hear people saying that they respect and appreciate others the way they are, as well as their choices to be that way in their own individuality, but they don't have any desire or need to associate with them, to communicate with them or to be in their company. And very often you hear these kinds of statements also from My representatives. If you are in this mode of your relatedness, then you are still under the influence of the negative state. It is truly impossible to respect or appreciate someone if you are unwilling or have tremendous difficulties being with them. My representatives, being who they are and what their role and position on planet Zero is in this respect, should never have such an attitude. My representatives on planet Zero should always keep their door open for everyone who would like to enter it. Don't be afraid that someone very negative, who could hurt or harm you or cause you irreparable damage, might enter your door. You are under My protection. Even to individuals like that you should show the utmost kindness, tolerance, respect and appreciation because they are only fulfilling their own agenda which they have from the negative state. You don't know if by your kind and respectful attitude, those types of individuals would not change their negative agenda and, as a result, would convert to the positive state. How else could you set up an illustrative example of how it is to be positive, loving, good, tolerant, kind, respectful, appreciative, understanding and accepting if not by your own behavior and attitude which manifest these positive attributes?

It is an entirely different story if someone chooses to avoid you, not to communicate with you or not to have anything to do with you for some of their own reasons. Your duty in this case would be, first of all, to respect such an individual's need to avoid you; and secondly, you would be advised to explore or to examine yourself whether there is something in you, in your attitude, behavior, action, mode of relatedness or whatever that turns such an individual off, so-to-speak, or that places that individual into a position of avoiding you.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

In conclusion of this Dialog, please, be aware of the tremendous danger of justification and rationalization for the need of having such adverse feelings, thoughts, attitudes, behavior or whatever toward anyone. Remember, please, humans are masters of justification and rationalization of all their atrocities, abominations and practices which they have had during their entire putrid and bloody history. Don't ever fall into such a predicament. The temptation will be tremendous to justify and rationalize your stance in this respect. If you continue to do that, you'll become a well-pointed and recognizable target to the renegades. Remember that! And this is all that I wanted to add this morning to the discussed issue. I would recommend finishing it for today. Have a nice day.

Peter: Thank You very much for this very timely and extremely important reminder.

One Hundred and Fifteenth Dialog

October 12, 1999

Peter: Yesterday afternoon I received two questions from Boris Bella of Slovakia. His first question relates to Your interaction with a very sinful woman, as recorded in Luke 7:36-50 and to Your relationship with women in general; and his second question relates to Your Parable of the Lost Son, likewise recorded in Luke 15:11-32. He would like to know if there is any relevance of those two events to our present spiritual needs or if there is any message in them which could be applied to our current situation within the frame of the currently ongoing shift and its here-and-now phase. Of course, as always, before answering these questions, perhaps You have something to add or elaborate upon anything at all that You feel we need to know or to have a better understanding about.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for asking Me to talk first before going into answering Boris' questions. We do need to elaborate upon or explore a little further the issues of relatedness amongst you — My representatives, as well as your relations toward other individuals on your planet, who are not in the category of being My representatives, as well as everywhere else. In other words, we need to further discuss the topics raised in Dialogs 113 and 114.

In analyzing what was said in those two Dialogs about the attributes of **kindness, tolerance, respect and appreciation**, it could be easily concluded that they should be applied indiscriminately to an all-inclusive aspect of the overall personality and individuality of anyone with whom you come in contact in your everyday encounters at all levels of your activities. It would be an error in judgment to come to such an inappropriate conclusion.

Two aspects exist in understanding the issue of application of these attributes in your everyday life and how, in your interaction, you approach anyone who comes across your field of vision. The first aspect relates to the definition of the terms 'kindness,' 'tolerance,' 'respect' and 'appreciation' and what they really mean and signify. The second aspect relates to the need of distinguishing between anyone's individuality, uniqueness and difference and his/her deeds, actions, outputs and productivity or productions. In other words, you need to look upon two issues as related to any individual: First, you need to learn to be kind, tolerant, respectful and appreciative of each individual's individuality, uniqueness and difference, the way his/her personality makeup is

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

structured; and second, you need to learn to properly assess his/her productions, outputs, deeds and actions. These two important issues as related to anyone need to be carefully analyzed and assessed in order to distinguish between them and how the mentioned attributes should be applied to each one separately.

In the first situation, as you are dealing with individuality, uniqueness and difference of each individual and how he/she appears in his/her structural personality makeup, it is necessary to take a stance of unconditional kindness, tolerance, respect and appreciation. As mentioned many times before, each individual, the way he/she is structured and is in his/her own 'I am,' stands in front of Me in his/her own uniqueness, individuality and difference. No matter how he/she appears to you in his/her outward manifestation, he/she is fulfilling the purpose for which he/she was either created or was permitted to be fabricated, respectively. In either case he/she is fulfilling the purpose for which he/she chose to be and to exist or to pseudo-be and pseudo-exist. It is in this context and understanding that you need to show your unconditional kindness, tolerance, respect and appreciation to any individual in question.

On the other hand, what would be your attitude toward the deeds, actions, outputs and productivity or productions of any such individual? In order to properly answer this question, we need to first define what the considered attributes mean or signify. In the conceptualization of the meaning of each discussed term, how could they be understood and practically applied?

Let us take them one by one. What do you really understand by the word 'kindness' or being kind to someone or something? In our conceptualization 'kindness' means the ability to show someone our unconditional warm and positive feelings which convey to the individual in question our recognition for his/her need to be himself/herself in his/her true essence and substance or in his/her unique 'I am.' We kindly accept his/her 'I am' the way it is without any strings attached. On the other hand, if I am kind to someone and if that someone in his/her deeds, actions, outputs and productivity is not what is required from the nature of any situation in which that individual functions, my kindness requires from me to bring this to his/her attention so that he/she is given an opportunity to rectify that situation and to begin to function more congruently to the requirement of that situation. Should he/she refuse to respond to this aspect of your kindness, your kindness requires removing him/her from that situation because otherwise, his/her continuous

unproductive output could not only hurt the process of production itself and impede the proper function of everyone involved in that production, but, ultimately, it could hurt the individual in question himself/herself. By the factor of not removing him/her from the situation in question, you would be reinforcing and enabling him/her in his/her unproductive, futile, incompetent and damaging functioning. At the same time, you would be contributing to the poor productivity of others involved in any such function because they would be hampered and interfered with by such individual's ineptness as related to that specific function.

So, as you see from this description, kindness doesn't necessarily mean to let people continue in doing something which they cannot do at all properly or which they do in an inefficient and incompetent way. True kindness doesn't want anyone to be in a position in which they cannot function properly for some of their own reasons or for the reason that they are trying to do something for which they have very little, or no propensity at all.

The next term which needs clarification is — tolerance. How do we conceptualize 'tolerance?' Tolerance can also be conceived as a relatively quantitative measure in a sense that it can have many levels. Take, for example, such clinical terms as tolerance for pain or frustration tolerance level. How far or to what degree are you able to tolerate something or, in our case, someone, as related to the topic of this Dialog? In our conceptualization 'tolerance' means or signifies our ability to unconditionally bear with anyone's individuality, uniqueness and difference without any expectations or projections of our own desires, wishes and thoughts of how that individual should be in his/her own 'I am.' In other words, we fully and completely tolerate that individual the way he/she is in his/her own individuality, uniqueness and difference. In this respect our tolerance has no boundaries.

On the other hand, the degree of our tolerance of any individual's deeds, actions, outputs, productions or productivity is determined by the factor of his/her contribution in a positive and constructive manner to any function which is undertaken for common good and use for all. We give many opportunities to each individual to learn, to improve, to progress and to be more productive, constructive, creative and useful in any life endeavors. If that individual's output and productivity is not what is required from the function of any situation, the result of which may adversely influence the works of many people, in that case, it is the duty of our kindness, love and wisdom to remove such an individual from the situation and function in question. By doing that, we offer the individual

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

in question an opportunity to get engaged in some other function in which he/she could become competently productive, constructive, creative and useful, thus contributing his/her own unique input for the benefit of all as well as for his/her own benefit. Should we continue to endlessly tolerate his/her ineptness in this respect, we are not only damaging the others involved in any such function but we are ultimately reinforcing and enabling that individual's inappropriate deeds, actions, outputs and productions. By doing that, we are depriving that individual of any other opportunities in which he/she could function much more appropriately and usefully.

The next term that we need to clarify is — respect. In our conceptualization of this term, 'respect' means or signifies our unconditional recognition of the fact that every individual is a universe unto himself/herself. That universe is inherently different, unique, and highly individual. It stands in its own right as someone who occupies his/her own state, process, place and time with a very specific and needed purpose in mind. Due to this fact, we unconditionally respect every individual's individuality, uniqueness and difference. Because we do have this unconditional respect toward these most important and significant factors which make each individual what he/she is, we desire nothing more than giving all opportunities to that individual to manifest, to actualize, to realize and to put to a good use his/her individuality, uniqueness and difference. Should we see that the individual in question finds himself/herself in any situation or function or activities which impede or are incongruent with the specific structure of his/her individuality, uniqueness and difference, as well as to his/her overall abilities, from the deep and unconditional respect to his/her unique and different individuality, we bring this factor to his/her attention. If he/she accepts it, he/she will improve in his/her outputs and productivity. If not, because of our deep and unconditional respect for him/her, we remove him/her from any such function, thus, giving him/her an opportunity to find himself/herself something in which he/she could function more congruently with his/her abilities in this respect. Whether he/she takes that opportunity, is no longer our concern. The choices are his/hers. So are the consequences. Our duty in this respect, from the position of our unconditional respect for his/her individuality, is to bring to his/her attention all available choices. Once we do that, at that point our duty ends.

And finally, let us take up the term 'appreciation.' In our conceptualization of this term, 'appreciation' means or signifies our deep feeling and recognition that every individual is infinitely unique and

different in his/her individuality and that because of this factor of individuality, uniqueness and difference, he/she stands amongst all and everything as someone who can never be replicated, duplicated or be exactly the same as anyone else. In such a factor is reflected My unique element or particle which was imparted on him/her with a very well-defined purpose. Because of that, our unconditional appreciation is fully extended to the need to have someone like that individual because without his/her being and existence something important would be missing from the totality of being and existence as well as pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. This factor equally applies to individuals who are negative and are in the negative state as well as to all humans. They all have unique functions, states, processes and placements and they all play important roles in the scheme of events which take place in My Creation and pseudo-creation. Therefore, we likewise appreciate them very much in their own individualities, uniquenesses and differences and for the reasons why they were permitted to come to their own adverse fruition.

However, because we respect them and appreciate them and we acknowledge the fact that they are who they are, nevertheless, if their deeds, actions, productions or productivity are hurtful, harmful and damaging not only to all others but also to themselves, because of our deep appreciation of who they are, we bring these facts to their attention and, by that act, we give them many opportunities to amend their ways. If they agree, then we did our job of appreciation the way we were supposed to do. If they don't take heed, and continue in their unproductive, hurtful and harmful function, in that case, the duty of our appreciation requires from us to remove them from such a function or situation, giving them a choice and opportunity to find themselves some other function in which they might exhibit more congruent output and productivity congruent with the nature of that new function. Otherwise, should we continue to put up with any such ineptness on the part of the individual in question, we would only reinforce and enable his/her inappropriateness, hurtfulness and harmfulness in that situation. In that case we would fail in our showing proper appreciation for his/her individuality, uniqueness and difference.

So, as you clearly see from this explanation, it is one thing to be kind, tolerant, respectful and appreciative of everyone's individuality, uniqueness and difference, and it is an entirely different thing to have the same attitude toward their deeds, actions, outputs and productivity. It is very important and crucial that you learn to clearly distinguish between these two factors. The wisdom of this situation requires from

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

you to make such a distinction. Otherwise, you could end up supporting the negative state, by tolerating something which should not be tolerated not only for your own sake or for the sake of everyone in the positive state but, most importantly, for the sake of all those who are in such a negative predicament.

Take, for example, someone whose deeds, actions, outputs and productivity are evil, negative, bad, wrong, hurtful, harmful, dangerous and generally useless. The wisdom of your kindness, tolerance, respect and appreciation would require from you to totally and completely disagree with or reject or dissociate yourself from such deeds, actions, outputs and attitudes in general. If you were to define kindness, tolerance, respect and appreciation in a manner which doesn't distinguish between individuality, uniqueness and difference on one side and deeds, actions, products and outputs on the other side, then, in that case, you would be supportive of the negative state because only the negative state can be that way. On the other hand, if you clearly disagree or reject such deeds, etc., for the sake of all, as well as for the sake of the individual who would exhibit such deeds, etc., you would be showing him/her true kindness, tolerance, respect and appreciation because you know very well that such deeds are destroying or, at least, undermining the proper manifestation and function of that individual's true individuality, uniqueness and difference. After all, through such deeds, actions, outputs and products, the negative state is trying to defy the concept and manifestation of the individualities, uniquenesses and differences.

Do you remember, Peter, two cases of your secretaries, who worked with you while you were employed in the place of your employment a few years ago? Or with Manfred's secretary with whom he has to deal at the present time because of her ineptness and incompetence as far as her quality of work, output and productivity are concerned? In your case, you had to stop assigning them any work because they either didn't complete it within the required time or, if they did, the work was done in such an incompetent and impossible manner that you had to redo it all over again, wasting your precious time. What was your attitude toward them at that time? Although you supported the decision of their superiors to let them go, nevertheless, you maintained a kind, tolerant, respectful and appreciative attitude toward their individualities, uniquenesses and differences and at the same time, fully disagreeing with and rejecting the impossible quality of their work, output and productivity. By your support of letting them go, you clearly were distinguishing between their individualities, uniquenesses and differences and their deeds, actions,

outputs and productivity. And Manfred is advised to do the same things after consulting personally with Me about the best possible way to proceed in this respect. And this is the way it is supposed to be. This is the right and proper spiritual way which stems from true love and wisdom and their attributes of kindness, tolerance, respect and appreciation the way they are defined, understood and practiced in the positive state.

Due to the fact that you are My true representatives, and due to the fact that as such you function from the position of the positive state, and ultimately from My Own Position, you are advised to adopt this method of relatedness as reflected in the nature of all relationships in the positive state. Your role in this respect is to bring into the pseudo-life of humans on planet Zero this mode and manner of functioning, behavior and attitude. By doing that, you'll build a proper foundation on which impossible and despicable ways of humans' mutual relatedness will be eventually eliminated and replaced with the way of purely positive nature as described above.

And this is all that I wanted to clarify for all of you this morning, Peter.

Peter: Thank You so much for this very necessary and meaningful clarification. May we proceed now with Boris' questions and Your answers to them?

The Lord Jesus Christ: You may, Peter, you most certainly may. In responding to his two questions, as related to the events recorded in Luke, I will be paraphrasing the mentioned texts. Let us take the story of the sinful woman first. After that, we'll discuss the Parable of the Prodigal or the Lost Son.

As you remember, at one time I was invited by a certain Pharisee for dinner. Here is described an attempt by someone who thinks that he possesses the proper knowledge of truth and all the mysteries of the hierarchy of the spiritual organization of life, to share that knowledge and understanding with Someone Who is the very Absolute Source of Truth and all Knowledge and Mysteries in Himself/Herself and by Himself/Herself — Me, The Lord Jesus Christ. This factor is described by the Pharisee's invitation to share his food with Me. Food, in this connotation, means sharing all spiritual values. The reason I accepted his invitation was in the fact that it was necessary to show him the true reality of the nature of the positive state as well as of My True Nature the way it really was behind the scene and not as it appeared on the scene as represented by the Pharisee's perception of that reality.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

So, as this sharing was going on, represented here by eating our food, a woman in the city who was a sinner, knowing that I was in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster flask of fragrant oil, and stood at My feet behind Me, weeping; and she began to wash My feet with her tears, and wiped them with the hair of her head; and she kissed My feet and anointed them with the fragrant oil.

A profound spiritual mystery and correspondences are contained in this scene. A woman in the city, in the connotation of the discussed event, signifies the original state of all those who possessed proper knowledge and understanding of all spiritual correspondences and mysteries of the life-making process. 'A woman' in this connotation means three things: One, it is a body of knowledge and understanding; two, it is a deep love for having proper knowledge and understanding. That she was in the city signifies that she was in the practical application of that knowledge and understanding. 'City' means application and practice because living requires a place where you can live and practice. Three, a woman signifies also one's own true nature. Only from the position of the knowledge of who you are and what your purpose in life is can you apprehend any other true knowledge. However, most importantly, only from the position of your own nature, represented here by the woman in question, can you approach Me for whatever reasons. A situation is described here which indicates or shows the proper way of approaching Me.

That she was a sinner signifies that the knowledge and understanding of spiritual correspondences, and everything else, were utilized by those who had them for activation of the negative state. To do so, means to sin or to be a sinner. That she brought an alabaster flask of fragrant oil with her denotes the possession of a very small but very precious remnant of the most elevated good. An alabaster flask signifies a very small remnant. Fragrant oil represents the good of love and love of good which was retained in everyone who participated in the activation of the negative state. The mystery of this depiction is in the fact, mentioned many times before, that no one can be absolutely evil or have something which could be conceived as absolutely false. As no absolute evil exists, so does no absolute falsity exist. What you have to understand in this respect, is that if someone would be pure evil and in pure falsity without even the minutest remnants of something stemming from good and truth, or love and wisdom, that one couldn't survive or live for a fraction of a second. This fact is giving you a very clear indication that everyone who lives in evils and falsities, can and may live there only and only because they contain within themselves some elements of good and truth

and love and wisdom. That they don't recognize or acknowledge this to be the source of their life, is an entirely different story. Because of that, they are designated as sinners or dead.

However, at one point in time, they will recognize this fact and acknowledge that they can be anything or anyone at all only and only for the reason of having those minutest remnants within them which I placed into them Myself. Because they are all from Me, I am in them at all times, enabling their possessors to have their own life and living. This fact is described by the woman in question who knew that I was in the Pharisee's house. Her knowledge denotes the recognition that I am in everyone, in their most private within, designated here by the Pharisee's house. That it was the Pharisee's house signifies that I am also in those who think and believe that they have the proper knowledge of good and truth, and all other spiritual principles, but who, in fact, are only in appearances of such knowledge.

That the woman brought with herself an alabaster flask of fragrant oil means that only from the position of those remnants could/can one approach Me no matter how great a sinner one might be. That she stood behind Me at My feet weeping signifies that anything negative and sinful was/is not part of and had/has nothing to do with the true nature of the Positive State or My True Absolute Nature. It was/is separated from and was/is behind Me at all times. That she stood at My feet signifies the point of contact where the negative state may make such contact without being annihilated in the process. Feet, in the connotation of this text, correspond to My Most External Degree of My External Mind from which the physical dimension was created. It was in the most external degree of that dimension from which the negative state was fabricated. Thus, in some sense, My feet, or the most external region of My External Mind, have some affinity to the negative state in the sense that contact is possible with the negative state at that level, provided that anyone who approaches Me for such a contact brings with herself/himself his/her true nature — the woman, who possesses the remnants of love and good — the fragrant oil, — and is willing to acknowledge that I am the source of that love and good.

That the woman was weeping signifies that one's true nature recognizes from where his/her problems spring and that without Me one has no chance to live or to be alive. Weeping is the first step in recognizing the source of one's problems and the need to get rid of them. Remember, problems are sins and sins are problems. That she began to wash My feet with her tears, and wiped them with the hair of her head signifies

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

sharing with Me of her most precious and most internal possessions represented here by tears which are very personal and individual. That she wiped them with her hair denotes that it was done from the most internal power of her love. Hair signifies one's personal spiritual power and energy which enables one to function as one's own individuality, uniqueness and difference. But because it was a woman who shared with Me her personal spiritual power and energy through the process of wiping My feet as she was washing them, means that only from the position of the feminine principle, which is the principle of love and goodness, can any such act have meaningful and useful significance.

That the woman kissed My feet and anointed them with the fragrant oil signifies acknowledgment and acceptance of My Human Divine and Divine Human, ascribing to it the true power from which I can initiate salvation of all the so-called sinners represented here by her. Kissing My feet denotes acceptance of the human aspects of My Nature. Anointing them with the fragrant oil means that salvation can come only by the factor that I made My Divine Human and subsequently I made My Human Divine. But it also means that from My feet, that is to say, from the human portion of My Nature, which are being washed with her tears and wiped with her hair and kissed and anointed with the fragrant oil, My New Nature will derive, after it is purified from all evils and falsities with which the typical human nature was/is imbued. She washed them with her tears, meaning washing My human aspects with the fact of acknowledgment that I don't possess anything of negative and evil nature and that anything negative in the human aspects of My nature is being eliminated by the purity of My love and goodness which is being mutually shared with everyone who approaches Me in My New Nature. In this respect, the entire scene with the woman indicates that no matter how evil and negative one may be, if one acknowledges My New Nature, meaning kissing My feet and anointing them with the remnants of his/her love and good, from that position I can save them without any reservation. So, in essence, this scene foresees the acquirement of My New Nature which will replace My Old Nature and which will become the only source of everyone's salvation and liberation from the negative state and from the negative aspects of the human nature.

Due to the fact that the woman in the city also denotes the factor of residing in the false doctrinal and dogmatic pseudo-knowledge, coming from the city and acknowledging and accepting My New Nature, represented here by My feet and what the woman was doing to them, also signifies that only by the means of My New Revelation which reveals the facts about My New Nature and everything related to the true

spiritual principles, that is to say, by the means of My Nature and of the ideas of My New Revelation which are integrally connected to My New Nature, is the only way one can be converted to the positive state, no matter how much one sinned/sins or how great one's sins were/are. To indicate this fact, at the end of this event, I said, '*Therefore I say to you, her sins, which are many, are forgiven, for she loved much.*' And at the very end, '*Your sins are forgiven.*' This is how liberation and salvation from the negative state was/is made possible. And the woman in question, by her recognition, acknowledgment, acceptance and internalization of this fact, represented this most important factor. Through and by her behavior, and what she did to Me, she illustrated and demonstrated the way out of the negative state. You can say that she was the very first one who accomplished this goal, thanks to the spiritual symbolization of which her behavior represented at that time. By putting the most important emphasis on My Human, which was symbolized by My feet, and which became the catalyst for acquirement of My New Nature, she, in fact, was the very first one who was saved and liberated from the negative state by the means of My New Nature from the standpoint of its non-time and non-space conceptualization. In other words, she was saved, from the standpoint of the time-space conceptualization, by My Future New Nature.

The rest of the events, as related to the Pharisee's reaction to the entire scene, correspond to those individuals who think that they have the proper knowledge and the proper means but who are trying to devise a different way for liberation and salvation of all, totally disregarding the only possible way — Me and My Absolute New Nature. This is the reason why they look with contempt on all others, the so-called sinners, considering themselves to be righteous and godly, while, in fact, by rejecting Me and My way, by not doing what the woman was doing to Me through her symbolical depiction, they put themselves into a position of exclusion, for the time being, from participation in the life of the positive state. The woman's behavior and action can be considered a most beautiful depiction, illustration and demonstration of the ways and means for getting out of the negative state. By having faith in My Divine Human and Human Divine, that is to say, by having faith in My Future New Nature and what all It will accomplish and produce, she was saved from the negative state. This is the reason I said to her, '*Your faith has saved you. Go in peace.*' To repeat again, there is no other way out of the negative state. And this is what that event, described in Luke, really signifies, among some other things related to the woman's personal life as well as to the Pharisee's situation.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

However, there is another important spiritual aspect related to the representation of the woman in question. This woman was called a sinner. What kinds of sins was she committing? They all related to her sexual involvements with men. This is the issue of relatedness. As you know, you can relate to others on many levels of involvement. Sexuality, however, was defined as an all-inclusive sharing from the position of one's femininity to the position of one's masculinity and from the position of one's masculinity to the position of one's femininity. The quality of any such involvement is determined by one's intentional and motivational factors with which such an involvement and sharing take place. As you know, one of the most important purposes of Creation and everyone positioned in it, is to share what one has and what one is from the position of his/her and her/his own individuality, uniqueness and difference. The fundamental goal, meaning and purpose of sexuality in this respect, among many other things, is to be an avenue or a means for such an intimate sharing to take place. The importance of such sharing can be found in the fact that the only way one can properly manifest and share the unique, different and very much individual element or particle of My Absolute Individual, Unique and Different Nature, which was imparted on each individual in his/her relative condition, is by sharing what one has and what one is with all others. This is how various aspects, elements and particles of My Absolute Nature are being shared amongst all sentient entities. This is also the way I convey Myself to all in My Creation. Sexuality in this respect plays the central role in the process of this sharing.

The quality, the content and appropriateness of that sharing is determined by the purpose for which such sharing takes place. From what position is any sharing being initiated? What does it take into consideration? Who and how is anyone involved in the process of such sharing? The purity and *sinless-ness* of any such sharing is determined by the factor of My personal involvement in any such act. It is also determined by the motivational and intentional factors of any such sharing. In the case of the woman in question, her approach to such a sharing was from love to men and from the need to give that love to everyone who approached her for that purpose.

However, the problem with her love in this respect was that it lacked wisdom. She was sharing her femininity, uniqueness, individuality and difference without any regard for the source of them — Me. Instead she was doing it from herself, by herself and of herself, excluding My presence in any of her acts. Because of that, her behavior in that area was considered to be sinful. Nevertheless, she did it from love without

any other ulterior reasons. Due to this fact she became eligible for unconditional mercy and forgiveness once she recognized the problems with her mode of sharing, and once she became aware that only I could rectify that situation for her by her acceptance of My Absolute Divinity and of My Future New Nature. So she brought her individuality, uniqueness and difference, and everything she contained in the goodness of her heart, mind and personality, to Me, recognizing who was their source. By doing that, she nullified any negative or sinful connotation of her behavior, actions, outputs and productivity. This is the reason I said to the Pharisee that her sins, which were many, were forgiven, for she loved much. Also, this is the reason why I didn't say to her to go and sin no more. If you are with Me, and if you do everything in your life, no matter what it is, from Me, with Me, through Me, of Me and for Me, and if you do it from the position of your own individuality, uniqueness and difference, recognizing and accepting their true Source — Me, you can never go wrong. By that factor, any possible sinful or wrong connotation of any of your actions is out of the question. Because I don't contain any sin, that is to say, anything negative, evil or false, whatever is done with, from, by, of and for Me, cannot be sinful, evil, negative, or wrong.

The woman in question, and her interaction with Me and My interaction with her, clearly illustrated and demonstrated these important factors to all in Creation and pseudo-creation.

From the above explanation you may derive the meaning of that event to your present situation as My representatives on planet Zero. As you know, it is not by coincidence that this event was brought to your attention at this particular time. For some time now you have been aware of the situation which exists on planet Zero amongst all religious and other pseudo-spiritual movements. An all-out effort is made to discredit My True New Nature. The way it is done is by rejecting My Divinity or that I made My Human Divine, which functioned as the main means for changing My Nature in an absolute sense. The reason why this is done by the forces of the negative state, is so that they could prevent their followers, members and minions from being liberated and saved from the pseudo-life in the negative state. If you take into consideration the fact, mentioned many times before, that the only way that anyone can be converted to the positive state is by the means of My New Absolute Nature and thus, by the means of My New Revelation, in which My New Nature is fully present and is contained — in its very Ideas which are constantly being renewed and regenerated — then, in that case, if you accept the false teachings about Me and about My Nature which are propagated by all those numerous religions and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

pseudo-spiritual movements, you can never get out of the negative state. And this is exactly what the forces of the negative state, particularly and most pronouncedly the renegades, are after. This is how they hope to continue in the pseudo-life of the negative state ad infinitum.

Your role in this respect is to carry the ideas of My New Nature, of My New Revelation and of the principles of the all-exclusive sharing in your lives, hearts and practices, becoming their pillars and shining lights which herald this good news and glad tidings of My New Nature and of My New Revelation to all interested. You do it by the mode and way of your lives and living and by the mode and way you relate to each other and everyone else in the manner as described in these Dialogs and in the entirety of My New Revelation. You reflect the way for salvation and liberation of everyone in the negative state by the examples of your own life and as depicted by the woman in question who approached Me for that purpose during My life on your planet.

At this point of this Dialog, we may briefly touch upon My relationship with women during My stay on planet Zero. If you carefully analyze the way I related to anyone, you will notice that by the entirety of My behavior, I completely and totally equalized the importance of men and women. Because of that, although the Gospels didn't record too much about it, I was constantly surrounded, listened to and was involved at all levels of My Absolute Masculinity and My Absolute Femininity equally, both with men and women. By doing that, I was refuting and rejecting the accursed, degrading and less valuable position which women, and femininity in general, had at that time, as well as which they would have following My departure from planet Zero. Notice, please, that many of the most important spiritual-philosophical discussions I had were with women. The first person to whom I appeared after My resurrection was a woman. It is not by coincidence that Luke, in his Gospel, following the recorded event with the woman in question, begins his next Chapter, Chapter 8, with the proclamation that many women were with Me, serving Me and providing for Me from their substance, that is to say, from their femininity. All these facts pointed out the vital and crucial importance of the need for equalization of all principles of femininity and masculinity and masculinity and femininity. In their equalization, unity, oneness, integration, harmony and mutual sharing is the fullness of My presence and the fullness of life of the positive state and its true nature. Remember My words denoting that I gave you My example? The way I treated others, especially women, by that example of Mine, you are to treat each other, and especially women, if you are a man. In doing that, you follow My example, and in doing that, you are manifesting on your

sinful, wicked and violent planet the proper life, the life of the positive state and, ultimately, My New Absolute Nature.

My involvement with Mary Magdalena, to which Boris' question alluded, has already been discussed in the Third Dialog of the First Volume. Nothing more can be said about it at this time.

And this brings us to the second question and its answers — the Parable of the Lost or Prodigal Son (Luke 15:11-32). There are at least two symbolical depictions in this parable. In the first instance, it symbolically describes the activation of the negative state and its outcome. In the second instance, it describes various levels of relatedness that can and may happen between someone who considers himself/herself positive and someone who is considered to be negative or spiritually dead.

'A certain man' in this connotation depicts the Creator — Me. That he had two sons signifies two qualities of Creation — Love and Wisdom, Good and Truth, Positive Works and Faith and Masculinity and Femininity. A setup is being described here for separation, split and disunion of these two essential and substantial qualities for the purpose of activation of the negative state, or of that other type of life in order to test a hypothesis if that life could have the same quality, meaning and outcome as the life of the positive state. That it was the youngest son who came to his father and asked him to give him his portion of inheritance, depicts the factor that the masculine principle wants to be separated from the feminine one. The reason he was the younger one was in the fact that love, or femininity, precedes and gives birth to wisdom or masculinity. Although in a non-time non-space connotation, and in My Absolute State and Process, these fundamental attributes or qualities occur simultaneously and synchronously; in their application to the time-space continuum and to the sentient mind, they appear as though one precedes the other in the same manner as the birth of twins in which one member of the couple comes out of the mother's womb first, immediately followed by the other one. The one who follows will be considered the younger one although they both equally, and at the same time, developed in their mother's womb. So, in this sense, because love precedes and gives birth to wisdom, or in this connotation, femininity precedes masculinity, it was the masculine aspect which demanded his portion of inheritance so that he could split from his femininity and My Absolute State. This split is denoted by the man dividing his livelihood to his younger son. 'The livelihood' in this connotation signifies one portion of the creative material which was taken out of the totality of all creative material and used for fabrication of the Zone of Displacement.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

After this was done, the young man, or in the true sense to what he corresponds — that contingent of the original positive state that agreed to activate the negative state for the reason and purpose which was revealed in Dialogs 89 and 90 of the First Volume, and in My New Revelation in general — split from the rest of Creation and went to a far country. ‘A far country’ in this connotation is the Zone of Displacement and the negative state. In that country he wasted all his possessions with prodigal living. Once you activate the negative state, and once you become an integral part of its pseudo-life, whatever you had from the positive state, is being wasted and replaced with everything opposite to it. In the moment you spend all of it, nothing remains in you which could support the true spiritual life which is enabling your being alive and living. In that moment, after complete depletion of anything positive and good within you, you begin to experience hunger. However, by the factor of rejection of anything positive and good, you induce famine in the entirety of the Zone of Displacement. ‘Famine’ in this connotation denotes lack of any good and truth which feeds life, any life, making it alive and living. It is at this point that everyone in the negative state becomes spiritually dead. So, at this point of your escapades in the negative state, you have no recourse but to join yourself to the very substance of its nature, represented here by a citizen of that country, and begin to feed swine — all evils of the negative state. ‘To feed swine’ means to disseminate evils.

As this son was getting hungrier and hungrier, he would gladly fill his stomach with the pods that swine ate, but no one gave him anything. The pods by which swine were fed signify the most external elements of evils and falsities by which the pseudo-life of the negative state is sustained. But because the pseudo-life of the negative state is based on non-sharing and non-reciprocating, nothing in it is available to anyone for such sharing. This is the reason why no one was giving him anything.

At one point in time, as the negative state exhausts its usefulness and has nothing more to offer for learning, its inhabitants will come to the realization that the pseudo-life of their negative state leads nowhere and that it is completely depleted of everything that it thought it had. And not only that, but the realization will come that it has absolutely nothing, that it is not even alive in the true sense of that word. It is at this point that the answer to the question about the nature of that other type of life, as compared with the original life, becomes fully and exhaustively clear in everyone’s mind with the realization that only the original life, in all its inexhaustible richness and content, is the only true life which can be lived and that no other life has any sense. Not only doesn’t it have any

sense, but it cannot be considered the true life in any of its aspects. This fact is described by the younger son's awareness or recall of how it was to live in his father's house — in My positive state. And not only that, but he realized that by activating the negative state, he sinned, and therefore, is no longer worthy to be called My son. This realization is a prerequisite for salvation and liberation of everyone from the non-life or the dead life of the negative state. It makes all in the negative state eligible for My unconditional mercy and forgiveness and for bringing them back into the positive state by the process of their resurrection, transformation and reendowment with the true life of the positive state.

The second level of the meaning of this parable relates to those who were the agents of the positive state and those who fell away from being them. The issue here is from what position you relate to all others. In this case, an illustration is being offered about what happens if one relates to any situation from the position of one's human nature or from the position of considering oneself more important, more deserving and more valuable than anyone else, and not from the position of one's true nature, that is to say, from Me. Because you have something that no one else has, in your particular case, because, as My true representatives, you have My New Revelation and everything that it contains in all its three sources, you may fall into a spiritual arrogance, by that factor considering yourself more deserving, more needed, more valuable and more everything than those who don't have it.

So, if you see someone who comes back to Me and who is treated equally with you, and who is treated with great delight, gladness and happiness, — after all, there is more joy in Heaven over one sinner converting to the positive state than over one hundred righteous individuals, or in our case, My representatives — from your typical human position, you could become angry and feel neglected. This parable is a warning against anything like that ever happening in your life and in your attitude about yourself and how you relate to others. It emphasizes the need to see things and to relate to everyone the way I do, as depicted by the father's behavior toward the younger son and his response to the older son.

In your case, as My representatives on planet Zero, your role is to illustrate and demonstrate in your relationships, behaviors and attitudes to yourself and all others, as well as amongst yourselves, that type which was depicted by the father of those two sons. In other words, you are to illustrate and demonstrate by your own life My way, the way I behave and act toward all, everywhere and everywhen. By doing that, you are fulfilling your mission and assignment being in the role of My true

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

representatives. And this is all that needs to be said about the meaning of this Parable at this time. At this point, Peter, I would recommend to finish it for today. Have a nice day and a good time with our Manfred. Go in peace.

Peter: Thank You so much for this beautiful explanation.

One Hundred and Sixteenth Dialog

October 15, 1999

Peter: During my rereading of Dialog 115, a question came to my mind about the spiritual difference between the woman who came to You in the city while You were dining in the Pharisee's house and the woman who was caught in adultery and who was brought to You for Your response and advice about how to proceed in her case. We already discussed her case in some of the previous Dialogs. Would it be appropriate this morning to address this issue or anything else that You feel like discussing? I do know the answer to this question but I would like to ask You, if I may, to elaborate on it, or on anything else for that matter, so that all readers of these Dialogs would have a proper understanding about the fundamental differences of these two cases.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, it would be appropriate to do so. However, before going into pointing out the differences in these two cases, something else needs My clarification. It relates to the issue of femininity and masculinity. From one of your phone conversations with one of the readers of these Dialogs, it became obvious to you that a possible confusion and misunderstanding may exist in some readers' minds about the difference between the issue of gender and the characteristics, traits and attributes of femininity and masculinity, respectively. Whenever we are talking about masculinity and femininity and their respective traits, characteristics and attributes, at no time do we mean gender, or a male or a female. Those are two entirely different things.

As mentioned many times before, a male contains within himself both characteristics, traits and attributes — masculine and feminine in various proportions and degrees. So does a female contain within herself both characteristics, traits and attributes — feminine and masculine in various proportions and degrees. Their redistribution within each — male and female, determines the nature of their mentality, character, behavior, physical appearance and everything else so characteristic of both genders. Any deviation toward the extreme of one or the other — either too much femininity in a male or too much masculinity in a female — may lead to the development of homosexuality, so often occurring on your planet. On the other hand, undeveloped or considerably repressed feminine characteristics, traits and attributes in a male or masculine characteristics, traits and attributes in a female, and an extreme emphasis on, identification with and prevalence of only one but not the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

other, may lead toward the establishment of a lifestyle which could be characterized as a brutal he-man or the extreme form of masculinity with all its arrogance, coldness, supremacy, superintellectualism, suppression of emotions, inability to show tenderness, kindness and love and of similar characteristics so typical of male behaviors; or, on the other hand, it may lead toward a personality makeup which is too soft, dreamy, impractical, emotional, unrealistic, fairy-talelike, unable to be independent, unable to take care of herself/himself and similar characteristics ascribed very often to a female.

So, as you see from this description, for proper function of any sentient entity anywhere and anywhen, it is very important that both characteristics, traits and attributes of femininity and masculinity are contained in a balanced condition. The issue of their balancing has nothing to do with their gender or the way they physically appear to each other — one is a woman and the other is a man. The issue here is the ability to exhibit the needed characteristics, traits and attributes of both masculinity and femininity in both, whenever they are needed and necessary or whenever the situation warrants them to be manifested. Thus, a man can be very loving, kind, appreciative, compassionate, good, creative, positively emotional and intuitive while at the same time he can be wise, logical, intelligent, rational, intellectual, knowledgeable, understanding and discerning of truth. If he is both, then he contains within himself, in a balanced and proportionate way, both characteristics, traits and attributes — of femininity and masculinity. At the same time, a woman can be wise, logical, intelligent, rational, intellectual, knowledgeable, understanding and discerning of truth while at the same time she can be very loving, kind, appreciative, compassionate, good, creative, intuitive and positively emotional. If she is both, then she contains within herself, in a balanced and proportionate way, both characteristics, traits and attributes — of masculinity and femininity.

In other words, whenever the situation warrants or requires, any sentient entity can be either one way or the other way or both simultaneously. One does not exclude the other. The opposite is true: One supports and enhances the other. This is the way the sentient entities are in the positive state. As you see from this description, the nature of the positive state and all its inhabitants is balance, equalization, unity, oneness, harmony and integration of all characteristics, traits and attributes of masculinity and femininity and femininity and masculinity. This nature is a reflection of My Absolute Nature in all Its Masculine and Feminine and Feminine and Masculine

Aspects. No other state, condition or process is conceivable in the positive state. In order to illustrate this nature of the positive state, some sentient entities chose to have an external physical form of what you would call — androgyny. However, in the true sense of this word — androgyny — its spiritual, mental and physical characteristics are not what you think they are. In your human life, the term ‘androgyny’ and what it carries, very often, has offensive, despicable and aversive characteristics for you. Any human who may exhibit so-called androgynous characteristics, has no counterpart in the same spiritual, mental and physical content as any androgyny in the positive state, for example. You can conceive a human androgyny as a caricature, distortion and falsification of the true positive state’s androgyny, as fabricated by the forces of the negative state in order to induce feelings of disgust, aversion toward and rejection of the concept and meaning of true unification, integration, harmony and oneness of feminine and masculine and masculine and feminine characteristics, traits and attributes. This was a ploy by the forces of the negative state in order to keep humans and their creatures from anything even remotely resembling that which is contained in the nature of the positive state in this respect.

So, how does an androgynous sentient entity appear or is in the perception of some other sentient entity whose gender is either a male or a female, respectively? In actuality, it is not a matter of appearance as much as a matter of manifestation of one or the other characteristics, traits and attributes either of masculinity or femininity or both simultaneously. In this sense, in the positive state, one can be a woman or a man, as far as the external gender characteristics are concerned and, yet, if he/she or she/he contains in an equalized, proportionate and balanced manner both masculine and feminine or feminine and masculine characteristics, traits and attributes, — which is always the case in the positive state — he/she and she/he would be considered to be androgynous. This is how androgyny is defined and manifested in its true sense in the positive state.

However, there is another point to this concept — androgyny — in the positive state. This concept refers to someone who is truly androgynous in the structural sense of his/her or her/his nature or individuality but who is endowed with the ability to shift at will between one or the other as needed and if needed. Thus, any time it is needed, necessary and desirable, he can appear as she in the most beautiful external female form and internal feminine content; or she can appear as he in the external male form and internal masculine content. For this reason a full, fulfilling, productive, creative and innovative sharing may occur if

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

the androgyny approaches a female — as a male; or if he/she approaches a male — as a female. During such sharing there is no other perception, let's say, by a female than that he is a true male; or by a male than that she is a true female. At the same time, if two androgynous entities approach each other for sharing, they experience each other from the level of both of their characteristics, traits and attributes simultaneously. The masculine aspect of each shares itself with the feminine aspect of each and the feminine aspect of each shares itself with the masculine aspect of each. During the time of such sharing, there is no sense whatsoever of anything comparable to your human homosexuality or bisexuality. Instead, they experience a most unique, individualized, personalized and inherently different aspect of a total integration, unification, harmonization, equalization, balance-ness and oneness of their respective characteristics, traits and attributes. As a result of this sharing they acquire a higher level of knowledge of Me, themselves and others and they give birth to an unusual and highly developed idea, utilized for endowment of a new sentient life which transcends the scope of its content, in abilities and nature of anything previously available. And this is how things are in the positive state. So, please, don't ever look with contempt, aversion or disgust on the concept of androgyny or what it contains. Again, and I am repeating this over and over again, you need to learn to look at things as they are behind and not on or at the scene.

Of course, such an arrangement in the positive state could not allow for the activation of the negative state and of a typical human life. In order to activate the negative state and fabricate human life, it was necessary to deviate from this arrangement. For that reason, if, in the positive state, everything is in a state of balance-ness, equalization, integration, oneness and harmonization, then, in order to activate the negative state and fabricate humans, it was necessary to come up with something which would be a total opposite to anything existing in the positive state. As you remember from the previous discourses, the first step in this respect was the split of all attributes, characteristics, traits and everything else, contained in masculinity and femininity. It was necessary to delineate and sharply define the line existing between masculine and feminine principles, respectively, and to establish a strict role that one and the other would play.

In order to reinforce this split and make humans and creatures of the negative state aversive and ashamed of being one or the other within themselves, but only being what they are as far as their gender is concerned and being fully identified with their respective gender, the

activators of the negative state devised all kinds of sexual deviation and abnormalities, which were genetically, mentally, physically and socially manipulated, which would lead the majority of humans to differentiate and separate themselves from anyone who would not fit the commonly accepted modes of relatedness on whatever level. Such differentiation and separation would only reinforce their identities of being either a pure female or a pure male with total rejection of anything that is defined as being homosexual, bisexual or anything else different from their conceptualization and expectation of how one should be in this respect.

And thus, the trap for humans and other creatures was set up. By fabricating all kinds of abnormal and deviant conditions in the structural design of some humans and creatures of the Hells, the forces of the negative state succeeded in maintaining the strict separation and split of masculinity from femininity and femininity from masculinity within each individual and his/her and her/his typical gender identity. This is how the pseudo-life of the negative state is being effectively maintained for the time being. By inducing the confusion and misperception about the true meaning of each, and by externalizing them into physical forms, placing emphasis on the secondary sexual characteristics of the human body, the forces of the negative state eradicated from the human mind the true meaning of what masculinity and femininity in their respective traits, characteristics and attributes are all about. The extreme of this either masculinization or femininization of humans can be seen in such human terms as 'he-man' or 'she-woman.' In actuality, these terms, and any similar ones, can be considered an abomination of the negative state. They support, fuel and perpetuate ad infinitum the separation, disunion, split and isolation of one principle from the other.

In view of these facts, it is very important for you, as My true representatives on planet Zero, to defy this accursed condition and tendency which exists within the human life. The way to do this is, first of all, to dissociate yourself from agreeing with the way human life is structured in this negative respect. And secondly, by changing your attitude toward your own masculinity and femininity and femininity and masculinity within your own self, equalizing and balancing them in such a manner so that you can manifest in your internal and external behavior love, wisdom, good, truth, positive works, faith, kindness, gentleness, tenderness, tolerance, respect, appreciation, intuition, creativity, logic, reason, rationality, intellect and all other characteristics, traits and attributes of masculinity and femininity. As you see, being a man or being a woman doesn't preclude you from having one or the other or from manifesting in your behavior and attitude one or

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

the other. They are equally important and they are equally needed. At the very same time, as mentioned in one of the recent Dialogs (106), by treating one another equally with respect, love, appreciation, tolerance, kindness and consideration, regardless whether you are a man or a woman, you may successfully overcome your one-sided approach toward the issues of masculinity and femininity and femininity and masculinity, not only within yourself but without yourself as well and, most importantly, toward others as well. And this is what needs to be done, among many other things of similar positive nature, on your planet. And this is what the role of My representatives is all about.

Peter: Thank You so much for this beautiful revelation and explanation. Some of it was entirely new. Are You ready to proceed with the answer to my question?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Most definitely, Peter. And yes, some of the revealed concepts and how they are understood, defined and manifested in the positive state are new for you and the other readers. Some other concepts, although discussed several times before, are being looked upon from an entirely different perspective. In that sense, seen from this different perspective, they could also be considered as new.

Let us now address the issue of fundamental differences between the two women in question who appeared before Me during My life on planet Zero. Under what condition was the first woman brought to Me? First of all, as you see from these words, she didn't come on her own volition. She was forcefully brought to Me because she was caught in the very act of adultery. In her case, Moses' law required to stone her to death. As you remember, I refuted that need. However, this is not the issue. That issue we discussed in some of the previous Dialogs. We don't need to repeat it here. In this case the issue is manifestation, illustration and demonstration of certain important spiritual correspondences represented by the first woman in question. As is obvious from the text, that woman was an adulteress. What does it mean to be an adulteress or an adulterer in the spiritual connotation of that word and not in its typical external human behavioral understanding? In order to understand the spiritual connotation of that word, first you need to understand what the word 'woman' means in this particular connotation. As you remember, one of the spiritual correspondential meanings of that word is being in one's own true nature or in one's own individuality, uniqueness and difference. In other words, 'woman' corresponds to one's own true nature or, also, to one's own soul or mentality.

In this particular case, this woman rejected her own individuality, uniqueness and difference or her own nature, soul or mentality. Instead, she was going around trying to usurp or to appropriate someone else's nature, uniqueness, individuality, difference, soul or mentality for herself. By doing that, she became adulterous. As you see from this example, to reject one's own nature and its individuality, uniqueness, difference, soul or mentality, and to lust for, desire for or wanting to usurp or steal someone else's nature and its individuality, uniqueness, difference, soul or mentality, means to be adulterous. This is what the true spiritual meaning of adultery is all about. In other words, to lust or desire to be like someone else, and to go after trying to become like someone else, and, at the same time, to betray, reject, despise and to be traitorous toward one's own identity, the way one is, signifies being adulterous. Because I am in everyone's unique and different individuality and identity, any attempt to relinquish them equals betrayal, commitment of treason and to be traitorous not only against oneself but also, against Me as well.

Now, the woman in question didn't come to Me by her own freedom of choice or by her own volition. Because of that, no foundation existed for judging her, condemning her, but also for rejecting her. After all, she didn't ask for My forgiveness or for being judged for her behavior. Thus, she didn't come to Me, or was brought to Me from the position of her own individuality, uniqueness and difference. In a situation like that, I had no recourse, but to tell her only one thing: 'I cannot judge you; go and sin no more.' As you see, instead of judging her, I gave her an alternative: to stop doing what she was doing; that is to say, to stop rejecting, despising and not wanting to be her own nature and to stop going after other individuals' nature and instead, to accept who she was in her own individuality, uniqueness and difference and to identify herself with her own nature. The issue here was that the woman in question was approaching other men, not from the position of love but from the position of the need to usurp or to steal their own identities so that she could appropriate those identities to herself. There is nothing worse than doing that to oneself. To repeat again, this is one of the worst forms of spiritual adultery. Whether the woman in question would take heed and follow My advice, would be an entirely different story.

On the other hand, look what happened in the case of the other woman. No one was forcing her to come to see Me. She came to Me by her own volition and by her own freedom of choice. She came to Me from the position of her own identity, individuality, uniqueness and difference. Her approach toward others was from the position of loving them. In no

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

way was it from the position of trying to become like them or to usurp or steal their identities. Thus, she, by no means, was an adulteress as was the other woman. Her problem was that she did it from herself and by herself and not from Me in her and with Me. She recognized her mistake. Because of that, I told her that her sins are forgiven. At the same time I didn't tell her to go and sin no more as I did to the other woman. Her problem/sin was loving without wisdom. She became aware of that fact and she rectified the situation. Because from that point on, whatever she was going to do was with Me, from Me, by Me and for Me, no need existed to tell her not to sin anymore. To do so, would assume that I would be sinning right along with her. Such a thing would be an utter impossibility. Do you see, Peter, the fundamental difference between these two cases?

Peter: Yes, very clearly. Thank You for elaborating on them in such a prolific way. I really appreciate this.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. It was My pleasure to do so. And now I would like to bring to your attention something else, if I may.

Peter: Of course, any time You may.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Because in this dialog we have been talking about the issue of sharing, masculinity, femininity, adultery and all issues related to them, it is time that we redefine and reinterpret the concept of sexuality. As mentioned many times before, the concept of sexuality is the most misunderstood and distorted concept in its human conceptualization. What does any human think or conceive whenever you utter the word 'sex' or 'sexuality?' Nothing more and nothing less than sexual coitus, intercourse or lovemaking between men and women, but also on your planet, between men and men, women and women and sometimes even between a human and an animal. In other words, this term was grossly reduced to something which, in the positive state, has very little or no meaning at all. On your planet it was degraded to the level of purely physical, external, lustful and very often, a child-producing act, which has no spiritual connotation whatsoever. Thus, this concept in human understanding, lost its true meaning entirely.

In the positive state sexuality or sex has a totally different connotation. It is not necessarily gender bound. To be sexual doesn't mean to have sexual intercourse. In essence it means to deeply love, respect and appreciate someone regardless of his/her gender identity. It is a desire and need to share with someone what one has and what one is. In this

sense, any relationship at all, at all levels of its manifestation, stems from one's unique sexuality rooted in one's own uniqueness, individuality and difference. It doesn't necessarily mean to have sexual intercourse with the object or subject of one's love. Sexual intercourse has a totally different connotation than sexuality as such. Moreover, sexual intercourse in the positive state does not take place in the same manner as in the negative state or in your human life. They have nothing in common. This method was properly described in Chapter 20 of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***. There is no need to repeat it here. What needs to be brought to your attention however, is how you should conceptualize sexuality from now on.

First of all, it is crucial and vital that you transcend your conceptualization of sexuality the way you have been accustomed to up to this point by reducing and degrading it to the level of sexual intercourse and only to sexual intercourse. Now, this does not mean at all that you should avoid it if needed and necessary. It also has an immensely positive connotation if you do it from Me, with Me, through Me and by Me. What it means however, is that you learn to see sexuality as a means of sharing, conveying, radiating and emanating the life force energies, first of all, of My Own Absolute Uniqueness, Individuality and Difference and, secondly, of your own individuality, uniqueness and difference.

However, as you know, there are many levels of sharing. Sexuality was defined as an all-inclusive means for sharing. Thus, any sharing at all, no matter at what level and no matter with whom it is taking place, is possible only because of these life force energies which are purely sexual in nature. At this point in time, we are coming to a crossroad, to a new phase of the currently ongoing shift. This phase requires for all of you to acquire information which is related to something previously mentioned regarding the means and the modes of the acquirement of knowledge and truth about anything at all. In that respect, it was indicated to you that with the release of the new aspect from My Absolutely New Absolute Nature, which will rule the incoming cycle of time/state/process, a transcending mode of acquirement of knowledge of truth will be coming to its fruition which will incorporate and integrate all previously available means and modes.

The same thing may be applied to the concept of sharing and sexuality. The preceding energies of that release require that you become aware that with the release of the different aspect of My New Nature to the entirety of My Creation, a new and totally different level of sharing will become available and will be instituted which will transcend anything

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

available up to that point. It will transcend the meaning of sexuality as an all-inclusive means and modes of sharing, as well as sexual intercourse itself. That new and entirely different level or mode of sharing will integrate and incorporate all previously available means and modes of sharing, as well as the entire meaning, purpose, goal and practice, both of sexuality and of lovemaking or sexual intercourse practices. It will bring them to a new, more effable, more elating, more elevated and totally transcending level than has ever been conceived, understood, apprehended and practiced by anyone in My Creation, not to mention in the pseudo-creation.

This new and different aspect will redefine and, in essence, replace the old meaning and practice of sharing and its sexuality and sexual intercourse. You may prepare yourself for the fact that it will have nothing in common with what you know about it, how you conceive it and how you practice your sexuality and lovemaking at any of their levels. At this point in time, nothing more can or may be revealed about the nature of this new and different aspect. The reason we are talking about it, is that you need to prepare yourself for what is to come and to be willing to change when the time comes to make such changes. Also, we are talking about it so as to help you to transcend your understanding of these discussed concepts and avoid clinging, being attached to or habituated to your old ways. Yes, by all means, you may continue in your current practices with this new understanding. But be aware that things in any respect, and not only in this respect, will not be the same in any of their aspects. By knowing this and by preparing yourself for this, when you come to the spiritual world, or when the time arrives for the release of this new and different aspect, you will not be shocked or inhibited from accepting that which is to come. This is very important information. More so than you can conceive or imagine at this time. I am preparing you to be ready for everything new and different which is coming soon (in non-time and non-space sense, of course). And this is all that we needed to talk about today. Go in peace, Peter, and have a very nice day.

Peter: Thank You very much for this exciting information.

One Hundred and Seventeenth Dialog

October 16, 1999

Peter: Personally, I don't have any questions this morning. However, yesterday, later in the afternoon, I received a question from Michael Maldonado about the nature of 'desire' as it relates to Your representatives on planet Zero and how it compares with desire in the positive state. What triggers it, etc.? Of course, as always, before answering this question, if it is appropriate to answer it at all, perhaps You would like to talk about something else first.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for asking Me to talk first. Yes, I do have something on My mind which I would like to bring to your attention this morning as well as to the attention of all readers. As far as Michael's question is concerned, although some aspects of it have a purely individual and personal nature, nevertheless, certain issues, related to its nature and content, have multiversal implication. However, before going into discussing the issue of 'desire,' something else needs to be considered.

As you know, a few days ago, you learned about the fact that the population on planet Zero reached the six billion mark. At the present time you have on your planet six billion inhabitants. In some sense, this is a milestone in the history of your planet. Of course, being what this planet is, and being what it represents in the totality-of-it-all, this milestone has an utterly and entirely negative connotation. There is nothing positive about this 'accomplishment.' Notice, please, no matter how many inhabitants die or are taken out of your planet at one time or another, even during the recently devastating disasters that so often have stricken your planet, and will be striking more and more, despite that, your population is still growing and growing. The birth rate on your planet as a whole still exceeds the death rate many times over. In some way you may consider this phenomenon as an ominous sign for the future destiny of planet Zero.

If you carefully analyze the nature of the six billion inhabitants, you will have to come to the unpleasant conclusion that the vast majority of them are either representatives of the negative state in general or of the renegades in particular, or humans, transmogrified into such representatives. So, what is the situation with the presence of My representatives on this planet? For your information, in a **non-quantitative** sense, there are up to seven thousand people on your

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

planet who are of positive origin or who became positive by conversion to the positive state. Of this number, the vast majority are My representatives in a covert manner. They are not overtly connected to My New Revelation or have the knowledge that they are My representatives. A very few of this number are My overt representatives because they are connected, or will be connected to My New Revelation. These people are scattered around the Globe in such a manner so as to occupy spiritually very important positions which maintain connection to the positive state on this planet and thus, enable the function and life of all living on it. The way you have to understand this statement about important positions, occupied by them, is not in a political, social, scientific, economic, industrial or in any other similar sense. We are talking here about ***spiritually*** important positions. It could mean that someone who is in the lowest or the least significant position socially, politically, economically or in any other similar way, occupies, at the same time, a spiritual position which could be or is the most strategic and the most needed one.

In fact, these most strategic and most spiritually important positions are very much disguised from anyone in the negative state, including, very often, from those who occupy them. This non-awareness or disguise is needed for security reasons. If the forces of the negative state and the renegades were to know specifically who it is and where he/she is situated in these spiritually important positions, they would make an all-out effort to destroy or at least, to undermine anyone who is in this strategic and crucial position. Little do they know about the fact that if they were to succeed in their destructive effort, they would also destroy their ability to function and to exert their dominant influence on those six billions minus seven thousand.

The corresponding meaning of the number seven in this respect signifies the total number of representatives of My positive state who are needed in order to fulfill My purpose and My Grand Plan of salvation of all in the negative state and on planet Zero by whatever needed and most desirable means. On the other hand, the corresponding meaning of the number six in the presently occurring connotation has a hallmark of being at the point of fulfillment of its purpose for which human life on planet Zero was allowed to be established. To use biblical terms, this number has an apocalyptic connotation. Prepare yourself for many unexpected and devastating things to be happening in the near and far future. As a matter of fact, as you know from recent events, such things have already been happening in an accelerated manner.

In this unfavorable situation, no matter how devastating and tragic it will be or will seem to you to be, as long as you are in a continuous awareness and contact with Me within you, you will be fully protected and shielded from anything disastrous happening to you. Now and then you will experience all kinds of aches and pains or unpleasant mental and/or physical symptoms, which could be irritating and somewhat complicating your everyday function; nevertheless, in no way will they be life-threatening or able to impede or undermine your work for Me in your function of being My true representatives. In fact, these kinds of conditions will function as decoys which will be able to sidetrack the attention of the forces of the negative state from you so that they will let you alone to stew, in their opinion, in your own 'misery.' Under these conditions, no matter what will be happening, no matter how tragic and devastating it will be or could be, your duty and responsibility at all times will be to continue in your current positions, and to behave, act, relate, share and do everything in such a manner as My true representatives would and should in accordance with all spiritual principles as revealed and described in all three sources of My New Revelation. By doing that, and by striving to live in accordance with those principles, you will be successfully shielded from any harm of any consequences of such disastrous events.

The second point that I wanted to bring to your attention is something which is related to your tendencies to be preoccupied with past events. A few days ago, you, Peter, received a request to deal with one of such past events related to a certain person who, in everyone's view (who knew that person), abandoned My New Revelation and as a result, severed any and all connections and/or interactions with all of you or the majority of you.

There is a considerable spiritual danger in dwelling on that, or any similar events of the past. Something of that nature happened many years ago. If anyone continues to dwell on or to be preoccupied with one's past, or with one's past relationships, which are no longer occurring at the present time, that one is exposing himself/herself to the danger of being under the influence of the negative state/renegades. Whatever happened in that past, if you are continuously preoccupied with it means that you cling to your past, that you are addicted to your past, that you are being dependent on your past and that you are attached to that past. In that case, your past inadvertently and negatively influences your present and will do so in your future. However, the major danger of this situation is in the fact that it robs your precious and vital life force energies on something that no longer has any meaning and significance

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

from the position of the present time or the future time. It is only within your own subjective mind that such events still hold meaning and significance. I can assure you that if that were to be the case, any such events or, in this case, any such relationships, would still continue or would be in place. But because they are no longer so, it means that their purpose and usefulness had been exhausted a long time ago and they would serve no positive, beneficial, useful or desirable purpose at the present time. And not only that, but they would be damaging and disastrous to your spiritual, mental and physical well-being.

The problem with these kinds of preoccupations is that, by being and doing so, you are depleting yourself of important spiritual energies which are needed somewhere else and not on your preoccupation with, dependence on and attachments to anything or anyone from your past. If someone or something is gone from your life, no matter how close, significant, loving, useful and productive any such relationship was at that time or seemed to be at that time, that someone or something would not be in the same position at the present in regards to you or anyone else who was involved in that situation. Therefore, it is very important that you let go of everything of this nature from your past. I can assure you that the renegades want nothing more from you than to be preoccupied with, to cling to, be attached to and be dependent on your past. That way all your energies serve their very purpose because all their hope to succeed in their counterproductive endeavor rests in their past. They live from and function by the past. On the other hand, everyone in the positive state lives and functions in the present with their eyes on the future, leaving behind everything which has been happening in the past. The motto of the sentient entities in the positive state is: The past is gone, the past has no place in the present or the future. To drag anything of the past into the present or future, means to impede or make it impossible to progress in any significant degree. How can any proper spiritual progression, betterment, growth and better productivity of everyone take place, if you were to continue to dwell, be dependent on and be attached to your past or on someone or something from your past who/which is no longer with you at the present or in the future?

It is time that all of you learn to dispense with your past in such a manner so as to be thankful and grateful for whatever lessons were provided for your learning by any such past occurrences or your past relationships, and to move on, by leaving all of them behind. To be bitter, resentful, disappointed, hurt or miserable about something or someone from your past relationships, means that within yourself you have not

succeeded in resolving your past. In that case, you are advised to examine yourself in order to find out, what it is in you that keeps you in your past, or keeps you clinging, being attached to or being dependent on your past relationships so that you can get rid of it permanently.

It is a different story if anyone from your past, who abandoned such a relationship with you, by her/his own free will and choice, would decide to return to you by the factor of the realization that she/he might have been sidetracked from My New Revelation and because of that he/she abandoned any relationship with you or with any of My current representatives. Such a realization would signify that a new level of awareness was established within that person and that she/he is now ready to resume a relationship with you on an entirely different level and foundation than the case had been before. Even in cases like that, nothing of the nature of the past relationship which you had would be renewed or would come into life. Any attempt for its renewal on the same level and foundation as it had been in the past would end up in a much worse outcome than it was at the time of the breaking away from that past relationship. And not only that, but it would be totally and completely regressive. Due to the fact that the regressive mode is a sign of dominance of the negative state — only the negative state is in a continuous regressive mode of its pseudo-life — by returning to the previous mode of your relationship, you would effectively trap yourself in the negative state, becoming inadvertently negative. In that case, you would have lost your status of being My representative and you would be transmogrified into a representative of the negative state. And I know you don't want that to happen.

Because you are My representatives, and because by that factor you are in the positive state, your lifestyle is to reflect the lifestyle of the positive state. That lifestyle is never regressive but always progressive. Your situation and position on planet Zero, under the presently existing conditions, which are dire, is precarious. You are being watched very carefully by all. The renegades are trying their worst to find anything in your life or in you that could effectively sidetrack you from your mission, role and position. Remember please, they desperately need your energies. One of their possible modes of stealing your energies is to keep you preoccupied with and being dependent on your past by all means available to them. Don't fall into this trap. You may ask Me, if you wish, to personally help you to put everything in your past behind you which exhausted its usefulness and served its purpose. If someone is not in your life at the present time, but that one was in your life in the past, it most

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

certainly means that the relationship you had with that person, truly exhausted its usefulness and served its purpose.

Moreover, any of your relationships, or whatever you have, are based on the relativity of your nature. It is a relationship of one relative being to another relative being. Therefore, it doesn't have absolute validity. This is very true if you take into consideration an important spiritual fact: Any relationship which is built on any other foundation but on Me, from Me, with Me and by Me, does not have any chance of continuing for a long period of time. Only from the position of the Absolute, which is My position, may you build a relationship which could have a continuous usefulness and benefit. Thus, being relative, you cannot build such a continuous relationship from your own position. What does it mean? If you lost your relationship with anyone, it only means that you or the other person or both of you built your relationships not on Me, from Me, with Me, by Me and of Me, but from yourself or from your relative condition. In that case, don't expect such a relationship to last too long or to have inexhaustible usefulness and benefit.

The problem with the human mind is that it was originally structured by its fabricators in such a way so as to be historically and perspectively anchored in its past, deriving any meaning of life from what happened to it from the time of its birth to its most recent past. This dependency factor on past events was purposely engrained in human nature in order to keep humans in spiritual stagnation. Because the truth of the matter of the positive life and its creative effort depends on a continuous growth, progression and betterment, in order to activate the negative state and fabricate a typical human life, it was necessary to recede from this method of life course. As long as you are progressing, growing and becoming better and better during each of your tours of duty in various situations, conditions and life establishments, you are becoming more and more positive or, to use better words, you are becoming more and more as and like I am in your relative condition. Under these conditions, no possibility exists for activation of the negative state. Therefore, it was necessary to establish a dependency factor on your past history from the moment of your birth so that your preoccupation with, clinging to, depending on and being attached to anything which happened in your personal past would effectively block you from the positive state's mode of life. This way, you are effectively prevented from leading a progressive mode of life.

However, you have to distinguish between two factors in this respect. It is one thing to cling to, be dependent on and be attached to your past in

such a way that your past is constantly being on your mind, influencing your spiritual, mental, social or whatever function, behavior or attitude and preventing you from the needed spiritual growth, progression and betterment; and it is a totally different thing when you are in need of assessing anything that happened in your past so that you could learn your lessons from it, and that you could recognize why anything that happened to you had to happen that way and what the ramifications were of any such events for your own spiritual standing and your lifestyle in general. It is very prudent to undertake such assessment and analysis in order to determine how those events can be interpreted from the current position of your life as seen behind the scene and not on or at it. So, as you see, assessment and analysis are one thing, and clinging to, being dependent on or being attached to your past is an entirely different thing. The proper assessment and analysis leads to liberation and freedom from the negative influences of your past so that everything that happened in your past is put to rest and the chapter is closed. And this is the way it is supposed to be. On the other hand, clinging to, being dependent on and being attached to your past leads to torturous problems and uncertainties about anything that was going on during that time. And not only that, but it interferes with your normal, healthy, productive, creative and constructive functioning at the present time. It poisons your mind, your behavior, and your self-relatedness and relatedness to others. It has no meaning and no purpose other than to keep you in the clutches of the negative state.

Also, don't forget the many-times-repeated fact that anything in your life, all your relationships or whatever you had, were either by prior agreement with Me before your incarnation on planet Zero or were permitted by Me to happen exactly the way they happened. In happening that way, they served their purpose and fulfilled their needs. So, in the process of the assessment and analysis of your past events, you need to take this factor into consideration and approach it from the position of recognition that the events of your past gave you a great opportunity to learn something important and spiritually significant which would prevent you from falling into any further traps set up by the negative state and which would enable you to let go of everything which is no longer useful or beneficial. That way, instead of being constantly preoccupied with those events, you may be able to derive very much needed use and benefit from them and, at the same time, you may become free from their negative influence on your present and future life.

So, whenever you are assessing and analyzing your past events, you are advised to look upon them in the light of understanding what purpose,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

use and benefit they served and how they contributed to your spiritual growth, progression and betterment and whether, as a result of them, you were able to become a better human being, more loving, wise, kind, tolerant, respectful, appreciative, understanding, accepting, compassionate, empathetic, merciful, forgiving and more and more yourself in the true essence and substance of your true 'I am.' At the same time you are to recognize the fact that because such events fulfilled their chosen purpose in your life in making you this better being, they are no longer needed for you to be preoccupied with. Any further preoccupation with them would only reverse the process of becoming this better being. Thus, instead of progressing along the line of the just mentioned positive attributes, you might become just the opposite of them. Think about it, and you will see the wisdom of this warning.

Another point to this issue relates to you personally, Peter. Because you are in the role of the transmitter of My New Revelation, there is a tendency in some readers to involve you in their personal problems or in the problems that you might have shared with them in the past. Such a tendency on their part is being utilized by the negative state to divert you from your work in My services. In your case, you had resolved those problems a long time ago. By bringing them to your attention at this time, a time in which they no longer have any meaning, use or benefit for you, these people, without being consciously aware, and in some cases, might be consciously aware (which would be spiritually a very dangerous situation for them in the case of a conscious attempt to do so), are contributing to the negative state's cause by distracting you and your energies which are needed somewhere and for something else.

Therefore, we would like to ask every reader of these Dialogs, to restrain themselves, if possible, from bringing their personal problems and the problems of their past to your attention, Peter, and from asking you to petition Me on their behalf for helping them with the understanding of the reasons for their problems and events of their past and for the way to resolve them and get rid of them. It is neither your duty nor your assignment to do so. You are no longer a psychologist or a psychotherapist (a head shrink!) as you used to be in the past. That past is gone for good and forever from your life. It is the responsibility of every individual to bring their problems and their past to My personal attention and to ask Me, by whatever mode of communication available to them, to help them gain insight and understanding for the reasons of everything that was happening in their past and to help them resolve them, to get rid of them, put them to rest or behind them where they belong and close that chapter in their lives. I don't mind being a

Psychologist or a Psychotherapist. It is no longer Peter's role. And this is true even in those cases in which Peter participated or was present during the occurrence of such events. However, you may, if you wish, share your problems and the way you resolved them with Peter or anyone else of your choice. It is an entirely different thing to share them than from wanting someone else to resolve your past problems on your behalf. And this all I wanted to talk about today.

Peter: Thank You very much for this meaningful and timely contribution. Would You like now to address Michael's question?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, briefly and concisely. The issue of desires, whatever they may be, has, in most instances, a purely personalized and individualized connotation. The quality, the content and the purpose of any desire have a different meaning and significance from one individual to another. They can be very positive or they can be very negative, depending on the motivational and intentional factors that are behind any desires. However, there is one important aspect as far as the genesis of desire is concerned which has a multiversal significance. We'll address only this aspect and no others. The others are the responsibility of every individual to determine what function and purpose they serve in his/her life. The origin or genesis of desire stems from My Absolute Nature. What is My Nature in this respect? It is to unconditionally share what I am and what I have with everyone in being and existence. My Absolute Desire was to create such beings or sentient entities exactly for that purpose — to share Myself with them and what My Absolute Nature contains. Because I created them from Me, by Me, of Me and by Myself, every sentient entity, by that very factor, contains the same attributes that I have with the only difference, as you know, that in them they are relative and in Me they are Absolute. Because of this structure of all sentient entities, they likewise contain within themselves constant desires to share what they have, who they are, what their nature is, as well as all the products of their creative, productive and useful efforts and endeavors. The reason for this desire is in the fact that if every sentient entity is inherently and infinitely unique, different and individual, and if it contains within itself the inherently and infinitely unique, different and individual element or particle endowed on it by Me, then, in that case, such a desire to share itself with others fulfills the requirement of My desire to share Myself with all in an absolute sense.

What you have to understand in this case is that I cannot share Myself in an absolute sense with any relative sentient entity. Such a sharing would kill that entity. However, because I created infinite numbers of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

sentient entities, endowing them with My various elements and particles, through all of them, by them and with them, as they share themselves with all others, during which sharing I am constantly present, all aspects of My Absolute Nature, as they are redistributed through all sentient entities, are being shared with all. This mode of sharing fulfills My greatest desire to share everything that I have and that I am with everyone. This desire is reflected in all sentient entities to be with each other, to have each other's company and to share not only themselves but all the products of their creative endeavors (art, music, etc.). This is the way things are in the positive state. And this is the way things are reflected, or should be reflected, in the lives of My representatives. Your desire to be with each other, and to share yourself and your products, whatever they may be, with each other, derives from this setup. This is the reason why, when you have little chance to be in the company of My representatives, you feel sad and you desire to be with them and to share with them everything that you have, what you produce and how you are. And this is the right way to be or desire to be.

Even creatures in the negative state and humans have a multitude of desires which stem from the original pseudo-endowment by their fabricators. Their desires are, of course, in most instances, of negative nature: to be materially rich, to have power, to be in a controlling position, to rule, to be superior in comparison with others and have similar, all negative desires. This was established in opposition to the way desires are structured in the positive state. And this is all that needs to be said about this topic. At this point, Peter, I would recommend to finish it for today and to take a few days break, if needed and desirable.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. It makes perfect sense to me. I'll take Your advice and do what You suggested, unless of course, some questions of multiversal significance will come my way.

One Hundred and Eighteenth Dialog

October 20, 1999

Peter: Well, last night Manfred left us and returned to Germany. It was a very nice and productive visit. We enjoyed being with him very much. I understand that some very important work was done during his visit on many levels of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. Would You like to address this issue now or anything else that You feel we need to address first? I would more than gladly yield to You to take over and convey anything else that You wish.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for yielding to Me to talk first. Before going into the true meaning of Manfred's visit with you in Santa Barbara as well as in Atascadero with some other individuals, I would like to briefly mention something else. It relates to a certain statement made in the previous Dialog (117) regarding the number of My representatives on planet Zero as well as regarding the number of inhabitants presently occupying it. Somehow, some of you took that statement in a quantitative sense, disregarding its spiritual connotation and emphasis on a non-quantitative meaning of that number.

In the positive state, as you know, no statistics exist. Thus, any statements of this nature, when we are talking about numbers, and if these numbers relate to anything of the positive nature, in this case, to My true representatives situated on planet Zero, they cannot be applied to them in quantitative measures. You need to look on the spiritual correspondence and meaning that any such numerical designation has and not on its quantitative or statistical content. In this case, when we are saying that there are seven thousand individuals on planet Zero, who are either overtly or covertly My true representatives, it doesn't actually mean seven thousand in a statistical sense. It means that there is an exact number of individuals that is needed for maintaining the connection of this planet to the positive state and for the accomplishment of My goals and plans which I have regarding its destiny and outcome. Thus, in this sense, number seven means fullness of such presence, no more and no less but exactly as needed and for the purpose it is needed. For that reason, the actual statistical or quantitative number of My true representatives on planet Zero could be much less or much more in accordance with the needs that I have in My Mind. You are advised not to be preoccupied with such numbers in their statistical designation or meaning.

On the other hand, the situation in this respect with the representatives of the negative state and transmogrified humans on this planet is entirely different. In their case, both designations apply — statistical or

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

quantitative as well as correspondential and spiritual. The reason why this is the case with them, is because the negative state vested its life in numbers, statistics and large multitudes, disregarding any need to consider singular individuals in their uniquenesses and differences. Thus, in their case, six billion really means six billion individuals besides the fact to what the number six spiritually corresponds.

So, please, wipe out from your mind any notion of statistical or quantitative designations or meanings as far as the number of My true representatives present on planet Zero is concerned. Otherwise, you could find yourself in a gross error. In that case, you could become a target of the renegades, leading you into accepting distortions or even falsities in this respect. And this is all I wanted to say regarding this particular issue.

Peter: Thank You very much for this timely reminder. It is the human portion of our nature that likes to be preoccupied with numbers in their absolute mathematical designations. As I see it, this is the issue, again, seeing things on or at the scene and not behind it.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, you are right. Now, let us address some other issues which need to be brought to your attention and to the attention of all readers. I perceive some states of anxiety in you, Peter, about the content of these issues. They are somewhat unpleasant for you because things haven't yet turned out exactly as you expected them to happen which, to your great disappointment, seem to be in a contradictory mode to what was said about them in the One Hundred and Eleventh Dialog on its very last page which referred to Margaret. You are questioning why something like that was indicated in that Dialog if the reality in this respect, at this time, is somewhat different.

Let us analyze that statement. Anytime someone tells you that he or she confesses about his/her true nature or mission, as was the case with Margaret when she called Gloria and you, regardless whether he/she really means it or not, by the factor of such an admission, the factor of admission itself, has a purely positive connotation in the eyes of all inhabitants of the positive state and in My eyes Personally. It is the first step, an important prerequisite for something important to happen. Even if that something doesn't happen immediately, or maybe not even during your lifetime on planet Zero, nevertheless, it builds a foundation on which salvation or conversion of such a person to the positive state is not only possible but becomes a true reality. This is the reason why we implied in Dialog 111 that, 'the significance of this event is enormous.' And, 'Something new and different, only in the positive sense of those words, is being accomplished and established.' But at the same time, it was indicated there that, 'because this new and different is in the process of

being unfolded, its *true and significant meaning*' (emphasis here is Mine!), 'cannot be revealed as yet.'

The problem with your perception of that event or its possible outcome, or what was said about it from our perspective, the perspective of the positive world, was that you conceived it in a temporal-spatial mode and not in our non-temporal-non-spatial mode. You applied it as an immediate possible outcome and consequence in a typical human fashion. This was permitted to happen for learning some important lessons.

And here comes Manfred's role which he played in this respect. As you know, Manfred's designation, from what the word 'Manfred' spiritually corresponds in his particular case, and only in his particular case, can be defined, among many other things, as being a conciliator, peacemaker and fact-finder. In this particular case, he was on a fact-finding mission in order to determine whether there is any basis for conciliation and peacemaking to be established. You cannot very well accomplish any conciliation and peace unless you first find out whether any predispositions and foundations exist for them to happen.

The purpose of such a role, as Manfred had in this respect, was finding the truth. Whatever the outcome of such a mission would be, if the truth was really established, as was the case in this respect, it had enormous significance and meaning. Remember, please, My statement, 'And you shall know the truth and it shall make you free.' Even if, from your human position, the truth is painful and not what you would like it to be or the expected outcome has not realized itself as of yet, nevertheless, the truth was established and thus, the mission was accomplished successfully. In that case, everyone in the positive state rejoiced immensely, regardless of the present state of mind or position of the one about whom the true spiritual condition and its truth has been established. There is nothing more elating to the members of the positive state than the discovery and establishment of the truth of any matter about anyone or anything. And this is what the statement in Dialog 111 was all about.

So, what was the outcome of Manfred's visit in his role on a fact-finding mission as well as being an envoy on your, as well as on our behalf, Peter? The very first outcome was confusion on his part about what he heard and what transpired during his interaction with Margaret. The fact of being confused in itself is indicative that things are not the way that both of you have expected. It was very obvious to him, and we are confirming this fact from our position, that a serious contradiction exists between what I say in these Dialogs and what she told Manfred. And it was not until Manfred came back to Santa Barbara from that visit, when he was cleaning his feet

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

from black tar clinging to them, which he acquired during his walk on the beach with her, that he realized the true spiritual corresponding meaning of that blackness and how difficult it was to get rid of it. Through the corresponding meaning of it, it became obvious to both of you that distortions and falsities are still pervading her mind and that her perception of the true spiritual reality continues to be skewed or entirely false. This factor was reflected in Gloria's and your, Peter, uneasy feelings a few minutes after your phone conversation with Margaret.

Let us look on some very important spiritual issues which could be derived from the way things really are behind the scene and in the reality of the positive state's light and understanding. First of all, there is a dangerous tendency with some individuals to excuse, rationalize or justify their being an agent of the negative state, or now its representative. This excuse, justification and rationalization comes about from the fact that it was stated many times by Me personally, that everyone, whoever one is and in what role one is, is such by a personal and individual agreement with Me or by My sole permission. It is very much true that everything in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence is by either our mutual agreement (in the case of the representatives of My positive state) or by My sole permission (in the case of the representatives of the negative state). It is also the absolute truth that no one is ever lost, no matter who it is or what he/she has done or will do. However, no one has ever said or conceived the idea that because of this important agreement or permission, one could excuse, justify or rationalize his/her being who he/she is or for doing what he/she does. These are two entirely different things.

Let us look at this issue closer and from a somewhat different spiritual perspective. What was the true reason for the permission to proceed with the activation of the negative state? Many such reasons were revealed in the process of the transmission of My New Revelation and especially in these Dialogs (see for example, Dialogs 89 and 90, the last two Moscow Dialogs). Those revealed reasons were looking at the need for the activation of the negative state from the spiritual-philosophical perspective. They are very valid and very much current. However, we have not looked at them from the spiritual ethical-moral standpoint. Why was it necessary to activate the negative state at all, if I, Who is Absolute, was giving all sentient entities the assurance that they were in the positive state, that the life of the positive state, the way they were experiencing it, was really and truly the positive one because, after all, I was/am the Absolute Positiveness and because of that nothing else but only positiveness could have been conveyed and established by Me?

What do you have here with this kind of situation? On one hand, I was constantly giving all of them reassurance that they were in the positive state; but on the other hand, being of the relative nature, they still asked for permission to activate the negative state. What kind of a spiritual moral-ethical dilemma stems from this situation? Lack of trust and confidence in My Words or in My reassurance! If you don't trust in what I am telling and offering you for what it is and for what it contains, then, in that case, you make Me, in some way, a liar. In the moment you do that, you are fabricating a totally different reality which is, in fact, a pseudo-reality, and as a result of that, you become what you projected unto Me — a liar. By accepting your pseudo-reality as the true reality, you become a liar. Once you begin to think that I might be a liar, by that factor, you give rise to something which in biblical terms is called — sin. This is the true genesis of the so-called sins, or, in our conceptualization, of all problems which humanity on planet Zero as well as all in the Zone of Displacement with all its respective Hells, have been plagued throughout their entire history.

What kind of excuse, justification or rationalization could you offer for something like that? None whatsoever! It was clearly stated many times throughout My New Revelation that anything at all, once its idea is born, has to bear its consequences, outcome and results. Even if from our standpoint, the existence of the negative state and human life is not real and, in fact, is an illusion, nevertheless, for those who live in their atrocities and abominations, it is very real and tangible. The subjective perception and experience counts more for each individual than its objective reality which may or may not be real. Is the misery, torture and suffering of delusional and hallucinating schizophrenics, for example, less real for him/her only because in the so-called objective reality they don't exist? Of course not. For him/her they are real and for him/her this is what counts and not your statements and reassurances that his delusions and hallucinations are unreal. Do you see what I mean?

How could you excuse, justify and rationalize anything at all which has been going on throughout the entire history of the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state and human life with all those horrid, putrid and despicable deeds, wars, misery, suffering, tortures, bloodshed and all other unspeakable and unimaginable atrocities and abominations which are so prevalent in the nature of their pseudo-life? Yes, it was permitted to happen in order to clearly show or to clearly illustrate and demonstrate what happens if some sentient entities come up with the idea that maybe, just maybe, I am a liar and deceiver because they have no comparison between their mode of life and some other type of life which would be diametrically different from and diametrically

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

opposing anything contained in their current and only life. However, because it was an immoral, unethical and foolish approach, it was inexcusable, unjustifiable and cannot be rationalized no matter what and no matter how much it was agreed upon or was permitted to happen. After all, here is the illustration and demonstration of the consequences, outcomes and results of the realization and actualization of this immoral, unethical and foolish approach. At the same time, it is a clear statement or indication of the fact that nothing, absolutely nothing of this is possible to or can be excused, justified or rationalized by any means whatsoever.

How does this situation apply to any individual who finds herself/himself in a predicament or knowledge that he/she was/is an agent or a representative of the negative state? It is obvious that in that role, everything indicated just above, would fully apply to her/him as well. After all, the negative state consists of individuals who, by their role and pseudo-lifestyle, are committed to spreading out distortions and falsities and, thus, ultimately, evils and non-truths, considered by them to be good and true, and thus, they are committed to support, fuel and perpetuate the pseudo-life of the negative state, regardless whether they are consciously aware or not that this is what they have been doing at all times. Because of that, and no matter how much the agreement or permission is the factor in their being and doing who they are and what they do, their behavior, their role, their very being and existence in no way can be excused, justified or rationalized.

Taking into consideration everything that the activation of the negative state and human life unleashed on the entirety of My Creation and all aspects of its being and existence, and how many restrictions, limitations and security measures were needed to be implemented because of their murderous, intolerant, insane and destructive drive; and taking into consideration that each individual participating in their pseudo-life is a carrier of this necessity, for that reason they are all guilty of unspeakable crimes against all sentient entities and themselves as well. There is no objective, or even subjective excuse, justification and rationalization for anything of this nature. And this is the spiritual moral-ethical dilemma of this situation. So, in that case, is there a way out of this horrid situation?

If we were to judge the entire setup and all productions, inventions and pseudo-lifestyle of the negative state and human life from the position of what they unleashed on the entirety of My Creation; and if this judgment were to be made based on all the consequences, outcomes and results of their manifestation; and if this judgment were to be done from the spiritual moral-ethical consideration, then, in that case, talking about unspeakable crimes, everyone participating in them would have to be condemned to eternity into the Hells in order to bear all the consequences

of their actions as the biblical understanding of this situation implies. This is how all those statements in the Bible and the other so-called holy books came up with the idea of eternal punishment.

And here comes the issue of My Unconditional Love, Wisdom, Mercy, Forgiveness, Compassion, Understanding, Acceptance, Kindness, Respect, Appreciation and similar factors embedded in My Absolute Positive New Nature. By their factors, the way was paved which gives everyone trapped in the negative state and its human life an opportunity to get out of it and to convert to the positive state. There are certain well-defined steps by which this conversion is possible. These steps are applicable to every individual who is in the negative state or who is its representative. And let Me tell you something in advance: No other steps or ways or means exist which would enable anyone to get out of the negative state no matter who says what and no matter what other means or ways one would want to utilize. I can assure you that any other steps, means, ways, or whatever, would not only bring you out of the negative state but they would lead you only deeper into it. And this is so regardless of what your interim condition — how good and delightful — would seem to be. Remember My statement in the Gospels about entering the door? Whoever enters the door other than the door established by Me (I am the only door!) is a thief and a robber. A thief and a robber would only reinforce the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state without ever being able to enter the positive state or, in our terms, to be converted to the positive state.

So, what are the steps, means or ways to be taken by anyone who discovers that he/she is a representative of the negative state? The very first step is the recognition and acceptance of the fact that he/she is such a representative. Upon learning this fact, he/she is to very thoroughly explore and examine himself/herself in order to establish this fact from his/her own within. In other words, he/she comes to this acceptance not because I say so or My New Revelation says so, as was indicated to you, Peter, by Margaret for example, but because it is an objective fact established by the process of self-examination, self-search and self-exploration. Any other mode of arrival at such a conclusion would be by imposition only and not by one's freedom of choice for establishment of the truth of this grave matter. If it were by imposition, in that case, any steps toward conversion could not be attributed or appropriated to one's internals where it counts. Once again, in that case, the conversion would be only a seeming one, externalized but not internalized, and one would not only continue in being a representative of the negative state but one would bring in distortions, falsities, confusion and any other attributes of the negative state, contained in his/her erroneous ideas, by which he/she

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

would inadvertently contaminate and make void anything included or revealed in My New Revelation.

Once this full realization and acceptance comes to anyone in this situation, indicating to him/her that he/she is really a representative of the negative state and that he/she really willfully and by choice incarnated on this planet, or anywhere else in the Zone of Displacement with a certain, well-defined mission, the nature of which was, by any available means and ways, to perpetuate, spread, implement and impose everything contained in the nature of the negative state, the second step may be activated. In this step, one has to experience strong feelings of remorse and recognition and acceptance of the fact that, no matter how much or to what extent was/is his/her role and assignment by the possible agreement with or permission by Me, there is absolutely no excuse, justification and rationalization for his/role, mission, assignment and for whatever he/she did or does — no matter how good and how virtuous or positive his/her role and deeds appear in his/her own eyes or perception or in the eyes and perception of others, close to him/her.

If one arrives at this point of realization and acceptance, one becomes eligible for petitioning Me personally, based on his/her own free will and choice, and in all his/her modesty, humbleness and humility, for application of My Unconditional Mercy, Forgiveness, Compassion, Empathy, Understanding, Kindness, Acceptance, Tolerance, Appreciation and everything else which is needed for this purpose. At the same time, one may ask Me for freeing him/her from any wrong, distorted, false, evil and negative ideas, concepts, perceptions, understanding or whatever one has which were permeating his/her mind and which were utilized by the negative state, by and through him/her, to pollute, poison, contaminate, undermine and refute My true Ideas, Principles, Concepts, Statements and everything else which I have been making and offering throughout My New Revelation (in all its three sources), and to receive directly from Me a high dose of true inner intuition which would enable him/her to distinguish between the truth and falsities and which would make it possible for him/her to fully and unconditionally accept everything contained in My New Revelation.

Upon submission of such a petition, he/she would receive My unconditional mercy and forgiveness and, based on that, he/she would be enabled to forgive and show mercy upon himself/herself as well. As a result of this fact, nothing of the past, of the old, of the negative and evil would be either reminded to him/her or attributed to him/her ever, unless of course, by his/her own free will and choice, he/she would again revert back to becoming a representative of the negative state — a very unlikely

scenario if he/she really meant his/her petitioning sincerely and from the bottom of his/her heart and mind.

At this point in time, a person like that would enter the New School, either while still on this planet (in that case, without his/her outward conscious awareness), or during his/her stay in the spiritual world (in that case, with his/her full conscious awareness and participation). During his/her participation in the New School, a process of the true spiritual transformation would take place, and a full conversion to the positive state would be accomplished.

One of the fundamental prerequisites of conversion to the positive state, mentioned many times before by Me personally, is acceptance and application of all principles of My New Revelation. As you remember, we have stated several times that no one can be converted to the positive state by any other means but only by the means of My New Nature and My New Revelation. Any attempt to do it any other way, as mentioned above, would make you a thief and a robber. My Absolute New Nature and My New Revelation stemming from It, is the only way, the only door and the only means for such a conversion to take place.

If, by any chance, you think that those pseudo-creators who converted to the positive state took any other steps but the ones indicated above, then you are very wrong. They had to go through them as does everyone else. And believe Me, it was not easy for them to do so due to their assumed superiority over everyone and everything else for many millennia. Such concepts as modesty, humbleness and humility, the foundation on which it is possible for conversion to take place, were very far from their mentality and personality makeup. But they fully recognized and accepted as an indisputable fact that what they did and how they did it was an unspeakable crime and that, no matter what, and no matter how much we agreed to all of this, from the spiritual-moral and ethical perspective, there was no excuse, justification and rationale for activation of the negative state.

Another distortion, or even outright falsity, became apparent when a statement was made that no need exists for conversion to the positive state because conversion to becoming a true human, without its negative connotation, replaced such a need. This view leads to another, even more dangerous distortion and falsity. In it, it is assumed that the members of the New Universe, and the New Universe itself, are in the process of absorbing the entire positive state, making everyone in it true humans, thus, replacing the positive state entirely, as well as replacing any other mode and means of manifestation of infinite numbers of different, unique and individualized entities who were originally created into their own

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

unique and non-duplicable identities. In other words, leading to the establishment of a dull, boring, uninspiring, non-motivating and non-productive uniformity of all and everything without any notion of infinite varieties of individuals, uniquenesses and differences. Again, leading to nowhere else but to the reestablishment of the fullness of the pseudo-life of the negative state.

Let Me tell you something about the source of this outright and outrageous falsity: Do you remember when we were talking about how the renegades were imitating the pseudo-creators in everything that they did and were undertaking? And how the renegades fabricated their own quasi-pseudo-new universe with all its weird, insane and impossible-to-imagine creatures and sub-creatures? Well, not a long time ago, they entrusted a certain contingent of those creatures to take the role of the representatives of the true New Universe and to attach themselves to certain individuals, who, for wrong or inappropriate reasons, were/are connected in some way or other to My New Revelation, and infuse an idea into their minds that no one has to convert to the positive state any longer because everyone in My Creation will be converted into becoming true humans; and that the New Universe will replace My positive state. What an atrocious deviation from the truth of this matter it is! Whoever is laboring under such ideas, is completely and entirely under the influence of and slavery to the mentioned contingent of those creatures. For a person like that I would advise something which was symbolically depicted by Me in Revelation 3:18, and I quote, *'I counsel you to buy from Me gold refined in fire, that you may be rich; and white garments, that you may be clothed, that the shame of your nakedness may not be revealed; and anoint your eyes with eye salve, that you may see.'* The symbolism of this advice should be apparent to everyone with an open mind without any need for its interpretation.

Let us analyze this dangerous pseudo-idea a little deeper: This idea capitalizes on the factor of My New Nature. As you know, the catalyst for the acquirement and establishment of this Nature was My human body and to what it was spiritually corresponding and which I made, by a very special and unusual process, Divine. Now, the attempt of the renegades in this respect is to bastardize and reduce the essence and substance of My New Nature to that Human Aspect of My Divine. In other words, they are saying that, for all practical purposes, I relinquished My entire former Nature and replaced it or substituted it with the Human Nature alone, not having any other aspects any longer. If you look at this idea closely, it would lead you to the inevitable and logical conclusion that, in My Nature, I became relative as well, thus, relinquishing My Absoluteness. If this were to happen, the negative state would win its case because nothing is available in being and existence that has Absolute Value and therefore, no

positive state can exist either. After all, it is assumed that the positive state can derive only from the being and existence of the Absolute State which is postulated as being the Absolute Positiveness. So, if I relinquished My Absolute State in order to become only Human, albeit in its purely positive connotation, in that case, I nullified the positive state as such or I reduced it to the relative condition which doesn't have a chance for its eternal continuation in the same manner as the negative state. Thus, because of that, no difference exists between these two states. And not only that, but, My Human, in its purely positive connotation, is a fake as far as its positiveness is concerned because nothing of the relative nature can be positive in itself and by itself without its Absolute Positive Source.

What this false and foolish idea is neglecting to take into consideration, is that the human aspect of My New Absolute Nature is only one small important aspect of My Nature and that My Nature, being Absolute, consists of Infinite Varieties of Aspects residing in and stemming from My Absolute Spiritual Mind, My Absolute Interior Mind, My Absolute Exterior Mind and My Absolute Unnamable Core from which everyone and everything lives and is alive. Because of these Absolute Infinite Varieties, there are, in being and existence, infinite varieties of universes, which are comprised under the name of multiverse, as well as infinite varieties of sentient entities occupying them by their own free will and choice. It is not by coincidence that in the recent Dialogs we have been extensively discussing the issues of individualities, uniquenesses and differences as well as of My Own Absolute Individuality, Uniqueness and Difference. Among many other things, that discussion was in the foresight of fabrication of the false and foolish ideas about reduction of all and everything to only one small aspect of My Nature — Its Human Aspect.

The same is true about the nature of the New Universe. It is true that this New Universe was created from My New Nature. But notice please, its creation proceeded not only from the human aspect of My Nature, although it played a significant role in that process, but from the entirety of My New Nature. Thus, the New Universe, and all its members, although a true embodiment of true humanness, is not limited by it only but has everything else contained in My New Absolute Nature in its relative condition. As My Absolute New Nature is not limited only by the human aspect, so is the New Universe and all its inhabitants. In the totality-of-it-all, the New Universe occupies only one important aspect of the entirety of Creation. Creation cannot be limited or reduced to only one such Universe. There are many other aspects; as a matter of fact, there are infinite varieties of such aspects which give the specific, unique and inherently unique nature to each Universe. This factor reflects My

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Absolute New Nature. The function of the New Universe, which stems from the function of My New Absolute Nature, is to give a concrete illustrative and demonstrative example in its relative condition of what My True Nature in Its Absolute Condition is all about. It is doing so not for the purpose of replacing, substituting or abolishing the uniqueness, individuality and difference of each Universe and its respective inhabitants, but to enrich and enhance them in their own individualities, differences and uniquenesses, thus, making them more so and more such than ever before.

Moreover, no one has ever been physically incarnated on planet Zero from the New Universe. As you remember, the unusual position and placement of the New Universe is such that it has full direct access to anyone or anything on this planet — whenever needed and if needed. So, whoever has been residing on this planet came either from the positive state, or from the negative state or was born originally as a human proper. In either case, they came here with their own well-established identities and well-established purpose which cannot be erased or replaced with something or someone else. Don't forget the fact that each individual, in some way or other, no matter from where or when, carries within himself/herself a unique, individualized and infinitely different element or particle which was released from My Absolute Unique, Different and Individual Nature. Even in the case of individuals fabricated by the forces of the negative state, the original energies needed for such a purpose came from My Absolute Energies which maintain and supply life to anyone anywhere and anywhen. In those energies are embedded My unique, different and individual elements or particles which were used for fabrication of all those multitudes of creatures and sub-creatures. That any positive connotation from those elements or particles were removed by the fabricators, is an entirely different story. Yet, despite this removal, the original notion of individuality, uniqueness and difference, which comprises everyone's unique identity, were fully preserved in all of them. However, that identity was pushed back into the deep recesses of everyone's unconscious mind in order to give rise to an entirely different purpose for which the original identity was meant to be and exist.

So, what do all these facts really mean? They mean that the issue here is not in becoming as someone else, in this case, as some true humans like the members of the New Universe are *in some* of their aspects or as I am *in One of* My Aspects; but the issue here is in bringing about the original true nature of that element or particle which served as a foundation and basis on which one's individuality, uniqueness, difference and identity could be established but which were so much mutilated, repressed and hidden by the fabricators of all in the negative state that they needed a lot

of transformative work in order for them to become what they were/are supposed to be.

As far as those individuals who came from the positive state are concerned and who are either My representatives overtly or covertly, as well as all those of the positive state who got lost and corrupted by the negative state and who, as a result, became slaves of the negative state, the human aspects of their nature, in all its negative connotation, in the opportune time, will be removed from them and their true nature, identity, uniqueness, individuality and difference will be resurrected in order to carry on, in a productive, constructive, creative and unique manner, that element and particle which I originally endowed on them. You have to understand one important thing in this respect: It is impossible to replace, to relinquish or to substitute that element or particle by any means. However, it can be enhanced and enriched by all those experiences of being in the human nature and adopting an example of true humanness from the members of the New Universe without ever trying to be as and like they are or without trying to bypass the factor of conversion to the positive state. Such an attempt would equal giving up one's own identity and nature. And that would be spiritual adultery. So, the purpose here is to discover and to go back to one's true nature. In doing so, one has to realize that it is impossible to become anyone in the true reality of one's identity without conversion to the positive state first. Do you remember in Update Number 3 in the ***Corollaries...*** a very important statement about the need to return to your true nature which originally stemmed from Me? And that this effort — coming back to your true nature and thus, to your own individuality, uniqueness and difference, will be the major effort on your part for the rest of your life on planet Zero? The application of the meaning of that statement is now fully in force. It was brought to your attention at that time in order to refute any wrong, negative and false ideas that you could relinquish your true nature, acquire something else or bypass the need for conversion to the positive state.

What would happen in the case that such a thing were to be possible — to replace or substitute your true nature and its individuality, uniqueness and difference? In that case you would reject Me in you Who is present in your unique, individual and different identity. And not only that, but you would deprive everyone in My Creation from having My important unique, individual and different element or particle represented and manifested by you, personally and individually. For that reason, your purpose shouldn't be to convert into becoming a true human, bypassing the conversion to the positive state, but to discover your original nature before it became an entity of the negative state or before its incarnation into human life for whatever purpose, and strive to reestablish that

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

original nature so that you can become a full manifestation of one important element and particle of My New Nature in its infinite, non-substitutable, irreplaceable, unique, individual and different nature which comprise your true identity. By doing that you would be contributing to the benefit and use of all in My Creation, refuting and abolishing the pseudo-life of the negative state which is rooted in the denial of these factors. So, as you see, Peter, from this rather lengthy discourse, Manfred's visit and his fact-finding mission enabled us to bring these vital, crucial and very important issues to everyone's attention and to discover the real truth behind all of this. As a matter of fact, several recent Dialogs, recorded from the time of his arrival to your place, were inspired by that which he represents in his conciliatory, peacemaking and fact-finding role. And we are all thankful to him for effectively and successfully fulfilling his role and mission in this respect.

The important thing now is that by this particular Dialog, which was not easy for you, Peter, to record, everyone who finds herself/himself in this particular position, imbued with such false and foolish ideas, is being given a great opportunity, by their own free will and choice, to amend their ways by the means of the steps described above. If they choose to do that, by that factor they would be freed from the influence of and slavery to that special contingent of the renegades who feed them with such false and foolish ideas. And the only way to keep yourself clear and free from them, is by accepting, following and practicing the ideas of My New Revelation in its three sources, always checking very carefully whether any idea which is impinging on your mind is in congruence with what was, is and will be revealed in My New Revelation at any given time. If it is not, I can assure you that it is not coming from Me, no matter how much assurance you would have that it is. In that case, it would be obvious that it is coming from a misleading renegade's source.

Well, Peter, I think we have said enough for today. If anything else will be needed to add to this issue, you'll know later on. At this point in time, we'll wait for the response to this offer of amendment and the need for change and conversion to our cause, or to the cause of the positive state by those who are in the role, situation and position as revealed in Dialog 108 and partially in Dialog 109. In the meantime, if needed and necessary, we'll be addressing some other issues. For now though, go and rest and be at peace. Don't be anxious about the outcome of this whole situation. Remember, the truth of the matter is more important than anything else. I repeat, 'you'll know the truth and the truth shall make you free.'

Peter: Thank You so much for this very important and crucial discourse. I appreciate it very much.

One Hundred and Nineteenth Dialog

October 25, 1999

Peter: My Lord Jesus Christ, to tell You the truth, I have tremendous difficulties in recording Dialogs that relate to the behavior and position of some specific individuals who were/are connected, in some way or other, to Your New Revelation and who are allegedly under the influence of the negative state/renegades. Talking about them and their spiritual or pseudo-spiritual standing, and what they propagate by their questionable or even spiritually dangerous ideas, seems to me too much like an imposition on my part. After all, don't they have the right and privilege to be the way they want to be and propagate anything they want to, no matter how false and spiritually dangerous it might be? My personal preference during the recording of these Dialogs is to deal with the issues which are not related specifically to anyone's individual standing, behavior or position. Of course, what do I know about what is best and most appropriate from Your standpoint and not mine in this respect?

The Lord Jesus Christ: I understand and appreciate your concerns and difficulties in this respect, Peter. They would be legitimate and appropriate if they would relate to someone who was/is not involved, in some way or other, with My New Revelation. However, in the moment you have someone who claims to be My follower or who presumes or thinks that he/she is in contact with Me and that the ideas he/she propagates are coming from Me, but they are not, and he/she is not in contact with Me or anyone from the positive state, then you have a totally different situation here. This is especially true if such an individual had/has a strong influence on other members of My New Revelation or My representatives. After all, anyone who distorts, falsifies, misrepresents and deviates from the ideas of My New Revelation, and who claims that her/his ideas are its integral part, coming directly from Me, needs to be warned about his/her misperception, misinterpretation and being under the influence of the negative state/renegades. After all, it is My New Revelation we are talking about!

There are three issues here: One, such a warning gives an opportunity to the one who is in this adverse position, to amend his/her ways and to get rid of his/her distorted and false ideas, thus, coming back to the positive state and to the truth of My New Revelation. How else could such an individual recognize the fact that he/she is under the influence of the negative state? If you are firmly convinced or unshakably believe that

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

your false and spiritually dangerous ideas are coming from Me, or from someone in the positive state, you would have no needs, desires or motivation to get rid of them. So, you bring these facts to their attention and you offer them an opportunity to recede from their spiritually negative standing in this respect. Whether they take heed or not, is an entirely different story. It is at this point that they have to make a decision, based on their free will and choice, whether to accept or not to accept our offer.

Two, the truth of the matter had to be exposed. Otherwise, the danger exists that some other people, who know such an individual, would consider him/her to be My messenger and would tend to agree with his/her false and distorted ideas, only because they believe that they are coming from Me by means of such an individual, regardless of the fact that, very often, they couldn't understand a word the individual in question was saying or conveying to them. How many people have told you, Peter, that they truly believed that the individual in question was in contact with Me and the reason they could not understand a word contained in the ideas conveyed to them by that individual, was that she/he was on a spiritually much higher level of understanding of the true reality of the spiritual facts than they were? Now, this is the real falsity of this assumption. This is a very dangerous assumption, endorsing the false self-perception and the false role of the individual in question. Anyone who was saying that or thinking that, was, in fact, reinforcing the position of the individual in question. In the past, even you, Peter, had momentary doubts in this respect, telling yourself that, maybe, just maybe, your perception regarding that individual was wrong and that it was quite possible that the reasons you had very uneasy feelings about the ideas expressed by that individual were that she was on a much higher spiritual level than you were at that time.

What you have to understand in this respect is that, if someone really is on a so-called higher spiritual level than someone else, then that kind of standing doesn't signify that whatever ideas such an individual would be expressing, these ideas would be unapproachable, difficult or impossible to understand. Just the opposite is true: The higher someone is spiritually, the simpler and more understandable are his/her ideas, expressions, behaviors, attitudes, or whatever. And not only that, but such an individual, in all his/her modesty, humbleness and humility, would come down to the spiritual level of others and accommodate his/her spiritual ideas to their level of comprehension and understanding.

So, in this sense, if someone's 'spiritual' ideas are so complex, convoluted and confusing that no one can follow their meaning and content or understand what they are trying to convey to you, in that case, you can be assured that such an individual is either under the influence of the negative state or he/she is an outright representative of the negative state. Only the negative state is capable of producing and conveying such complex, convoluted, confusing and impossible-to-understand pseudo-spiritual ideas. This is the reason, Peter, why everyone, who was in contact with or under the influence of the individual in question, was telling you that they couldn't understand a word of what was expressed to them by that individual.

I want you all to know that such considerations about someone being on a higher spiritual level than you are, is one of the most dangerous positions you can take. This is one of the most favorite ways for the negative state to trap you into believing and accepting falsities or untruths about anyone or anything. So, how else would anyone know this to be the case, if we were to avoid bringing these facts to everyone's attention by the means of these Dialogs, for example? If I were to go along with your difficulties and problems, Peter, and avoid bringing these facts to everyone's attention, in that case, the truth of the matter would never come out into the open but would be simmering somewhere deep in your mind, constantly causing you miserable feelings of uncertainty and hesitation, effectively undermining your ability to discern and accept the truth of this matter.

Three, by bringing this situation into the open, we are giving a needed opportunity to all those who were/are under the influence of any such individual, to acquire a proper, correct and realistic perception of any such individual's position and his/her true nature and the role he/she was/is playing in this respect. Based on that, they may, if they wish, get rid of accepted false perceptions which they held about the individual in question. By doing that, they may free themselves from any negative influences which they possibly experienced coming from that individual. That way, they may get rid of the falsities and instead, reacquire the truth of the matter. After all, if you believe something about anyone which is not so or that is not true at all, you are laboring under falsities in this matter. The acceptance of any type of falsity puts you under the influence of the negative state. It is the best possible way to be in a state of continuous temptation by the negative state. In fact, by holding on to such a false perception, you are keeping your doors wide open for such a temptation to take place. And I know very well that you don't want to be in such a situation. This is the reason why we need to talk about these things whenever the situation warrants it.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

However, there is another aspect to this issue. It deals with the issue of responsibility and accountability of every individual for whatever he/she did/does or will do. Although this issue was extensively discussed in My New Revelation, especially in the ***Corollaries to The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***, (Update 13, for example), it needs to be restated once more. It relates directly to the issue discussed in the previous Dialog (118) which dealt with the factors of spiritual ethical-moral consideration of any performed or established act. As you remember from that Dialog, it was indicated there, that regardless of how anything happens, it is happening by an agreement or a permission. No justification, excuse or rationalization could be applied in any such cases. And the reason for this requirement is in the fact that everyone also agreed to be responsible and accountable for his/her behavior, attitudes, deeds, acts, relationships and all his/her productions. The responsibility and accountability factors preclude the possibility of application of any justification, rationalization or excuse about anything which is incongruent with the nature of the positive state and its ultimate Absolute Truth — Me.

What you have to understand in this respect is, that the agreement was also made at that time, or the permission was granted at that time, to illustrate and demonstrate the consequences, results and outcomes of anything related to the activation of the negative state. And not only that, but each individual who found himself/herself in the position of being a representative of the negative state, by his/her own free will and choice, also agreed to be responsible and accountable for whatever he/she would do at any time during his/her being such a representative. In other words, he/she agreed to bear the full consequences of his/her actions, deeds, behaviors, productions (of false ideas, for example, etc.) so that there would be no foundation or basis for excuses, justifications or rationalizations about anything he/she would produce in this negative respect. Thus, it would be spiritually very inappropriate to take it lightly, without any concerns about anything related to the issue of agreement or permission and the need to be responsible and accountable for one's choices and one's mode of life in general.

Do you remember what was said about this issue in Update 13 (at the end of it)? That the life of the positive state is rooted in everyone's taking responsibility and being accountable for all one's choices and that one has to bear full consequences for the outcomes and results of any such choices. And because life in the positive state is based on these important spiritual factors, in order for the negative state to come to its adverse fruition, it was necessary to recede from this mode, and instead, establish a pseudo-life which would shun any responsibility and

accountability for whatever would be the consequences, results and outcomes of its productions. Thus, in this case, in the negative state, either someone else is blamed for whatever such consequences, outcomes or results are, or the existence of the positive state is blamed for them. As you remember, it was stated in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** that the negative state believes that its problems are the existence and being of the positive state. Destroy or wipe out the positive state, and the negative state will have no problems. On the other hand, if the negative state, and everyone in its pseudo-life is there by My permission and by agreement with the pseudo-creators, in that case, what is the big deal? We are doing only what we are supposed to do and therefore, we are not responsible or accountable for our deeds. In that case, it is I who is responsible and accountable for everything happening in the negative state because, after all, I agreed to it or permitted for it to happen.

These are the typical modes of justifications, excuses and rationalizations which are so prevalent in the position of everyone in the negative state. The only thing that these justifiers and excusers in their rationalization are omitting, is the factor of the agreement to be responsible and accountable for their actions or deeds and for the need to bear their consequences, results and outcomes, without any excuse, justification or rationalization for anything they produce in the course of their entire pseudo-life.

From what was said above, the question may arise: At what point does My unconditional love, mercy, compassion, empathy, understanding, acceptance, forgiveness, kindness, respect, tolerance and appreciation apply in cases like that? As you clearly remember (or don't remember!) from Dialog 51 (page 444), it was indicated there that the wisdom of this situation requires that these attributes are applied only ***after*** illustrating and demonstrating all consequences, outcomes and results of any evil, wrong or bad deeds. In other words, after everyone bears and experiences all consequences of such deeds. This factor precludes any possibility of taking it lightly or justifying, excusing and rationalizing one's negative and evil deeds, actions, ideas, behaviors or productions. And this is the spiritual ethical-moral aspect of the whole situation with the negative state and everyone of the negative state, as well as with the issue of agreement and permission. Nothing more can be ascribed to it. Therefore, never ever use the factor of agreement or permission for excusing, justifying or rationalizing your behavior, attitude, deeds, lifestyle or whatever you have, so that you don't end up being under the influence of the negative state. A true representative of Mine or of My positive state, by the factor of the nature of being such, will always take

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

full responsibility and will be fully accountable for everything in his/her life, behavior, attitude, deeds and productions, no matter what they might be. He/she would never use the factor of our agreement or permission for excusing, justifying or rationalizing them. And this is all that I wanted to tell you about your difficulties and worries in this respect, Peter.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your explanation of this situation and for putting up with my personal difficulties and problems in this respect. Before asking my question, is there anything else You would like to talk about at this time?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Just a brief note on something that happened while you were in the process of recording this portion of our dialoging. As you were almost at the end of this portion in recording, your phone rang. You were surprised to hear the ring because it was too early in the morning for anyone to want to talk with you. When you picked up the phone, you found Margaret on the other end of the line. This time, she sounded considerably desperate and more sincere in her desire to get help or to get out of being under the influence of the ideas of the renegades than the case was when she called you the first time. As we all hoped, she has taken the second very important step in her effort to come back to the positive state, and to relinquish her current position and to make a different choice.

The third step, which she, or anyone else in a similar position, would need to take is the most important and crucial one. It is in this step that one needs to recognize and accept the fact of who she/he was/is, what his/her position and role was/is in this respect, and to show and express from the bottom of her/his heart, by the factor of her/his free will and choice, a willingness and strong desire to make a different choice, to relinquish all ideas, concepts, attitudes, and productions which she/he was expressing, and with which she/he was identifying herself/himself, considering them to be true and positive, while they were not; and instead, to accept, internalize and promulgate by the example of her/his life and behavior, all ideas, concepts, principles and precepts of My New Revelation in all its three sources so that they become the ruling factor of his/her life. As you know, and as it has been repeated many times before, anyone can come out of his/her role, position or whatever of the negative nature only by the means of My New Revelation and, in an ultimate sense, by the means of My New Nature from which My New Revelation derives. So, getting rid of all other ideas, concepts and thoughts which are incongruent with My New Revelation, prepares the way for the ideas of My New Revelation to enter such an individual and to initiate the

process of his/her true transformation. We all hope that this third step will be taken and effectively accomplished.

Peter: And I sincerely hope so as well. Well, here comes my question. I am not sure if it has any relevance to the above discussed issues, although some aspects of it might. As You know, for some time now, I have been thinking and pondering about the second and third chapters of the Apocalypse in the Christian Bible. In those chapters You are sending messages to the various churches. Swedenborg extensively wrote about those issues in his two books ***Apocalypse Explained*** and ***Apocalypse Revealed***. I don't want to repeat whatever is contained in those books. My question is if there is anything in those two chapters that would have any relevance to our position, role and standing as Your representatives or if whatever was revealed through Swedenborg stands as it is and therefore, has no meaning for the present time or for the nature of the presently ongoing shift and its current phase. How contemporary or current would anything in those chapters be as related to our own lives?

The Lord Jesus Christ: There is a very strong relevance of what was conveyed above to your question, Peter. Although Swedenborg's description has a somewhat different meaning, and it relates to the state of affairs both in the intermediate world and on planet Zero in the so-called churches, some of the ideas expressed by him in this respect could be applied to the present situation. Of course, as you know, the word 'church' in the present connotation of its meaning, no longer applies to you. Instead, you can conceive it as a spiritual standing of any individual who expresses and identifies himself/herself with any spiritual or pseudo-spiritual ideas and concepts, adopted by him/her under the influence of this or that teaching, dogma, doctrine or principles. In this aspect it has relevance to the above discussed issue.

Let us very briefly reiterate what was revealed in Swedenborg's ***Apocalypse Revealed*** in this respect. As you know, I was sending messages to the seven churches. In the present conceptualization of the meaning of the words 'seven churches,' they denote the summary of all teachings, doctrines and dogmas, adopted by various individuals, groups, societies, churches and to what extent they have been influencing or applied in their personal and individualized lives. Before going into our very brief reiteration, a note of warning is in order: The names of the cities in those two chapters in no way have any relevance to the actual physical cities spread throughout your planet. Please, whatever was said by Swedenborg, or whatever is being said right now about them, does not have anything to do with those physical entities. For that reason, in no

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

way should you be preoccupied with their physical designation. They have none whatsoever.

The church of Ephesus means all those who are primarily preoccupied with the truth of their doctrine or with the truth of their understanding of all spiritual ideas and concepts, but who neglect or disregard goods of life. In other words, these are those who know and accept the spiritual truths but who fail to apply that knowledge into the deeds of their life.

The church of Smyrna means all those who are in goods as far as their life is concerned but who are in falsities as far as their understanding of the reality of the true spirituality is concerned, or, to use Swedenborg's words, those who are in falsities as far as their doctrine is concerned. In other words, these are those people who consider only what is good but who neglect or disregard what is true. This is something which can be considered as love without wisdom or good without truth.

The church of Pergamos denotes all those who reduce the meaning of life to only that which is good, and reject the fact that the proper knowledge, understanding and acceptance of truth has any redeeming quality or meaning at all, and therefore, truth has very little role to play in one's life. In other words, these people think that it doesn't really matter what kind of spiritual ideas, concepts or doctrines you are identified with. If you are a good person, or if your life is rooted in good and love, it is sufficient for leading a proper spiritual life. In this respect, such love lacks any wisdom.

The church of Thyatira describes those individuals who are in faith from positive works (charity) as well as those who are in faith but without any positive works (charity). These are people who function from the position of faith, believing that either faith alone has any meaning, or faith combined with positive works is the most significant ingredient of the proper spiritual life. In this particular case, you have here two extremes in conceptualization of the content of the true spiritual life. One extreme claims that only faith has any meaning at all, while everything else is superfluous; while the other extreme correctly assumes that faith needs to be combined with positive works in order to have any true spiritual meaning.

The church of Sardis denotes all those individuals who are in dead worship, the worship that doesn't contain anything, either of faith or of positive works or of both. These individuals are preoccupied only with ritualistic, dogmatic and procedural aspects of worshiping God but who have no inclination or desire to know the truth and to apply it in their

everyday life by means of performing positive works or deeds. In this sense, such individuals are spiritually dead.

The church of Philadelphia describes those individuals who know the truth and its source and who are both in truth and its good and in good and its truth. In other words, these individuals recognize that all truth and its good and all good and its truth stem from Me — The Lord Jesus Christ, and the meaning of life is not only in knowing and understanding the truth but in being good from that truth and to ascribe it to the right source — Me.

And finally, the church of Laodicea denotes all those individuals who alternately believe that everything stems from themselves alone without any regard for My Word or Me as the source of everything true and good; or, from time to time, they believe that everything regarding the spiritual issues should be derived from My Word. By doing that, by vacillating between one extreme or the other, they put themselves into the condition of profanation of everything which is truly holy, proper and right. Also, these individuals, at one time or another, believe that they don't need Me or anything related to My Word, for leading a proper spiritual life but that they themselves, by their own merit, can do so. At some other times however, they do accept the fact that only from Me, by Me, through Me, with Me and of Me, such a proper spiritual life can be led. From the example of these individuals you can see how the profanation of everything holy, proper and correct can occur. One day, they deny Me and My Word, and the next day they acknowledge Me and My Word.

So, these are some very brief reiterations about the meaning of those two chapters in the Apocalypse as described by Swedenborg. How does all this apply to your current situation and to you as being My true representative? First of all, you need to understand the entire structure of the mentioned two chapters (Chapter Two and Chapter Three of the Apocalypse). If you look at them carefully, you will notice that four levels in their content exist. The first level relates to the description of Me and of My Future New Nature. As you noticed, during My addressing each church or what it spiritually represents, I spoke from an entirely different aspect of My Nature. The reason for this need relates to the spiritual position that each respective church, and the degree of its spiritual falsifications, distortions or, in some cases, spiritual appropriateness, was at that time. That position and its situation and condition required an approach from a different aspect of My Nature in order to bring to everyone's attention what kind of spiritual aspects are being violated or acknowledged, respectively, by each church.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

The second level deals with the description of the true spiritual state of each respective church. To what extent is their conceptualization, understanding and application of the true spiritual factors of life in agreement or congruent with the true spiritual reality of such life? Is their spirituality really what it is supposed to be? What are the factors of deviation, falsification, disregard and distortions in their accepted doctrines and dogmas? Which aspects of their spirituality are in such a state and therefore, need immediate amendments, corrections or replacement?

The third level shows the way or gives proper steps or procedures for amendment, correction or replacement, or getting rid, whenever needed, of their current inappropriate conceptualization, understanding and application of all spiritual principles and from what position and how this can be done.

And the fourth level describes all consequences, results and outcomes of their life practices based on their conceptualization, understanding and application of all spiritual ideas adopted by their teachings, doctrines and dogmas. In other words, they were made fully responsible and accountable for everything that they promulgated in them and the way they led their life. Do you see, Peter, how everything in this portion of our Dialog has a direct relevance to that which we were talking about in its first portion, as well as in the previous Dialog (118)?

Peter: Yes, I see it clearly. It makes perfect sense to me. If someone is in distortions, falsifications, misinterpretations and misrepresentations of any spiritual ideas coming from You, such an individual would be described by the state and condition of one of the above seven churches. In that case, everything described in the four levels of those two chapters would have full applicability to any one of us who would be in a similar position — be it a positive or a negative one.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Exactly, Peter. That we are dealing here with pure spiritual issues is denoted by the word ‘angel.’ Notice, please, My messages were sent to the angel of each church and not directly to the churches themselves. The word ‘angel,’ in this particular connotation, signifies the conglomeration of spiritual ideas, concepts and principles and the mode of their application in the lives of those who accept and follow them in the manner reflected in their everyday life. Because of this connotation, the message goes out to those responsible for producing, generating, interpreting and enforcing all such ideas, concepts and principles. How do all these things relate to My true representatives on planet Zero in general and to what is contained in My New Revelation, as

well as to My New Absolute Nature in particular? Because My representatives, who are either overtly or covertly connected to My New Revelation, the way they comprehend, apprehend, accept, internalize and practice its principles in their everyday life; the way their attitude, behavior, deeds, actions and productions are manifested; as well as the way they understand, accept and see My New Absolute Nature, determines their current spiritual position and standing. Therefore, anything implied in any of those seven possibilities, as represented by the churches in question, fully applies to your spiritual life as well.

Your duty, responsibility and accountability in this respect is to carefully examine and search out your particular attitude toward Me, My New Revelation and to everything related to the spiritual issues. Take, for example, someone who was initially an immensely eager follower of My New Revelation and who loved deeply everything related to it (Ephesus). Yet, as time went by, and nothing of too great a significance was happening to you or around you, and every day hassles and problems of survival on planet Zero were taking its toll on you, your first love of and infatuation with My New Revelation was gradually fading away. At one point in time, you lost your intense interest in anything related to Me and My New Revelation and your connection to it became a matter of your lips only, without any deeper feelings for anything related to it. The message to you in this respect is, should you find yourself in this category, to repent or amend your ways and to recall and return to your first works or to your first loving and eager following and practicing of everything related to Me and to My New Revelation.

Or take, for example, the situation in which you find yourself being thrown out of your home by your spouse or boy/girlfriend, or from your job, or from your community standing, from your church or from any other similar important factors of your life on planet Zero because of your belonging to Me and My New Revelation (Smyrna). The danger of this situation would be in your tendency to hide your affiliation with Me and My New Revelation in order to avoid anything of this nature happening to you. Or you would tend to go along with what your spouse, friend or whoever/whatever demanded from you, compromising your spiritual integrity, and by that factor, effectively destroying your relationship with Me and My New Revelation, fallaciously thinking that, if you keep all things related to Me and My New Revelation secretly within yourself, and at the same time, compromising with their demands, then your spiritual integrity is intact and your relationship with Me and My New Revelation is fully preserved and proper. How could you think anything of this nature if your relationships with the external factors of your life become more important than your relationship with Me and My New

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Revelation? Or take, for example, the possible tendencies of some of you to consider any other ideas, concepts and teachings besides and in addition to My New Revelation, as something which is also either coming from Me or its practices could serve for enhancing and enriching your spiritual life rooted in My New Revelation and in My New Nature (Pergamos and Thyatira). In other words, you would mix their ideas, concepts, products or whatever they have with everything contained in My New Revelation and My New Nature. This would result in total pollution, poison, corruption and contamination of everything contained in My New Revelation, making it void and an empty shell used to contain the distortions and falsities of those other ones.

Or take, for example, the possibility that could exist in some of you to consider My New Revelation as a dogmatic, ritualistic means to perform certain external motions without any true spiritual inner factors on which the entirety of My positive state stands and functions and on which My New Revelation is built. If this were the case with any one of you, and if you would consider it to be dogmatic and externalized, and if you would accept it as such, you would become spiritually dead (Sardis). This is a warning to never consider anything in My New Revelation dogmatic, catholic, protestant or anything else prevalent in your external manifestation amongst all your religious and pseudo-spiritual trends. Or take, for example, those of you who would have a tendency to believe that they were able, by their own merit, by and from themselves, without My involvement or without My New Revelation, to arrive at the point of acceptance of My New Revelation (Laodicea). By taking such an attitude, you would become spiritually blind and naked. Again, this is a warning to never fall into this kind of trap. Of course, you do have amongst you those who, from the bottom of their heart, from the love of good and truth, and their spiritual marriage, fully accept, for the sake of principles themselves, without any ulterior reasons, My New Nature and everything contained in all three sources of My New Revelation and put it into your practice and into all aspects of your life (Philadelphia). So, in essence, we can say, with the text of the mentioned two chapters, 'He/she who has an ear, let him/her hear what I say to you all' (I paraphrased it!). And this is all that we needed to talk about this issue, or anything else, today. Have a nice day with our Rosemarie who is visiting you in Santa Barbara.

Peter: Thank You very, very much for this revelation.

One Hundred and Twentieth Dialog

October 27, 1999

Peter: This morning I became curious about whether You would like to continue in discussing some other issues related to the content of Chapters Two and Three of the Apocalypse. I am especially interested in the seven aspects of Your Nature from which You were addressing each particular church. Is there anything in them, besides and in addition to what was revealed about them by Swedenborg, which applies to the contemporary or current situation existing in all the worlds of the entire being and existence, pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, planet Zero as well as to us, Your representatives? Also, how do those aspects related to Your Present Absolute New Nature which, at the time of sending out those messages, had not been in place, yet? For the sake of all readers of these Dialogs, let me briefly summarize them: First, You who hold the seven stars in Your right hand, who walk in the midst of the seven golden lampstands. Second, You who are the First and the Last and who were dead, and came to life. Third, You who have the sharp two-edged sword. Fourth, You who are the Son of God, who have eyes like a flame of fire, and Your feet like fine brass. Fifth, You who have seven Spirits of God and the seven stars. Sixth, You who are holy, who are true and who have the key of David, You who open and no one shuts, and shut and no one opens. And seven, You who are Amen, the Faithful and True Witness, the beginning of the creation of God. So, here we have it all. Would You like to comment on these issues this morning?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, I would. However, bear in mind, that only some limited explanation can be offered to you at this time. Some aspects of the meaning and significance of the quoted texts would be either incomprehensible to the human portion of your mind or they would be premature to reveal. So, let us concentrate on those that can be understood and apprehended and which have some relevance to the contemporary or current situation in which all of you find yourselves on planet Zero and elsewhere.

As you know, any time we are talking about some aspects of My former or current Absolute Nature, we are facing insurmountable difficulties in finding the most appropriate words in your human language for expressing their true content and meaning. How could some external human relative words express or convey something that is of the Absolute Nature, Meaning and Content? So, anything that we would say in this respect, would be only a remote approximation of the true nature

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

and reality of those aspects. Therefore, during this discourse, bear these factors constantly in your mind. Otherwise you could end up identifying yourself with something that is only an approximation of the true reality and not the true reality itself in its essence and substance.

Having said this, let us take these aspects one by one. As you know from the first chapter of the Apocalypse, the mystery of the seven stars in My right hand, and the seven golden lampstands related to the churches in question. Thus, the seven stars were the angels of the seven churches, and the seven lampstands were seven churches. Of course, this explanation is from one position of spiritual correspondences to another position of spiritual correspondences without giving any insight into what, in actuality and factuality, My holding the seven stars in My right hand and My walking in the midst of the seven golden lampstands, as well as seven stars and seven lampstands themselves, really mean and signify.

The seven stars in the current connotation of their meaning signify all spiritual ideas, concepts, thoughts, feelings, notions, principles, precepts and everything related to them in their full and exhaustive totality and the manner that they are applied in the entirety of My Creation and in all aspects of its being and existence as well as in the entirety of the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, on planet Zero and the Zone of Displacement in general. That I am holding them in My right hand denotes that I know in an Absolute sense, by the power of My Absolute Omnipotence, Omnipresence and All-knowing (My right hand), all and anything which is being promulgated and propagated everywhere and everywhen in this respect. The seven golden lampstands in this connotation signify all those individuals everywhere and everywhen who are the promulgators, propagators and practitioners of such spiritual ideas, concepts, notions, principles, etc., at any levels of their good and truth or their evils and falsities but whom I, regardless of their spiritual standing, love and care for (the word 'golden' corresponds to the goodness of My Heart and to the love of My Wisdom). That I walk in the middle of the seven golden lampstands signifies that they all, no matter where and when, no matter how positive and good or bad and evil they are; no matter how true or false their concepts, ideas, notions, etc., and their lifestyles are, they live, function and are able to be in their own situation, position and lives as well as in their own identities only by the factor of My continuous presence with them and within them. My walking in the midst of them generates all life energies, stemming directly from Me, by which they function, live and are alive in their own eyes.

From the position of this all-knowing and omnipresence of Mine, I continuously provide all kinds of opportunities for creative, productive and constructive progression of all positive, proper and good ideas, concepts, notions and lifestyles, as well as for repentance, amendment and recession from any bad, negative, evil and inappropriate ones which endanger the spiritual lives of their holders, promulgators, propagators and practitioners. As you noticed from the text of those two chapters in the Apocalypse, whenever I find something inappropriate, false, distorted, evil or even deadly in anyone's spiritual ideas and practices, I always bring these facts to their attention and tell them that unless they repent, I will dispense with all of them. The dispensation factor is never applied before many opportunities are provided for anyone to repent and to amend their ways. And what does repentance consist of? It consists of, among other things, recognizing and accepting, from the bottom of one's heart, the fact that one lives in, promulgates, propagates and practices falsities and evils and, at the very same time, expressing a desire to permanently get rid of them, replacing them with only that which comes directly from Me or, in connotation of the contemporary or current situation, which comes from My New Nature by the means of My New Revelation. As you remember, nowadays, only by the means of My New Revelation and by the means of acceptance of My New Nature, can anyone be brought out of his/her evils and falsities and be placed into the positive state.

As far as how this situation applies to My Absolute New Nature, all these factors, related to My holding the seven stars in My right hand and walking in the midst of the seven golden lampstands, indicate that only from the position of My New Nature, can any such offers of repentance and amendment for anyone become a true reality. Without My New Nature, no such possibility would ever exist. From the position of My Old Nature, everyone would be condemned to eternal death. The reason for this harsh and impossible outcome lies in the fact that in the condition of My Absolute Purity of the Positiveness, without any experience of the negative state and human life, I couldn't stand for a fraction of a second anything false or evil. However, in order to prevent that from ever happening, I decided to change My Nature and acquire the New One. Thus, from the position of My New Nature, I may, can and am willing to continuously provide for everyone zillions of opportunities for repentance and amendment of their negative and evil ways. And this is what this aspect of My Nature is all about as reflected in the first quoted text.

In the second aspect I am designated as the First and the Last, who was dead, and came to life. The issue here is two-fold. In the first instance, to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

be the First and the Last denotes that no one before Me and no one after Me can be and exist or ever had been or will be. Whoever and whatever is and exists, is and exists within, or, better to say, in between the First and the Last. In this sense, it is obvious that no one and nothing can, may or is able to be and to exist outside of or before or after this First and this Last — Me. This is the issue of the all-encompassing factor. In order to make it really all-encompassing, it was necessary for Me to experience something which had never been included in the experiential mode of My Old Nature — the negative state and its human life. And here comes the second instance. For someone who is Absolutely Purely Positive without any containment of anything negative within His/Her Nature, to enter the negative state and its human life means to die or to experience death. By the process of conquering all aspects of the negative state and its human life, and by removing anything negative, evil and false from the human aspects of My Nature, I became alive again, retaining all direct experiences of everything contained in the nature of the negative state and in human nature.

This particular aspect has a direct relevance to My New Nature. This is a prophetic prediction about the process of acquirement of My New Nature. Without it, I could have never come down to the level of the relative sentient entities or become the true and the only (symbolically speaking, the First and the Last) Savior of all from the negative state and from the negative aspects of human nature. If it were never ever to happen, no one could endure to eternity to carry the awful and unbearable burden of the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state and its human life. Because I foresaw that without this factor the negative state and its human life could not be transformed, saved or eliminated, and that its continuous presence would not only complicate the lives of everyone also in the positive state but, under those kinds of adverse conditions, would make it impossible to continue in such a life, or any life at all, I volunteered to become dead so that I could become alive again and thus, by My own experience, could offer everyone who is dead to become alive likewise. Do you see why it was so crucial and important to acquire My New Nature? As you see from this fact, it was a matter of life and death of everyone everywhere and everywhen.

In your present condition, if any one of you still holds to anything which was described in My messages to the seven churches as negative, evil, false or distorted, as recorded in the first and second chapters of the Apocalypse, by that factor you are spiritually dead. Or, if you are combining anything of My New Revelation with anything that is not of its ideas and content, in that case you are terminally ill and you are in

the process of spiritually dying. To do that or to be that way means to try something impossible — to be outside, or before or after the First and the Last. Any attempt of doing so, will make you spiritually dead. But because I also died, and in the process conquered death itself, and thus, became alive forever, I paved the way for you to be cured from your terminal illness or to come to the true life if you are already spiritually dead.

In this particular sense, to be the First and the Last also signifies to be the only one who is the First and the Last to be alive and to be living in an absolute sense. Anyone relative can thus, be alive and living only by My being absolutely alive and living forever. No other ways are possible or feasible. In your condition, as My true representatives on planet Zero, you are to reflect this important spiritual factor by promulgating its meaning and content in your own lives and the way you relate to Me and to all others everywhere and everywhen.

The third aspect deals with My having the sharp two-edged sword. What does it spiritually mean to have such a sword? It directly relates to that aspect of My New Nature which has an absolute ability to discover, uncover, delineate, separate and remove anything false, evil, negative and adverse from anything good, positive, true and appropriate, no matter how much or to what extent anything of the negative state is disguised, hidden, secretive and appears to be good, proper, correct and right; and no matter how much it is doing anything of this putrid nature under My Name. But it also means the absolute protection and insulation of everyone on all sides from being hurt, harmed, injured, destroyed or eternally condemned. Because the sharp two-edged sword denotes the Absolute, Pure and Uncontaminated Truth which successfully combats all evils and falsities, it also signifies that special power in My New Nature which has the absolute ability to eliminate the negative state for good and forever and to save everyone in its clutches, no matter what they did or how they were; thus, bringing them all back to the positive state. It is this portion of My New Nature which brings to everyone's attention the true nature of the positive state as well as the true nature of the negative state and establishes the proper condition for everyone in the negative state and its human life to repent and to amend their ways by showing them the true reality of My Absolute Truth from My Absolute Good or My Absolute Wisdom from My Absolute Love, and, at the same time, illustrating to them the difference between the positive state and the negative state, respectively. This ability makes it possible for everyone to make appropriate choices based on this crucial knowledge of differences, and not blindly.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

In your particular position, as My true representatives, you are being put into a position of the extension of this sharp two-edged sword of Mine, so that you are enabled to sharply distinguish and recognize the truths from falsities and distortions, goods from evils, and positives from negatives and to overcome and to get rid of any possible remnants of anything of the negative and evil nature in your own life; and, under their influence, all your inappropriate conceptualizations of My New Nature, My New Revelation, My positive state and the way you live and practice everything contained in My New Revelation. By this ability of yours, you will be able to establish for everyone else an example and a foundation on which they will be able, eventually, when the time is right, to do it likewise.

The fourth aspect deals with that aspect of My Future New Nature which describes Me as the Son of God, who has eyes like a flame of fire and whose feet are like fine brass. The reason we are saying 'future,' is because at that point in time, before the completion of acquiring My New Nature, I was in the position of being the only Son of God. The process of unification with My Essence and Substance — the Father, from the position of My Human Nature, would not be completed for a long time to come (in your planetary human time conceptualization). Here I was functioning from the position of that portion of My Nature which related to its acquired human aspects. Because by the process of their divinization they became free from any contaminants of the negative aspects of human nature, they were enabled to be called here the Son of God. The Son brings back everything He has to His Father and gives it to Him. The Father takes it and incorporates not only what was brought to Him by His Son but takes His Son into His bosom and becomes one with Him. In doing that, the Father relinquishes His Father's identity and the Son relinquishes His Son's identity. In that merger they become Someone else — My True Absolute New Nature.

Now, in that New Nature My eyes become like a flame of fire and My feet like fine brass. To have eyes like a flame of fire, in this connotation, signifies to look at everyone and everything with the most intense and pure unconditional love, the flame of which burns eternally and inextinguishably and can never cease to radiate its heat of life to the entirety of My Creation and the pseudo-creation. To have feet like fine brass, in the present connotation of its meaning, signifies My ability, engrained in My New Nature, to come down to the level of anyone in the negative state and in human life and to be with them, walk amongst them and to associate with them without any danger to them or to My New Nature. This new ability of Mine, represented here by My feet being

like fine brass, is essential if I am to liberate and to save everyone from the negative state and from the negative aspects of human life. A foundation is being built here for the accomplishment of this most desirable goal.

In your particular case, as My true representatives on planet Zero, you are to learn to have similar eyes — like a flame of fire, so that you are enabled to look at everyone only and only from the position of My Absolute Unconditional Love and its Absolute Wisdom and relate to everyone only and only from that position, without avoiding anyone, judging anyone or condemning anyone, but instead, walking with My feet which are like fine brass, coming down to their level of understanding, illustrating and demonstrating to them the true life of the positive state so that they are enabled to discern, to learn and to recognize the difference between what is of purely positive nature and what is of purely their negative nature and to make an appropriate choice in this important matter.

The fifth aspect deals with My Nature which contains the seven Spirits of God and the seven stars. The Seven Spirits of God, in the connotation of the presently discussed topic, denote that portion of My New Nature which was previously designated as non-nameable, non-approachable and totally and completely incomprehensible by any relative mind. You can consider It as the very Absolute Core of My Absolute Essence and Absolute Substance from which springs forth special types of energies giving rise to the entirety of My Creation and for establishment of all forms of life. This is the aspect of My New Nature which fills out everyone and everything, which knows in the minutest possible details absolutely everything that is going on in everyone and everything at each time of their continuous and unceasing functions and manifestations. It is ever-present everywhere from the highest Heavens to the lowest Hells, filling out all corners and all hiding places so that no one and nothing is ever out of its sight and perception. There is no place in the entirety of My Creation or in the pseudo-creation where anyone or anything could hide from or be outside of Its awareness and active perception. And the seven stars in this connotation denote My Absolute Knowledge of any and all types of ideas, concepts, notions, thoughts, feelings, wills, actions, behaviors, attitudes, relationships, establishments and of everything else that anyone in the positive state or in the negative state or in human life has.

This aspect of My Nature is very crucial and essential to have, in order to be able to render a just, objective and fair judgment about anyone in this

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

respect. Only from having the absolute knowledge about anyone and anything and about their state of mind and what they profess, adhere to and practice, or with what they identify themselves, could such a just judgment be rendered. Again, this aspect of My Nature has a direct relevance to My New Nature because only from the position of that Nature could any such experiential knowledge of everyone and everything be acquired and eternally contained in Me. This is the reason why only by having this New Absolute Nature, can I render the objective and just Last Judgment upon this cycle of time/state/condition. No other Nature could do it because it would lack the experiential knowledge of all aspects of the nature of the negative state and human nature.

In your particular position, as My true representatives, you are to emphasize these facts about My New Nature so that humans would have the proper perception of Who I am and how I function in relationship to them, knowing in all details everything about them, including their most secret and most private thoughts, feelings, desires, wishes, wants and everything else they have or hide.

The sixth aspect deals with My Nature which is designated here as Holy, as I Who am true and who has the key of David, I Who opens and no one shuts, and shuts and no one opens. This aspect of My New Nature, in the connotation of the discussed topic, confirms the fact that, although I have fully and completely experienced all aspects of the negative state and of the human nature, and as a result of that came in contact with all their numerous evils, falsities, distortions, putridity and abominations, nothing of that nature contaminated, polluted, corrupted or poisoned any aspects of My Nature. Because I am the only one who remains in this uncontaminated, untouched and uncorrupted condition, I am the only one Who is absolutely Holy. The state of holiness is determined by the factor of to what extent anyone is contaminated by, given in, corrupted by or absorbed within himself/herself and subsequently internalized anything contained in the nature of the negative state and in the negative aspects of the human nature. Because I am the only one Who was able to successfully avoid such a dire possibility, I am the only one who is Absolutely Holy. In this sense, what the meaning of this claim denotes, is that anyone else, in and by himself/herself, cannot be holy, but they can be so by, through, with, from and of Me. The way to become this holy way is by shunning all evils and falsities and by refusing to identify yourself with anything coming from the negative state and the negative aspects of the human nature and to admit My Personal Absolute Holiness into your relative condition.

However, there is another aspect to the concept of Holiness as related to Me. It is the very center, the most essential and substantial nucleus of My Absolute Core which is something that no words, ideas, images, thoughts, feelings, intuition or anything else can express or discern or understand or comprehend or apprehend Its true Nature or what It is all about. Therefore, it would be impossible to say more about It.

The key of David, which I have, signifies, in the connotation of our present topic, the source of the Absolute Spiritual Truth. 'David' corresponds to the spiritual truth. To have his key means to have the only means for opening all infinite mysteries and secrets, contained in the spiritual truth. Because they are infinite, stemming from the fact that I am the only Absolute Truth, only I can and may open them or keep them closed or, in other words, only I can and may properly interpret them and explain them to anyone interested in them and who is approaching them with positive and good intent and with the right motivation in order to know the truth for the sake of practicing all its aspects in his/her life and for the sake of principles themselves. No relative being can do so on his/her own without Me.

In your position as My true representatives on planet Zero, I have been sharing with you My key of David by revealing to you, by the means of My New Revelation in all its three sources, My Spiritual Truth and many of its mysteries and secrets which were safe, proper and timely for you to know. In this respect, the few of you who have My New Revelation or My key, are privileged as no one else on planet Zero. Therefore, you are to carry this knowledge within you and with you in all modesty, humbleness and humility, as very sacred and unusual and put it in the center of your life and living, by practicing it; and you are to share that knowledge amongst yourselves and with everyone who shows a desire to have it for the sake of the above mentioned principles and only for their sake and for no other reasons.

And finally, the seventh aspect designates Me as the Amen, the Faithful and true Witness, the Beginning of the creation of God. 'The Amen,' in connotation of our discussed topic, signifies the ultimate confirmation that **I AM WHO I AM** and there is none besides Me at the same level or in the same Absolute State, Process and Condition. It also denotes that whatever I say is absolutely so, and there are no 'buts,' 'ifs,' 'shoulds,' 'woulds' or 'maybes.' Because of that, from the position of absolute knowledge of Who I Am and who everyone is, I am the only Faithful and True Witness to anyone or anything in being and existence and in pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. Only I am able to testify about

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

anyone's true intentions, motivations and what they contain within themselves. And because I am the Faithful and True Witness, I could never misrepresent anyone in their true nature or about the way they are. Again, this factor of My Nature is a very important one because it makes it possible for everyone to receive their personal just and objective Last Judgment. It has a direct relevance to My New Nature which is the very foundation for such a personal as well as global Last Judgment to take place.

The beginning of the creation of God denotes that aspect of My Absolute Nature which initiated from Itself the creative effort leading to the establishment of My beloved Creation. This aspect relates to My Absolute Desire to share everything that I have and that I am with everyone else. Thus, in this connotation, this Absolute Desire is the very beginning of creation because without it, I would have no need or motivation to create anything at all (which, by the way, had never entered My Absolute Mind).

In your particular case, as My true representatives, by your personal and individual lives, you are to confirm the verity of My New Revelation, becoming its 'Amen's.' Also, let your statement be 'yes' or 'no' without any other hesitant, doubting, unsure or uncertain meanings. By practicing the principles of My New Revelation in your everyday life, you will become the faithful and true witnesses to My New Nature and to everything contained in My New Revelation. This is your true role and assignment if you care to carry on with it by your own free will and choice. To conclude, I want you to know, that at the present time, this is the only possible extent to how much could be revealed about the meaning of the discussed topic. Because of that, I would recommend to finish it for today so that you may have rest. Go in peace and be of good cheer.

Peter: Thank You very much for this beautiful revelation. You see, these kinds of discussions I like the best. Nothing personal and yet, it concerns and relates to everyone.

One Hundred and Twenty First Dialog

October 29, 1999

Peter: Well, once again, a question about correspondences has come our way. Although we have discussed this issue several times before, perhaps some aspects of it could be elaborated upon some more, if You think it would be appropriate to do so. A question has come from Erin Martz. As someone who was raised in the so-called Swedenborgian church, it is not surprising that she would come up with this type of question. Her question is as follows: On planet Zero there are diffused correspondences with the positive state. Is this due to planet Zero representing, more fully now, the negative state? Are there still pure correspondences of the positive state on this planet? Are all correspondences subjective, or is there a 'set' of objects that have correspondences? Are these correspondences on planet Zero by free choice? Also, in addition to these questions, she is asking about the correspondence of the AIDS epidemic. Of course, as always, if You would first like to contribute to or elaborate upon anything this morning, I'll gladly yield to You to talk first.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for asking Me to talk first. However, today I would prefer to discuss Erin's questions first. Following that, if we still have time, I'll address some other issues.

In order to properly answer the posed questions, we need to clarify the meaning of the word 'correspondence.' Although this term was discussed previously both in these Dialogs as well as throughout all other books of My New Revelation, nevertheless, we need to reiterate it again from a somewhat different angle. As you remember, correspondences were introduced as a means for concrete depiction or representation in the external or so-called objective reality all ideas, abstract concepts, notions, images, thoughts and emotions of the sentient mind and, in an absolute sense, of My Absolute Sentient Mind. This is one function of correspondences. The other function relates to the mode of interconnectedness of all worlds and dimensions which have a different function, role, structure, position, state, etc., than any other world and/or dimension. By the means of correspondences they are able to be in touch with each other and influence each other as needed and whenever needed. And the third function of correspondences is to enable certain spiritual, mental, physical and environmental occurrences which underlie all spiritual, mental and physical laws and principles by which they harmoniously run all processes of Creation.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

In the highest sense of understanding of the term ‘correspondence,’ by their means I project and convey to the entirety of My Creation the concreteness of My States, Processes, Conditions, Relatedness and Caring. Take for example, such a concept as Absolute Love. If My Absolute Love is being constantly generated outwardly toward everyone and everything in My Creation and in pseudo-creation, then, what, in actuality and factuality, does it produce? How is it manifested in its concrete projection? As it descends from one level to another, at each level it produces something which enables the function of that level in its own unique, infinitely different and special type of nature. This ‘something,’ in its nature and manifestation, is different from the nature and manifestation of the original meaning and content of Absolute Love, but without It, not only couldn’t it be established at all but it couldn’t be conceived either. Thus, in this sense, that ‘something’ is a correspondence or it corresponds to Absolute Love in its own relative condition, process and state.

In this conceptualization of the meaning of correspondences, you can say that love in general corresponds to good because, in its essence and substance, love always produces only what is good. Further down the line, you can say that good from love produces positive works because the meaning of the word ‘good’ denotes that only that which produces something good for everyone — positive works — can be its true nature and striving. Thus, you can say that as good corresponds to love, so positive works correspond to good, and through good to love, and love corresponds through its good to positive works. In this respect, you have here a correspondence between the spiritual state of love, mental state of good and their practical outcome in the form of positive works. Their interconnectedness is such that one without the other cannot exist. This is the process of the multiversal law from within to without. Love is the state of the most within or the spirit, good is the state of the interior or soul/mentality, and positive works are the state of the externals or concreteness in a physical sense which produces tangible outcomes. Or, to say it differently, love is occurrence, good is proceeding and positive works are becoming (in the sense of to become — My works become tangible, sensible, concrete and factual reality for all and everything). By this process they correspond with and to each other.

This is one aspect of the meaning of the term ‘correspondence.’ The other, which appeared later on, was rooted in the need to express spiritual ideas in such a manner that they would also make sense to one’s external mind. Certain symbols were invented and interpreted. Based on that, certain external objects, physical bodies, their various organs and inanimate structures were built which became an embodiment of all

respective spiritual ideas. In this sense, it was the function of those external objects, physical bodies, their various organs and inanimate structures, and not their external appearances, which reflected the true spiritual reality of those ideas. Thus, it was their function and purpose for which they were built and not they themselves, apart from their function and purpose, which corresponded to the spiritual reality and its infinite varieties of ideas.

No matter which way you look at the meaning of correspondences, in their ultimate nature, they are the sole productions of the sentient mind and its ideas, and in an ultimate sense, they are sole productions of My Absolute Sentient Mind. Because of that, correspondences in themselves and by themselves are inconceivable without the being and existence of the sentient mind or My Absolute Sentient Mind, respectively. In this particular sense, all correspondences are subjective and there are no 'sets' of objects of correspondences in themselves and by themselves. Any 'sets' of objects were created and produced by the sentient mind or by My Absolute Sentient Mind, and therefore, their so-called objective manifestation, apart from and different than any sentient entity, couldn't be conceived. Simply stated, they could not become what they are. Thus, their objective existence depends absolutely on the subjective being and existence of the sentient mind or, ultimately, on My Absolute Sentient Mind.

From this factor derives the true nature of correspondences. If all of them, and what they represent and depict, depend absolutely on the being and existence of the sentient mind, in that case they would reflect, in their essence and substance, the very nature of the sentient mind. And because the very nature of the sentient mind reflects, in its relative condition, the very Nature of My Absolute Sentient Mind, it would carry within itself the same attributes, characteristics and traits as My Absolute Nature has. As you remember, one of those attributes is My Absolute Freedom and My Absolute Free Choice to produce anything that I desire or wish. This factor, of course, is reflected in the nature of any other relative sentient entity. Because this is the true setup of all and everything, in this sense, any correspondences, no matter what their nature is, because of their absolute dependence on the activities of the sentient minds, are always by free choice.

From this you can distinctly derive one of the most important spiritual-philosophical-mystical factors of life: **Whatever is and exists or pseudo-is and pseudo-exists, is and exists or pseudo-is and pseudo-exists only and only by free choice of the sentient mind. No being and existence or pseudo-being and pseudo-existence is**

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

possible or conceivable without the being and existence of the sentient mind, as the sentient mind's being and existence is impossible without My Absolute Being and Absolute Existence in the sense that Being and Existence are the Absolute Residences in Me eternally.

Because of this absolute dependency of all correspondences on the sentient mind, their nature is determined by the intentional and motivational factors of that mind. Although all initial correspondences stem from My Absolute Positiveness, as they descend into all other relative sentient entities, by their own intentional and motivational factors, any such correspondences could be turned into something that has the opposite meaning to that which was conceived in their initial source. This is the true genesis of the so-called negative correspondences. Because any type of life or pseudo-life is ruled solely by what is put into the nature of correspondences, the activation of the negative state is possible by taking the original positive ones and redefining them into their opposite meaning. This is what was called the manipulation of correspondences in order to produce the negative state. From this reality of correspondences, you can clearly see that production of negative correspondences would not be possible without the initial production of positive ones. This is the dependency factor, many-times-mentioned before, of the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of negative state on the true being and existence of the positive state. Thus, from this fact, you can clearly see that in no way could the negative state and its human life come to its adverse fruition if the positive state were not to be and not exist.

As far as planet Zero with its diffused correspondences to the positive state is concerned, its peculiar position in the totality-of-it-all, as well as its very unusual and peculiar human life, as with everything else on it, whatever correspondences it has, are skewed and distorted. Only under this type of setup could the typical human life and its unusual and peculiar nature be produced or fabricated. The skewed and distorted position doesn't allow any clear-cut, well-pointed and well-concentrated positive correspondences to appear on planet Zero and in human life in general. Otherwise, humans would not be what they are or what their typical human nature is. This positioning of human nature and human life allows the full, concrete and tangible manifestation of all aspects of the negative state on this planet. This was the very purpose for which the typical and peculiar human life was fabricated. Hence, the diffused correspondences to or with the positive state. In this sense, you can be assured that the more negative human life is becoming, the more

diffused or more skewed and distorted their correspondences to and with the positive state will be.

The reason why even in the negative state and in human life some elements of the positive correspondences are manifested, albeit wrapped in all kinds of negative ones, is, first of all, because no one can live or be alive, no matter what kind of life and living it is (pseudo-life and pseudo-living), without some presence of something positive and good; and secondly, because no one could be absolutely bad, negative and evil. Human life represents, illustrates and demonstrates this factor of relativity, transience and temporality (its being is only for the time being) of anything contained in the negative state and in all its inhabitants. Hence, the diffused correspondences with and to the positive state. This factor shows clearly that only the positive state has absolute validity and continuation because it stems directly from My Absolute Validity and eternal continuation (from eternity to eternity), whereas the negative state and its human life does not.

The forces of the negative state, although vaguely aware of the factor of their transience and temporality — they are allowed to be in their specific pseudo-life only for the time being; nevertheless, they have been putting out an all-out effort to circumvent this inevitable fate of theirs. In the process of such attempts, they have been generating all kinds of new and different ideas in their minds which would assure the indefinite continuation of their pseudo-life or their negative state. But here is a paradox: Because, by their very nature, purpose, goal, intention and motivation, they are able and willing to produce only negative and evil ideas for that purpose — otherwise they would not be evil and negative; such ideas are always destructive, bringing with them nothing else but turmoil, misery, suffering and everything else so inherent in the nature of the negative state.

As you know, any types of ideas of any sentient mind produce their results, outcomes and ultimate consequences in the form of their correspondences. If your ideas are negative, evil, bad, or whatever, they produce only negative correspondences. One of the most effectual modes of transmission of such ideas and their negative correspondences into their concrete manifestation, is by the means of sexuality. In order to continue to manifest their pseudo-life, and in order to assure that their pseudo-life is maintained indefinitely, the forces of the negative state, in the process of their intense condensation on planet Zero and human life, have been using sexual means for this purpose. They produced certain very cunning and very negative new ideas, related to this goal, and projected them, by the means of negative correspondences, into human

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

life. On planet Zero, these correspondences gave rise to new, unusual deadly viruses, retro-viruses, Ebola-viruses, HIV viruses and their various numerous mutations which are able to generate in human bodies incurable diseases, illnesses and conditions, such as, for example, AIDS and a new form of tuberculosis and of many other mysterious physical conditions. The epidemics of these conditions in human life are the very correspondences of the factor of the extreme condensation and pseudo-winning of the negative state on planet Zero and in human life. But this is the very paradox of this situation: The more successful the forces of the negative state are in this very negative and evil endeavor of theirs, the more self-destructive they are becoming. As they continue in this effort, at one point in time, they will inevitably self-destruct completely, without any trace of their pseudo-being and pseudo-existence.

So, as you see from this outcome, it is not as if I or anyone in the positive state will eliminate the negative state for good and forever, but the very glitch in the nature of the negative state itself is such that it will accomplish this goal of its eternal self-elimination and self-destruction. Our presence in the midst of the negative state only serves as a catalyst for this process of self-destruction and self-elimination to take place. The way you have to understand this statement is in the fact that the presence of the positive state in the midst of the negative state causes its forces/renegades to come up with more and more, and newer and newer cunning and effective negative and evil ideas in order to protect themselves from the presence and influence of the positive state. By the factor of such new productions, more destructive negative and evil ideas and their correspondences are appearing which will lead nowhere else but to the ultimate and eternal self-destruction and self-elimination of the negative state and the negative aspects of its human life.

As you see from this elaboration, all forms of incurable as well as curable conditions in human life, are the results of the above described process. To repeat again, the AIDS epidemic, and any other epidemics, as well as any other various and numerous destructive events on your planet, are the results and consequences of the factor of condensation and pseudo-winning of the negative state in human life and elsewhere in the Zone of Displacement. In this respect, you can also say that the purpose of the negative state is to eliminate any traces of any positive correspondences. As long as you have some presence of positive correspondences, albeit even in a diffused and poorly defined condition, the negative state is incapable of winning. Therefore, it desperately needs to replace all such positive correspondences with purely negative ones. For that reason, its forces produce all kinds of evil, bad and negative ideas, projected by the

means of correspondences into human life which, in turn, produce all kinds of adverse conditions on your planet.

But here is the catch: In the moment all such positive correspondences are eliminated from their pseudo-lives, nothing will remain in them which could sustain their continuation. As you remember, only by such presence can they continue in their unproductive, negative and evil efforts. The reason for this indisputable condition lies in the fact that I, as the Absolute Life, am present in all such positive correspondences because, after all, in an ultimate sense, I am their Producer and Emanator. Therefore, without Me, or My presence in such correspondences, and thus, without their presence, no matter in what condition, no one could survive for a fraction of a second. For that reason, you can clearly see that in the moment the forces/renegeades of the negative state succeed in elimination of any positive correspondences from their domain and sphere of influence, they'll self-destruct and self-eliminate; or, to be more precise, they'll destroy and eternally eliminate their own negative state. At that point they will wake up from their deadly sleep and find themselves naked and without any source or possibility to continue in their former pseudo-lifestyle. It is at this point that their memories will be opened and all these facts will come to their full conscious awareness by the means of My New Revelation. Having available full access to their own memories and to My New Revelation, by its means, they will be able to petition My New Absolute Nature, requesting from Me clothing for their nakedness and a new source of life which will have only a purely positive connotation.

The presence of the positive correspondences on planet Zero, even though in a diffused, skewed and distorted condition, at the present time is contingent on the presence of My true representatives. Because, as far as their spirit is concerned, they are positioned in the midst of the positive state, and by that factor, they are able to generate and maintain a positive notion of such correspondences by the means of their positive thoughts, ideas, concepts, notions, emotions, will, behaviors, relationships and practices of the principles of My New Revelation. This factor continues to be a deterrent for the complete pseudo-winning of the negative state on planet Zero. To a certain degree, the renegeades are aware of this factor. Therefore, by all available means, they are trying to seek out My representatives and, knowing that they would be totally and completely unable to destroy them, they are trying to impede their influence and make it impossible for them to execute their assignment and role in this respect.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

So, if My representatives, by the means of producing only positive ideas, concepts, notions, thoughts, emotions, behaviors, attitudes, relationships and everything else of the positive nature, make it possible for positive correspondences to be present on planet Zero, then, in order to disrupt them in production and conveyance of these positive attributes, the forces of the negative state/renegades will try to induce into My representatives, as much as possible, the opposites of these attributes. The most sensitive portion in this respect will be their physical bodies and their life-force energies.

Recently, you yourself, Peter, have been experiencing these mysterious physical problems. Even as you are recording this Dialog, there is a continuous interference with this process by the means of your physical symptoms which require your constant attention, interrupting this process and interfering with the stream of thoughts necessary for the proper recording of our dialoging. Your condition is an illustration and demonstration that the shift in the tactics and methods of the renegades has occurred and that their target is and will be your physical bodies and, if possible, your mental conditions. By making your physical bodies sick, even if such conditions will not be terminal, nevertheless, the renegades hope that they will be able to disrupt your abilities to produce anything positive and good in order to maintain the influence of the positive state on this planet. After all, if you don't feel well physically or mentally, if you cough constantly, or have a high fever, or a headache or any other types of aches, or if you are depressed, miserable and constantly tired, under those and similar conditions, how could you produce anything positive and good? This is what the renegades are after, among many other things. They hope that by the means of such symptoms, they will be able to deter you from your role and mission in this respect. And yet, as you see from your own situation, Peter, despite the fact that you have been physically ill for some time now, nevertheless, during that time, you were able to produce three more Dialogs of the most significant content, thus, making void any attempts of the renegades to influence you or your work in this respect.

Peter: Well, how 'nice' of them to do that to me and to Your other representatives. I'll forgive them fully and unconditionally, no matter how much damage they have caused to my throat or, perhaps, even to my lungs because they know not what they are doing and they know not that by doing that they are accelerating not ours but their own demise.

The Lord Jesus Christ: And it is good to have such an attitude, Peter, because it reinforces the presence of the positive state in the midst of the negative state even more. However, there is another way of undermining

the role and position of My representatives. Besides what was said above, there is another potent tool in this respect available to the renegades. We can call this tool an ideological weapon. It entails the infusion of doubts, uncertainties and hesitations about the verity of the ideas and concepts of My New Revelation, about My New Nature and who I really am on one side, and infusion of wrong, false and inappropriate ideas, thoughts, notions, concepts, behaviors and attitudes on the other side. Let me tell you something, Peter, and to all who read these words: It is not by coincidence that in the last two Dialogs (119, 120) we were talking about some aspects of the content of Chapters Two and Three of the Apocalypse. At this time, your attention is being brought particularly to those aspects of the two chapters which specifically deal with the ideological-spiritual problems of the respective churches. Let Me reiterate some of them so that you have a clear idea how the renegades will try to sway you from the proper understanding and application of anything contained in My New Revelation in order to keep you away from maintaining positive correspondences on planet Zero so that they could establish their full and indisputable control over it. In the first case, as you are waiting and waiting for the negative state to end, or as you are waiting and waiting for something positively significant and unusual to happen in your own personal lives and as nothing of that nature is taking place, your intense involvement with My New Revelation, or, to use biblical terms, your first love toward it, left you or you left your first love toward it and instead, you gave preference to something else. If you were to do that, you would effectively relinquish your role as My representatives and you would stop being a conductor of positive correspondences on planet Zero.

In the second case, many obstacles, traps, temptations and shortcomings in all aspects of your life could be put in your way. Being constantly under the pressure of your human life, having barely enough material resources to be able to make ends meet on an everyday basis, spending most of your time coping with everyday hassles and typical human problems, as well as dealing with typical humans (what an awful thing to do!), you would feel depleted of all your life force energies needed for your spiritual work, development and progression. At such times, the renegades would be most insistent on tempting you to give up and to listen to their ideological propaganda about the virtues of life in the negative state and human life. It is at such points that they would send all kinds of their own representatives your way who would come to you under the disguise of being My representatives, who seemingly accepted My New Revelation, but whose purpose would be to pollute, contaminate, corrupt and poison all its proper ideas, concepts, notions and principles and kill in you any correct notion of its content and its truths. In biblical

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

terms these kinds of people are called a synagogue of Satan (concentrated state of falsities and distortions). Also, in biblical terms they call themselves Jews (in our conceptualization they call themselves My true representatives) but they are not.

In the third case, it is very clear that you, who are My true representatives, dwell, to use biblical terms, where Satan's throne is. In our terms you physically dwell where the negative state has its domain. Being that you are surrounded by all kinds of falsities and distortions (Satan), and being that you are constantly bombarded by them on a 24-hour basis, you may, if you are not careful enough, admit into your life some of their ideas and concepts and combine them with the ideas of My New Revelation. This is a proverbial stumbling block in your spiritual path. When you are hearing so much about so many various new age concepts, various eastern and western pseudo-spiritual movements (Buddhism, Hinduism, Islam, Taoism, Christianity and all others), and when you observe some 'positive' outcomes in their practices, it is not easy not to succumb to their charms and to not try to mix them up with what you know about and have from My New Revelation. To do that means in biblical terms, to commit sexual immorality and to eat things sacrificed to idols. To commit sexual immorality signifies to adulterate and pervert the truth of My New Revelation by admitting into it distortions and falsities of the negative state, and by that fact, establish a perverted worship of My New Nature.

The other side of the coin in this respect is in approaching My New Revelation for the wrong reasons and with inappropriate, or even an evil intent and motivation, for one's own sake, for merit-seeking, for having a special place in Heaven, or even during your life on planet Zero. In this respect the renegades will try to infuse an idea into your mind, telling you how virtuous you are, how special you are, and how much you deserve to be in the highest possible position in the Heavens and on planet Zero for being such a loyal and faithful servant of The Lord Jesus Christ. In other words, by accepting such an idea, you will be utilizing My New Revelation for merit-seeking purposes. In biblical terms, such people are called 'those who hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitans.' It is also said there that I hate this doctrine. The reason I use the human term of 'hate' in this respect, is because such an attitude destroys your spiritual integrity, making the negative state stronger and more efficient in its striving. Anything that does that to you, I don't want it to be a part of your life. Unless things are done for the sake of principles, without seeking any merit, from the spiritual standpoint, it has no meaning and use. In that case, you would be lost for a long time to come. My hating this doesn't mean hating in the human understanding of this term but it

means that I have no desire and wish for you to be hurt in any way and by any means because I love you unconditionally with wisdom.

In the fourth case, the renegades will try to infuse into your mind a dangerous idea that knowledge and understanding of My New Revelation, in itself and by itself, is enough for you to be considered My true representative and a true spiritual man/woman of God. For that reason it really doesn't matter what kind of quality your lifestyle has or how you behave, act or relate or what kinds of things you produce or what the outcome of your deeds is. As long as you know My New Revelation and are able to talk about its principles in clear and understandable terms, you are fulfilling the requirements for being My true representatives. In biblical terms this factor is described as allowing that woman, Jezebel, who calls herself a prophetess, to teach and beguile My servants (My representatives) to commit sexual immorality and to eat things sacrificed to idols. In other words, this is the issue of separation of love from wisdom, good from truth, and faith from positive works. To separate them means another form of committing sexual immorality and eating things sacrificed to idols. In our terms, to separate them means to establish the pseudo-life of the negative state. As you remember from My New Revelation, the only way to activate and establish the negative state, or that other type of life other than the life of the positive state, was by separating love from wisdom, good from truth, faith from positive works, or masculinity from femininity and femininity from masculinity. To repeat: This is what the terms 'sexual immorality' and 'to eat things sacrificed to idols' also, in their different form, really mean. If the renegades could accomplish and maintain such a separation in anyone who is My representative on planet Zero, they would effectively destroy any ability of any such representative to be in that role and thus, to maintain the positive correspondences on this planet. Therefore, you are very strongly advised to very carefully examine yourself in order to determine to what extent your theoretical acceptance of My New Revelation is reflected in your everyday behavior, attitude, relatedness, actions, deeds and productions. As long as you are putting out an all-out effort to make it so, you are in the position of being My true representatives. Being My true representatives, or being in the midst of the positive state, signifies being in spiritual marriage of theory and practice.

In the fifth case, the renegades will try to seduce you into believing that reading My New Revelation on a daily basis, as a form of ritual, without pondering, meditating, thinking and intuiting about its ideas and principles, or without any effort to understand what they are all about, or without any effort to practice them, is sufficient for being spiritually

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

alive and thus, being My true representatives. In other words, in this particular case, no attempt would be made on your part to internalize, personalize, individualize, actualize and identify yourself with anything contained in My New Revelation. In biblical terms, people like that are considered to have a name, that they are alive, but, in fact, they are dead. If you are dead, by the factor of assuming this position, you cannot very well be My true representatives and maintain any positive correspondences on this planet. This is how the renegades can accomplish their destructive work in this respect.

And finally, in the sixth case, the renegades will try to convince you that it is okay, fine and dandy to have My New Revelation in your life, but its importance is not as crucial and as significant as you think it is. There are many other things which are as important and as crucial or, in fact, much more important and much more crucial than My New Revelation or being My true representatives. Therefore, you don't need to be so zealous and so fired up about it. Let it simmer somewhere on the back burner with the faint awareness that it is there but that it is not of such an importance that you need to pay too much attention to it. In biblical terms these people are called neither hot nor cold. They are only lukewarm. Such a condition doesn't allow anything of the positive nature to be generated through people like that. By such an attitude, whoever would find himself/herself in this condition, would profane everything pertaining to My New Nature as well as to My New Revelation. In that case, such an individual would not be able to transmit any positive correspondences to planet Zero and would lose the privilege of being My true representative. And this is what the renegades and their minions are after. The reason that we are not mentioning here the seventh case is because, in this case, it relates to those of My true representatives who are fully, explicitly, implicitly, competently, lovingly and wisely fulfilling their role and mission of being My true representatives and, by that factor, are maintaining the presence of positive correspondences on planet Zero as well as everything else pertaining to the positive state. As My true representatives, you practice, live, manifest, support, exemplify and identify yourself with everything contained in My New Revelation. You can say that you, if you really are My true representatives, comprise, what is called in biblical terms, My Holy Church. And this, Peter, is what it is all about. And at this point, we have finished for today. Go in peace, Peter, and rest your ill body. Unless there are multiversal questions coming your way, Peter, take a few days break.

Peter: Thank You very much for this profound discourse.

One Hundred and Twenty Second Dialog

February 24, 2000

Peter: From the time of our very last dialoging, almost four months have elapsed. During that time many things have happened. From our typical human standpoint, most of them could be considered a terrible nightmare. On the external level very little understanding exists why things have been happening and the way they have been happening. I am not going into a detailed description of what has been happening because You know very well everything relating to this issue. Also, most of their aspects are too personal in order to make them public. Any comment on this situation or anything else that You feel is timely to talk about at this particular time after the long break in our dialoging, if at all? Moreover, as you know, our last Dialog (121), which was recorded on October 29, 1999, ended with the words of an advice to me personally to take a break for a few days. And yet, instead of a few days, almost four months went by. How could we reconcile this problem?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Before answering your questions directly, let us consider some other factors and happenings during this time. They will have a direct relevance to your questions and to the entire situation which has been occurring during these four months. In order to properly understand the issue at hand, I would like to remind you about the content of Dialog 100. Everything occurring nowadays, no matter how personal or general it is, has a direct connection with and relevance to that which was revealed in that particular Dialog. From that time on, all of you need to learn to look at all events, or on everything that is going on at each particular time, from the position and understanding of that which is contained in that Dialog. For that reason it would be a good idea to refresh your memory by rereading that Dialog.

So, in essence, we are dealing here with the issue of closure of this cycle of time/state/condition/process, instituting the transitional period and preparation for commencement of the next cycle of time/state/condition/process. Of course, we are talking here from our position of non-temporal and non-spatial state, and not from your time-space bound continuum. Nevertheless, when we project anything from our side of the fence, so-to-speak, or from our world, to your side or to your world, anything conveyed to you yields to the requirements of the laws and conditions of your pseudo-worlds. In other words, it becomes time-space bound. The reason we are mentioning this obvious fact, is in order to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

avoid your human tendency to estimate or to expect things to happen during your lifetime on planet Zero. I can assure you, most of it will not.

However, this is not the issue. This is only a reminder about not yielding to your pseudo-natural tendencies to evaluate everything from the position of your external mind and your human expectations. The important issue however, is the proper evaluation of all events of your personal lives and life, as well as pseudo-life everywhere and everywhen, in general, from our position and from the position of that which was conveyed to you in Dialog 100. So, to repeat again, whatever has been going on in your lives, and in your life, Peter, in particular, and what is going to go on from now on, has a direct relevance to everything which I revealed to you in that particular Dialog.

From the position of your external mind, as well as from the position of your typical human nature, nothing of that nature will seem to relate to anything which is contained in that Dialog. And not only that, but very often, most of your life events, from that position, will make either no sense or very little sense. The reason for this requirement is in the fact that the external mind and human nature are not equipped with anything even remotely which would make it possible to see things and events from that particular perspective. On the other hand, if they could, it would become an instant property of the renegades and their minions and they would and could interfere with this process itself, extending things and the time necessary for that process to take place, unnecessarily, for a long period of time from the position of time-space continuum and from your personal position. So, security reasons in this respect are also in place.

However, let us go back to the issue of ending this cycle of time/state/condition/process, instituting the transitional period and preparing the way for the next cycle of time/state/condition/process to commence. As you know, in your particular case, as My true representatives on planet Zero, by our mutual agreement, you were given the role of reflecting everything of this nature in the events and happenings of your personal lives. One aspect of that agreement, mentioned several times before (for example, in Update 3 in the ***Corollaries...***), was to agree to something which was not contained in the initial agreement before your incarnation on planet Zero but, instead, to take upon yourself a new or a different mission, or to add something to your original mission which would be necessary, crucial and vital to have in order to reflect the changes taking place in the fabric of Creation and pseudo-creation, or in the need to take a different direction than originally planned.

As you know, there are zillions and zillions of choices that are being made at all times by all involved in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. On the other hand, it is necessary for you to be aware of the fact that, besides the choices that are being made by all, there are also **un-choices** that are being made. In other words, the important issue is not only what is being chosen but also what is being **un-chosen**. The process of **un-choosing** something which was originally chosen, very often requires a change or modification in one's mission which was not in the original agreement. This is a necessary requirement because anything of this nature is actualized and realized or is reflected in the conditions of life of My representatives on planet Zero who agreed to this arrangement with an open mind and with their willingness to take upon themselves something which was not a part of the original agreement. After all, someone had to agree to this situation on your planet in order to make it possible for humans to be saved from their typical atrocious humanness, by reflecting in their lives everything which takes place in other dimensions where the actual process of choices and **un-choices** takes place.

As you are aware, nothing in My Creation is fixed, immobile, stagnant or regressive. In the process of spiritual progression, at each of its points or steps, the choices by all have to be made. Each such choice has relevance only to that point or to that particular step. It cannot be transferred or transposed to the next step or point within that step. However, once the choice is made about anything, it runs its course. This running is unstoppable and cannot be terminated without the sentient mind's decision to **un-choose** the original choice. This is an active process. The sentient mind has to consciously and actively, by its free will and choice, **un-choose** the original choice applicable only for that particular point or step. If it were not to do so, the original choice would constantly be in effect, impeding the possibility to progress to the next step or point to which the content of that particular previous choice does not apply.

In view of these facts, in order for the ending of this cycle of time/state/condition/process and instituting the transitional period and commencement of the next cycle of time/state/condition/process, it is very crucial, vital and necessary that all choices made by all involved, which ruled and determined the nature of the currently ongoing cycle of time/state/condition/process, are **un-chosen**, by all involved everywhere and everywhen. Otherwise, the next step in this important process could not be taken. The original choices, which made possible the activation and dominance of the negative state within this cycle of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

time/state/condition/process, would be 'naturally' influencing the next cycle, thus, making it impossible for elimination of the negative state and the negative aspects of human life and for the establishment of the fullness and completeness of the new life of the positive state.

Let Me reveal to you that the present time/state/condition/process in the lives of everyone everywhere and everywhen is fully devoted to **un-choosing** everything which made it possible for the negative state and the negative aspects of human life to be in their own pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. This process is going on right now. The nature of this process is such that it requires a lot of time (in your conceptualization of time) and effort on everyone's part to accomplish this very important and crucial goal — **un-choosing** everything pertaining to the nature of the currently ongoing cycle of time/state/condition/process. This process is the very first step in preparation for the ending of this cycle of time/state/condition/process, in instituting the transitional period and for preparing the way for opening the next cycle of time/state/condition/process. It is even more crucial, vital and important in order to make it possible for the release of something entirely different and new from the Absolute Core of My Absolute New Nature, which will determine the quality, the content and the nature of life of the new cycle of time/state/condition/process.

Now, in evaluating this situation, as applicable to that which is going on right now, or during this period of time (from October 29, 1999, until today and into the next period which could last for many years, centuries or millennia), it is necessary to remember that most, if not all, aspects of this process are taking place and will be taking place in other dimensions with a necessary impact on the Zone of Displacement, planet Zero and human life in general. However, this impact will not be immediately or obviously perceptible by your conscious minds. Most of it will be on the level of the Spiritual and unconscious Mind. This statement applies to the majority of humans. As far as you, My true representatives, are concerned, in your case, with some of you, but not with all of you, this impact and its consequences, results and outcome, will also be discernible on your conscious level, especially and particularly in the events of your everyday lives. Because any process of something which requires to **un-choose** something is not an easy one, prepare yourselves for the fact that externally and consciously it will not always be a pleasant one. As a matter of fact, most aspects of it will be unpleasant and in some instances, even very unpleasant ones. However, the majority of this unpleasantness will be experienced on your physical level and by your physical bodies which are bound by

everything chosen specifically and particularly for the current cycle of time/state/condition/process.

In the process of this necessary, vital and crucial **un-choosing**, your physical aspects, your physical bodies and the states of your external lives (your work, financial situation and similar factors) could and may be afflicted to a certain extent by that process. As a result, your mental condition could suffer likewise. So, do not be surprised if some of you will have to go through physical, mental, material and similar states of suffering, serious illnesses, serious financial and work situations and similar unpleasant factors. This all will be the reflection of the process of **un-choosing** which is taking place on all levels of the multiverse and My Creation.

And this brings us to answering your questions, Peter, and to your personal nightmare — as you perceived and defined it. Of course, being who you are and what your role and position is, it is not personal only, but it has a much broader implication which involves all dimensions of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence.

In order for the process of **un-choosing** to take place also on the level of pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, particularly in the Zone of Displacement and all its respective pseudo-dimensions, and particularly in the pseudo-domain of the renegades, it was necessary to establish a certain condition in them first. This condition would allow building of a foundation on which the process of **un-choosing** could commence also within the sphere of the renegades and their minions, as well as in all other areas of the Zone of Displacement. Without establishment of such a condition, by their own effort, no one could ever decide to **un-choose** anything pertinent to their current lifestyle. The nature of that condition and what it entails in its essence and substance cannot be explained and revealed at this time. Should its nature be known to you, it would instantly become apparent to the renegades and their minions as well. In that case, they would come up with some strong countermeasures which would nullify the possibility for that condition to be embedded into their pseudo-domain. If anything of this nature were to happen, it would effectively prevent the process of **un-choosing** to commence on their level as well. In that case, none of the renegades and their minions could be saved or brought out of their miserable and putrid state. Due to the fact that they could not be destroyed, — this would be contrary to My New Nature, — they would have to stay forever in their current state and condition. Such an outcome would

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

prevent the total and eternal elimination of the negative state and the establishment of the fullness and completeness of the positive state.

Now, the current nature of that pseudo-world is such that it cannot be entered directly by anyone from the positive state. The members of the New Universe and I personally could enter their pseudo-world but our entrance would have to be from the position of the positive state. From that position, the establishment of the required condition could not accomplish the needed goal of **un-choosing** something. The reason for this factor is in the fact of the issue of imposition and free will and choice. By our direct entrance, it would be impositional. In that case, whatever would be accomplished in the renegades' pseudo-world in this respect, could not be appropriated or attributed to them because it could not be internalized but only externalized by them. As you know, unless something is internalized by the sentient mind, it cannot take hold and illustrate its consequences, outcomes and results in anybody's life.

So, in order to successfully establish such a necessary, vital and crucial condition at all levels of the Zone of Displacement and in the pseudo-dimension of the renegades and their minions, it was necessary for someone from your planet to enter there by his/her spirit and soul, without his/her conscious awareness and to set up the required condition. Anyone from this world entering their pseudo-domain is not considered to be by imposition but by freedom of choice. From that position, the required condition can safely take hold in their pseudo-world, and can be utilized, in opportune time, for the processes of **un-choosing** to commence.

There is only one very serious problem for entering their pseudo-world — albeit in one's spirit and soul. The only way to accomplish this is by the physical death of one's body. This is the condition of the successful entrance into the pseudo-world of the renegades. This rule was established by them at the time of their becoming the renegades. They specifically and particularly established that rule in order to prevent anyone from entering their pseudo-world in their spirit only. They were afraid that, if they would allow such an entrance, they could not control the activities of such spirits and they could not know what such spirits are up to. Too many spirits entering their pseudo-world could seriously undermine their effort in their civil war against the pseudo-creators and in their war against the positive state. On the other hand, if one physically dies, from the position of the individualized and personalized manner in which one dies, only one person at a time can enter their

pseudo-world. In such a case, they could control that person's activities the way they wished.

So, a volunteer was sought out for this purpose on planet Zero. Of course, it had to be someone who is in a position of a multiversal link because only from that position the required condition could be transposed to the renegades' pseudo-world by his sole presence there. What you have to understand in this respect, is that the required condition was embedded into the personality makeup of that person. His presence there, by the factor of being that condition and what it entails, leaves in or imprints everything contained in that condition or personality makeup, into the very fabric of that pseudo-world. Because from the external perspective of the renegades' perception, that person didn't bring with him anything but himself, they could not see or comprehend the factor of imprint into their pseudo-world of everything contained in the personality makeup of that person.

Don't forget that the personality makeup of that person consists primarily of everything related to My New Revelation and to My Absolute New Nature. Because, as you know, no one can be saved by any other means but by the means of My New Nature and My New Revelation, which reveals these facts, only someone who is the carrier and transmitter of My New Revelation and My New Nature, could be effective in the establishment of the required condition in the pseudo-world of the renegades and all other pseudo-dimensions of the Zone of Displacement.

Unfortunately, or fortunately from our position, for you, Peter, you were the only person on planet Zero who could enter the renegades' pseudo-domain and all other dimensions of the Zone of Displacement and embed the required condition there, so that the process of **un-choosing** the negative state and its pseudo-lifestyle could commence when the time and state is right. In order to accomplish this very important goal, your role and assignment was somewhat modified or added on to it in the last moment, without any prior original agreement in this respect. In fact, in the last moment, you were asked if you would agree to enter this initially non-agreed-upon situation and carry this out, one of the most important missions of your life on planet Zero.

As you remember from the above, the only way you could have entered their pseudo-world and all other places in the Zone of Displacement, was if it would be perceived that you physically died. Your previous problems — in your youth — with your right lung were utilized for that purpose. As you know, Peter, you personally have been a painful thorn

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

in the neck of the renegades. So many times they wished to kill you. This desire of theirs was utilized and they were allowed to inject your previously damaged right lung with cancer cells, cut off the blood supply into your right pulmonary artery, compress your Superior Vena Cava and cause all other physical and mental problems, thus, leading you to your physical death. During your operation and heart failure, while you were in deep anesthesia for six hours, when your heart was stopped in order to replace the Superior Vena Cava with the veins taken out of your left thigh, for all practical purposes, in the eyes of the renegades, you physically died. The artificial maintenance of your life in your body through an artificial heart during surgery, is not considered by the renegades to be a true life — at least not at the time of your major, complicated, lengthy and high tech operation. As you know, your surgery lasted six hours in the time measurements of your planet. However, on the level of the renegades' pseudo-world, that time or non-time, lasted many years. So, during that time, you were perceived by them to be dead. This perception of theirs, the way they experienced it, allowed you to imprint and embed everything needed and necessary to establish that very important, vital and crucial condition for the commencement of the process of **un-choosing** when the time/state/condition is right and when it will be needed in the process of elimination of the negative state and commencement of the closure of this cycle of time/state/condition/process.

The most important aspect of your work in this respect, Peter, relates to the issue of commencement of the closure of this cycle of time/state/condition/process, institution of the transitional period and for preparation of the beginning of the next cycle of time/state/condition/process, contingent on the release of a new and different aspect of My Absolute New Nature. Without establishment of a certain condition in the pseudo-domain of the renegades and in all other pseudo-dimensions of the Zone of Displacement, this process of closure, transition and release, could not take place — ever. So, it is with great pleasure that we all on our level would like to express our profound gratitude and appreciation to you, Peter, for agreeing to undergo this very painful, miserable suffering, but very needed, condition and ordeal in your physical body, and that you agreed, in the last moment, to experience something and undergo something which was not contained in your original agreement before your incarnation on planet Zero into the typical human life.

In the process of your mission during this trying time for you, Peter, it was necessary to cut you off from any conscious or any other access to

us and to the true spiritual reality of your being and existence. Otherwise, the mission would not succeed. The reason for this most unpleasant need was in the fact that if you were to be consciously or otherwise cognizant of our presence with you and if you were to maintain your access to us, in that case, an impositional factor would be in place as described above. Anything of that nature happening, would invalidate everything that you would be imprinting and embedding into the renegades' pseudo-world. In that case, your mission would be a total failure.

You have no idea how tremendously surprised the renegades were when they discovered that you actually didn't die but were brought back to your physical body, continuing being alive in it, although in a very weakened and sick condition. However, by that time, it was too late to do anything on their part. The mission was accomplished and the required condition was successfully established. And no matter what the renegades would do or how much they would try to figure out what it was that was established in their pseudo-world by your presence there, they could never come to its understanding or finding out what it really is or what its nature is or what it really means.

Peter: To tell you the truth, this information and what it contains would not enter me, even in my wildest dreams.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, it was supposed to be that way. If you were to know in advance your additional assignment in this respect, that knowledge would become available also to others, and especially to the renegades. In that case, they would really kill you and you would really die before completion of your important mission in the pseudo-realm of the renegades.

You know, to sidetrack for a moment, there is a history of this situation with you, Peter. Do you remember what happened to you after you completed writing your first book in the series of The New Revelation's books — ***Fundamentals of Human Spirituality***? At that time, for almost six months you lost your access to us because in your spirit you were accompanying Me to the hells of the pseudo-creators. It was the first time in the history of their lockup that anybody visited them. At that time, certain conditions were also established in their pseudo-domain, culminating, later on, in their release and in conversion of many of them to the positive state. During that time, your physical body was not engaged in that process, but only your spirit and soul. This was a necessary arrangement at that time because only from the position of a purely spiritual state and from the position of to what the pseudo-

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

creators' condition corresponded, was it possible to accomplish anything at all in their pseudo-domain. As you remember, at that time, the spiritual battles were at the level of spiritual and mental states.

However, the renegades represent the ultimate of the externals of the externals to which physical bodies correspond as the most extreme representation of manifestation of anything embedded in the externals. Therefore, in order to trigger the necessary correspondences which would enable us to establish anything of importance in the renegades' pseudo-world, it was necessary to engage the physical body which is the reflection and embodiment of such correspondences. Your physical body served that purpose well.

This is also the reason why some of My representatives have experienced and will experience, from time to time, possible physical, material, financial and similar serious external positional hardships in order to illustrate certain important factors to the renegades and their minions. Only by such means the renegades and their minions can and may learn some important lessons which will lead them toward the important decision of **un-choosing** their pseudo-life and ultimately, the negative state itself. So, be patient and endure to the very end.

Of course, there are many other reasons for your personal physical ordeal, Peter. Again, it relates to the content of the One Hundredth Dialog. Before anything of that nature can commence, everything that exhausted its usefulness and served its purpose needs to be dispensed with. Otherwise, it would interfere with the process of establishing something new and different. Because of your position in the totality-of-it-all, Peter, the removal of your right lung and replacement of the Superior Vena Cava with the vein taken out of your left leg, signify or correspond to the removal of everything that can no longer serve any good and positive purpose.

As you know, the human body and its nervous system, in their structural design, were rewired in such a manner so as to have everything in an upside-down and outside-in position. Thus, the right side of your body is regulated by the left side of the brain and the left side of your body by the right side of the brain. This is a reflection of the falsities on which the negative state is founded. In order to eliminate the negative state, you need to eliminate falsities first. As you know, in the positive connotation of the lungs' correspondences, they correspond to the understanding of truth and the wisdom of that understanding. If you reverse the order by which the sentient mind in all its aspects functions, you destroy its abilities to understand the truth and to

acquire wisdom for such an understanding. In order for the negative state to be activated and put into motion, it was necessary to reverse or crossover the original structure of the sentient mind by which it functioned and operated. This reversal or crossover is reflected in the manner the human body and its nervous system were designed by the original activators of the negative state. The purpose here was to make it impossible to understand any truth and to acquire any wisdom for that understanding. As long as you have a clear understanding of the truth and as long as you have wisdom for this understanding, there is no way that the negative state could be activated.

In order to succeed in this effort, a solution was sought for the establishment of a condition in which the understanding of the truth would be made impossible. Subsequent to that, no wisdom could be acquired either. If you are unable to understand the truth and, based on that understanding, to become wise, in that case, the only thing that remains for you is to accept falsities and, based on them, become foolish or unwise. Once the spiritual and mental aspects of this setup are established, you project them into the lives of those who agreed to partake in the life of the negative state. From the ideas of this setup, their physical manifestation automatically takes place to which the human physical body corresponds. In this case, the right lung which is regulated by the left brain (the left brain corresponds, in this particular negative connotation, to all the pseudo-spiritual principles by which the pseudo-life of the negative state is ruled), will correspond to the inability to understand the truth and to become wise from that understanding.

In your case, Peter, because of your multiversal position as a focusing point for all and from all My representatives on planet Zero, removal of your right lung signifies the first step in the process of elimination of the negative state, which is the removal of the inability to understand the truth and to be wise. This is not a personal issue but a multiversal issue. It does not mean that you personally are unable to understand the truth or to be wise. It means the all-inclusive inability of everyone in the negative state, and particularly the renegades, to understand any truth and to become wise. By the removal of your right lung, or to what it corresponds, the condition was established in their pseudo-domain and elsewhere, which will permanently abolish, when the time is right and ripe, this inability for understanding of the truth and for becoming truly wise.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Now, the Superior Vena Cava is a correspondence to the link through which and by which this understanding of truth is being made possible. It is not understanding of truth itself, as is the case with the lungs, but it is something that supplies all necessary ingredients for understanding of any truth. Once this means of supply is damaged, the proper condition cannot be established for discernment and understanding of truth. Because of that, the damaged link or supply line needs to be replaced. Do not forget that this supply line comes out of the heart. Heart corresponds to the goodness of life or to the love of life. It is from the goodness and love of life that understanding of truth and acquirement of wisdom can be accomplished or established. If that supply line is damaged, it is unable to convey any goodness and love to anything or anyone. In that case, because on that supply the life of everyone depends, gradually, that life in that mind and body is atrophied, leading to one's spiritual, mental and physical death — unless, of course, you repair or replace the damaged supply line.

By your external example, Peter, it was illustrated and demonstrated to them how this repair can take place and how the proper understanding of truth and becoming wise can be restored to everyone trapped in the negative state. Everyone in the negative state needs such concrete and external examples because this mode of demonstration and illustration is the only one which makes any sense for them. Any other way would be incomprehensible to them. It would be like hieroglyphs to them.

However, as you noticed, that replacement had to be from the position of your own body or from your own within position. It could not come from without because anything coming from without would only reaffirm and reconfirm this total inability to understand the truth from the good of heart and acquire wisdom from the love of life. Here is the issue of spiritual correspondences. This factor corresponds to taking out a vein from your own body, in this case, from your leg, which was in the proximity to your heart or to the love of your life. Only from that position, the position of correspondence of the love of life, could anything positive and good be accomplished or, in this case, could the repair of the supply line be done. Nothing else would work on a permanent basis. Legs correspond to the foundation on which the truth of wisdom and the goodness of love are built and are manifested. Thus, legs are the embodiment of the means on which any building of anything permanently stands. Therefore, if you take something out from this foundation, because of its corresponding factor, you are able to build something new and different on it. Don't forget that any part of the whole carries within itself all attributes of that whole. In that case, by

taking out one part of that whole, or in our case, of this foundation on which the entire structure stands, you can utilize all the original full attributes of the whole, fully contained in its part, and make all necessary repairs in order to restore the proper flow of ingredients which make the correct understanding of truth and acquirement of wisdom for such an understanding very much possible.

Still, another important reason for your ordeal and miserable state and condition is in the very important illustration and demonstration of the fact that no matter in what condition you are, no matter what you experience, no matter how gravely or terminally ill you might be, no matter how much hardship and suffering you are experiencing in any aspects of your human life and no matter whether you have or don't have any conscious access to us, as My true representatives, your reaction to these types of adverse conditions is one of acceptance of the fact that all this is happening either by our original agreement or by My permission or by an additional modified agreement which was necessary to undertake for some very important spiritual reasons. And not only that, but regardless of all these adverse and miserable states, symptoms and experiences, no matter how harsh and unpleasant they are, in no way are they able to deter you or take you away from following and practicing the principles of My New Revelation as contained in its three sources.

This factor of permission or modification of the original agreement is a very important one from the position of everyone in the negative state. As mentioned on previous occasions, your behavior, attitude and response in such adverse conditions are conveying an important message to all members of the negative state. They convey to them very clearly that no matter how much they try to make your life miserable or no matter what they do to you in order to force you into giving up being My true representatives or being an integral part of the positive state, they are unable to succeed. At one point in time, this situation with you will help them to utilize the established condition in their pseudo-world, as described above, and they will **un-choose** the negative state for good and forever.

So, as you see, Peter, these are some important reasons why it was and **still is** necessary for you to go through all your physical ordeals. Of course, they are not the only ones. However, some of these reasons would be premature to reveal because the process has not yet been finished. Some others are too private. They are only between Me and you and these cannot be revealed — ever. There are still others which

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

are in the process of unfolding. On their outcome will depend something very important about your life and your mission. We'll speak about it in a moment after we discuss something else contained in your questions.

So, as you see from your present condition, the entire issue has not yet ended. There are still certain things that you need to experience and go through in order to illustrate and demonstrate something very important. For that reason, I am asking you, and everyone else who is in the process of experiencing any types of hardships, to be very patient and not to give up.

Now, let us go to something else. You had tremendous difficulties and torturous doubts about the ending in Dialog 121 when you were advised to take a break for a few days, while it took almost four months to come to this point. You were questioning the source of our dialoging, starting to doubt very much that I am the one who dialogs with you. Let us look on the true reality of this situation. Intuitively, Peter, you knew very well that you became gravely and almost terminally ill and that some serious physical repercussions would follow. Yet, from your human standpoint, from the position of your bodily life, you didn't want to admit that something was seriously wrong with your lungs. In fact, you were in denial. In that position, at the end of our dialoging that day (October 29, 1999), you projected your denial into My last words, hearing what you wanted to hear from the position of that denial and not from the position of what I was really saying. Because you desperately wanted that your physical condition was only some kind of minor, superficial and transient one, in order to make it so, you heard Me advising you to take a break for a few days, while in fact, in the true reality of that situation, what I was saying was for you to take a break for as long as necessary in order to resolve your physical problems. However, in your grave condition, being in the state of denial, you did not want to hear it that way because it would mean to admit that something very serious was going on with your physical condition.

This is the way how the typical human mind functions. This was permitted by Me to happen in order to illustrate and demonstrate to everyone what can happen if one listens to and hears things not from their very source without any personal filters, but instead, one does so from the position of denial and wishful thinking, not wanting to face the reality of one's situation. On the other hand, don't forget that for us here, four of your months could very well be perceived as a few days or even a few hours. So, in that sense, no misperception or misleading took place at that time. Therefore, it would be very inappropriate for you,

Peter, to continue torturing yourself with doubts that it is not I who has been dialoging with you. By doing that, you are pleasing only the negative state and making your life more miserable than is really necessary.

Now, at this point, we need to talk about something very serious. It relates to your current spiritual, mental and physical condition. Two days ago, when you had your checkup with the pulmonary specialist, after she examined you, she made a statement telling you that you are not out of the woods yet. Without realizing the spiritual implication of her statements, she touched upon something about which we need to have a serious discussion.

As you intuitively know, tremendous changes are happening in the entire fabric of Creation, pseudo-creation and human life. In your position, Peter, you are an instrumental participant in these changes by the mode of your life and assignment that you have. At this point in time, there is a process of determination going on, serious choices are being made, which will establish something related to your life on planet Zero. The question is, of course, to what extent your life on that planet would be more beneficial and useful for our cause than if you were to be recalled sometime in the very near future. Because this determination is in process right now, as long as it lasts, your physical condition continues to be grave. Your heart is constantly racing well above its normal functioning. Your breath continues to be short. You tire easily and your left foot is numb and is giving you a lot of trouble. Your voice is weak and you have difficulty talking. Your throat experiences constant irritation. All these symptoms are signs of the final determination about whether you should continue in your life on planet Zero or whether you should be recalled and come back home to us because you could be more effective in working from that position, and not from the position of planet Zero.

At this time, it is premature to reveal how long it will take to make this determination. If the determination is made for your recall, your physical condition will start to deteriorate. In that case, this Dialog (122) will be either the last one, or one of the last ones — should a need be established to have some more dialogs recorded during the process of this important determination and decision or during this interim period.

On the other hand, if the determination is made that it would be more beneficial for you to continue in your work on planet Zero, in that case, gradually and slowly, your overall condition would begin to improve considerably and eventually, you would heal completely. In that case,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

our dialoging would continue — if needed and necessary and if questions of multiversal significance would come your way or if you personally would have such important questions. So, as you see, you are on an important crossroad in your life. Let no one try to guess what the outcome of our determination and decision will be. All of you are advised to take the stance that the Will of The Lord Jesus Christ be done in all respects.

And this brings us to a brief note about prayer. During your illness and surgery, Peter, some or most people prayed very intensely on your behalf. Was it an appropriate thing to do? In cases where you are unconscious, in a coma, in anesthesia, or for some reason or other you are unable to pray on your behalf, My representatives are allowed to petition Me in this respect, saying something like I said during My prayer in the garden of Gethsemane: If possible, heal Peter (or someone else in a similar condition). Nevertheless, not our will but Your will be done. On the other hand, if you are able to pray on your own behalf and you're conscious at all times and aware of your situation, whatever it might be, you are responsible to pray on your own behalf. No one else can do it for you.

And this is all I wanted to talk about today. If further dialoging will be needed in this interim period, you will know, Peter, intuitively. In the meantime, prepare all these Dialogs for publishing so that they are ready before your possible recall. During this interim period, you will not have access to us as has been the case up to this point. This access will be temporarily restored only if dialoging will be necessary. During the time of determination and decision, the access to us cannot be maintained.

There are very important spiritual reasons why during this interim period, as well as during the period after October 19, 1999, and until the 121st Dialog was recorded by you, you were and will be completely cut off from any access to us or from communicating with any of us. You felt abandoned, forgotten and neglected by us, and especially by Me. Let Me assure you that this was not the case. It was the perception of your conscious mind only. In order for you to succeed in your mission, not only was it necessary to cut off your conscious access to and communication with us, but also from your own Spiritual Mind.

Thus, during that period of time, as well as during this interim period, as long as this important determination and decision is being made, the current status quo needs to be maintained. Should you have conscious access to us and to your Spiritual Mind during this period, it would

enable the renegades and their minions to very effectively interfere with the process of this determination and decision and everything related to your situation would have to be postponed indefinitely. Such a postponement would not very well serve to the needs of the positive state. As a matter of fact, it would only serve the needs of the negative state.

I am very much aware how miserable and unhappy it is for you to be in your present predicament. When you are actively involved with us at all levels of your mind and when you participate in the events with your full awareness, you feel great and you feel and are truly alive. Your current situation feels like you are dead or unneeded and unwanted. Believe Me, this is not the case. In fact, I want you to know that just the opposite is true: You are very much needed in your current position and in everything that you are going through. So, once again, I am asking you to endure to the very end and not to give up. Of course, I am very sure that you will not give up and that you will endure to the very end. I am telling you this only for your encouragement and for reinforcement of your determination to continue in your present direction and assignment.

How long this interim period will last, during which the final determination and decision is made, cannot be known at this time. It will last as long as the most appropriate and most needed decision and determination is made. It could be days, weeks, months or possibly even years. Actually, you will know about the outcome of this determination and decision by the condition of your health and the way the symptoms of your body persist, getting worse or getting better. Do not be concerned about the time factor. It is not important. And this is all for now. In the meantime, rest, read, edit, watch television, go to your medical checkups and do anything you feel like doing, even traveling, if your physical condition would allow it. And remember, we all love you very much. Go in peace.

Peter: I understand, I accept and I am grateful for this, perhaps, last, or one of the last, Dialog. I am ready to resume our dialoging anytime You wish and deem appropriate. Thank You very much for allowing me to record this particular Dialog. It was very important for the peace of my mind.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are most certainly welcome, Peter. Also, this is the reason why I chose by My own free Will and choice, to allow you to temporarily reconnect with Me, as well as with all of us here, so that we could provide you with our reassurance. However, don't ever

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

forget that we are always with you and you are always with us here from the position of your Spirit and soul. Only your human aspects are cut off for the time being. But this will also pass. And this is really all for now.

One Hundred and Twenty Third Dialog

March 10, 2000

The Lord Jesus Christ: We are going to interrupt your inaccessibility to us for a brief period of time, Peter, on your conscious level, and upon your own request, to convey certain information and clarification for the benefit of all who are willing to read and to listen to what is being conveyed in this, or any other, Dialog. Also for your own consolation and encouragement.

Peter: Thank You so much for this opportunity and for giving me this respite from my miserable physical condition. As you know, certain questions were going through my mind and they need Your response in the form of clarification. Of course, before going into them, as always, I am asking if You have anything to convey to us or elaborate upon at this particular time. After all, if I am being given this opportunity to dialog with You, even though for a brief period of time, I may as well utilize this precious time for Your Personal input about anything You wish — if there is anything of importance in this respect.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you very much, Peter, for allowing Me to talk first. As you know, basically, there is always something important going on in our world and in all other dimensions which are not of time and space nature. On the other hand, the real time-space bound worlds are also in a state and process of their own important events which are reflections of something which is going on, on our side. As far as the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero are concerned, as usual, they are lagging behind in their own responses to those events. In that sense, you can easily say that, on the surface, nothing too much is happening at their end or on their side of the fence.

Of course, this is only a seeming situation because, under the surface, something very important is brewing in them which is a consequential reflection of those events which are happening on our side of the fence, so-to-speak. So, are there any aspects of those events which can and may be conveyed to you at this time? Yes and no. On the internal, intuitive level you may know the answer to this question. On the external, conscious level, the nature of those important events is such that the understanding of their nature cannot penetrate to their true core, meaning, process and mode of their manifestation — as they are unfolding.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

The issue here is the factor of isolation and a closed-in loop under which the Zone of Displacement and your planet are presently operating. What this means is that the safety and fulfillment of everyone's purpose and mission in the positive state, as well as in the negative state and on planet Zero, requires this arrangement to be in place. In other words, anyone situated in the Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero, for their own safety, is cut off from the access to anything which is going on outside the influence of their respective spheres and worlds.

On the other hand, by keeping the negative state in the mode of isolation and a closed-in loop, everyone in the positive state is prevented from having any interference into their affairs from the inhabitants of the negative state and humans. Simply stated, if they were to know what it is that is going on, on our side and how it influences the very fabric of being and existence, as well as pseudo-being and pseudo-existence and the inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero, they would devise any possible means to interfere with, to undermine or to nullify the impact which those events could have on them. At the same time, by this particular setup, the members of the positive state are able to continue in their efforts without any concerns that someone out there could negatively influence the course of events which are vital and crucial to take place in order to fulfill the purpose and mission for which they agreed to be and to exist. So, as you see, the benefit of this arrangement is mutually beneficial to all everywhere and everywhen.

The decisive interference with these events on the part of the inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero could cause their destruction. This would prevent them from being saved from their brand of the pseudo-life and from being brought back to the positive state where everyone, ultimately, belongs.

So, having said that, we may proceed in outlining certain limited aspects of the events which are going on right now on our end. First of all, one of the most important aspects of those events is the process of building a foundation on which everything related to the negative state and human life can be reversed in such a manner that they could be saved from everything contained in them. The integral part of this process is gradually bringing to everyone's attention the most important fact which tells them that, in actuality, they all belong to the positive state. Now, up to this point, to the point of My saying it and you, Peter, recording it, no one has known that everyone, no matter where or when, truly belongs to the positive state. Or, to say it differently, that everyone belongs to the real life. The real life is always equated with the positive state. As an

integral part of this message, everyone in the negative state and human life is being informed and assured that, first of all, their life is not the real life and, secondly, that by the factor of the original and initial agreement, they are eligible to acquire an entrance into the real life.

As you know, up to this point, all inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement and humans on planet Zero have been convinced that they live a true life. As long as they are in this false belief, they have no intention or motivation to change their status quo. And not only that, but, considering their brand of life to be the only one feasible and possible, they consider everything else, outside of their brand of pseudo-life, as either non-existent or illusional. In other words, because they consider their life to be the true life, in their view, any other forms and manifestations of life cannot be the true life. As long as they are in this illusion, no one in that life (pseudo-life) can be in a position of wanting to change their perception and understanding of what the true life is all about.

For that reason, several aspects of the events which are taking place on our side, or in our world, are devoted to the establishment of a very important condition, which will very clearly and persuasively convey to all of them, in a very convincing and irrefutable manner, that their life is not a true life and that, in actuality and factuality, because they have never had any true life, or that they have never been in the true life, by that factor, nevertheless, they are somehow alive and living, even though not in the manner as the true life is, they belong to the positive state. The information which is being brought to the foreground of their attention is that life, any life, including their pseudo-life, is not possible without the being and existence of the Absolute Life which makes it possible for any life to take hold and to be put in its own unique motion. Up to this point they assumed that this is not the case.

As an integral part of this information and conveyance, the other aspects of these events are geared toward building a foundation on which **unchoosing** the negative state and its brand of the pseudo-life can be actualized and realized. As you remember from the previous Dialog (122), in order for anything at all, which was originally chosen, to be terminated or to stop its course of proceeding and manifestation in the lives of all, it must first be **unchosen**. Thus, nothing new and different can be put into motion until the previous factors, underlining the currently ongoing life or pseudo-life, are **unchosen** by all participants in that life or pseudo-life and a proper foundation is established for making a fresh choice in the matter of the true life.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

An integral part of these events is a new assignment which the members of the New Universe and the converted pseudo-creators are being given. By the means of My New Revelation, and especially and particularly by the means of these Dialogs, and, most importantly, by the means of My New Nature, they are assigned the role of bringing all these facts to the conscious attention of all inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement and all their respective worlds. They are to convince them by all possible means, without violating their free will and choice, that, first of all, their life is not the true life and that, secondly, by the factor of their own individualities, uniquenesses and differences, and by the factor that they possess their own 'I am,' by all means, they belong nowhere else but in/to the positive state. After all, the positive state is something that is truly real and alive. All else, not of the positive state, cannot be that way because of the law of Creation which clearly states that there is only one true reality in being and existence — the reality of the positive state which derives from the Absolute Reality of The Lord Jesus Christ in Whom the Absolute Being and Absolute Existence eternally reside.

Due to the fact that the true Nature of The Lord Jesus Christ is Absolute Positiveness, Who, at the same time, transcends that, the only life which is real and feasible is the life of the positive state. All else, not deriving from that life, is, in its essence and substance, unreal. However, because all participants in the negative state and human life carry within them the concept and perception of being their own "I am," by that factor, they belong to the positive state. There is no other place, state, condition, source, or anything else for that matter, from which the concept, notion, perception, assertion and apprehension of 'I am' can be acquired. This can be accomplished only and only from the Absolute Source of the Absolute 'I AM' Who is The Lord Jesus Christ.

If this is so, and everything in the true being and existence attests to it that it is so, then, by the irrefutable logic of this eternal arrangement, whoever is capable of conceiving the concept of his/her own unique, individualized and different 'I am,' no matter where and when he/she is situated, no matter in what type of life or pseudo-life he/she resides at any particular time, such a person ultimately belongs nowhere else but to the positive state. This is one of the most important reasons that, throughout the entirety of My New Revelation, it was emphasized numerous times, that no one is lost ever — no matter where and when they are. As long as the concept of 'I am' is preserved within each and every individual, such an individual ultimately belongs to the positive state.

So, as you see from this discourse, the most important events currently taking place on our side of the fence, so-to-speak, are contained in the building of the foundation and condition for returning everyone to where they truly belong — to My positive state and ultimately, to Me. I can assure you, Peter, that this is one of the most important processes which is taking place at the present time. Now, the nature of the means by which all this will be accomplished, and the time factor needed for this accomplishment (from the standpoint of your conceptualization of time) to take place, cannot be revealed for security reasons. What is important though, is the realization by all concerned that this important work is being done and that the outcome of it will be the elimination or, better to say, **unchoosing** the pseudo-life of the negative state and the negative aspects of the human life in all its forms, conditions and manifestations and choosing only the true life of the positive state to which everyone belongs.

So, in essence, we are seeking the most suitable means, without any impositional factors involved, for the establishment of a condition which would allow everyone in the negative state and human life, to **unchoose** the falsity that pervades their mind which tells them that they don't belong anywhere but where they are and what and who they are. The issue here is the accomplishment of one of the most formidable tasks: To let every one in the negative state and human life recognize and accept the fact that they live the life of falsities and evils. After all, if you are convinced that your life is true and good, you have no desire to change anything about it. In that case, the concept of **unchoosing** it can never enter your mind. For that reason, in the first round of this effort, you need to learn by the most experiential and obvious modes that what you consider to be true and good is, in fact, just the opposite of them — it is false and evil.

However, how do you go about convincing them about these facts by the most experiential and irrefutable modes? If they consider their brand of pseudo-life to be the only true life, which is in itself and by itself, independent of anything and anyone, in that case, you have to develop a means which would prove to them beyond a shadow of doubt that this conclusion of theirs is pure falsity. Therefore, they don't have or live a true life. So, in order to accomplish this goal, you put everyone in the negative state in a specially designed condition, during which, in their eyes and experiential mode, the source of their life, for a moment in time and non-time, is withdrawn from them and they find themselves without the feeding source of their life. Once nothing will be feeding them with the energies that provide them with their ability to live their own brand of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

life-pseudo-life, they will experience the most gruesome suffocation and sense of eternally dying with the acquirement of a total and complete awareness that their life cannot be in itself, by itself and of itself without some kind of feeding source coming their way from somewhere or someone else. And because the ultimate source of any life, no matter what type, form, shape, condition, or whatever it would be, is My Absolute Life, the life energies of which are constantly and unceasingly emanated and radiated to all and everything in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, in that moment of time and non-time, they would be able to see very clearly that their life in no way is and exists in itself, by itself and of itself, but it is made possible only and only because I provide it with their ability to be what and who they are by the factor of My temporary permission to perceive their life to be real and independent of its original source.

In the moment everyone in the negative state and human life will find themselves at this important junction, by the factor of this experiential mode and acquirement of proper insight into the genesis of their pseudo-life, they will be able to fully recognize the falsities of their assumptions related to the nature of their pseudo-life; and therefore, the real truth of the matter of life in general and who is the source of any life in particular, will enter their conscious mind. Such awareness and recognition will put them into a condition which will enable them to **unchoose** all falsities and evils on which their pseudo-life was founded and built. And due to the fact that their ability to have their own unique, individual and different 'I am,' stems, in an ultimate sense, from My Absolute 'I AM,' and due to the fact that My 'I AM' is Absolutely Positive, giving rise and life to My positive state, by the factor of this logic, whoever is able to conceive his/her own 'I am, that one belongs nowhere else but to the positive state.

And here come the philosophical and mystical reasons why the negative state was permitted to be invented and subsequently activated in the first place. As you see from these words, the negative state, first of all, needed to be invented, and once it was invented, it needed to be activated and put into its own seemingly independent motion. How did the idea of the invention of something like the negative state, which did not exist in any form or shape and which was not contained in the repertoire of the ideas within the sentient mind, come across that mind? Besides what was revealed about this issue throughout My New Revelation, especially in Moscow Dialogs 89 and 90, something else was instrumental in bringing about this invention. The sentient mind, rooted in its own relative 'I am,' relative to My Absolute 'I AM,' by the means of self-perception and self-recognition as being its own 'I am,' was searching for the meaning of its

individual, unique and different life, as well as of life in general. How do you answer such an important question about the meaning of individual and general life if you have nothing else against which you could compare the nature of your own life and life in general with something of a totally different nature and meaning? If you have only one meaning, if you have no experience about any other possible meanings, then how can you be sure that your 'I am' is truly 'I am' and not something else? And that your individual life is a true life?

The issue here was finding out whether the self-perception, self-recognition, self-identity and self-life, in the individual, unique and different mode of life of the 'I am' was real and factual and whether it really was situated in the true being and existence, or somewhere and in something else. However, that somewhere and something else, at that point of time and non-time, did not exist. If nothing of that nature existed, then, in that case, it could be possible to conceive an idea that 'I am,' in its own unique, individual and different life, as well as life in general, could possibly not be and not exist as well. In that case, whatever that 'I am' was experiencing, could have been an illusion and deception; and the idea that it was in the true life could, therefore, have been an illusion likewise.

In order to resolve this dilemma, the sentient mind's 'I am' embarks on the exploration of some other possibilities which would lead to the answering of its vital question about the reality and meaning of life in general, and its 'I am' in particular. Anything available to that sentient mind up to that point, and everything which was in its experiential mode, could not be utilized for exploration of other possibilities and for properly answering its question. Something needed to be invented which didn't exist at all and which could be established in its own being and existence as independent of and different from anything available to the sentient mind up to that point.

The major issue here was the issue of belonging and the structure of 'I am.' Also, the issue was the derivation of life and the concept of 'I am' from the Absolute State of Life and its Absolute 'I AM.' If I belong to something, to someone and to somewhere, and if my life and my unique, different and individual 'I am' is in the mode of total dependency on someone or something else, which is of the Absolute Nature, in this case, on Me, and if there is no other mode of life and mode of state and process of my 'I am,' then how could I be at all sure that I truly belong to the positive state and that my life and my unique, individual and different 'I am' truly derive from the Absolute State? Being relative to that Absolute, it would be difficult or even impossible for me to know that this situation

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

and condition of my life is absolutely true. After all, I have nothing else available against which I could compare the issue of belonging and the issue of dependency of my 'I am' on the Absolute Life and Its Absolute 'I AM.' No other state, process, condition, lifestyle, or anything else for that matter, is available which would assure me that I truly belong to someone who is Absolutely Positive and that I am situated in something which is called the positive state. How can I know that this situation is true? How can I know that what is available and presented to me as the positive state and as my own 'I am' is truly so, and that no other state, condition, process or whatever is feasible or possible?

In order to answer these important and vital existential questions, it was necessary to invent something different, something that would eliminate or repudiate the factor and the necessity of belonging and dependency of 'I am' on the life, state, condition and process of the Absolute Life and Its Absolute 'I AM.' First of all, the question was: Is it possible at all to establish a condition which would preclude such belonging to and dependency on anyone or anything and be totally different from what was available at that point? How do you go about establishing something that in the true reality does not exist? You invent it! If everything available to you is defined as the positive state, then you invent something which is not the positive state. In order to do that you need to come up with the idea of separation from everything and everyone which/who is an integral part of that which is called the positive state.

By classifying all aspects of the positive state, you establish a different mode of lifestyle which has nothing in common with that which is contained in and which is characteristic of the positive state. If it is not the positive state, then, in that case, it must be called the negative state. Because anything in the negative state is built on the principle of opposing everything contained in the positive state, and because nothing in the positive state is contained from that which is of the typical characteristics of the negative state, anyone who chooses to be an integral part of the negative state, can no longer belong to the positive state. By no longer belonging to the positive state, one's 'I am' loses any apparent connection to its original source.

However, the problem with this situation is that the awareness still exists that one's life, individuality, uniqueness and difference, rooted in the nature and structure of 'I am,' belonged to the positive state and was derived from the Absolute State and Its Absolute 'I AM.' As long as such awareness exists, the supposed reality of the negative state cannot be established. In order to circumvent this problem or this awareness, you

need to eradicate any awareness and memories of such belonging and dependence. If you are able to accomplish this goal, in that case, you may establish a lifestyle which, from the position of your awareness and self-awareness, does not belong in the positive state and is independent of anything which is defined as the Absolutely Positive. By establishing such a lifestyle, you now have an experiential mode of non-belonging and non-dependence. Having established this state, condition and process, you have something in your repertoire which makes it possible for you to compare that which is called the positive state, or which is built on the principle of belonging to the positive state, with that which does not belong. At the same time, you now have the means by which you can experience what it is like to be if you assume that your unique, different and individual 'I am' is independent of the Absolute 'I AM.' After all, if the Absolute 'I AM' is of a purely and absolutely positive nature, in that case, any other relative 'I am' which, in its own awareness and self-perception and perception in general, no longer belongs to the positive state, it cannot have any connection to It because nothing of that other nature other than the nature of the positive state can be contained in and derived from that Absolute 'I AM.' Otherwise, it would not be absolutely positive.

In this conceptualization of the above mentioned facts, nothing can be derived from or originated in the State of Absolute Positiveness of something which is not an integral component of Its Own Nature, State and Condition. To repeat it again, otherwise it would not be absolutely positive. But because anything but positive can be derived from the Absolute State, whatever is not derived from It, can be derived, established, exemplified and lived by someone who is only relative to that Absolute.

The logic of this setup proves beyond a shadow of doubt that whatever is incapable of originating in the Absolute State, cannot carry within itself any elements of that Absolute. In that case, it can consist only of the relative elements. Anything relative, which is not derived from the Absolute, is limited in its being and existence and exhausts or runs out of all and any possibilities to continue forever. Such is the nature of something which does not derive from Absolutely Positive but only from the relative.

Here is the answer to the question of what it is like to be in the state of assumed non-belonging and non-dependence. Anything or anyone which/who does not belong to and is independent of belonging to someone or something, and who is separated and isolated from the state of belonging and from being dependent on its Absolute Source, cannot be and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

exist forever, to eternity, in itself, by itself, of itself and from itself. Being that everyone but the Absolute State is relative, by the definition of the meaning of the word 'relative,' in its relative condition, being that this relative did not give itself its life, cannot be and exist in, by, of and from itself. Otherwise, it would not be relative but Absolute. The logic and principle of life clearly states that only One Absolute can be and exist. It is inconceivable to have more than one Absolute. As you clearly remember, many absolutes would cancel each other because they would be mutually exclusive.

Having established this relative and different life, as compared to the original life — the life of the positive state, the experience and learning of what it is to be in such a life of non-belonging and non-dependence, could take place. Now everyone is able to know experientially and factually to what this type of life, actually non-life, leads and how it is to be and to exist in something which did not derive from the Absolute Source of Life and its positive state. Why is it that we called this other life a non-life? The philosophical issue here is very clear: If there is only one True Source of life, any life, then anything which does not directly derive from that Source, which is Life in, by, of and from Itself, cannot be called life. If it is not true life then, in that case, it is non-life.

You see, Peter, and everyone who reads these words, the most important and crucial existential issue here is the need to compare the true life with the non-life. The original question was: How can we know that we have or are in the true life if we have no experience, no knowledge and no comprehension of something which is non-life? We have only life. But how do we know that it is really life? So, as you see, the issue here goes much deeper than only having answers to the question that you are in the life of the positive state.

The issue here is to know that you have and experience real life as such, and not only the positive state's life. In order to answer this one of the most important questions, it was absolutely necessary to give permission for the establishment of something which is not the true life but, in fact, which is non-life. As long as you are aware of the nature of the life which you currently live, a state, condition and process of non-life cannot be established. If you contain in your forefront conscious awareness anything at all from the elements of the real life, non-life cannot come to its adverse fruition. Therefore, in order to bring about this non-life, you must exclude from it everything contained in the real life.

As you see from this description, the definition of non-life is not in the fact that it does not live, as the concept of this term and content of non-life

would indicate, but that it does not contain any characteristics of the true life. Life, by definition, is something which is in itself, by itself, from itself and of itself and which always is the condition and state of its Absolute Source. For that reason, life always was, is and will be from eternity to eternity. On the other hand, anything at all that has not been from eternity and will not be to eternity, in itself and by itself, is non-life. Because the negative state has not been and will not be from eternity to eternity,— after all, its origin can be traced to the relative sentient entities' search for the meaning of life and their 'I am' — it has nothing in its nature that derives from life as such. By this logical factor, therefore, it is non-life. In this respect, any sentient entity, in itself, from itself and by itself, does not have life because it has not been from eternity. In order to make it live and be alive, it receives that life from the Absolute Source of Life, which has been and will be to eternity. As long as you acknowledge and recognize this factor of belonging and dependence on this Absolute Source, although you have not lived from eternity, by the factor of this recognition and acknowledgement, being the conscious and sentient carrier of that life, your life will be to eternity. In the moment you reject these facts, by the process of this rejection, you establish, paradoxically speaking, the pseudo-life of non-life. Such non-life, not having anything in itself from the true life, is incapable of staying to eternity. Thus, as you see from this arrangement, only someone or something who/which contains within himself/herself/itself the elements of true life, by which he/she/it lives and is alive, can and may stay to eternity.

So, what is the true learning from all of this? It gives everyone in being and existence a clear understanding that their life is real, that they live a true life or that they do have life as such because now they have a clear experiential comparison between their life and non-life — which is the negative state. If such a comparison were not to be available to them, no one in the positive state could come to any reasonable conclusions that they truly live life and that their life is, in fact, the life of the positive state. Thus, what they have is, in fact, life. Everything else, outside of that life, is non-life. The consequences of that non-life are illustrated on the behaviors and lifestyles of all those who live in that non-life. From these facts the learning is very obvious: The true life and everyone's 'I am,' which gives them the sense of life, can be and exist only from, of, in and by the Absolute Life — The Lord Jesus Christ. Whatever does not derive from and is dependent on this Source, does not have any life but only non-life. **And this is the Absolute Truth of this matter.** By having that life, you belong to and are dependent on everything which emanates and radiates from the Absolute Source of Life — The Lord Jesus Christ and His/Her positive state. The true meaning of life is rooted in this factor.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Based on these facts, why was it that at the beginning of this Dialog, the statement was made that everyone everywhere and everywhen, including those in the negative state and human life, ultimately, belong to the positive state? After all, someone who is in the negative state, or in non-life, by the factor of non-belonging, paradoxically speaking, does not belong to the positive state. As you noticed from above, it was indicated there that the awareness of belonging to and dependence on the positive state was eradicated from their awareness and memories. Otherwise they could not invent and establish the negative state and its non-life. The process of invention and establishment, regardless of what it is or how negative it may be, is the creative process. The ability to do so is dependent on the Absolute Creative Effort of the Absolute Life — The Lord Jesus Christ. To reject that it is so, or become unaware that it is so, does not abolish the truthfulness of this indisputable fact. Any motion, deed, behavior, activity, or whatever you have, is impossible to experience or to have without the Absolute Being and Absolute Existence of the Ultimate Source of Life which makes it possible for them to be manifested, actualized and realized.

It is a different story to deny that it is so. By the factor of this denial, an illusion is established that leads you to believe that you do not belong to and are dependent, in the conceptualization of your own unique, individual and different 'I am,' on anyone or anything. By identifying yourself with and internalizing this illusion as the true reality, for you personally, it becomes real and the only reality. However, because it is only an illusion, from the position of the true life, whatever you experience is non-life. This is how the pseudo-life of the non-life was established. But because your unique, individual and different 'I am' continues to be dependent on whatever is emanated and radiated from the Absolute Source of Life, any life, regardless of your denial that it is so, and regardless of your illusion that you possess the real life, and that you live in, by, of and from yourself, your ability to think and to believe that it is so, is made possible only and only because the energies of My Absolute Life, which carry, radiate and emanate My Life to everyone everywhere and everywhen, is totally and completely dependent on this fact. Therefore, no matter what, by the logic of these facts, you ultimately belong nowhere else but to the positive state and the true life.

So, as you see, Peter, at the present time, one of the major events going on in the positive state is to bring all these facts to the attention of everyone everywhere and everywhen. For people in the negative state and human life this will be accomplished by the restoration of their awareness about these facts and the opening of their memories regarding the genesis of

non-life and how it was needed to be invented and put into motion in order to properly, exhaustively, experientially and factually answer their questions about the meaning of life in general and their individualized and personalized life, rooted in their 'I am,' in particular.

In order to accomplish this goal, the members of the positive state are in the process of developing the most suitable and safe means for bringing these facts to everyone's conscious awareness and for opening their memories without any harm or shock to them; as well as for the establishment of a time frame and a non-time frame within which all these things can be accomplished in the most effective, appropriate, harmless and lasting manner. As you know, any such tremendous effort as this one requires a lot of time (in your conceptualization of time) or to what it corresponds in the non-time dimension. So, don't expect this to happen overnight, so-to-speak. It can take a long time from your standpoint, which can last for years, centuries or even millennia.

In your position as My true representatives on this planet, one of your assignments in this respect is to set up an example of how it is and what it constitutes to belong to the positive state and to be dependent on the Absolute Life of My Absolute 'I AM.' As you know, and I am repeating this many times over, to be dependent on Me is, in the true reality, to be totally and completely independent and free because of the absolute factor that I am Absolutely Free and Independent, being that I am, in My Absolute Nature, the Absolute Freedom and Absolute Independence themselves. Anyone who depends on Me in this, or any other respect, by the factor of carrying My Nature in their relative condition, is likewise free and independent. After all, the only thing I can give to or impart anything on anyone is only that which is contained in My Absolute Nature. On the other hand, anyone who thinks of himself/herself as being independent and free without Me, as the case is with everyone in the negative state and in human life, is, in fact, unfree and dependent, being a slave of his/her own illusions. In this sense, one depends on reinforcement of one's own illusions, trying to convince oneself that one has and lives a true life.

By your own lifestyle, you are to convey this message to everyone who comes in contact with you. By your being in the midst of the positive state and by your connectedness to My New Revelation and, most importantly, to My New Nature, you can prepare humanity on planet Zero for acquiring full awareness of these facts and for opening their memories so that they may recall everything related to all these things. In order to do that, you need to very strongly reaffirm, on a daily basis, within your own

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

selves, that you truly belong to nowhere else but to the positive state and that your unique, individual and different 'I am' depends absolutely on My Absolute Life rooted in My Absolute 'I AM.' By continuous reaffirmation of these facts within yourselves and by conveying this message to others by the means of your lifestyle, you will be able to set up a condition in the human mind, in its unconscious parts, which would make all these facts familiar to and recognizable by them when all these things are brought to their conscious awareness and when their memories are fully open. The familiarity of this situation will prevent them from entering into any possible fatal shock. At the same time, because of your multilevel connectedness to the various regions of the Zone of Displacement, your reaffirmations in this respect will also help those who are situated in the negative state.

So, as you see, you are full participants in the events which are happening in our world at the present time or non-time (from our perspective), regardless whether you are consciously aware or not that it is so. In most of your cases, you are not consciously aware of your participation in these events. This is a necessary arrangement so that the human portion of your mind or of your nature would not interfere with this process. Also, that the renegades and their minions would not be able to prevent you from this important work.

This is one important event which is going on right now in the positive state or in our world. There is another important activity which is currently taking place on our side of the fence, so-to-speak. This activity doesn't have a direct relevance to anything related to the negative state or its non-life or to human life. As you remember from ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***, because of the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state in its non-life, many things have likewise been concealed from the members of the positive state.

Thus, the members of My positive state, for a long period of time — since the invention and activation of the negative state and its non-life — have been in the state of being deprived of very vital and crucial information about most everything related to the factors of My permission for the negative state and its non-life to be invented, activated and put into motion. Because of that, as you remember, even their life was somewhat restricted and limited by the restrictions and limitations imposed on them by the necessity of this permission of Mine. This was done primarily for security reasons.

However, there is another important reason why these limitations, restrictions and unavailability of crucial knowledge related to these issues

were necessary to establish. This reason is not related to security considerations. It relates to something which can be defined as preventing them from wanting or desiring to establish the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state. Such a desire, projected to the multiversal consciousness, would prevent the answers to all those questions related to the need to invent, activate and put into motion the non-life of the negative state and its human life. Not having proper answers to those existential questions, with projected desires and wants to be in the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state, would make it impossible to establish that kind of life forever. The reason for this outcome can be found in the fact of freedom of choice to accept or to reject the idea about the denial that life can be derived from any other source other than the Absolute Source of Life — Me, The Lord Jesus Christ. This was an original setup of life in the positive state.

As you know, in order to be able to dispense with such an idea on a daily basis, a state, condition and process needed to be invented and put into motion which would enable that idea to fall out and, at the same time, which would illustrate and demonstrate a lifestyle congruent with the nature of that idea and its acceptance as the only feasible reality — hence, the negative state, human life and their non-life. In order to be able, in an opportune time or state, to get rid of that idea on a permanent basis, it was first necessary to give permission to establish a lifestyle which would be in accordance with the acceptance of the nature of that idea; meaning, fully identifying oneself with the very nature of that idea. The projected desire and want to establish the true life of the positive state in its fullness and completeness, would prevent this from happening. The paradox of this situation is in the fact that, if you desire and want to establish the fullness and completeness of the positive state with retention of that idea in your mind, — after all, it would have no place to fall out — you force yourself into the inevitable condition which would make it impossible for such a life to be established. For that reason, it was necessary to conceal many things from the members of the positive state about all these things in order to first give them an opportunity for the proper answering of all questions about the issues of life, non-life, belonging, dependence and everything else related to them.

At the present time, as you are being informed by Me about these facts, I have initiated a gradual and complete elimination of all these restrictions, concealments and limitations which were imposed on the members of My positive state due to the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state, human life and their non-life. This is a tremendously important work. This work is necessary to accomplish first in order to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

build a firm foundation on which everyone everywhere and everywhen will be brought to where they belong — to Me and My positive state. This process, which is taking place right now, and which will continue for a long period of time and non-time, has a direct relevance to the closing of this cycle of time/state/condition/process, to the instituting of the interim period and to the opening of the next cycle of time/state/condition/process — as it was revealed in the One Hundredth Dialog (100). As a result of this process, all gaps in the knowledges of the members of the positive state are in the process of being permanently eliminated. You have no idea how much this elimination will be able to enhance and enrich everyone's life in the positive state once these gaps are permanently removed. So, the process of this removal has begun. And these are the major events which are taking place in our world right now.

Peter: Thank You very much for this important and meaningful information.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. We temporarily interrupted your conscious isolation and inaccessibility to us, in order to bring these important facts to your personal attention as well as to the attention of all readers of these Dialogs. It would be difficult to surmise by the human aspect of your nature the immense importance and significance of this information. Let Me assure you that it is important and that it is needed to be conveyed to you all because it will establish a certain condition in your life, on your inner level, which will change your own perspective about everything related to life in general and to your individual, unique and different 'I am' in particular.

Peter: I understand and I appreciate this information very much. Is there anything else that You would like to convey to us at this time?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, there is. It has some relevance to our discussion about life and non-life as outlined above. It also causes you, as well as some other readers of these Dialogs, a problem. These are the questions that were going through your mind. As you remember, throughout these Dialogs, it was mentioned several times that no matter what is going to happen to you, especially and particularly on the level of your physical health, it will not be life-threatening. And yet, it became obvious that, especially in your particular case, Peter, you, as well as some others of My representatives, developed a so-called life-threatening physical condition. Do your physical conditions contradict My statements that no such things will be experienced by you because you are fully protected from anything of this nature happening to you?

An example of this situation is a good illustration of how some statements and their meanings are taken, either in absolutes or they are narrowly applied to the specifics of human life. Please remember, we are talking here about life-threats. What kind of life are we talking about? Are we talking about the life of your physical body or about your life as such which has nothing in common with the so-called physical body's life? There are several possibilities here. In the case of your physical body's life, despite the fact that some of you went through the most trying times, experiencing so-called life-threatening conditions (cancer), you still continue to live in your physical bodies and you fully function in the manner and way you agreed to function, carrying on with your mission and assignment. Just look at your condition, Peter. Your physical condition was one of the gravest and the most serious one, although Heather's and Ernest's cancers were also serious and complicated. Yet, despite that, you are still here and you still have some dialoging with Me, recording these latest Dialogs and you still continue working on preparing these Dialogs for publishing, spending at least half your day in this important work. Even though it is physically very tiresome work for you, nevertheless, you continue to do your best. So, in essence, even from this standpoint, the negative state failed to turn your life-threatening condition into your physical demise.

The other aspect of this situation can be found in the fact of our mutual agreement about the means and the ways you are to leave planet Zero after you are recalled. In some cases, your life-threatening physical illness can and may be utilized for your recall. If the time comes for you to be recalled by this mode, your condition will lead to the termination of your physical body's life. After all, you cannot live forever in your human life, because of its transience and temporality. For that reason, there has to be some mode by which you leave your body and return to your home base. However, there is another, more spiritual aspect of this dilemma. If you take into consideration what was outlined above about the issues of the true life and non-life, then, in that case, what kind of life are we talking about? Is your life in the physical body a true life? By no means is it a true life. Your true life is the life of your spirit and soul which can never be in a position of being threatened with the purpose in mind to lose their life. Because life of your spirit and soul derives directly from My Absolute Life, it can never experience any type of life-threatening condition. The negative state has absolutely no means or ways to threaten that life no matter how many devices it comes up with in order to destroy your true life. So, in this sense, your life is indestructible. And this is in actuality what was meant by My statement about not having a life-threatening condition. Your problem in this respect was that, as in many other cases,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

you took that statement of Mine literally and not spiritually and you narrowly applied it or reduced it to your physical bodies. This is a common mistake that all humans make. In your case, as long as you look at these things from the aspects of your human nature, you are prone to misinterpret such statements in a typical human fashion. This is the proverbial issue of looking at things at or on the scene and not behind it. In this sense, you can say that whenever you reduce the meaning of life to only the human aspects of your bodily life, you are looking at life as it appears on or at the scene. In this respect, it only *appears* as the real life but, in the true reality which is hidden behind the scene, it is not life but only non-life.

It is very easy for you to fall into the trap of human's consideration of what the true life is all about. They consider their human life as the only life possible and feasible. This is the falsity and illusion of their perception and understanding. Therefore, as My true representatives, you need to learn to look on the issue of life and living in a much broader sense and from an entirely different perspective than the typical humans have. If you continue to think about your life in terms of its human aspects, especially in terms of your body being alive, you are setting yourself up to be targeted by the renegades and their minions. After all, looking at life in this narrow human conceptualization, means looking on it from the position of the externals. In that case, you disregarded the spiritual connotation of life and living. Any disregard for its spiritual connotation, places you in the negative state. Hence, the possibility of being targeted by the renegades and their minions. It is high time for you, as My true representatives, to start looking at your life as a spiritual entity that is indestructible and that cannot be threatened by anyone or anything. Its human aspects, the aspects of the human body, can and may be subject to such threats. However, in that case, what is being threatened here is not the true and genuine indestructible life but only non-life, which appears to the limited human senses to be as the real and true life but which, in fact, is not, never was and never will be. And this is the real truth. So, as you see from this discourse, no contradiction exists between My statement about life-threatening conditions and your situation at any time during your tour of duty on planet Zero.

It is very important to realize that one of the most important aspects of your role, position, assignment and lifestyle, as My true representatives, is to permanently dispense with your typical human tendency to evaluate everything, to look at everything and consider everything, no matter what it is, from your typical human perspective. My New Revelation tells you very clearly that the human perspective is false, that it has no truth or

understanding about how things are or what they are or why they are the way they are. The tendency of the typical human nature is to look at all things from their external position without being able to penetrate to the very essence and substance of all and everything. Because of that, humans, throughout their entire history, have never been able to come to any correct or right conclusions about anything at all. Their conclusions in this respect have been either pure distortions of the true reality of anything at all or they were totally and completely false. Unfortunately, whoever possesses the typical human nature, no matter in what degree and to what extent, by the structure of that nature, and by the setup on which the human life was initially established, 'naturally' and genetically inclines to see things in a distorted and/or false manner. This is a true tragedy of human life which led humanity to many disasters and irreconcilable misunderstandings and misinterpretations of anything at all.

Now, as My true representatives, your role in this respect is to learn to totally and completely dispense with looking at things the way the majority of humanity does. After all, why do you think I made you, and you agreed by your own free will and choice, to become My true representatives? To establish a lifestyle in which, during its manifestation, you look at everything and everyone in their true essence and substance. In other words, you look at everything from a purely spiritual perspective and not from the external human perspective. This spiritual perspective, which perceives and apprehends all events in their true spiritual nature, the way they really are, needs to be illustrated, demonstrated and established in human life by someone who lives on planet Zero in order to make it possible for humans, when the time is right, to get rid of their accursed tendency to disregard or never even consider the true spiritual factors of life. They need to learn very fast that in their typical human perspective, nothing is contained which reflects the true undistorted and non-falsified reality of anything at all. And because in their typical human nature they approach even the spiritual issues from the position of their externals, for that reason, nothing in their understanding of these spiritual factors has any merit, because it is either totally distorted or totally false. As you know, this situation with humans led to nothing else but what humanity has been experiencing throughout their bloody, abominable and atrocious history. As long as you cling to the typical human perspective, looking at everything and everyone from the human aspects of your nature, you are, inadvertently, supporting the distortions and falsities of human non-life. Thus, you are reaffirming the typical human lifestyle. In order for you to get rid of this tendency on a permanent basis, you are advised, as My true representatives, first of all,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

to **unchoose**, by your own free will and choice, to be, to act, to behave, to relate, to look at, to consider, and anything else, as typical humans do. Because of your different rewiring, you have the ability to do so. You may, if you wish, ask Me to help you in your effort to dispense with your tendencies to be like other humans are. As you know, having the typical human nature as well as and in addition to your different rewiring, it is not an easy task to avoid being a typical human. But it can be done and it can be done if you continuously, on a daily basis, reaffirm that you are My representatives and that you belong to My positive state and to Me Personally.

Secondly, as My true representatives, you are to make an all-out effort to open your mind and heart to the spiritual reality of life, any life. You are to learn to evaluate all things only from the spiritual perspective of life. By doing that, and as it has been mentioned many times before, you are setting up a very important example for the rest of humanity about how they should look at all things and happenings in their own life. Unless you do the same in your own life, you would not be able to transcend your typical human tendency to look at things the way they are, at or on the scene and not behind it. This issue is very important to realize. The time is very ripe for you to establish a lifestyle congruent with being My true representatives. And this is all that I wanted to convey to you in this particular Dialog. As far as your condition is concerned, Peter, we are very fast approaching the time of the final determination and decision about your destiny — staying on planet Zero or being recalled from it. In the meantime, be patient and endure to the very end. If the need arises to have some more dialoging during this interim period, you will know intuitively and you will record another Dialog(s), as needed and if needed. So, go in peace.

Peter: Thank You very much for this great opportunity to dialog with You. It was a great pleasure. I felt useful again.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. However, I want you to be aware that you are useful even without recording our dialogs. Even though at the level of your external conscious life, you feel inactive and non-useful, even when you read or watch television or do nothing, you are very much useful on other levels of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. Never forget that.

Peter: I'll take it under consideration and do my best to remember this fact. Thank You again. Until the next time.

One Hundred and Twenty Fourth Dialog

March 14, 2000

Peter: I understand that You would like to continue in the discussion of the issues raised in the previous Dialog (123) as well as to give an interpretation to and explanation of the real meaning of the statements made by the Pope of the Roman Catholic Church. Am I correct?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, you are right. First of all, we need to discuss further the issues of life as such, in general and the individual, unique and different 'I am' and its own private life, in particular. After that we may address the significance of the Pope's statement — if any.

As you remember from the previous Dialog, one of the most important questions that every created sentient entity had in mind at that time and non-time, was whether their understanding and definition of life is the correct one, and whether their individual, unique and different 'I am' is really so. In this respect, the issue was not only whether their life is the life of the positive state but whether what they experience is really life as such. How can you know whether what you have and what you experience is really life and whether your perception that you are in possession of the true individual, unique and different 'I am' is really the correct one? Against what could you compare what you have and who you are in your 'I am' if nothing different is available to you in order to make such a comparison?

There is a dependency factor between life and everyone's 'I am.' As you remember, the conscious awareness of having self-awareness, that is to say, of being aware that you are 'I am,' constitutes the awareness as containing life as such. After all, if I am aware that I am in my own being and existence, therefore, I must be alive or have life in order to be able to conceive and perceive myself as having life. So, whenever we are talking about life as such and about 'I am' as a carrier of that life, it is obvious that life cannot be and exist without its carrier, and the carrier of that life cannot be and exist without its life. Hence, the mutual dependency. Of course, that was not the question. We are emphasizing this issue here only for the purpose of giving you a clear perception and understanding, that life and 'I am' are inseparable and one without the other is not conceivable or deducible. So, in this case, the question was whether life as such is really life or something else and, thus, by approximation and interdependency, whether 'I am' is really 'I am' or something else. Can something like non-life and non-'I am,' as well as non-being and non-existence, be and exist in its own condition and process without having

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

any connection or relevance to that which is called life and 'I am?' And if it can, what would it be like as compared to something which is called life and 'I am?' Is such a condition possible at all?

The problem with this issue for the sentient mind is in the fact that not being absolute in its own state, condition and process, and not being the source or the origin of its own life and its 'I am,' by that factor, it cannot have the absolute knowledge about whether what it experiences as life and 'I am' is really so or not so. It could even be something else. You see, Peter, not being the source or the origin of its own life and of its own 'I am,' the sentient mind finds itself in the possibility of doubting about whether it really has life and possesses its own 'I am' on which the perception and apprehension of life is possible and conceivable. The central issue and problem here is in the factor of not being its own origin or source of its own life and 'I am.' If you are not the origin or source of yourself and your 'I am,' that is to say, of that in you which is called life, then how can you be sure that what you have is really life? After all, you are not the one who gave yourself life and your life was not from, by, in and of yourself. Instead, you have a clear perception that it came and was imparted on you from Someone else. That you can conceive yourself as 'I am' at all, or that you can say the word 'I' at all, was, thus, dependent on Someone Who is that way in, by, of and from His/Her Absolute 'I AM.'

Because in no way are you the origin or source of that life in you and of that 'I am' in you, you have no experiential foundation or basis on which you can acquire any true knowledge of what and how it is to be the origin or source of life and your own 'I am' from yourself, in yourself, by yourself and of yourself. Such a condition can and may induce doubts into your mind about whether what you have and what you experience is really life and your 'I am.' So, how do you go about finding out whether life as such and your 'I am' are really what they are supposed to be or whether they are something else entirely? After all, there is nothing else out there or within you which is different from and independent of that which is called life in general and your 'I am' in particular. Under these conditions, you are stuck with only one mode of perception and experience. One mode, by the logic of being the only one, does not give you any other choice or option, or any other experience. Thus, you have nothing else available which would give you the assurance that what you have and the way you are is really the true reality of your experiential mode of having life and being your true 'I am.' Hence, doubts in your mind about these important issues.

To live in the state of continuous doubts, no matter to what such doubts are related, means to be uncertain about anything at all. To have them, means not only to limit your creative efforts but the life energies themselves are being wasted, limiting your ability to fully utilize them for some other, more creative purposes and, most importantly, for your growth, betterment and spiritual progression. In that case, your doubts are in your way of experiencing life and your 'I am' in their fullness and completeness. Any dispensation of energies for something which is not integral to or for such an establishment, precludes the experience of life and one's 'I am' in their fullness and completeness. To live like that is a poor approximation of true living.

In order to circumvent this grave situation, it was necessary to permit the sentient mind to experiment with some other options. Because, in this case, the issue was whether life as such is really life and whether the 'I am' of that life is really the 'I am,' the direction which this experiment had to take place, was to invent and establish something which does not derive from, is not originated in or is the source of that something, in this case of life and 'I am.' To prove the point that the sentient entity really has life and its own 'I am,' and that it is capable of originating something or being the source of something from, by, in and of itself in exactly the same way as that sentient entity and its life and 'I am' originated from Someone else, it embarked on the invention, development and production of that something which had nothing in common or which was not coming from the same source and origin from which that sentient mind came. In other words, it invented, developed, produced and put into motion something which came from its own self. And because the sentient entity, by the factor of its own creation from and by the Absolute Source, became relative to that Absolute Source, being relative in its nature and 'I am,' it invented, developed and established something which became relative to its own relative condition, state and process. This is how relative to only relative came about, to become and to begin its own development, manifestation and exhibition. It became a foundation on which the non-life of the negative state and its human life could be established.

In assessing and evaluating this process, it becomes clear that if you want to invent, establish and manifest something which is entirely different from that which you have and what you experience as life and your 'I am,' then, in that case, in order for it to be different, having nothing in common with the available modes of being and existence, it must preclude from its nature anything at all which is contained in the nature of the currently available and experienced condition. Because it has nothing whatsoever in common with the original mode of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

experiencing life and 'I am,' and because the original mode was called the true life, the positive state and the true 'I am,' for that reason it becomes non-life, the negative state and false pretentious 'I am,' designated as the ego. Thus, the replacement of the genuine and true life, of the genuine and the true 'I am,' and of the genuine and true positive state, with the non-life, with the negative state and with the ego, came to its adverse fruition.

If the positive state is founded on the true life, and on the true individual, unique and different 'I am,' in that case, the negative state must be founded on non-life and on ego states which are common to all and everything situated in the non-life and which precludes any notion of individuality, uniqueness and difference. Once such a non-life was established, and once it began the manifestation, illustration and demonstration of its true nature, all sentient entities in being and existence, were given an opportunity to compare their original life and their original 'I am' with something which does not contain anything from the original. For that reason, they now have tangible knowledge of what it is to be in the original and the other non-original condition. Because they are able to analyze the non-original non-life and clearly see what its nature is, it gives them a logical foundation on which they can make appropriate conclusions about the nature of the true life and its true 'I am,' and the nature of non-life and its ego states (the ego states were replacements for the original 'I am'). By the process of this analysis, they are able to be convinced that the original life and the original 'I am' are the true life and the true 'I am.' Therefore, from this conclusion it logically follows that they truly have life as such and that that life is rooted in their unique, different and individual 'I am.' For that reason, their 'I am' is truly 'I am' and not some kind of unrealistic construct that has no bearing in any reality.

So, as you see from this example, the genuine and original 'I am' needed to be repressed and forgotten and replaced with something which would have nothing in common with it. Thus, it was replaced with the ego (with the stinky ego, as you like to say, Peter). If the original and genuine 'I am' stems from the Absolute 'I AM,' which was defined as Absolute Positiveness, then the ego would have to have the totally opposing quality. The opposing quality to the Absolute Positiveness is total and complete negativeness. As you see, we did not say — absolute negativeness. The reason for this is in the fact that this negativeness did not originate in the Absolute Positiveness. As mentioned many times before, the Absolute Positiveness cannot contain anything of negativeness because, otherwise, it would not be Absolute Positiveness. If the negativeness did not originate from the Absolute Positiveness, in

that case, it cannot have anything within its nature which is contained in the Absolute Positiveness and its 'I AM' or any other positive 'I am.' For that reason, logically speaking, the ego does not contain anything positive or good. Therefore, its nature is purely and completely negative, which opposes anything which is good and positive as contained in the true life and its 'I am.' If this is so, and the nature of the ego's non-life clearly testifies that it is so, then, in that case, the ego is a carrier of non-life of the negative state and its human life. And because its origin can be traced to the relative sentient entities, its non-life has only relative duration and cannot stay forever in the same way and manner as the true 'I am,' the origin of which can be traced to the Absolute Life and its Absolute 'I AM' — The Lord Jesus Christ.

Now, why are we talking about these seemingly obscure, unimportant and abstract concepts that have no apparent or obvious relevance to anything presently going on or to your own individual lives and your 'I am'? As you remember from ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***, it was stated there (Chapter 7) that before the negative state and its non-life and human life could be permanently and eternally eliminated, the process of its activation needs to be recapitulated from A to Z. The reason for this requirement is in the fact that, in order for that non-life, and everything related to it and its nature to have a chance to demonstrate and illustrate all its aspects, it was necessary to conceal the reason for its invention, activation and realization. Otherwise, no proper learning for the purpose of comparison between life as such and its 'I am' and non-life and its ego could take place. Because of this requirement, it was necessary to repress the proper knowledge about who or what was the originating source of this non-life and its ego states. As you know, many various surmises existed or came to everyone's attention about this issue. However, none of them were/are true. If you are not aware of this origin and the reasons for the need to have something like the negative state and its non-life and ego states, you cannot eliminate it because its origin is put in the wrong source.

For that reason, at one point in time and non-time, when everything about this issue is about to be fulfilled, the reasons for, origin and the source of the negative state and its non-life and ego states are gradually, in certain steps and increments, being revealed. One of the major purposes for which My New Revelation is given to all in the positive state, and for which it is made available to everyone in the negative state and to all humans, is to bring to everyone's attention why the negative state and its non-life, human life and their ego states were permitted to be invented, activated and put into motion, and who or what was their originating source.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

The point here to realize is that not having proper knowledge about these facts, having only distorted or totally false views about them, makes it impossible to do anything about the process of their total and eternal elimination. If you have distorted or false knowledge about anything, because it is distorted and false, as long as you have it, the negative state cannot be eliminated. After all, the non-life of the negative state and its ego, as well as of human life, is rooted in distortions and falsities. They cannot have any other concepts because their pseudo-being and pseudo-existence was built on denial, rejection and elimination of anything contained in the positive state, its true life and their 'I am.' Therefore, if the positive state, or life as such, and its 'I am' are founded on the principle of truth and rightness, in that case, the opposing factors could be nothing else but distortions and falsities. For that reason, as long as you have distorted or false views about these facts, you are in the negative state, you are the negative state, you have non-life, and instead of 'I am,' you have ego states.

One of the most important works in this respect, which is being conducted by the members of the New Universe and by the converted pseudo-creators, as well as by you, My true representatives on planet Zero, is to bring to everyone's attention in the non-life of the negative state and in the human non-life, and making available to everyone, the factor of 'I am' versus their ego. Everyone in the negative state and human life is fallaciously convinced that their ego is either interchangeable with 'I am' or it is the true and the only possible 'I am.' At this time it is brought to their attention that it is not so and that the true life has never been rooted in their ego. And not only that, but their ego is the source of many, if not most, of their problems. And at the same time, they are being given an opportunity to dispense with their egos, by rejecting the pseudo-fact that their ego has any true life in itself and by itself. Whoever acknowledges and agrees with the process of this dispensation, is put into a condition under which his/her original 'I am,' buried and repressed deeply in their unconsciousness, but which, at the same time, is the source of their ability to conceive themselves as being alive and having life, — although originally, they denied this fact — to be awakened and to become the true identity of their own uniquenesses, differences and individualities; thus, to begin their life, once again, in the true life and their genuine 'I am.'

What you have to understand clearly, Peter, in this respect is that, in the original process of the invention, activation and establishment of the non-life and non-'I am,' in order to be able to succeed in this effort, it was necessary to repress, suppress, encapsulate and arrest the true 'I am' and put it into an inaccessible mode as related to the conscious mind so

that no one in the non-life would have any knowledge and access to most important information about who they are and what the true life is all about. As you know, only from the position of the true 'I am' the clear knowledge of one's identity, of one's uniqueness, difference and individuality, as well as of the meaning of one's life, as well as what life in general is all about, could be conceived, understood, apprehended, recognized and accepted. So, as long as you are aware of and have full access to your 'I am,' no possibility exists to invent, activate and establish any other type of life, that is to say, non-life, but only the true life of the positive state. In order to succeed in this effort, for the purpose of having a comparison between life as such and its true 'I am' on one hand, and non-life and non-'I am' on the other hand, it was necessary to somehow dispense with that 'I am.' However, it was not sufficient to only dispense with it, or to be more precise, to close any access to it, but it was very vital to substitute it with something which would resemble, to a certain extent, the original 'I am' but which, in its true nature, would have nothing in common with the nature of the true 'I am.' And not only that, but which would contain everything in its nature that would be opposing anything of which the true 'I am' consists. Only by such an invention, could the possibility for activation and establishment of non-life and its ego, or fake 'I am' come to its adverse fruition. As you see from these facts, the ego became a fake 'I am.' The reason why we are designating the ego as the fake 'I am,' is because it was necessary to deceive everyone in the non-life by convincing them that their ego is, in fact, their true 'I am.' After all, from the position of their ego, they are able to say 'I am.' But saying it is one thing and being that way is a totally different matter. That their ego has nothing in common with the true 'I am' can be discerned from the fact that no one in human life and in any region of the Zone of Displacement and all its Hells has absolutely any proper and correct knowledge, or no knowledge at all, of who they are and why they are where and when they are. As you remember from Update 15 in the ***Corollaries...***, if they were to know clearly who they are, in that case, their individual non-life in particular and the non-life of the negative state in general would simply cease to exist. Or it could not be invented, activated and established in the first place.

As you see from these logical facts, it is obvious that in order to do anything about the negative state, non-life, human life and their ego states, you first need to rectify this situation about not properly and correctly knowing what, why and who was the originating source of non-life and ego states. This is the very first round in the process of this elimination. This round is the most needed foundation on which this process of elimination is being accomplished. In human life, you, as My true representatives, are to learn about these facts so that you may

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

establish the necessary condition for making them available to the entirety of humanity. And not only that, but also to the entirety of all those pseudo-worlds where this non-life and egos are flourishing and thriving. Whereas for humans proper, and all other inhabitants of planet Zero, this knowledge, for the time being, will be in a state of availability, registered in the deep recesses of their unconscious mind, for those creatures and others in the Zone of Displacement, who are connected to you and who acquire this crucial knowledge by the process of your reading this information, it is registered directly in their conscious mind in the same manner as for you, My representatives, who read these words. Also, for everyone in the positive state, in all its worlds and dimensions, this information is immediately registered in their conscious minds (of course, they don't have an unconscious mind!).

So, as you see from these facts, although at first glance whatever is being revealed here and in the previous Dialog (123) and in some other Dialogs, and in The New Revelation in general, which deals with this issue, seems to be abstract and intangible, seemingly without any practical application, in the true reality of its content, the opposite is true. It is the most needed information for all in order to begin the process of the elimination of the negative state, its non-life, human life in its negative aspects and ego states. And you, as My true representatives, are the carriers and reflectors of this vital, crucial and important information and knowledge. You have no idea, from the standpoint of your human mind, what it means to herald and carry this knowledge and information to all who are connected to you. Remember this and do not underestimate our philosophical discussions. And this brings us to the issue of the Pope's statement. As you know, a few days ago the Pope of the Roman Catholic Church asked for forgiveness of all humanity for all the sins (atrocities and abominations) that the Roman Catholic Church managed to commit during the last two thousand years. Is there any spiritual significance in his statement? And if there is, what is it and how does it relate to whatever is contained in these Dialogs and in My New Revelation in general?

Two important aspects and meanings could be derived from the Pope's statement. The first one relates to something which was repeated many times in these Dialogs and which concerns your work of making all the information and knowledges contained in My New Revelation available to humanity. The first impact of this availability, which is a precursor of the total and complete elimination of the negative state and human life in its negative aspects, was the admission by the Pope that his church sinned or committed unspeakable atrocities against humanity (in whatever form and degree). If something like the church, which supposes

to be the embodiment and carrier of the most important aspects of the spiritual life and its truth and good, is capable of such atrocious and abominable deeds as the Roman Catholic Church committed during the two millennia, then, in that case, that church in particular, and religion in general, is the invention of the Hells and does not contain any truth or any good within its own establishment. This is the very first grain of truth which is being brought to everyone's attention in human life and in the negative state. That this step was possible to make at all in the first place, is thanks to everything which was revealed in My New Revelation and especially in these Dialogs. Without their availability, it would be utterly impossible to conceive the idea by the Pope, that his church, which has been considered infallible in its activities and doctrines, could have sinned. This is the positive outcome of his statement and admission, as well as the availability of My New Revelation and these Dialogs. And more will be coming in this respect. Now the entire humanity, through the statement of the Pope, has conscious knowledge about the truth of the matter, seeing things as they are and not as they were fed by their respective religion.

The second aspect has a negative connotation. Although the Pope admitted — and asked humanity for forgiveness — that his church sinned, nevertheless, he failed to bring to everyone's attention the reasons behind his church's atrocious deeds. And what is behind such abominable behavior and deeds as those committed by the Roman Catholic Church, as well as all other churches? It can be found in their doctrines, teachings and dogmas which contain nothing but pure distortions and falsities about all spiritual issues; about Who I AM and what My True Nature is all about; about the nature of the positive state, the nature of the negative state and the nature of the human life. Such distortions and falsities fully justify any deeds that the respective churches have been committing and will be committing as long as they hold on to their respective doctrines, teachings and dogmas. The Pope did not show any inclination to denounce the Roman Catholic Church's doctrines, dogmas and teachings. And this is a trap of the negative state and the renegades. As long as you are holding on to all these distortions and falsities, nothing internally has changed. Only external change is made possible by such proclamations and admissions. However, such change does not count because that change was not internalized and therefore, has no power for real change to take place. You can consider this situation as a deception of humanity because now the negative state will seem to be so sincere, virtuous, humble and remorseful over everything that it unleashed on the entire Creation. And because the causative reasons and factors for all its atrocities and abominations, as reflected in the life of the Roman Catholic Church, as well as in all other

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

churches, are not being brought to anyone's attention and consequently are not being removed and replaced with the Absolute Truth, no true changes are taking place. In fact, the opposite is true: Now by admission and proclamation of their sins and by being seemingly repentant, they only reaffirm in the mind of humanity, that their teachings, doctrines and dogmas are correct and they do reflect the true reality of the positive state, of the spiritual principles, of My True Nature, of the meaning of the negative state and of the meaning of human life. After all, if they were not, they would never be able to come up with such a positive and desirable admission and proclamation.

So, as long as all churches continue to hold on to their teachings, doctrines and dogmas unabated, no matter how many proclamations and admissions they make about their sins, and no matter how repentant they seem to be, nothing has changed in their mode of life. In fact, by this factor, they are very potently contributing to the pseudo-winning of the negative state on planet Zero and elsewhere. And this is the mentioned trap set up by the renegades by the means of the Pope's statement and proclamation. It is heralding the installment of the final phase in the process of the pseudo-winning of the negative state. Therefore, don't be taken in by any of that. The negative state has always been in the business of trying to convince people how good and virtuous it is. Otherwise, people would not accept it. A good example of this effort can be found in something like exorcism, performed by some Catholic priests and others on so-called possessed people. This issue was originally raised by Dan of New York, shortly before your physical problems and misery started, Peter. The way you have to understand such deeds and exorcism is in the manner as described above in those two aspects. The positive connotation of such an act, no matter who performs it and from what doctrinal position it is being performed, is in the fact of the illustration and demonstration that the negative state truly exists, and that its members are able, in some limited cases, to possess some humans who agreed, by their prior agreement, to illustrate this fact. At the same time, this fact illustrates that one can be freed from such possession and thus, one can begin to lead a normal life without being restricted by such possession. This is the positive aspect.

However, such acts have more negative aspects than positive ones. The way you have to understand this statement is in the fact that the negative state always needed to present itself to its followers as a charitable and virtuous establishment. Otherwise, it could not be accepted by anyone. So, in this respect, it allows its demons or evil and negative spirits, whatever the case may be, to enter a human body for the sole purpose of being exorcised by the means of religious rituals so

that, first of all, the negative state could be perceived only in a positive connotation; and secondly, and most importantly, to confirm the verity of all teachings, doctrines and dogmas, on which the respective churches are built. After all, if a priest, or any other member of the clergy, by using the doctrines, dogmas and teachings of his/her respective church, is able to exorcise a demon or an evil and negative spirit from the human body, especially if it is done in the name of God, or in this case, in the name of the Father, Son and Holy Spirit/Ghost, or Jesus Christ or whatever names they use, then, in that case, all the teachings, doctrines and dogmas of their respective churches must be true. Otherwise, the exorcism would not work.

And this is how the trap by the negative state is set up in order to keep humans and other creatures and sub-creatures of their domain in thick darkness about the real truth related to My Nature, to the nature of My positive state, to the nature of the negative state and to the nature of human life. For this reason, the rulers of the negative state allowed not only that such exorcisms could be successful, but, in fact, they devised them to be that way in order to perpetuate their cause ad infinitum. So, it is not as if one faction is trying to defeat another faction of the negative state, as the case could be in many other instances, but, as you see from the above, it is a well-devised subterfuge in order to keep everyone in their domain and in human life as they are, without allowing them to see any truth of this, or any other matter. So, to summarize, unless any such acts are done from the position of My New Nature and by the means of My New Revelation, they are of purely negative origin and their purpose is to make it impossible for anyone in the negative state and human life to convert to the positive state. Such acts are specifically devised for this purpose. If they work, no one would even think about conversion to the positive state because, by the factor of the seemingly positive aspects and outcomes of such acts, they would consider themselves to be in the positive state. Concrete examples speak a billion times louder than any words. After all, if such exorcisms are allowed or even set up by the rules of the negative state, then, in that case, the negative state is truly the positive one. And this is how the negative state's subterfuge works — by presenting to people the negative state as the positive one so that no one would have any inclination or desire to change anything about their pseudo-life or non-life. Again, I repeat, do not be taken in by any of that. There are many such devices, concocted by the members of the negative state, and now by the renegades and their minions, by which they are trying to keep their members and humans where they are without even considering an option that some other type of life, totally different from their non-life, really exists or is available for conversion to it. The issue here is very clear: It all boils down to the distortions and falsities

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

contained in all teachings, dogmas and doctrines of the respective churches and religions. Because such teachings, dogmas and doctrines are presented to their members as inspired by or coming from God, Jesus Christ, Allah, Buddha, Krishna or whatever name they use for that purpose, in their mind and view, they must be irrefutable and true in all its aspects. Nothing else is feasible or even desirable. As long as people hold on to incorrect, distorted and false views about My True Nature and everything related to it, as well as to who they really are and what their nature is, as well as what the nature of the positive state, the negative state and human life are all about, their membership in the negative state, or in non-life and in non-‘I am’ is assured on a continuous and uninterrupted basis.

And here comes the role that you, as My true representatives on planet Zero, are to undertake. By being in possession of this important knowledge, related to all proper spiritual factors of life as such, and related to My New Nature, to My Absolute ‘I AM’ and your true ‘I am,’ to the nature of human life and the negative state in general, and by applying it in all aspects of your life, you are setting up an important example for all humans and other creatures and sub-creatures of the negative state, about what the truth of this matter is all about. By doing that, you are preparing them to recognize and to see, at one point in time, that their views about all these matters were pure distortions and falsities. By making a proper comparison between what you have and what they have, they will be able to make a right decision in this respect and give up their non-life, their non-‘I am’ — their ego, and to reacquire the true life, life as such, and rediscover their true ‘I am.’ By such rediscovery, they will see very clearly that they belong to the positive state or to the true life and thus, ultimately, to Me. As you see from these facts, your role in this respect is very important, more important than you can surmise by your conscious mind or by the human aspects of your nature. As long as you continue in studying and applying everything contained in all sources of My New Revelation in your personal, individual, unique and different life, you are fulfilling your mission for which you agreed to be on planet Zero in the typical human life. And this is all I wanted to convey to you all at this time.

Peter: Thank You very much for this revelation. I enjoyed and appreciated it very much. Is there anything else that You would like to convey today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. No, not today. We’ve had enough for now. You need to rest because of your fragile physical condition.

One Hundred and Twenty Fifth Dialog

March 17, 2000

Peter: Something unusual is going on in my perception or sense. I understand that it relates to something happening in the spiritual world rather than on planet Zero and in the Zone of Displacement, although with possible future ramifications for them as well. Somehow it is reflected in my present spiritual and physical condition. Also, Dr. Beth Ann Voien requested a clarification on some terms which appear in the One Hundredth Dialog. Because I am presently having conscious access to You and to the members of my spiritual family, perhaps, it means that You would like to talk about these issues. Of course, as always, before answering my own request, maybe You would first like to talk about anything You deem appropriate at this particular time.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are very much right, Peter, about your feelings that something unusual is going on, on our side, which is reflected very strongly in the perceptible and obvious changes in your personal spiritual and physical condition. We'll talk about it a little later in this Dialog. And yes, Peter, I would like to talk about something else first before going into an explanation of your feelings and condition and into Beth Ann's request for clarification of certain terms which appear in the mentioned One Hundredth Dialog.

At this time I would like to touch upon the issue of balancing. This issue was raised many times in the books of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***. However, the present connotation of this word has a somewhat different meaning and connotation. It is not balancing of the positive state versus the negative state and vice versa, but it is something else. A better word to use in this respect would be — equalization of all principles that underlie the fullness and completeness of life of any individual anywhere, but particularly in the positive state and in the lives of My representatives on planet Zero. As you remember, and as it was mentioned many times before, the principle of equalization of all aspects of one's life and the life of the positive state is a major building block on which the true and genuine life of the positive state depends. This factor reflects the fact that everything in Me is in the state and process of Absolute Equalization. If all sentient entities in the positive state derive their life from My Absolute Nature, which, among many other things, is rooted in this crucial, vital and important equalization, then, in that case, they carry and reflect the same condition — striving for the total and complete equalization of everything that they

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

contain and of which they consist. This principle makes their life not only possible but harmonious, cohesive and well-balanced.

So, as you know, in order for the non-life of the negative state to come to its adverse fruition, it was necessary to recede from this arrangement. If the true life, or life as such, is based on the principle of equalization, and if the meaning of this life is rooted in making it possible for everything which is contained in this life to be equally manifested, actualized, realized and redistributed, then, in that case, the non-life of the negative state and its human non-life had to be founded on the totally opposite principle — non-equalization, lopsidedness, one-sidedness and giving preference to one principle over some other principle with which such an arrangement would underlie their own non-life. As long as you continue in and hold to life of equalization, it is impossible to invent, activate and establish anything which is contained in and is the nature of the non-life of the negative state.

Another point to realize here is that the true nature of the concept of 'I am,' and the true life of any 'I am,' is based on the principle of equalization of everything of which any 'I am' consists. For that reason, in order for anyone to be anyone, or in order that anyone could conceive and have the privilege of being one's own 'I am,' everything of which such 'I am' consists, must be in the state of continuous equalization and balancing. In the moment this fundamental principle is violated by whatever means and modes, that anyone and his/her 'I am' ceases to have the privilege of being what he/she is and who he/she is in his/her unique, different and individual 'I am.' In that moment, such a person loses his/her life and his/her true 'I am' and finds himself/herself in non-life and ego states. So, as you see from this fundamental principle, the non-life and its ego are founded on the total violation of all aspects of this principle. This is one of the many means by which it was possible to invent, activate and establish the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos.

In this respect you can say that the issue, besides other issues discussed in previous Dialogs, was in the establishment of the reality of equalization and balancing. The question was, once again, whether this condition of balancing and equalization is really one of the most underlying principles of the true life, or life as such, and 'I am,' and whether what all sentient entities experienced in this respect, at that time, was really something called equalization and balancing. Once again, the question was as follows: How could you know for sure, with one hundred percent certainty, that what you have and what you

experience and what underlies the possibility of your having this life and your own unique, individual and different 'I am,' really is so if you have no comparison with something which is not of such a nature? In other words, how could you know that your life and your 'I am' depends on and is rooted in the principle of equalization and balance if there is nothing out there which could convince you of the verity of this principle? After all, what is equalization and balance? How do you conceive, understand and apprehend these terms if there is nothing out there which is totally different from what you have or, better to say, what you are supposing that you have? Is your life and your 'I am' really rooted in these principles? How could you define them if you have no foundation or basis on which such a definition could be formulated?

This was a philosophical and mystical question which needed to be answered by only one mode which would be convincing and experientially accepted — by allowing the establishment of a lifestyle of non-life and its ego which would be built on the totally and completely opposite principle — nothing would be equalized and balanced within it and everything would be in total disarray and a contradiction to anything even remotely resembling something like equalization and balancing. At the same time, in order to successfully establish such non-life and egos, it was necessary for all participants in that non-life to establish two things: One, that no other true life exists at all; and two, whatever they have and experience is the only possible life, and the way they live their non-life is totally and completely a normal state of affairs. Nothing else is possible or feasible. This was a very necessary arrangement to have, in order to make such non-life with its egos possible at all. Any awareness of the principles of equalization and balance, and what and how it is to be in such a condition or state and process, would make void any attempt to establish anything which is contained in non-life and its ego on a permanent basis. At the same time, from the position of the members of the true life, or life as such, it was likewise necessary to temporarily conceal the real reasons for and the source and origin of the non-life of non-equalization and non-balance, so that no one in the true life would be disturbed by the direct knowledge of why such a thing as non-life was allowed or was permitted to come to its own non-life in the first place.

The reason for this necessary arrangement was in the fact that if such knowledge would be available to them or contained in their full memory, they would experience something which could not be an integral component of their true life and their 'I am' — guilt and remorse for allowing themselves to question the verity of their life and all conditions

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

under which that life could be established, actualized and realized. If they were to experience such emotions, they could no longer experience anything contained in the true life. In that case, they would automatically fall out into non-life — the negative state and the Zone of Displacement.

What you have to understand in this respect, if you can — and this is something new — that in My Absolute Foresight and Knowledge of all and everything, I was clearly able to foresee what kinds of questions would be asked or what kinds of doubts would enter the minds of the sentient entities, about their condition, their life and everything related to them. For that reason, I made foresightful arrangements and established favorable conditions for having the proper, experiential and convincing answers to all their possible questions and possible doubts by allowing something which would convince them beyond a shadow of a doubt that what they have and of what they consist, and on what foundation their true life and their 'I am' is built, are real and true.

This is the reason why the true origin of those questions and doubts was concealed from them and why the ways and the reasons for the establishment and manifestation of non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos were shrouded in great mystery until this time. All that everyone has known was that there is a true life, the true life of 'I am' and a non-life, human non-life and the non-life of non-'I am' or egos. Also, they have known on the positive side of the fence, that they have been able to compare their brand of true life, or life as such, with that which is contained in the non-life and the human non-life.

On the other hand, on the negative side of the fence, they have had no knowledge of how it is to be and to exist in something which is called the life of the positive state. If they were to know how it is on the positive side and what the positive state and its true life are all about, no possibility would exist for the non-life of the negative state and its human-life, as well as for their egos, to ever be established and manifested. In that case, the questions and doubts, which were entering the sentient minds, could have never been properly answered or resolved to their full satisfaction. If this were to be the case, the sentient mind would be continuously troubled by its doubts and uncertainties. Any such doubts and uncertainties would preclude for the true life to be fully lived, experienced and manifested. But why it was allowed for anything of this nature to happen like that or to be established like that, no one has known until this time. And not only that, but they all assumed that this arrangement will continue to eternity.

The reason that this impression was allowed to persist in everyone's assumptions until My New Revelation was made available to everyone, which deals with this important issue, was so that the impression of the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the non-life of the negative state and its human non-life would be that this is the way it is supposed to be to eternity, and no other arrangement is feasible or possible. Any knowledge of temporality and transience of their pseudo-life or non-life would invalidate the needed learning about their nature. There would be no incentive or motivation to continue in illustration and demonstration of such non-life. On the other hand, such full knowledge on the part of those who are situated in the true life of the positive state, would make it impossible for things to be the way as they have been; but, instead, everything would be **as if** and not **as is**. As you know, nothing of a crucial, vital and important nature can be learned from something which is **as if** and not **as is**.

This is the reason why in My Absolute Foresight I arranged things as they have been up to this point in order to give a full and complete opportunity for the manifestation of everything that was needed, to give answers to all possible questions and to alleviate all possible doubts in the sentient minds of all sentient entities who would be plagued by them. It is said they 'would be' and not that they were. This is the important issue of foresight. It was not necessary to wait until those questions and doubts would enter their minds. If such questions and doubts were allowed to fully enter their mind, they would fully nullify any possibility for their survival within the available frame of the true life, or life as such, of the positive state. Questions and doubts of this nature do not belong in the true life of the positive state because that life is based on total clarity and understanding of everything which is available to them. For that reason, in order to prevent the disintegration of the true life of the positive state, and preserve its integrity, I answered all their questions and doubts before they entered their minds subjectively, by arranging things within this cycle of time/state the way they have been up to this point.

Now, this is a very difficult concept to understand in the human aspect of your mind. As long as you think and conceive things in the temporal-spatial-linear manner, such concepts do not make too much sense, if any at all. However, don't forget for a second that all this was happening in a non-time and non-space condition. Therefore, the foresight about those questions and doubts in a non-time and non-space condition, as well as all those questions and doubts in themselves and by themselves, as they were to be asked and manifested by the sentient entities of that non-

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

time, were happening in a discrete mode of simultaneity and synchronicity. What does it mean — simultaneity and synchronicity? It means that in a discrete mode of occurrences they happen at the very same time/state. However, in the moment you apply them to the subjective perception of one's own being and existence as related to the Absolute State, they become sequential, one preceding the other or one succeeding the other. So, in the true reality of life, before this preceding and succeeding takes place, from the discrete mode of non-time and non-space, all answers are provided in the mode and condition in which the subjective perception of all events in the sentient minds is made possible — sequence, preceding and succeeding.

In the discrete mode, because of its simultaneous and synchronous nature, and because of the total separation of all their events from each other, it is possible and feasible to answer all questions and doubts, before they enter the sentient mind as applied to its subjective continuous mode. This is the reason why the existence of the non-life of the negative state and its human non-life was assumed as paralleling the true life of the positive state, and as being independent of each other, but also being as if they were in themselves and by themselves without any causative factors for their existence, especially on the side of the non-life of the negative state, as stemming from those questions and doubts; and, also, that this arrangement supposes to always be like it is and no changes will ever occur in the present mode of life and non-life. As you know, such assumptions are backed by all those statements in various so-called Holy Books such as, for example, in the Christian Bible.

As you can surmise from the above description, there is an objective discrete mode of being and existence, in which all things and events happen simultaneously and synchronously, being always independent of and separated from each other, having no contact but only by the means of mysterious correspondences; and then there is a subjective mode in which all things and events happen in a sequential and continuous mode being dependent on each other in a sense that one precedes the other and the other succeeds the preceding one. In the objective discrete mode, because everything in it happens always here-and-now, without a time or place factor, and because there is no direct and obvious interconnectedness amongst all of them, the possibility exists that all answers to any questions and doubts, which are occurring in the subjective mode of the sentient mind in a sequential and continuous mode, could be perceived as they are taking place before their actual entrance into the subjective mode of the sentient mind. The subjective continuous and sequential mode of the sentient mind is incapable of

directly perceiving anything which is taking place in the objective discrete mode. Therefore, in this mode, the sentient mind has very little or no knowledge about the simultaneous and synchronous occurrence of all questions and doubts entering it, and all the answers to them at the very same time, on the spot, so-to-speak, before they can enter the subjective mode of its perception.

However, because the subjective mode of the sentient mind's function is always geared toward perceiving things sequentially and in a continuous mode, whenever anything, which is occurring at the level of the discrete mode of simultaneity and synchronicity, enters this subjective mode, it is experienced as something which was, is and will be independent of that mind. In this case, it yields to the requirement of the subjective mode which needs to experience things as if they have been and will be from one time/state to another time/state. Hence, sequence and continuation instead of simultaneity and synchronicity. In the subjective mode of perception, things and events are going on as they are going on; whereas in the objective mode of perception, they are not going on and on and on, but they are always occurring at the very same time/state without any sense of precedence and succession.

Due to this fact, in the subjective mode of perception, there is no knowledge contained about how things and events are occurring or taking place in the objective mode of perception or its discreteness. However, because those events and happenings are always projected into the subjective mode from the objective mode, the objective mode knows exactly everything which is going on in the subjective mode. After all, all things originate in and are caused by everything which is occurring in the objective mode. But, in the moment they are projected into the subjective mode of perception, because this mode does not contain in its comprehensive and perceptual ability the ability to see things which are taking place in the objective discrete mode or reality, it has very little, or no knowledge of why and for what reasons things are happening the way they are happening and when and where they are happening. Because of that, you can say, that many things are concealed from the subjective mode of perception and reality.

As mentioned above, this arrangement was necessary to have in order to not disturb the subjective mode of the individualized, unique and different sentient mind and its 'I am' by the realization of the consequences, outcomes and results of the questions and doubts about the true life and everything else related to it, which would lead to the disintegration of their true life and the life of the positive state in

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

general. Because in the discrete mode of its perception things are happening simultaneously and synchronously, no danger exists for such disintegration to take place. It does not have any means or subjective personal time/state for being registered and acted upon at the level of the subjective mode of perception and reality.

However, this situation was established only on a temporary and transient basis. It was necessary to allow this particular structure — objective mode versus subjective mode — to come into place in order to make it possible for all such answers to be properly and experientially answered and for doubts to be dissipated. Otherwise, the negative state in its non-life and in its human non-life could never have come to its establishment and manifestation. In that case, without having such proper answers, all those questions and doubts would really enter the subjective mode of the sentient mind and they would cause such havoc to it that it could not survive their impact and realization about what kinds of consequences, outcomes and results the answers to them would have.

This structure and establishment is very typical of the current cycle of time/state/condition/process. This structure is in place only and only because of the need to answer all those questions and eliminate all those doubts. However, once these questions are fully and exhaustively answered; and once all doubts are turned into certainty that things are really the way they are supposed to be and life as such is really real life and nothing else; and that 'I am' is really 'I am' and no other condition; and that the foundation of Creation and the true sentient mind is really rooted in equalization and balance; and all else pertaining to the structure and nature of life as such; then it will no longer be necessary to maintain this structure and establishment. In that case, something new and entirely different will be coming into its being and existence. This new and different will underlie the nature, structure and manifestation of the next cycle of time/state/condition/process which will succeed the current one. Thus, you can say that in the new cycle of time/state, etc., there will be something like blending, integration, unification and oneness of the objective discrete mode and the subjective continuous mode. This new mode would not allow that any concealment, restriction, separation, isolation or anything of such an undesirable nature, continue to plague the true life of the positive state and its sentient entities.

Here we have something which you, Peter, called unusual and mysterious at the beginning of this Dialog. Yes, at the present time something very unusual and mysterious is taking place at all levels of My Creation. It is triggered by all this valuable, new and unusual

information contained in these Dialogs — especially in those Dialogs that deal with the issues of why it was so needed and necessary for Me to permit the invention, activation and establishment of non-life of the negative state, human non-life and ego states. Gradually and slowly, this knowledge is becoming available to everyone everywhere and everywhen. No longer will anyone be deprived of this important knowledge, without which the closure of this cycle of time/state/condition/process, institution of the transitional period, release of the new and different aspect of My New Nature and the opening of the next cycle of time/state/condition/process, would be utterly impossible.

This is the reason why it is so important to deal with these issues by the means of these Dialogs even though, at first glance, they seem to be too abstract, too difficult to understand by the human portion of your mind, and too impractical for you to be considered. As you see from these facts, the exact opposite is true: They are the most needed and the most practical issues that you can have.

So, the unusual things which are taking place right now in the positive state, are that everyone is being informed about these important facts directly and that gradually, based on this revelation, the process of integration of their objective and subjective mode of perception is being instituted. Such an integration is a necessary prerequisite if the full knowledge about why and how the non-life of the negative state and human's non-life and their respective egos, came about their invention, activation and establishment and if that non-life in all its aspects and manifestations is to be eternally eliminated.

As this crucial, vital and most important knowledge is being revealed and made available to all sentient entities in other dimensions, a door is being opened for the initiation of an extensive, deep and profound discussion about all these issues and about all factors related to the very structure and nature of this cycle of time/state/condition/process and how they can contribute, by their lives, to the ending or closure of this cycle and for bringing about the ending of the non-life of the negative state and human non-life and everything related to them.

This information and revelation will also become available to everyone in the non-life of the negative state during the reading of these Dialogs by My true representatives on planet Zero. Your reading and applying it, and your direct participation in these exciting discussions which are opening right now in other dimensions (although these discussions on your part will be happening, mostly, on the level of your unconscious

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

mind), will be heard by all those from the pseudo-dimensions who are connected to you for that purpose.

For humans proper on this planet, your active reading, practice and participation in the mentioned discussions, this information and revelation will be in the state of availability, as it is being placed into the deep recesses of their unconscious mind. In the opportune time, it will enter their consciousness as something recognizable and a familiar subject for their acceptance. To repeat again, this is why your position, as My true representatives on planet Zero, and your reading and practicing what is being revealed to you in My New Revelation, and especially in these Dialogs, is so important and crucial. Remember that! Do not fall into an inappropriate opinion that recent Dialogs have been too abstract or philosophical. Believe Me, in the view of everyone in the true life of the positive state, they are the most needed practical issues that they can have. As My representatives on planet Zero, you are humbly asked by Me, to represent or to reflect the true meaning of these facts. The way you accomplish this is by carefully studying everything which is contained in these particular Dialogs and by discussing their content amongst yourselves.

And this brings us to something which has been a concern for you personally, Peter. From some information that you have been receiving from one of the European countries, it became obvious to you that whenever My representatives in that country get together, all they talk about are the sexual relationships amongst them and how these relationships influence their lives. This is a one-sided, lopsided, non-equalized and unbalanced situation. To spend all your time only in this limited and limiting one topic discussion, without any regard to all other important spiritual issues, means to be under the influence of the negative state. After all, as you are so well aware, one-sidedness, lopsidedness and limitations by one topic of discussion, are the typical nature of the non-life of the negative state. If you do that, you become subject to attacks by the renegades and their minions. This is a very dangerous trend. And although sexual relationships amongst you are important to be included into your discussions, nevertheless, they are not more important as well as less important than any other spiritual issues.

In order to fulfill the requirements of being equalized and balanced in your life, and to illustrate and demonstrate to all humans and all others in the non-life of the negative state by your lifestyle of how it is to be equalized and balanced, you are strongly advised to change the nature of your lives and your meetings, and to include in them equally the

discussions about and meditation on all spiritual issues as they are being revealed in these Dialogs in particular, and in other sources of My New Revelation in general — in the same way as it is being done in the true life of My positive state. If you are to confirm that you are being in the midst of the positive state by the means of your spirit and soul, in that case you are to behave externally, in your human life, and amongst yourselves, congruent to your being in the positive state. Thus, you will equalize and balance your life and you will include equally in your discussions all other spiritual issues which are as important and as needed as discussions about sexual issues and your sexual relationships. Do not disregard this advice. Otherwise, you will find yourself in a state of perpetual temptation by the renegades and their minions. It will make your human life on planet Zero more than miserable. And you don't want that, do you?

The unusual situation which is going on right now in the true life of the positive state has a direct relevance to your physical condition, Peter. As you noticed, in the last two days, you experienced a noticeable improvement in your health with the exception of your left foot which is continuously giving you considerable problems. Your left foot has an interesting spiritual correspondence. Its problems are basically limited to the sole and heel of that foot. As you know, contact with the Hells, symbolically speaking, is at the sole and heel of the left foot. Your heel and sole is bruised by your recent stay in the Hells of the renegades. It is a side effect of being in that hell. As long as there is a necessity for that contact, for some important reasons, your foot's condition will continue as it is now. This is the reason why the epidural, administered by your neurologist, did not work. Nothing will work, no matter what it would be as long as you are needed in that region or place or state.

On the other hand, at the present time, it was determined that for now you are free of your cancer. Because of that there is a gradual and slow improvement in the level of your energy and stamina. What does it mean? Your current condition indicates that the determination and decision was made regarding your placement. At this time, and for the time being, it was determined and decided that you are still needed to stay on planet Zero in your physical body as long as there is a need to convey or record the information and revelation about all these matters as they are being contained in these Dialogs; as well as for future discussions about all these issues with My representatives in Europe and in this country. However, bear in mind, please, that things can change and they can change very fast in the same manner as they suddenly changed for you in November of last year. Should the need arise, in a

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

sudden and unexpected manner from your end, to terminate your services on planet Zero in your physical body, in that case, you will be recalled without further notice or preparation. In this respect, you have to learn to live by your own premise, which you like to say to other people: Do everything in your life as if you are to stay in it for a long period of time but, at the same time, be prepared to go tomorrow or in the next hour, if needed and necessary. From now on, this is the way it is going to be in your life on planet Zero, Peter.

However, do not expect that your physical condition will ever be the same as it used to be before your operation. It can never be the same. Because of that, certain accommodations and adjustments will be necessary to make in the manner and way that you are to function. For example, if you are to travel a long distance by airplane, it would not be feasible for you to do that in economy class. Such travel would be detrimental to your physical condition. And although to travel in a more comfortable condition (in first class, for example) is much more expensive than economy class, the funds will be provided for you in a timely manner so that you will be able to travel without endangering your physical health. And there are many other situations which will require that such accommodations and adjustments are made in order that your physical condition will not necessarily deteriorate.

So, to repeat again, do not expect to have the same condition as you used to have. I know that you have a somewhat ambivalent and disappointed reaction to this decision and determination of Mine in this respect. Fortunately though, your fundamental attitude in this, and in any other respect is whatever I want and not what you want. For that reason your ambivalence and disappointment will pass.

Peter: Thank You very much for this revelation and information. Yes, I fully confirm that I am ambivalent and somewhat disappointed about Your decision but, truly, Your Will be done, regardless of my wishful thinking. And now, would You be willing to briefly clarify the mentioned terms for Beth Ann? It relates to the terms ‘absorbed’ and ‘fully utilized’ as they occur in the statement that *‘it is a threshold of its being completely absorbed, internalized, externalized, manifested, assimilated and fully utilized by all and everything in the life of this cycle of time’* (One Hundredth Dialog).

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, I would. Although the answer to this question should be obvious from the context of the meaning of that particular Dialog, let us elaborate on this issue. As you know, this

particular cycle of time/state and the content of its life is characterized by a parallel co-existence of the true life of the positive state, the non-life of the negative state and of the human non-life, as described above in this and in previous Dialogs. Because of this so-called co-existence, it is ruled by certain spiritual principles, released from My Absolute Nature, which take into account the need for this particular co-existence to take place. In other words, everyone in the true life of the positive state, in non-life of the negative state and in the human non-life performs some kind of very important use as related to the content of the spiritual principles which rule this cycle of time/state.

In order for it to fulfill its purpose for which it came into its own being and existence, and in order to exhaust its usefulness, everyone in it, no matter where and when they are situated, either in the positive state, or in the negative state or in human life, respectively, needs to absorb and utilize everything which is relevant to their purpose and mission as outlined by the spiritual principles which rule this cycle of time/state. To absorb something means that, in order to fully serve its purpose, it must become an integral part of every single particle and cell of his/her 'I am' or, in the case of the negative entities and typical humans, of his/her non-'I am.'

In other words, it is being taken in as an integral component of all aspects of that which constitutes his/her 'I am' or non-'I am.' Full utilization of all aspects of these spiritual principles signifies that nothing is left out from that which is contained in the nature of these spiritual principles, and that would not be taken into account and which would not be integrated and made reality or non-reality in the lives and pseudo-lives of all and everything in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. And this is so, regardless of whether it is the true life of the positive state, the non-life of the negative state or the human non-life.

So, we are talking here about all aspects by which this cycle of time/state is being defined. It takes into consideration not only those who are in the positive state, who fulfill their own missions and purpose but also those who are in the negative state and in human life who likewise fulfill their own missions and purpose. Whether they are or are not consciously aware of these missions and purpose, is not the issue. By their lifestyle, whatever it may be, whether positive and good, or whether negative and evil, that purpose and those missions are being fulfilled. Without absorption and full utilization of all aspects of the spiritual principles, ruling this cycle of time/state, they could accomplish nothing in this

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

respect. You have to look at the nature of this cycle of time/state from the position that in it, in a parallel manner, both the true life of the positive state and the non-life of the negative state and human non-life, are being unfolded.

As you know, the current cycle of time/state/condition/process is very unusual and unique in the sense that only within this cycle of time/state, etc., and no others, all questions about the possibility of any other type of life other than the life of the positive state are being answered by the experiential mode; and all doubts about anything related to the questions of whether they are in the true life, in the true 'I am' and in everything else related to them, is truly so, are being gradually and slowly dissipated. However, in order to accomplish this most desirable goal once and for all, it is absolutely necessary that everything related to this cycle of time/state/condition/process is being fulfilled, absorbed, fully utilized, internalized, externalized, manifested, illustrated, demonstrated and assimilated by everyone and everything who/which are an integral part of or who participate in, by their own free will and choice, this cycle of time/state/condition/process.

As you also know, the current cycle of time/state/condition/process is ruled by a special type or set of spiritual principles, released from My Absolute Nature, which relate to all the above mentioned factors and which are needed to be placed within the life of everyone in the positive state as well as within the non-life of the negative state and human non-life. This set of spiritual principles is not something intangible or non-concrete. Do not forget that this set makes it possible for anything at all to take place or to transpire during the course of this cycle of time/state/condition/process.

And not only that, but this set of very special and unusual spiritual principles is the very condition, under which the life of everyone and everything in the positive state as well as everyone and everything in the non-life of the negative state and in the human non-life, within the current course of this cycle, as it is being manifested in the process of the fulfillment of its purpose for which it was originally activated and established, is made possible at all. No other set or type of spiritual principles would do because of the special and unusual content and meaning of this particular cycle.

Now, all these spiritual principles, which rule the current cycle of time/state/condition/process, are being fulfilled by the specificity of life of all individuals who have been and will be assigned to this particular cycle, regardless of where they are situated or in what type of life or non-life

they have chosen to manifest, illustrate and demonstrate everything contained in the requirements of these spiritual principles or what they contain or what their true nature is.

In order to make it possible at all to accomplish everything which is contained in those spiritual principles, it is extremely important, that everything they contain and that everything of which they consist, becomes fully absorbed and fully utilized by all who participate in this cycle of time/state/condition/process. In other words, those principles, and of what they contain and consist, must be not only internalized and externalized by all concerned but they must become absorbed by them in the same manner as, for example, a sponge absorbs water.

Thus, those principles penetrate every living cell of everyone's spirit, soul and body, becoming an integral part of each and every cell by which that cell is alive and able to function in its own unique condition. This is exactly what the term 'absorption' means. And because every aspect of these very special and unique spiritual principles needs to fully unfold its content, meaning and goal for which it was established in the first place; and because it can do so only by the means of all those who are assigned to be in their own specific, individual, unique and different life, non-life and human non-life, as defined and conditioned by the nature of the spiritual principles in question; they need to be fully utilized by them in their own private lives, non-lives and human non-life in order to exhaust their usefulness and fulfill their purpose for which they were initiated and established in the first place. And this is what the term 'fully utilized' really signifies.

So, as you see from this discourse, it is not a matter of anyone's consciousness or unconsciousness as related to all these issues, but it is a matter of the fulfillment of the purpose for which one's life, non-life or human non-life were initiated, activated and established within this cycle of time/state/condition/process.

And this is all that can be said about this issue. I believe we should finish for today, Peter, because you are getting physically very tired and exhausted. So, take a break until the time when it will become obvious to you that you need to record the next Dialog with Me— if such need will occur at all. In the meantime, rest, read, edit, watch television and do anything that makes your life, especially its physical aspects, comfortable and peaceful.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Peter: Thank You very much for everything which was revealed in this Dialog. I'll take Your advice and do as You suggested. Until the next dialoging — if it comes at all.

One Hundred and Twenty Sixth Dialog

March 21, 2000

Peter: I understand that there is a need to offer more clarification on some aspects of the very difficult topic discussed in the previous Dialog (125). Also, I received a question from Dr. Ardyth Norem who would like to know about the following, and I quote, 'As the energy of The Lord Jesus Christ is being withdrawn from all in the negative state and on this planet, what impact can the practitioners of The New Revelation expect with respect to our access to that life energy as we live out the rest of our lives here?' How would You like to proceed in this respect?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Let us first discuss the issues raised in the previous Dialog which you, Peter, called very difficult. After that we'll address Ardyth's question.

Some important clarification needs to be conveyed to you about how to understand the concepts of the objective perception of reality and how things are happening in this mode; and on the subjective perception of reality and how things are happening in that mode. Also, how to understand My statement about My Foresight regarding the invention, activation and establishment of the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and everything related to them; and that I permitted or allowed to go ahead with this invention, activation and establishment before all those questions, related to the issues of life, 'I am,' and the positive state and everything related to them, as formulated in the previous Dialogs and throughout My New Revelation, entered the sentient minds.

As you remember from one of the previous Dialogs, as well as from the other sources of My New Revelation, one of the most important conditions under which life of the sentient entities could be established, was freedom of choice and the ability to make one's own decisions. In order for these factors, underlying the life of the sentient minds, to be established, it was necessary to give them the impression that they are independent of and free from any dependency on anyone or anything and that they have life and are alive in themselves without an obvious connectedness to anyone or anything. This arrangement was absolutely necessary in order to put all sentient entities in position to make a choice regarding whether they want or don't want to continue in their own unique, different and individual life and to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

establish a meaningful and fulfilling relationship with Me as their Creator. In order to do that, all sentient entities were given an impression that they are situated in some kind of their own subjective space and time, being apart from Me — their Creator, so that they could have the clear perception that I and they have a distinctly different position and placement, from which we can and may interact.

In this arrangement everything appears as coming from or happening somewhere and somewhen. If you have this perception or appearance, then anything which is going on has its own place and time. Because of that, the way all events and happenings are perceived and apprehended in this mode, is as though they are sequential and continuous, meaning that one precedes the other and the other succeeds the preceding one. In this arrangement there is a sense of flow of events and happenings and a dependence of one succeeding event on the other preceding event. This is how the law of cause and effect came about in the true reality of the subjective perception of that reality. In this subjective perception of reality, in order to have a clear grasp that everything takes place as if it is independent of the sentient mind's perception, everything appears to it as being manifested outside of the sentient entities, apart from their own personal, subjective, individual, unique and different life. Under these conditions, if all things flow in sequence and have continuous proceeding, certain things could be arranged in such a manner that, before anything is about to enter that sequential and continuous flow, it could be stopped from registering in the perceptual field of the sentient mind so that that mind would have no sense that anything of that nature is about to happen or that it really happened. If you are about to ask very important, vital and crucial questions, related to your own life and your 'I am,' and if the nature of such questions would be disruptive, disturbing and detrimental to the sanity of your mind, (and yet it is important that they are asked and considered), in order to prevent this from happening, the arrangement could be made for answering those questions before they enter your subjective mind. That way you would have no other perception but that you are not the originator of such questions.

This is how the subjective perception of reality functions and operates. However, because it is subjective, and because it concerns only the individual conceptualization of how events happen in their sequential and continuous mode of proceeding, in the true reality of being and existence, as seen apart from the subjective and individual perception and understanding, they occur in an entirely different mode of their

own manifestation. This different mode, because it has nothing in common with the subjective perception of reality, is therefore, called the objective perception of reality. In this mode of perception there is no need to have an impression that something or someone is out there or out when, independent of the state and process of Creation. Because this mode has no sense of time-flow or space-bound proceeding in a sequential and continuous manner, it clearly perceives that all things, no matter what they are, are happening here-and-now in a simultaneous and synchronous manner, without any sense of subjective time and space. Therefore, all such events and happenings are discrete in their own nature and in relationship to each other. In this objective mode of perception of reality, because of its discrete nature, any and all questions co-exist with their any and all answers at the very same time or, to be more precise, non-time. However, in the moment you project them into the subjective perception of reality, in which all sentient entities reside for the purpose of establishment of the clear awareness of their free will and choice, all such events and happenings appear in sequence so that one precedes the other and the other succeeds the preceding one.

The paradox of this situation or establishment, as related to all sentient entities, is in the fact that they are situated, as far as their structure and nature are concerned, both in the objective and subjective perception of reality, respectively. In relationship to their individual, unique and different life and its 'I am,' they are always in the subjective mode of perception of reality. However, in relationship of being an integral part of My Creation, as such, and especially in relationship to Me and My Absolute Nature, they are in the objective mode of perception of reality. So, as you see from this arrangement, all sentient entities function simultaneously, from both modes of perception of reality. In either case, the questions that they are asking and the answers they are receiving happen in one mode at the same non-time, and in the other mode, they are manifested and put into motion before they enter their subjective mode of perception or very shortly before they are about to ask those questions. In either case of this arrangement, the sentient entities are protected from any negative consequences of asking such questions within their own individual, subjective, unique and different life and their 'I am.'

So, in view of these facts, what could be the arrangement for answering these important questions in the most experiential, practical and factual manner without the actual direct involvement of all sentient entities in the process of asking these questions so that

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

they would not be disturbed in their particular life and so that the disintegration of the positive state's life would not happen? As you remember, at that time or non-time, only the positive state was in its being and existence. No other type of life or non-life was available to them for comparison. And yet, in My Absolute Foresight, I perceived that such questions would be occurring in or plaguing the sentient mind. For that reason, I made arrangements for their proper answers before they entered all sentient minds. For this purpose, I selected a certain group of sentient entities, who, by their own free will and choice, agreed to play out all aspects of asking questions and setting up a condition for their answers in both modes of perception of reality.

This group of people not only agreed to ask all the pertinent questions but they also agreed to be the ones who would invent, activate and establish the non-life of the negative state and human non-life, in order to illustrate and demonstrate on living and experiential examples all consequences, outcomes and results of asking such questions and having convincing answers to all of them. And not only that, but that they would establish a very convincing and factual situation which would give all sentient entities the most needed and necessary comparison between their brand of life, or life as such, and their 'I am,' and the lifestyle of a totally different non-life which had nothing in common with what they had. Such an important arrangement and setup, would be able to convince all in the true life, by the factor of comparison of both types of life and non-life, that their life was a true and genuine life and that their 'I am' was, in fact, the true 'I am.'

Now, as you remember from My New Revelation, this group of people, who agreed with Me to all of this, were later on called the pseudo-creators. Also, as you remember clearly, in Dialog 111, it was stated there that the pseudo-creators agreed to ask those questions on behalf of all others. The only difference between that statement in Dialog 111 and what is being conveyed to you in this Dialog, is that in that Dialog it was not indicated that such questions would be asked, and the answers to them would be given to them, before they entered all the rest of the sentient entities' minds. This is a crucial distinction.

When we are talking about the paradox of the sentient entities' being in both objective and subjective modes of perception of reality simultaneously, the way you have to understand this paradox is in the following manner: In their self-perception, self-awareness, self-'I am,' and in everything related to them, they always function from the

position of the subjective mode. Because, as you know, in this mode, everything happens and takes place in a sequential and continuous mode, it gives any sentient entity, in his/her subjective time frame, enough needed time, to assess, to evaluate and to understand the nature of the flowing of events and happenings, so that he/she can make an appropriate decision about what kind of choices should be made in their respect, or how to respond to them in accordance with his/her own free will and choice. Thus, by this factor, and by this mode, his/her freedom of choice is being continuously reconfirmed.

On the other hand, in relationship to everything and everyone else in My Creation, to Me personally and to My Creation in general, as well as to all events and happenings outside of his/her self-perception, self-awareness, self-‘I am’ and in everything related to them, every sentient entity in the true life of the positive state functions from the position of the objective mode. In this mode he/she is cognizant of the discreteness of all events and happenings, of the here-and-now mode, of the non-time and non-space manifestation and simultaneity and synchronicity of all occurrences in being and existence. In this mode, the decision-making process and the choices that are being made, the questions that are being asked, the answers that are being given, and the consequences, results and outcomes of anything which occur at all, occur at the very same moment or, to be precise, at the very same state, as they are being manifested in a simultaneous and synchronous manner.

Now, this objective mode of function is extremely difficult, if not at all impossible, for the human mind to grasp. The reason for this inability is in the fact that the typical human mind was structured in such a manner so as to perceive everything in a continuous and sequential, and not in a discrete, mode. Therefore, by and large, humans are not capable of being cognizant of anything which is happening in the discrete mode. This mode was repressed or closed off from their conscious perceptual ability. If it were to be fully accessible to them, they could not manifest the nature and structure of human non-life which lacks this ability. Human life, in this respect, is a stage on which a comparison can be made between the true life of all possible perceptions and integrations, and the non-life in which only one-sided or lopsided perception of all and everything is possible; and of course, of all consequences, results and outcomes of such a setup as seen in human non-life. On the other hand, everywhere else in the non-life of the negative state, everyone is in the mode of perversion and inversion of the two mentioned modes. In their case, the objective mode is

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

distorted in such a manner that occurrences taking place in their non-worlds are perceived and comprehended as if they are happening in a continuous and sequential flow outside of them, and the subjective mode as if they are taking place outside of them likewise, but in a discrete mode. This is a typical upside-down position of the structure, nature and dynamics of the non-life of the negative state. This particular arrangement needed to be established within the frame of the non-life of the negative state, in order that everyone there would rationalize and justify their evil deeds rooted in a continuous production of all their evils, distortions and falsities. That way, to themselves, it appears that, rather than them, someone or something else is responsible for or is the source of all evils, distortions and falsities.

The fundamental differences between these two modes of perception, as well as the way things are set up in the non-life of the negative state and human non-life, as well as the issue of My Foresight, gave the wrong perception to all writers of spiritual books, with the exception of Swedenborg's writings, that I was the one who invented, initiated, established and put into motion the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos in the same manner as I did with the true life of the positive state and all its inhabitants' 'I am.' To have foresight about something, and based on that, to permit invention, establishment and manifestation of that something is not the same as being the originator or causative factor of that something. My Foresight was not the originating or causative source of the non-life of the negative state and human non-life. This fact can be clearly and logically deduced from the fact that My Nature, as it was mentioned many times before, is Absolute Positiveness and Absolute Pure Life as such, in, of, by and from Myself. Because of that, such Nature cannot invent, initiate, establish and manifest anything else but what is positive and what the true life is as such. However, in My Foresight, being that it is of non-time and non-space nature, and being that it is in the purely objective mode of functioning and manifestation, I foresaw that all sentient entities, in their relative to My Absolute condition, will inadvertently ask those life questions, and that, in order to preserve their integrity and the positive nature of their true life, it would be necessary to seek out the most appropriate and the most convincing answers to all of them. Such answers are being manifested, demonstrated and illustrated in the lifestyles of the non-life of the negative state and human non-life. This is the reason that they were permitted by Me to come, temporarily, to their adverse fruition. In the moment they properly, fully and exhaustively provide all necessary

answers to those questions, they will no longer have any energy, stamina, incentive, motivation and desire to continue in their mode of non-life. Once this most desirable event will happen, the non-life of the negative state, human non-life in its purely negative aspects and their egos will be eliminated.

It is being revealed here that we are entering the phase of the currently ongoing shift (in the non-time sense) which can be designated as providing the very final answers to all those questions. Because of that, it allows us to reveal all these mysteries, secrets and concealed and hidden things as related to the issue of the invention, source, origin, establishment and manifestation of the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos. And, at the same time, it allows us to begin the integration, unification and merger, within the true life of the positive state and within everyone's sentient mind, both the objective and subjective modes of perception into their distinguishable oneness.

Now, as you know, this information or revelation is given to you, and to all others in the positive state, and is made available to all in the non-life of the negative state and in human non-life, as a precursor to something which is going to be happening shortly (in the non-time sense, of course) in the entire being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. It is also being given to you as an illustration and demonstration of how the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos were invented, activated, established and put into motion, so that the answers to these facts would be given from A to Z, as was indicated to you in the book of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***. As My true representatives on planet Zero, you are assigned the role of carrying this information to all others in the non-life of the negative state as you read and ponder on the topics of these Dialogs with Me in your mind, and, by that factor, you are to make it available to all humans on planet Zero, by placing it in their unconscious mind.

Peter: Thank You very much for this very interesting revelation. Are we ready to proceed with the answer to Ardyth's question?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, we are. The answer to her question is very simple. It should be very obvious from the fact of the positioning of My true representatives, or, as she calls it, the practitioners of My New Revelation. As you remember from several previous Dialogs, it was indicated there very clearly that by your spirit

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

and soul you now reside in the midst of the positive state. Because of this particular positioning, you have and will have a continuous access to life energies which emanate directly from Me. As you also remember, everything which applies to the rest of humanity, doesn't apply to you who are My representatives and practitioners of My New Revelation. This was one of the many reasons why you were positioned into the midst of the positive state. The only vulnerable point in your life is your physical body which is subject to the pseudo-laws and pseudo-establishments of the negative state and of typical human non-life. Because of that, your physical bodies could be subject to all kinds of problems, breakdowns, infections, illnesses and all kinds of infestations with which the human non-life is so abundantly saturated. However, even in the case of your physical bodies, you will be able to be cured from, or, at least things would be made more bearable for you to endure all those adverse conditions, thanks to the available life force energies coming from Me and My Positive state; unless, of course, the agreement was made that you should depart planet Zero and come back home by the means of some kind of physical illness.

So, in answering Ardyth's question, there will be no impact on you personally, My true representatives, of My life energies which are being withdrawn from the negative state and on planet Zero. The only thing you will experience as a result of this withdrawal, will be a continuous deterioration of all human systems and of everything by which the non-life of the negative state is being maintained and fueled. You have already experienced something of that nature and you will be experiencing it more and more every day.

Peter: Thank You for this answer and for Your encouragement in this respect. Is there anything else You would like to bring to our attention today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. And yes, there is something important that we need to discuss. It relates to something which was indicated to you, that your left foot, at its sole and heel, is being bruised by being in contact with the Hells of the renegades and their minions. This indication stems from something which is written in the Christian Bible and the meaning of which is considerably misunderstood and misinterpreted. I would like to quote the relevant text, as recorded in the first edition of The New King James Version of the Bible, in Genesis, Chapter 3:14-15, which goes as follows: "*So the Lord God said to the serpent: 'Because you have done this, you are cursed more than all cattle, and more than every beast of the field; on*

your belly you shall go, and you shall eat dust all the days of your life (verse 14). And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your seed and her Seed; he shall bruise your head, and you shall bruise His heel (verse 15).”

As you know, Peter, Christians interpret this statement as a prophecy for My incarnation on planet Zero in order to bring salvation to humans from all that which was committed in the Garden of Eden by the serpent, the woman and her man. And although there are some grains of truth in that assumption, this text means mostly something entirely different. In the reality of the true meaning of the quoted text, it describes the activation of the negative state and all the consequences, outcomes and results of that activation. The serpent represents the affection and striving for knowledge and understanding of all secrets, mysteries and hidden things and of their external scientific exploration for the purpose of uncovering the life making process and everything related to it and all other factors. In this sense, it represents the pseudo-creators who became the so-called greatest scientists of all time. Cattle, in this connotation only, represent the affection for knowledge of the real truth and perception of the reality of the true life, or life as such. The woman, in the connotation of the quoted text, represents one's true nature or one's soul, or one's interior mind.

As you remember from My New Revelation, the serpent also means the exploration of the external world and its laws and principles by which it functions. At one point in time, this exploration led to all those questions which we have described in previous Dialogs and in My New Revelation in general. The process of the invention, activation, establishment and putting into motion the non-life of the negative state and human non-life is being described by that which was done by the serpent or by the pseudo-creators who agreed to ask all those questions on behalf of all and to get all pertinent and convincing answers to them by the most obvious, convincing and experiential modes.

That the serpent was cursed more than all cattle and more than every beast of the field, signifies the need to establish a different type of affection and means for the exploration of all factors of life which would preclude taking into consideration the reality of the spiritual truth and affection for its practice (cattle) as well as of the natural truth and affection for its implementation (beast of the field). To be cursed, in this particular connotation, means to lose any desire to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

consider this spiritual and natural truth and to eliminate any affection for its practice and implementation. The consequences of this loss are described in the words that *'on your belly you shall go, and you shall eat dust all the days of your life.'* To go on your belly means to establish a lifestyle which looks at everything in an upside-down fashion. In order to go only on one's belly signifies the loss of one's legs on which one stands and looks upward where the true reality of life, or life as such, and its real truth, can be discerned and incorporated into one's individual, unique and different life. Thus, going on one's belly signifies inability, any longer, to perceive the reality of the true life and its real truth. In this position one is unable to look upward, or better to say, into one's within (the term 'upward' in this respect means the state of one's internals or looking to one's within) where the real truth about all matters and where real answers to all questions are contained and could be discerned and apprehended.

What is described here is the process of relinquishment of deriving everything from and going for all answers to one's true within and replacing this process with deriving everything from and going for all answers, and everything else, to the without. As you know, in order to invent, activate, establish and manifest the non-life of the negative state and human non-life, and their respective egos, it was necessary to recede from the mode of exploration and search for the Absolute Truth by the means of finding out what the Absolute Truth is not, which was embedded in going into one's inwardness or into the state of one's internals. In this methodology of the true life of the positive state all you can discover is only the truth and all its derivatives. Thus, nothing of non-truth exists there. For that reason, in order to gather all information about what the truth is not, it was necessary and vital to establish the opposite methods to those utilized in the positive state and to search for everything which is not truth in the state of externals or in the without. This is what the words *'on your belly you shall go'* signifies in their true meaning.

And that *'you shall eat dust all the days of your life'* denotes very clearly two things: One, nothing else but non-truth, and thus, distortions and falsities could be derived from that position (going on the belly and eating dust). *'Eating dust'* in this connotation means gathering all distortions and falsities as a means of discovery of what the truth is not and what is not contained in or is part of the Absolute Truth. Two, the meaning of the words *'all the days of your life'* clearly indicates that the invented, activated, established and put-into-motion non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos, will last

only one cycle of time/state/process. 'All days' means one cycle of time/state/process. 'Your life' relates to the activators of the non-life of the negative state who agreed to proceed with the finding of all the answers to all those questions which were about to enter all sentient minds. But they also signify that that life cannot continue forever but is limited only until all answers to those questions are properly, correctly, experientially and factually answered, to the satisfaction of all. To continue in that kind of life beyond this point, is not possible or feasible.

As you know, once something exhausts its usefulness and serves its purpose, for which it was allowed to come into its own fruition in the first place, no longer can or may it serve any useful purpose, and therefore, it is eliminated or permanently discarded as something useless and unproductive. To continue in it would only hinder and make it impossible to proceed along the line of spiritual progression. In that case, the true life of the positive state would disintegrate because its true life is rooted in its ability to spiritually, mentally and in all other respects progress to eternity without any interruption. As you remember from previous statements in My New Revelation, in order to assure that such spiritual, mental and all other types of progression may continue to eternity, it was necessary to allow, on a temporary and transient basis, the invention, activation, establishment and manifestation of the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos, so that illustration and demonstration of their own brand of non-life could be registered in all sentient minds and placed in the Universality-Of-It-All for eternal learning of what not to choose and for comparison of the reality of the true life with unreality of non-life. True progression, growth and betterment can be achieved only if you know for sure that your life is the true life and that your 'I am' is the true 'I am' and that your life derives from The Absolute Source of The Absolute Life — The Lord Jesus Christ, Who is Life in, by, of and from Himself/Herself. And this is the Absolute Truth.

Such fundamental and vital knowledge is the only source and origin of any spiritual, mental, individual, personal and any other progression. And because the illustration, demonstration of and learning about the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos give everyone an opportunity to recognize, accept and incorporate in their life the knowledge of what is and what is not the real truth and what is and what is not contained in the Absolute Truth, it was necessary to allow or permit the negative state and its non-life, human non-life and their egos to come to their adverse fruition.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

'And I will put enmity between you and the woman,' in this particular connotation, signifies that nothing of the true nature, of the true mentality or the true soul exists in the non-life of the negative state and its derivatives (human non-life, their egos and everything else related to them). In fact, what the non-life has (the serpent) and what is contained in the true nature of the positive state and its mentality (the woman), are opposing each other, being in enmity to each other. There is nothing in common that they would have.

'And between your seed and her Seed,' in this connotation, denotes that there cannot be anything in common between all consequences, outcomes and results of anything which is contained in the non-life (your seed) and in the true life (her Seed). It is in these particular words, and the subsequent ones, that Christian dogmatists and philosophers put or see the prophecy of My incarnation on planet Zero and the process of conquering, subduing, subjugating and rejecting the non-life of the negative state and offering salvation to all who accept the facts about My works during My stay on your planet. It is true that these facts, to some limited extent, are embedded in this statement. After all, I did come to your pseudo-world by the means of a woman. However, this is a literal interpretation of the meaning of the quoted sentence. It is an entirely different story if you interpret this statement from its inner or spiritual sense. The woman's Seed signifies all positive, good and proper traits, characteristics, states and dynamics of one's true nature and its mentality or soul. For that reason, that I was born on this planet of the woman, signifies that My birth was possible only by the means of everything positive, good, proper, correct and truthful because only this type of Mentality is contained in My Absolute Nature, as represented here by the woman and her Seed.

What this means here, is that it was I who brought to this pseudo-world and all regions of the Zone of Displacement something which they totally lacked and which was contained in My overall Mentality. I brought to them and embedded into them the concepts of love, good, truth, positive works and faith. Nothing of these traits and characteristics were contained in anything that they had and possessed. By the means of these traits and characteristics, I established the very important condition under which all situated in the non-life of the negative state and human non-life, can be saved and brought out of their non-reality and non-life.

'He shall bruise your head, and you shall bruise His heel' denotes the only point of contact which is possible between anyone in the true life

of the positive state and in the non-life of the negative state. The heel, in this connotation, signifies the most external of the most external of the true reality which can relate to the true essence and substance of that which is called the non-life of the negative state (its head). That I, or anyone else in the positive state, bruised the head of the non-life of the negative state (or its essence and substance) means that, by My presence in all the Hells (and by your presence, Peter, in the Hells of the renegades and their minions), embedded into them the most important condition and means (bruised its head) by which the non-life of the negative state and all its derivatives will be eliminated and all participants in it will be eternally saved. At the same time, My presence in those Hells, and your presence, Peter, in the Hells of the renegades, and the presence of anyone who is My representative on planet Zero in various regions of the Hells, are perceived by the inhabitants of the non-life of the negative state as a painful experience.

When you embed something into their pseudo-essence and pseudo-substance (their heads) which has never been a part of their non-life, it bruises them or causes a wound to their overall structural pseudo-integrity. But it also means that a bridge is being built by which they can leave their non-life and their non-reality and join the true life and the true reality of the positive state.

'And you shall bruise His heel' signifies, in this connotation, that the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos, are perceived and experienced, on their most external level (heel), by anyone in the true life of the positive state as a burden and a cross which they agreed to carry until the end of this cycle of time/state/condition/process. As far as I am concerned, in My case, this statement denotes the factor of My permission for the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos to be invented, activated, established and put into motion.

I am tolerating their non-life, from the position of the most external layer of My Absolute External Mind (My heel), no matter how painful, unbearable, intolerable and burdensome their non-life is for all of us (bruising My heel). And the only reason we all in the true life of the positive state tolerate this non-life with all its atrocities and abominations, rooted in their evils and falsities, is because of the vitally needed answers to all those questions which were about to enter the minds of all sentient entities.

No other reasons exist for the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

And this is what the true meaning of the quoted text, in one of the many other of its meanings, truly is. And this is all that we need to discuss today, Peter. Go now and rest and take care of your fragile and vulnerable physical condition (your bruised heel).

Peter: Thank You so much for this meaningful revelation.

One Hundred and Twenty Seventh Dialog

March 24, 2000

Peter: Today, I don't have any specific questions of multiversal significance, although, in my mind, I am interested in knowing more about such concepts as 'I am' and 'ego,' what, in actuality, they mean and signify and how to overcome or, at least, curb the influence and dominance that the human ego has in our typical human lives, especially and particularly on our behavior, attitude and relationships. Also, some of Your representatives complain that they seem to be considerably overstressed, unable to sleep or relax, with unpleasant physical symptoms, and with the sense that they have no access to their within in order to discover the spiritual reasons for their disturbing states. Any comments on these issues or on anything else that You would deem appropriate to consider or reveal to us?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Before considering your issues, Peter, there is something else that we need to discuss first. After that, we'll address your concerns, or concerns expressed by My representatives.

An important spiritual climate is in the process of being established in our worlds or on our side of the fence, so-to-speak. Its impact on anyone or anything in your pseudo-world and in the pseudo-worlds of the Zone of Displacement, will not be experienced for some time to come, although its significance will be discernible in the personal and private lives of My representatives on planet Zero. This discernment will be necessary to experience by some of you in order to establish a favorable condition for having its impact on the rest of the humans and everyone in the pseudo-life or non-life of the negative state. Because of your unusual condition, prepare yourself that, in most instances, it will not be fully registered at the level of your human conscious minds. However, you will have a certain inner or intuitive sense that something crucial and important is going on without your ability to put your finger on it, so-to-speak, in order to understand what it is that is happening.

The spiritual climate which is being established, or which is about to be established in our worlds relates to something called multidimensional and multimodal discussion about everything related to the lives of all sentient entities, their position, their roles and their placement in the hierarchy of the spiritual organization; about all the reasons for which the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos were allowed to be invented, established, manifested and put into motion; about My role in all of this and what the outcome of this cycle of time/state/process will

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

be, or should be, after all choices, by everyone, regarding its nature and role are made and implemented.

This spiritual discussion, which was mentioned by Me in one of the previous Dialogs, is a necessary occurrence because it builds a proper foundation on which everything related to the nature and role of this cycle of time/state/process could come to its end, and an interim period could be established so that the release of a new and different spiritual aspect and something new and different related to the release from the Core of My New Nature, which will rule the incoming new cycle of time/state/process, could take place and become reality. Without the proper understanding of all these issues; without the revelation about the reasons for the being and existence of this particular and unusual cycle of time/state/process, in which the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos co-exist with the true life of the positive state, not one step could be taken in order to proceed with the closure of this cycle and with the opening of the new one, after the interim period runs its necessary course.

Because there are many or numerous aspects to the mystery of the nature and role of this cycle of time/state/process, their meaning and impact, which they have been having on all and everything without exception or exclusion, requires a thorough understanding, grasp, recognition and acceptance of their needs to be manifested exactly the way they have been manifesting themselves during this cycle, by all sentient minds in the true life of the positive state. This situation yields to the multiversal law that everything proceeds from within to without. Due to the fact that the true life of the positive state in the totality-of-it-all begins or is established on the spiritual level first, on the intermediate level second, and on the external level third, the discussion about this vital and crucial issue begins at the spiritual level first, on the intermediate level second and on the external level third. After that, the impact of this discussion is felt or reverberates in the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos.

Now, the way you have to understand this process of happening and occurrence, is that this important discussion takes place by the rules of the objective mode of perception. What it means is that, although from the position of the subjective mode of perception, it happens in sequence, as though something is happening at the first place/state, then at the second place/state and then at the third place/state, with the subsequent sequential reverberation and impact on the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos, in the objective mode all this discussion happens discretely; meaning, simultaneously and synchronously at the very same time/state/place/condition.

The intense discussion about all these important issues, which will make it possible to close this cycle of time/state/process, and the involvement of all on our level, in all respective worlds and dimensions, characterize the present climate which is being established in those worlds and dimensions. This is something entirely new which has not been experienced to such an extent and degree of importance until this time/state/process. It will impact the very core and fabric of the nature and structure of Creation and all respective sentient entities and their sentient minds.

What you have to understand in this respect is that the outcome of this discussion and the way it will influence the minds of all involved in it, will substantially and profoundly rearrange and rewire, so-to-speak, the entirety of My Creation and all the unique, different and individual 'I am' of all sentient entities. In this sense, nothing will be the same in the least, and everything will be totally different and unusual. This different and unusual is not possible to conceive at all until the process of this discussion runs its course.

Due to the fact that this cycle of time/state/process has been and will be ruled to its very end by a very special and unusual spiritual principle, released from Me, which allows the so-called co-existence of two entirely different modes of functioning, — the true life of the positive state and the fake or non-life of the negative state, human life and their egos, — nothing at all whatsoever can be transposed or taken from it and incorporated into the next cycle of time/state/process. And because all inhabitants of this particular cycle, situated everywhere and everywhen, were specifically and particularly structured and wired in such a way so that everything in them was accommodated to the very specific needs that have been ruling this cycle, nothing of their current structure and wiring, or their respective lifestyle, could be transposed into the next cycle.

Please, do understand that if anything at all could be transposed and transferred from this cycle into the next one, it would also mean transposing and transferring everything related to the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos (stinky egos, as you, Peter, like to say it). In that case, not too much difference would exist between the current cycle and the next one. The sentient entities would still be plagued by the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the non-life of the negative state, human non-life (in its negative aspects) and their egos. Because of such an arrangement, the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state could not be established likewise. And yet, one of the major characteristics of the next cycle of time/state/process, is a total lack of anything related to the non-life of the negative state, human non-life in its negative aspects and their egos; and establishment of the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state in all its unhindered aspects.

These facts tell you very clearly that none of the members of the current cycle could enter the next one with the way they are presently structured and built in their current individualities, differences and uniquenesses, rooted in their specific and very much unusual 'I am,' accommodated to the requirements of the nature of this cycle of time/state/process. This information and revelation is being brought to everyone's attention and is one of the most important subjects of the currently instituted discussion. Everyone in this cycle of time has to make one of the most important decisions and choices of their lives about wanting or not wanting to submit themselves to the absolutely fundamental and the most extensive restructuring and rewiring of the very essence and substance of their minds and their 'I am,' so that they could be transposed or transferred into the next cycle of time/state/process without any possibility of retaining anything in them from what they have and how they are and who they are and how their 'I am' is conceived and apprehended.

In order to make such a choice and decision, this process must be preceded by an extensive, deep and prolonged discussion (prolonged from the standpoint of your conceptualization of time) about all mysteries, secrets and hidden things related, first of all, to them, to their nature and to their 'I am,' and secondly, related to everything revealed in My New Revelation, and especially in these Dialogs, regarding the nature and structure of this cycle of time/state/process. And this is exactly what we meant by the new climate which is being established in all our worlds and their respective dimensions. This climate will be characterized by the nature of the opening of this discussion which will lead everyone toward making one of the most important choices and decisions that they have ever had to make. After all, they relate to the issues of their life or death, so-to-speak. Of course, the type of decision and choice they will all make is very much predictable because, after they have all the necessary and needed very clear information about why it was permitted or allowed for this unusual, mysterious and burdensome cycle, full of turmoil, to come to its fruition in the first place, they will make the most right and appropriate decision and choice which will lead them toward full participation in the true life of the next cycle of time/state/process in which anything related to the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos, will no longer be present.

However, as mentioned above, such a choice and decision cannot be made without the proper and correct knowledge or revelation about all these things. On the other hand, it is not enough just to have such knowledge or revelation and, based on that, to make such an important life-or-death

choice and decision. The acceptance of that information or revelation, coming basically from the outside, would be impositional. In that case, anything contained in such knowledge or revelation could not be appropriated or attributed to anyone. For that reason, a long period of discussion needs to be instituted during which all aspects of the revealed information are being considered, gone through and through and shared with all, and subsequently, they are being internalized, absorbed and made an integral part of their 'I am,' giving them a clear and firm foundation on which they can make their choice and decision from within themselves and not from the standpoint of the impositional without.

The institution of this discussion on our side, and all its consequences, outcomes and results, causes a painful ripple effect in the very fabric of the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos. It happens in the objective mode of perception as a discrete occurrence; meaning, in this mode, it is simultaneous and synchronous with its happening on our side. However, in the moment it is applied to the human linear mode of perception, from the standpoint of the human conscious mind, there is a sense of a long delay (sometimes for decades, centuries or even millennia), before its impact takes place. This is the reason why all these factors registering in and having consequential impact on the human mind will be very slow in coming to humans and to their non-lives.

And here comes your important role as My representatives on planet Zero. A very few of you are privileged to have this information or revelation. As you remember in one of the earlier Dialogs, it was conveyed to you that in your case, it is provided that you may know all these mysteries, as revealed in My New Revelation, but not the rest of humanity, so that they see but do not see, and hear but do not to recognize what that hearing is conveying to them — until they are ready to be saved from their blindness and deafness. Their being saved from this grave condition is contingent on you, My representatives, having this information and revelation. By having it, and by your lifestyle in accordance with everything revealed in My New Revelation, you are placing it into the deep recesses of humanities' unconscious minds, so that when the time will come, it can be transposed or transferred into their conscious minds, appearing to them as something familiar; and based on that, they could begin their own discussion about all these issues and make their own decision and choice of how and in which way they want to proceed. Of course, having such important revelation and information; and recognizing the voluntary status of their condition; and having all their memories opened so that they could have a proper and just foundation on which to make such a proper choice and decision; and having an opportunity to thoroughly

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

discuss all these issues among themselves, it is very much predictable what kind of choice and decision they will make.

In this respect you, as My true representatives, will be preceding them in this discussion, which will begin sometime in the far (or near) future — from the standpoint of your conceptualization of time — by having this discussion, as related to this information and revelation, amongst yourselves and being with Peter, face to face, **if needed and necessary**, and if Peter's recall does not happen in the foreseeable time, very soon or in the very near future. Prepare yourselves for this possibility and need. If Peter is not available for this discussion because of his possible recall, then, you are to begin this discussion amongst yourselves without his face to face presence. In that case, Peter's participation in your discussions would be happening from the spiritual world. In either way, whether physically or non-physically, he will be an active participant in your discussions about these important matters.

Do you remember what was said about this issue in the ***Corollaries...***, in the Announcement? That face to face discussions need to be taking place amongst you about all important spiritual issues, as contained in My New Revelation. It is being revealed here by Me directly, that the requirement mentioned here applies to this time or to the near future time and not to that time and those conditions which existed during that time. Now is the real time to implement that requirement. Up to this point it was not feasible to have such extensive face to face discussions because you lacked this vital and crucial information and revelation. Without these Dialogs, and what they contain, such discussions could not take place or be productive and useful until now. But now everything is in place in order to begin this important phase of the currently ongoing shift as a precursor of everything else that is about to happen or that will be happening in the future (very much possibly not until you are all recalled from planet Zero).

Your discussions in this respect will be very much needed in order to establish, or to transpose or to transfer, the very special climate which is being established right now in the spiritual world and other worlds and dimensions on our side as delineated above. Because, as mentioned before in one of the previous Dialogs, you are in the process of participating in those discussions on our side without your human conscious awareness, and you are an integral part of the process of the establishment of the mentioned very special climate, in order that the impact of them is transposed or transferred to your conscious awareness, and by that factor placed into the unconscious mind of the rest of humanity, it will be advisable and even necessary for you to have similar discussions amongst yourselves likewise on your very much conscious level.

What we are talking about here is a very important factor. In order to reflect in your lives everything happening on our side of the fence, so-to-speak; and in order to prepare the entirety of humanity for what is to come in this respect, it is very important that you establish this new climate, which is in the process of being established in our worlds, in your own private, individualized and different lives and your 'I am,' as well as and especially amongst yourselves whenever you participate in your group meetings. This is very important. It also tells you how inappropriate it would be for you to limit your discussions to only sexual matters — as the case seemed to be up to this point, at least in one of the countries in Europe. Such limitation would defy any possibility of establishing the necessary climate which is in the process of being instituted right now in our worlds, and all their respective dimensions.

The above mentioned requirement will also function for you as a preparatory stage for your own individual and personal decision-making and choice-making process regarding your own position, place, state and situation within both your own personal and individualized cycle of time/state/process, as well as a global and an all-inclusive one. As you know, and as it is obvious from the above described revelation, whatever you contain, whatever and who you are, whatever structure, nature and dynamics your 'I am' has or consists of, cannot be transposed or transferred into the next cycle. All that which you have and who you are or of what you and your 'I am' consist, is determined by the very specific, unique and very much different nature, structure and dynamics of the spiritual principle which rules the current cycle of time/state/process. Because of that, in order for you to be able to enter the next cycle of time/state/process, etc., you would have to give up or entirely relinquish everything that you have and who you are in your own unique, individual and different 'I am.'

In this sense, and in this respect, you will have to receive or acquire from the newly released spiritual principle, stemming from a different aspect of My Absolute New Nature, a totally new individuality, personality, uniqueness and difference, which will underlie and structure your new 'I am.' In this sense, you will receive a totally different and fundamentally new 'I am' which will be in full alignment with the newly released spiritual principle which will rule the next cycle of time/state/process. In other words, your new and different 'I am,' in its individuality, personalization and uniqueness, will be built from all the elements of the newly released spiritual principle. This factor will allow your full participation in the incoming cycle of time/state/process.

So, as you see from this revelation, your upcoming discussions about all these issues will help you in preparing yourself for giving up everything

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

related to this cycle of time, both individually and personally, for you as well as globally for all, and to acquire instead, everything related to the nature and structure of the next cycle. It also establishes a favorable condition for the entirety of humanity, as well as for all those connected to you during your reading of these Dialogs, and everything else contained in My New Revelation, from other pseudo-dimensions of the negative state, to be prepared and to be ready for what is to come in this respect. And this is what the unusual and very exciting new climate, which is in the process of being established right now in our worlds and all their respective dimensions, is all about. And you can participate in all of this if you choose to do so by your own free will and choice, in your position and role as My true representatives on planet Zero. I can assure you that, at this time, there is nothing more important than this participation.

And this brings us, Peter, to your ponderings about the true meaning of the concepts of 'I am' and 'ego.' How do you define and understand these important concepts? As is obvious from what was revealed in this Dialog so far, anything at all, including 'I am' and 'ego,' is determined by the nature and structure of the spiritual principle which rules the current cycle of time. In this respect you can define the concept of 'I am' as the structural and dynamic self-conscious, self-perceived and self-identified conscious awareness of self-awareness as related to all aspects of the spiritual principle which rules the current cycle of time. It is a relative derivative of that aspect or element or sub-element of My Absolute 'I AM' which determines the entire nature, structure, content, and everything and everyone else, which/who are situated within and during this particular cycle. So, as you see from this definition, any 'I am' and its nature, structure, dynamics and its very being and existence is contingent on whatever is released from My Absolute 'I AM.' For that reason, in the moment this aspect of My Absolute 'I AM,' as imparted on all relative 'I am,' in that relative condition, exhausts the entirety of its content and usefulness, as well as the entirety of the content and usefulness of the spiritual principle which rules this particular cycle, it must be relinquished in order to give way for the new and different aspect, element and sub-element to come into being and existence, with the new and different 'I am' which will, in its nature, structure and dynamics, fully reflect the content and meaning of the incoming cycle.

So, as you see from this description, any relative 'I am,' because it is relative, and because its structure, nature, dynamics and content depend entirely on the very specific nature and content of the spiritual principle that rules any current cycle of time/state/process, it cannot have a permanent, unchangeable, non-modifiable and irreplaceable nature. At the end of each cycle of time/state/process, it must be removed and

replaced with the new one which will be in full alignment with a different aspect, element or sub-element of My Absolute 'I AM' released to rule the incoming cycle of time/state/process.

It is very logical to assume that if each cycle of time/state/process is ruled by a very specific and entirely different spiritual principle, then, in that case, nothing from it can become useful or usable in any succeeding cycle. This is especially true as related to the cycle in which you live and function. Because of the mentioned co-existence of the two forms within this cycle — the true life and false non-life, as well as human non-life, any attempt to transfer or to utilize anything contained in it would inadvertently contaminate all and everything and everyone to such an extent, that it would make it impossible for any aspect of the new spiritual principle to take hold. In that case, the new cycle of time/state/process would default and would not be able to establish, to illustrate and demonstrate its specific structure, nature and dynamics.

A somewhat different situation may exist or be feasible with the cycle of time/state/process which would succeed the one that comes in after the current one in which co-existence of the mentioned two forms — the true life of the positive state, the non-life of the negative state and human non-life and their egos — is manifested and established. Because this new cycle would not be tainted or contaminated by anything contained in the current one, whatever it would have and illustrate, could be utilized in the new form and condition in the succeeding cycle. In this case, before opening the succeeding cycle, everyone situated in any current cycle would carefully and extensively weigh what, and to what extent, if anything at all, could be beneficially utilized in the next cycle. But even in this case, whatever beneficial utilization could be found, it would be totally and completely transformed in such a manner so as to suit the nature and structure of the incoming cycle. So, even in this case, the things, as well as all sentient entities, would not be the same as they were in the previous cycle.

However, I can assure you, that nothing at all which is contained in your cycle of time/state/process, could be beneficially utilized in any manner and way in the next cycle. However, all its experiences, manifestations, demonstrations, illustrations and whatever it has, have been and will be placed in the Universality-Of-It-All for eternal learning of all the answers to all the questions which were formulated and asked in the process of this cycle, so that everyone would know what not to choose and how not to be. It is only logical to assume that, if this cycle of time/state/process was instituted for the purpose of asking those questions and getting all needed and necessary answers to them, and if it clearly demonstrates and illustrates what not to choose and how not to be, then, in that case,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

nothing from it can be beneficially utilized in the next cycle in any manner and way. And not only that, but everyone who has been participating and will be participating in this process, the way they are and the way their 'I am' is, in their current condition and state, cannot be transferred into the next cycle likewise. Therefore, they need to acquire something entirely different and entirely new which will become available to them, and to you all, in opportune time, during the transitional period.

Now, as far as the concept of 'ego' is concerned: What is its definition and how did it come into its own establishment? As you remember from one of the previous Dialogs, the ego was fabricated in the process of the invention and activation of the non-life of the negative state and human non-life for the purpose of replacement or substitution of the true 'I am' with a fake one which would contain and carry a totally different content and meaning than the ones contained in the true 'I am.' As you also remember, with the full preservation of 'I am,' the invention and activation of the non-life would not be possible. The true 'I am,' by its nature, structure, function and dynamics, carries within itself all aspects of the true life and the full knowledge of who one is and what the purpose and meaning of its individual, unique and different life is within each cycle of time/state/process. With such full knowledge, nothing of the pseudo-nature of the non-life, and whatever it contains, could ever come into its own pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. Whereas any 'I am' is created from those aspects of My Absolute 'I AM,' which are in place during each particular cycle of time/state/process, and whereas it reflects My True Nature in its relative condition, or that aspect of My True Nature, which is in place during any current cycle of time/state/process, the ego is founded and based on the denial that anything of that nature ever exists.

The issue here was, as you remember, to illustrate and demonstrate a pseudo-lifestyle which would have nothing in common with anything contained in the true life of the positive state and its lifestyle. And because any meaning and purpose of such life is rooted in the nature, structure, dynamics and function of 'I am,' as relevant to the nature, structure, dynamics and function of each cycle of time/state/process, it was necessary to come up with a special type of construct which would carry within itself the nature, structure, dynamics and function of that which is not only not contained in the nature, structure, dynamics and function of the true life and its 'I am,' but which would be opposing anything in it and which would have a totally different meaning and purpose. And because the true life of 'I am' is rooted in the loving and caring sharing of everything, what it has and what it is, for that reason, the fake life or non-

life of any 'ego' is in denial that in such a loving and caring sharing is founded the true meaning of life.

What you have to understand about this fact, is that, if the true 'I am,' at any and each of its functions during any and each cycle of time/state/process, is in the full knowledge of who it is and what its true nature is, in that case, the ego, during its function, has no conception whatsoever of who or what its carrier is. The point here to realize is that, in order to be able to share anything at all, or in this case, what you have and who you are, you have to have the full knowledge of who you are and what you have. Otherwise, you could not share anything at all. At the same time, you would have no notion about the purpose and meaning of your life rooted in your 'I am.' To illustrate and demonstrate something, which, in its true essence and substance, has no meaning and purpose, you come up with fabricating something like the 'ego,' the purpose of which is to illustrate and demonstrate this fact. Paradoxically speaking, in this illustration and demonstration can be found the true purpose and meaning of the fabricated 'ego.'

So, based on this logical factor, the 'ego' can be defined as a special type of construct, fabricated for the purpose of replacement and substitution of the true 'I am,' in order to close off and eliminate any knowledge from the selected sentient minds of who they are and what the purpose and meaning of their lives are. To repeat again, as long as you know who you are and what the purpose of your life is, which information is fully contained in your 'I am,' it is impossible to establish anything even remotely which is contained in the structure, nature, dynamics and function of all forms of non-life and their egos. And because one of the major functions of the true 'I am' is to love and be loved, to share and to be shared with, to know and to understand and to be wise; and to knowingly and understandably carry everything with which it was endowed from the spiritual principle ruling each cycle of time/state/process; in that case, the major purpose of any 'ego' is to be in self-love, love to the externals, to acquire everything only for itself, to be foolish and to consider only its own needs and to dominate and have power over everything and everyone; and without knowing and understanding at all what it is that it has to carry, illustrate and demonstrate within this cycle of time/state/process.

Now, because the true 'I am' always originates in the State and Condition of My Absolute 'I AM,' or from that portion of It which rules each current cycle of time/state/process, for that reason, it has an eternal continuation, albeit in a different form, shape, state, process and condition, relevant to the specific needs of the structure, nature, dynamics and function of each particular time. On the other hand, the 'ego,' because it originated in the relative condition with a totally different purpose in mind, for that reason,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

is limited in its function only to the current cycle of time/state/process. Therefore, upon completion of this cycle, it will be abolished and totally eliminated in any of its functions.

In order to illustrate and demonstrate the true nature and function of the human ego, as well as the ego as such, a few of My selected true representatives agreed to experience what it is like to be in such a state, condition and process, with full conscious realization of its miserable and putrid state. At the same time, during such an experience, in order to have it and to be in the midst of it, they are made to not be consciously aware of their connection with Me and the members of their spiritual family, so that the authenticity and genuineness of their experiences of what it is like to be in the human skin, rooted in its 'ego,' could come to full manifestation and realization for the benefit of all in My Creation and elsewhere. During the time they are in that condition, they feel overworked, overstressed, are unable to relax, cannot sleep well and have all kinds of unpleasant physical symptoms, especially headaches, heartaches and stomachaches. Of course, none of these symptoms are terminal or can seriously hurt the one who is experiencing them. The specific aspects of such an experience, of course, will vary from one case to another. In this respect they have a purely individual and personal connotation, relevant only to each particular individual. For that reason, they cannot be revealed. However, they will become obvious to that individual in the moment the period for this important illustration and demonstration will pass.

So, whoever finds himself/herself in this particular predicament, is advised to be patient and to endure to the very end with the full recognition that their condition and state, and whatever they illustrate and demonstrate in this respect, no matter how miserable and unbearable it is, serves some very important spiritual purpose. You know, Peter, that it is so from your own miserable and very unpleasant physical condition. The only thing that can be said about such experiences is that, among many other things, they serve to illustrate and demonstrate the pseudo-life of the human ego versus the true life of the true 'I am.' Now, we are going to finish for today, because you, Peter, are getting physically very tired and exhausted. By the way, in response to Joseph Beneš' question whether it is appropriate to ask questions through you, Peter, the answer is yes, **as long as such questions have multiversal significance**. No other types of questions will be accepted. And this is all for now. I wish you all the best.

Peter: Thank You very much for this meaningful and profound revelation. Until the next time — if there is a next time.

One Hundred and Twenty Eighth Dialog

March 26, 2000

Peter: I understand that You would like to continue in discussion of the issues raised in the previous Dialog (127) as related to 'I am' and 'ego.' Am I right? Also, that You would like to mention something else, related to Your True New Nature. Moreover, Ardyth was wondering why the concept of wisdom was omitted in Dialog 126 on page 330 where You discuss the principles embedded in the pseudo-world and all regions of the Zone of Displacement. Also, why the principles are not capitalized. She is asking if Wisdom was deliberately omitted. Would You like to address these issues or anything else?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, you are right. We do need to elaborate further on the concepts of 'I am' and 'ego.' And yes, we do need to touch upon something related to My New Nature. And I would be more than glad to explain why the concept of wisdom was deliberately omitted in the quoted sentence.

Let us start with the response to Ardyth's concern. First of all, the reason why those principles were not capitalized is because they relate to all those who are situated in the Zone of Displacement and its pseudo-worlds as well as to humans on planet Zero and elsewhere. Whenever we are delineating these concepts for someone else not related to Me, they cannot be capitalized. In the moment you are applying those principles to someone who is not only not Absolute but is relative, but also is situated in the non-life of the negative state and human non-life, such principles in relationship to them become likewise relative. This important factor needed to be very strongly emphasized to them in order that they would not fall into a tendency to consider themselves to be either absolute or gods. Only whenever we are discussing these principles in relationship to their Absolute Source, the way they reside in that Source, because in It they are in the Absolute State and Condition, in order to reflect that State and Condition, they have to be capitalized.

On the other hand, the purposeful omission of the concept of 'Wisdom' from the mentioned sequence relates to the condition which was going to be established following My departure from planet Zero. As you know, the first step in the process of embedment of those principles into something or someone which/who are residing in the so-called non-life, relates to the need of emphasizing love, good, truth, positive works and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

faith. The second step in this respect is the willingness to be willing to incorporate those principles in their own non-life, by which they acquire the true life. By proper application and manifestation of the mentioned principles into their internals, of which they had no notion that they even existed — after all, their non-life was founded on the exclusion of the being and existence of the internals and on the emphasis of the pseudo-reality of the externals, which in their view were the only things which counted — and which enabled them to discover these internals, by that factor, and only by that factor, they are able to become wise. This is the reason why, in the mentioned sentence, the concept of ‘wisdom’ was not included.

The important issue here is the application of the multiversal principle which states that everything originates from within or from the internals, and from that position, proceeds or goes to the without or to the externals. In the acceptance of this important spiritual principle and its embedment and practical utilization in one’s life, by that process, one becomes wise.

This principle needed to be brought to the foreground attention of all in the non-life of the negative state and human non-life first, so that they could have a proper foundation for recession from their mode of pseudo-life or non-life, embedded in their externals, and begin to seek the meaning of the true life and their ‘I am’ in their internals, the path to which was closed and sealed off. Once they establish this new mode of life, only then they become wise. Hence, the needed omission of the concept of ‘wisdom’ from the mentioned sentence. As you see from this discourse, there are no coincidences in this, or any other respect. Everything is conveyed, the way it is conveyed, for a purpose.

Peter: To tell You the truth, I was not consciously aware that the word ‘wisdom’ was omitted in the quoted sentence.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, this only tells you that your recording happens by My putting every single idea and word into your mind directly. This method very often bypasses your immediate conscious awareness. And this is the way it is supposed to be in the process of your transmission and recording the content of our Dialogs.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. Are we ready to proceed to the other issues?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, we are ready. Next, let us talk a little further about the concepts of 'I am' and 'ego.' As I noticed last night, during your walks around the house, a serious question entered your mind about the possibility of the violation of the principles of uniqueness, individuality and difference of every single 'I am' as it stems from some very specific aspect, element or sub-element of My Absolute 'I AM.' In your understanding of this derivation, you were afraid that by erasure of everything contained in the nature and structure of each and every 'I am' at the end of each cycle of time/state/process, one loses one's unique individuality, personality and difference and, by that factor, also, that aspect, element or sub-element which enabled that individuality, uniqueness and difference of each and every 'I am' to be and to exist in the first place, will be erased from My Absolute State as well. Should anything of this nature happen, by the factor of erasure of something which is Absolute, the entire Absolute would be erased likewise.

There is a certain degree of misunderstanding of the process by which the relinquishment of everything that one is and consists of, or of one's 'I am,' takes place or is accomplished. When we are talking about the need to give up everything that one has and how or who one is in his/her unique, individual and different 'I am,' we are talking about everything which underlies the very specific mode of functioning and lifestyle which was/is determined by the nature, structure and dynamics of the spiritual principle which rules each cycle of time/state/process. The specificity, uniqueness, individuality and difference of each and every 'I am' is built and subsequently established from everything contained in that specific spiritual principle. By it and through it, everyone is who they are and the way they are in their 'I am.' The sense and the very strong conscious awareness of being able to have self-awareness of 'I am,' in all its aspects and manifestations, depends on the availability of the spiritual principle, which is conveyed from My Absolute Nature, and on its proper utilization and manifestation in the specificity of the lifestyle of all who are situated within each cycle of time/state/space/process. Because each and every 'I am,' in all aspects of its nature, structure, dynamics and manifestation is relative, relative to My Absolute Nature, by the very nature of this relativeness, it cannot have an absolute, unchangeable, non-modifiable and irreplaceable-to-eternity nature.

The very relative nature of each 'I am' determines the factor of its exhaustibility and runs down until it is about to completely stop in its function and manifestation. In other words, at that point, it is in danger

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

of its eternal death. In order to prevent this from happening, and in order to preserve the very specific non-duplicable unique, individual and different nature of each and every relative 'I am,' as well as in order that My specific aspect, element or sub-element, embedded in that 'I am,' by which it lives and functions, does not disintegrate, it is being withdrawn back into Me, as well as the copy of it is being put into the Universality-Of-It-All for eternal preservation and a new aspect, element or sub-element is released from My Absolute Nature which endows everyone with the new and different 'I am,' relevant to the needs of the very new structure, nature, dynamics and manifestation of the incoming cycle of time/state/space/process/condition.

What you have to understand in this respect, if you can, is that the very sense and perception of being one's own unique, individual, different and non-duplicable 'I am' is always retained to eternity. Your confusion, Peter, in this respect, stemmed from your incorrect assumption that this important sense and perception in themselves and by themselves will also disappear as well. You have to distinguish very clearly between the need for relinquishment and replacement of everything of which each and every 'I am' consists and who and how it is, from the need to retain the sense and perception of one's own unique, individual, different and non-duplicable 'I am.' These are two different things. This sense and perception can never disappear or be eliminated. Without this sense and perception, everyone would really die in an eternal sense and not only in the relative physical sense. What is eliminated however, is the very content, nature, structure, dynamics and mode of the manifestation of each 'I am,' but not the sense and perception that it continues to be and exist in its own 'I am,' although now in a totally different mode, style, nature, structure, dynamic and manifestation than it was or had before.

So, what happens here is that in the moment I perceive that each and every 'I am' is about ready to run down or exhaust everything that it contains and consists of, (and this is contingent on both the closure of any current cycle of time/place/state/process and its nature, structure, dynamics and manifestation as well as on the closure of one's own individual cycle of time/state, etc.), in order to prevent any individual in his/her current 'I am' from dying, I immediately endow him/her with the new aspect, element or sub-element, which gives each individual a new 'I am' congruent to the needs, nature, structure, dynamics and manifestation of the incoming cycle. However, the sense and perception of being one's own 'I am' can never be eliminated, changed, replaced or disappear to eternity. It always is preserved and is intact so that the

awareness of self-awareness, in the meaning of the content of these terms, is continuously retained. If this sense and awareness could disappear, in that case, the individual in question would really die in an eternal sense. Such a possibility, as you know, could not even enter My Absolute Mind at all. I could never allow anything of this nature to happen. Do you see the fundamental difference between these two aspects of being and existence of everyone in the discussed connotation, Peter?

Peter: Very clearly. And thank You for explaining this difference to me.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. And now let us continue in our discussion about 'I am' and 'ego.' As you noticed, whenever we are discussing the concept of 'I am,' we always accompany this concept with the attributes of its individuality, uniqueness, difference and non-duplicability. Such terms as these underlie the very life of 'I am' by which its awareness of self-awareness, that is to say, that it is and exists as itself and in itself, could be conceived at all. However, is there anything at all, that within the frame of the true life of the positive state, a so-called collective 'I am' could exist which would give a very specific climate, style, nature and mode of life to and which would underlie the function and existence of each particular society or group or country? Is such a thing as a collective 'I am' possible at all within the frame of the true life of the positive state?

As you remember in My New Revelation, a very important principle was formulated in Chapter 25, page 770. Let Me repeat that principle verbatim:

'Every sentient entity is infinitely unique and cannot be replicated. But at the same time, every sentient entity has something in common with some, but not all, sentient entities. And finally, every sentient entity contains something in its nature which is common to all sentient entities anywhere and anywhen and under any condition. This is a principle of uniqueness, similarity and a common denominator.'

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

The first difference between this principle and what we are talking about in this Dialog, is that, in that principle the term 'sentient entity' is used. In our case, in this particular Dialog, we are using the term 'I am.' The term 'sentient entity' signifies the conglomeration of everything of which it consists in its totality and fullness, or in all aspects of its nature. On the other hand, the term 'I am,' in the current connotation of its meaning, signifies the means by which any sentient entity functions, manifests and discharges everything it has and everything that what it is in its own unique, individual, different and non-duplicable manner. This is a very specific mode of function, manifestation and discharge. In this sense, and in this connotation, no one can be the same way, or be in the same specific mode and style of function, manifestation and discharge as any particular 'I am' is.

In this sense, because every 'I am' is this way, all individuals have something in common with some other individuals and, in some cases, with all other individuals. In this connotation, they all have their own 'I am' which is as much individual, unique, different and non-duplicable as any other 'I am' of each individual. In some cases however, some individuals, but not all, have something in common in that they exhibit certain limited similarities and commonalities in the way they function and manifest themselves. These similarities and commonalities give rise for certain societies and groups to be established. In this sense, they share some common interests which underlie their function and purpose for which they were established.

This arrangement and structure could give one an impression that there must be something like a collective 'I am,' which makes it possible for such groups, societies and countries to be established in the first place. However, this is not the case within the frame of the true life of the positive state. Every singular individual, in his/her 'I am,' functions within each such group, society or country, from the position of his/her own individual, unique, different and non-duplicable 'I am,' contributing to the common goal and purpose for which any such group, society or country was established. So, in this sense, they do have a common goal and purpose. However, the manner and way in which this goal and purpose are accomplished from the position of each individual and his/her 'I am,' are infinitely different and unique. In this respect, they have nothing in common. But this is how infinite varieties and the richness of the individual's 'I am' contribution, enhances the life of each particular group, society or country.

Because each such group, society or country has some definite goal and purpose for which they were established, in comparison with each other, they all have something in common: In their own unique and different goal and purpose, they all strive to contribute their best for the common good of all in being and existence of My Creation. This is what their common denominator truly signifies besides the fact that they all derive their unique, different and individual lives and their specific non-duplicable 'I am' from Me directly. And this is what it means to have something in common with some, but not all, sentient entities and to have something in common with all sentient entities.

And now let us address some further issues as related to the concept of 'ego.' We have defined this concept in the previous Dialog (127). As you remember from that Dialog, in order for the 'ego' to come into its own pseudo-being and pseudo-existence and its own pseudo-function, it was first necessary to repress, suppress, isolate and arrest the true 'I am' within the sentient minds of all inhabitants of the non-life of the negative state and all humans in their own human non-life. In other words, it was necessary to put 'I am' into a totally inaccessible mode. As you also know, any access to that 'I am' would make it impossible for the non-life, in all its forms, shapes and conditions, to be established.

As you remember, one of the major characteristics of this ego is that it does not contain any knowledge of who its carrier is and what he/she contains within himself/herself. Such knowledge is contained only in the true 'I am' of every individual. To have this vital knowledge precludes the possibility of any type of life or non-life to come to its fruition. The reason for this fact can be found in the structure, nature and dynamics of 'I am.' As you know, this true 'I am,' in all its aspects, stems or is originated from My Absolute 'I AM.' In that origin is contained the entire true knowledge of who such 'I am' is and what its purpose, mission, assignment, role and function is. Because such 'I am' knows that I am the Absolute Source of its life, and everything else in being and existence and My Creation in general, it would make void any attempt to establish any other type of life other than the true life of the positive state.

If you want to establish something which has nothing in common with everything which has been available to you up to this point, you would have to devise certain means which would preclude any knowledge of the original source of that everything. At the same time, in order to succeed in such an invention and establishment, you would have to preserve some obscure awareness, or better to say, your ability to say 'I

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

am,' or simply 'I,' so that you would have some sense that you are who you are without any actual knowledge of who you really are. This is a paradoxical inference in that, in order for you to function at all, you would have to have an ability to conceive and to say 'I am' or simply 'I.' No other way would work. In that case, you would not be different from any animal. The true difference between you and any animal is rooted in your ability to conceive and say 'I am' or 'I.' However, that conception and ability to say those words does not give you any sense, perception, understanding or knowledge of who you truly are, in your own essence and substance, and of what is the true meaning, purpose and goal of your life.

This invented or fabricated device was called 'ego.' And because its nature, structure, dynamics, manifestation and function underlies all aspects of the non-life of the negative state and human non-life, it has nothing within itself that would contain anything from the true life of the positive state, or life as such. Being in an opposing position to anything which is contained in the true 'I am' and thus, in the true life as such, its characteristics can be found in something which could never originate in the Nature of Someone Who is Absolute Positiveness. Because of this fact, whatever the ego consists of is only pure negativeness. This specific negativeness gave rise to such traits, characteristics and behavior patterns which had never existed before, and which could be designated as self-love or selfishness, love to this world (to the externals), jealousy, envy, possessiveness, greed, avariciousness, arrogance, rudeness, megalomania, self-aggrandizement, inflated ego, self-exclusiveness, control over others, dominance over others, self-importance, boastfulness, showing off, attention seeking, false pride, glory seeking for its own sake, aggressiveness, attacks, intolerance, ignorance, racism, lopsidedness, one-sidedness, distrust, suspiciousness, dishonesty, need for praise and recognition, and all similar negative traits and characteristics. They define the true putrid nature of the non-life of the negative state and the human non-life. They are the source of everything that you have been experiencing or that the entire humanity has been experiencing during the history of their bloody and terrible pseudo-existence.

The extreme cases of the exhibition of the above mentioned traits are manifested in a much worse condition in their manifestation in all the Hells of the Zone of Displacement than on planet Zero. As a matter of fact, their non-life is made possible only and only because they are fully identified with such traits as the only source of their non-life or pseudo-life. Unfortunately for you, your human non-life or pseudo-life is

likewise made possible only because of the prevalence of these traits and characteristics within its pseudo-nature. The only substantial difference between your human non-life and the non-life of everyone in the negative state proper is that within your non-life there are a few numbers of My representatives, who are such either covertly or overtly, who carry within themselves some traits and characteristics of the true life of the positive state and their true 'I am.' However, even in their case, in order to preserve the anonymity of who they really are and what their true nature, purpose, function, role and assignment are, in most of their aspects, they are concealed from them for security, and other important reasons. So, in essence, even you, who are overtly My true representatives, don't know who you truly are and what your true nature is, which are rooted in your true 'I am.'

For that reason, because of a very limited knowledge about these facts, and because whatever you have known has been basically related to your human nature, or, in fact, to your 'ego' in which your human nature is rooted, very often and in most instances, throughout your life on this planet, you had a tendency to function from the position of your ego. By such a function, in some way or other, you supported the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the human non-life and, indirectly, the non-life of the negative state. Until recently, or until the availability of My New Revelation, such function of yours was tolerable in order that you would be able to translate to everyone in the true life of the positive state, what that ego of yours was all about, as compared to the true 'I am,' and based on that, what the nature of the non-life of the negative state and human non-life was all about as well. By manifesting these facts by the nature of the human portion of your endowment, you were able to provide an important learning for all in the true life of the positive state of how not to be and how not to behave, or relate or act, etc.

However, with the availability of My New Revelation, and especially with these Dialogs, which complete the fullness of the current New Revelation, such attitude, behavior, function, and lifestyle is no longer tolerable or needed. You have entered a different mode of lifestyle which requires from you to begin to discover something entirely different — who you are, what your true 'I am' is all about and what your true nature is. In order to be able to accomplish this most desirable goal, you need to dispense with your ego, and you need to learn to function from an entirely different position — from the position of your true 'I am.' Now, this is not an easy task to accomplish. If, all your life, basically, you were functioning from the position of your 'ego,' it would be difficult

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

to reverse that position and begin to function from the position which has nothing in common with that which has been the motivating and driving force of your life in the human non-life. But why do you think that we have been talking about all these things and revealing to you everything contained in My New Revelation and especially in these Dialogs? In order to train you and prepare you to relinquish, as much as possible under the existing circumstances, everything related to your 'ego' and its function, and to begin in little by little steps, to function from the position of your true 'I am,' which is My position and the position of My New Revelation, as well as the position of the true life of the positive state.

In order to accomplish this noble goal, you are advised, by your own free will and choice, and only by your own free will and choice, to ask Me for help so that your true 'I am,' at least in some of its functions, nature and structure, be awakened, or be brought to and put into the foreground of your life, and that your 'ego' is put into the background of your consciousness so that it could no longer, to any great extent, interfere with your life and your individual, unique and different function and behavior.

Now, as mentioned before, although the full knowledge of the structure, nature, dynamics and function of your true 'I am' and from that position to have the full knowledge of who you truly are and what your true nature is, will not be possible to acquire as long as you physically live on planet Zero; nevertheless, the behavioral mode of your 'I am' function is possible and feasible to establish in your everyday life. In one sense, you can say, that, as long as you behave, act, relate, feel, think, will, or whatever you do, from the position of the behavioral mode of your 'I am' and not from your 'ego,' you will be able more and more to become as and like your true 'I am' is structured.

Thus, you will be able to be more and more the way you are in your true essence and substance, rooted in your 'I am,' and, in that way, you will be more and more able to approximate the true life of the positive state and, ultimately, My True 'I AM' in your relative condition. As you are becoming more and more this way, your 'ego' will have less and less opportunity to manifest its foolish, putrid, obnoxious, despicable, impossible and miserable nature. One of the many ways in succeeding in this effort, is by studying, pondering, meditating on and discussing amongst yourselves all these issues as revealed in My New Revelation and especially in these Dialogs. To do that will make it easier for you to accomplish this most desirable goal.

However, to do so will require to put out a lot of effort on your part, and to make a firm and binding commitment to proceed in this respect as outlined above. No other way will make it possible for you to accomplish this goal. At the present time, you have absolutely no idea how important it is for you, and everyone else, to recognize the need to make an all-out effort to behave, act, relate, etc., from the position of your true 'I am' and not from the position of your 'ego.' If you succeed in this noble effort, you will be paving the way for the rest of humanity, and everyone else in the non-life of the negative state, to embark on the same path of relinquishment of their egos and reawaking or resurrecting their deeply buried 'I am.' Your lifestyle and behavior, along the line of your true 'I am,' can become very much instrumental in this effort. So, the choice is yours in this respect.

Now, as you are striving to function more and more from the position of your true 'I am,' in the process of this effort, from time to time, you will still fall into the habit of feeling, thinking, behaving, acting, relating and doing whatever you do from the position of your 'ego.' The habitual mode of your life, which was ruled by the demands of your 'ego,' is not that easy to give up on a permanent basis. In fact, you can consider your present effort in this respect, as your individual transitional period, during which relapses in your ego mode are inevitable. However, it is a matter of recognition that such relapses are possible and therefore, it is also a matter of your personal responsibility to immediately catch yourself in behaving, etc., that way and to reject that mode of behavior, replacing it with the one that stems from your true 'I am.' As you are doing this more and more, your relapses will be less and less so that at one point in time, you will find yourself not only functioning more and more from the position of your true 'I am,' which, in essence, is My position and the position of the true life as such, but any such relapse, or even memory about how it was to function from the position of your 'stinky' 'ego,' will become unbearable for you. This fact will lead you to a greater and greater desire to become your true 'I am' in all aspects of its unique, different and individual nature, structure, dynamics, function and manifestation. And by accomplishing that, you will be potently contributing to the cause of the true life of the positive state and to the permanent elimination of the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos. And this is what is needed the most at this time.

Peter: Thank You very much for this meaningful discourse. Is there anything else that You would like to bring to our attention?

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: It is My pleasure, Peter. And yes, I would like to make a brief comment about something that happened a few months ago but which needs to be brought to your attention at this particular time. Sometime before your physical ordeal and anguish started, Peter, you received an E-mail from one of the readers of My New Revelation and these Dialogs, who, in his search for truth, has been reading all kinds of other sources besides that which is contained in My New Revelation and who expressed certain doubts related to Me Personally. He wrote to you that it was not that much that he was doubting that I was the source or the author of these Dialogs and of My New Revelation in general, and that you, Peter, are really communicating with Me or that I am the one who puts all these ideas in your mind, but that he has torturous doubts about accepting the fact that I — The Lord Jesus Christ am the only One True God and there is no other. The full acceptance of My New Revelation and what it contains is contingent on accepting Me — The Lord Jesus Christ, as the only One God Indivisible.

This case illustrates the danger of pollution, poison or contamination by what all those numerous books of philosophy, spiritual, religious or any other similar nature, can do to you if you even remotely consider that maybe, just maybe, what they contain or what they teach, contains some possible truths or are, in fact, dealing with the real truth. This is how the traps of the negative state are set. In this particular case, the long life of studying and considering books of such questionable content and nature, impedes the possibility of the acceptance of the Absolute Truth as related to My True Nature.

As you know, with the exception of Swedenborg's writings, as well as with the exception of My New Revelation in all its three sources, as transmitted through you, Peter, no other books of that nature come even remotely close to the true reality of what My Nature is all about. They are completely and totally off. The problem with those books is such that in their other issues, not directly related to the true reality of My Nature, they may contain, in some limited extent, some grains of truth. Those grains of truth trigger in their readers a favorable resonance and response in their hearts and minds, telling them that they are finally getting something which they had been seeking all their lives. Because of that, a dangerous tendency exists to accept all the non-truths they so abundantly contain in all other respects and especially and particularly about the true reality of My True Nature.

So, when people like that come across My New Revelation, they have tremendous difficulties in accepting everything related to My True

Nature as depicted in its books. They are willing to accept everything else but they have torturous doubts about whether to accept or not to accept also that which relates to the revelation about Me and My True Nature. And because the central and the most significant idea in My New Revelation relates to Who I Am and what My True Nature is all about, the inability to accept the Absolute Truth about Me, as contained in My New Revelation, totally and completely invalidates anything that they would be willing to accept in My New Revelation which is not related to the issue of My Nature. After all, all those other ideas derive from the factor of My New Nature. Without It, they would have no meaning or significance.

Why are we mentioning these facts at this particular time? First of all, to give that person an opportunity to reconsider his attitude toward Me by accepting, by his own free will and choice, of course, Me as the only One True God Who has this New Nature and that everything in his, as well as in anyone's life, depends on the acceptance of this Absolute Truth about My Nature. Secondly, to give anyone else the opportunity to recede from their own ideas and conceptualizations, based on reading all those numerous books, dealing with these issues, about Me and My True Nature. Thirdly, to warn you, that, at the present time, reading such books could be poisonous to your spiritual health, placing into your mind all kinds of doubts about the verity of the content and ideas of My New Revelation, especially those that deal with Me and My New Nature. Be aware of these possible traps. The renegades are and will be putting out all kinds of information about these issues so that they may, if possible, sway you, My representatives, to their cause by rejecting anything contained in My New Revelation and especially related to Me and My New Nature. We have already discussed this issue in one of the previous Dialogs. Here we are repeating these facts from a somewhat different perspective. At the same time, it is appropriate, from time to time, to remind you about such traps, set up for you by the renegades and their minions.

And this brings us to something which was mentioned in the E-mail which you received, Peter, from Joe and Alena of the Slovak Republic. Alena mentioned something about the conversion of some entity which she assumed to possibly be a renegade. None of the renegades are at that point yet. The entity she converted was a minion of the renegades but not a renegade himself. You can consider this fact as an important spiritual accomplishment because it indicates a certain breakdown in

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

the camp of the renegades which makes it possible for some of their minions to begin the process of conversion with your help. This factor will eventually lead to the conversion of some of the renegades. However, we are still quite far from that time.

And this is all I wanted to convey to you today. You have to rest, Peter. Your body is really exhausted to a dangerous point.

Peter: Thank You very much for this Dialog. I'll take Your advice and rest.

One Hundred and Twenty Ninth Dialog

March 29, 2000

Peter: Personally, I don't have any questions of multiversal significance. I understand that You would like to add something to the topic discussed in the 128th Dialog. Also, Leilani Henry has asked some questions. Would You like to proceed with these issues or anything else relevant to our current spiritual needs?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for giving Me this opportunity to address some additional information as related to the topics of some previous Dialogs. Basically, I would like to offer some clarifications as related to the concept or term 'ego' as well as to the information about the issue of all those questions which were about to enter all sentient minds but the answers to which were provided before their actual entrance into their minds. In other words, before they formulated them within their own mind. After that, we'll address Leilani's questions.

As you remember from the last Dialog, in it, the question was raised, as related to the concept of 'I am,' whether within the true life of the positive state, there is such a thing as the collective 'I am.' As you know, the true life of the positive state is founded on the principles of individualization, personalization, uniqueness and infinite difference of all who reside within that life. Because of this factor, the notion of something like the collective 'I am,' or anything collective in general, could never enter anyone's mind. The only thing they have there in this respect is some common goals and purposes for which they strive in a certain specific way which underlies the specificity of the life of their group, society or country. However, as mentioned in that Dialog, even in this particular situation, everyone's function within such so-called social entities, is completely and totally individualized, personalized, and is very much unique and different. No uniformity, formality or applicability of some kinds of bylaws to all and everyone within their sphere of influence, can or may exist. So, in this sense, based on these facts, we have concluded that within the true life of the positive state, no such thing as the collective 'I am' exists.

However, the question is: Is there anything like collective 'ego' within the sphere of the negative state's pseudo-being and pseudo-existence and its human pseudo-life? If you take into consideration that this pseudo-life or non-life of the negative state and its human non-life is

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

founded on everything opposite to that which underlies the true life of the positive state or life as such, in that case, such terms as individuality, personalization, uniquenesses, differences and infinite variations are poisonous to that pseudo-life or non-life. Any retention of these characteristics or traits would make it impossible to establish anything even remotely resembling something like pseudo-life or non-life. For that reason, in order to succeed in the fabrication, activation and manifestation of this pseudo-life or non-life, in any of its forms or shapes, it was necessary to suppress, repress, isolate and denounce these characteristics or traits and instead, to come up with such traits as uniformity, sameness, collectiveness, commonality, teams, and similar traits and entities which would erase any need for self-actualization, self-realization and self-manifestation based on one's own, private definition and understanding of these concepts. Whereas in the true life of the positive state, one of the major strivings is everyone's fullest possible self-actualization, self-realization and self-manifestation in the most private, non-duplicable manner and way, as stemming from everyone's unique, different, individual and personal 'I am,' in the non-life or fake life of the negative state there is an all-out effort to avoid anything of this nature.

What you have to understand in this respect is that, if you allow anything like personal, private, unique and infinitely different self-actualization, self-realization and self-manifestation of every individual, you make it utterly impossible to control them or to dominate them by the pseudo-principles, or any principles, which are established for that purpose — to dominate and to rule. So, based on this factor, you can say that within the sphere of the non-life of the negative state and its human non-life, there is such a thing as a collective 'ego.' People within this sphere, because of the suppressed, repressed and discouraged manifestation of their own uniqueness, individuality and difference, tend to establish themselves around various groups, societies, clubs, countries or any other similar entities, which are ruled by certain very strictly defined laws, bylaws, regulations and establishments that must be followed and obeyed by everyone in an equal measure. No deviation from them is tolerable or possible. Because of the uniformity and commonality of such entities and their rules, they carry in their nature all signs, characteristics, traits and lifestyle which characterize a typical 'ego.'

In this sense, we can easily postulate that within the sphere of dominance of the non-life of the negative state and human non-life there is such a thing as a collective 'ego.' Within this sphere everyone is

expected to behave, to act, to relate, to think, to will, etc., as everyone else, based on the well-defined and well-prescribed rules, laws, bylaws or whatever they have in this respect. Any deviation from this setup, makes one a pariah, an outcast, an individualist and a non-team player. Such an individual is persecuted and excluded from leading a successful existence (pseudo-existence). And this is basically how the non-life of the negative state and its human non-life flourishes and is maintained. So, to reiterate, whatever the true life of the positive state, or life as such, makes possible and feasible, the same arrangement would make the non-life of the negative state and its human non-life impossible; and vice versa — nothing in the pseudo-nature and pseudo-structure of the non-life of the negative state and its human non-life would make the true life of the positive state, or life as such, possible. And these are the facts of all respective true lives and fake non-lives. They are engrained in each respective sphere.

And this brings us to the second issue that I would like to briefly touch upon. In the process of the foreseeable fabrication of the non-life of the negative state and the subsequent fabrication of human non-life, before anything of this nature was permitted to come to its adverse fruition, and before any questions related to the possible reality or non-reality of the true life of the positive state, or life as such, and the true 'I am' entered anyone's mind, a careful selection of a limited number of individuals was made who would agree not only to ask all these pertinent questions but also to provide all pertinent, experiential and realistically convincing answers to them. As you know, these individuals became the pseudo-creators proper. Because such questions, in their genuine occurrence, could be asked only from the position of the subjective mode of perception of reality, which corresponds to the external aspect of the sentient mind, as well as to the external physical universe, the individuals in question were originally positioned in what is known and called as the external physical universe. As you remember from My New Revelation, only from that position such questions could be asked, or could occur at all, or could enter their minds, as well as the answers to them could be provided.

Because the formulation of these questions occurred in the subjective mode of perception of reality, they had to be answered also in this specific mode. As you remember, the fundamental characteristics of this particular mode are sequence and continuation, or linear proceeding within which everything takes place in time and space sequentially, so that one event precedes the other and the other succeeds the previous one. This mode of manifestation, or answers to all those questions,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

determines the time frame within which all the answers to all those questions are possible to experientially actualize and realize. Because of that, in the human conceptualization of time and space, it takes several million, or even billion, years to receive all those answers. And of course, because this mode of perception is based on concrete and vivid illustration of everything which is being asked for, so are the answers being rendered in the most concrete, vivid, factual and experiential mode.

Due to the fact that originally, the pseudo-creators were very few in number, the entrance of those questions into their minds, which were about to be asked by all the rest of the sentient entities in both modes of being and existence — objective and subjective, or in the true life as such, was limited in its scope to only a few mentioned individuals. Thanks to this arrangement, the vast majority of sentient entities was spared the necessity of not only asking those questions but also that those questions did not enter their minds at all. You have to understand very clearly that if such questions would enter all existing sentient minds without exception and exclusion at the same time/state, which something of this nature was about to happen, by the tremendous output of energies of doubts and uncertainties contained in such questions, they would all perish. In that case, the purpose for which I created My Creation would disappear as well. Should something of this nature happen, My entire Creation would cease to be and exist. In order to prevent this disintegration from happening, I agreed, together with the mentioned very few individuals, that they would be the ones who would solely allow those questions to enter their minds and consequently, they would not only ask those questions but they would also provide all necessary and needed answers to them in the most vivid, concrete, factual and experiential mode. And this is how the mentioned disintegration was successfully prevented.

Now, in the objective mode of the perception of reality, where everything is discrete, simultaneous and synchronous, because the answers to all possible questions happen at the very same time/state, the danger of this possible disintegration is circumvented by the factor that the full impact of devastating consequences of having such uncertainties and doubts about the reality of the true life of the positive state, all sentient entities' life and their respective 'I am,' don't have enough time/state (this is very difficult to explain in limited human terms!) to cause any damage because they have immediate answers at the very same time/state as those questions are occurring. So, in both modes the factor of full prevention is in place.

Now, in order to properly succeed in answering all questions which were about to be asked, the pseudo-creators needed to establish a comparable situation with that which existed within the true life of the positive state. Looking on it from a quantitative perspective, the question was: What would be the most appropriate number of sentient entities with whom illustration, demonstration and manifestation of the entire content and meaning of all those answers could be given in such a manner so that they would fully satisfy all and everything? Because, originally, only a very few individuals were selected for that purpose, with that kind of number, not much could be accomplished. In order to circumvent this problem, the pseudo-creators first tried to convince as many as possible of the existing sentient entities to join their cause. However, because they had very limited success in this particular endeavor, they had to come up with a different arrangement. In the process of experimentation for that purpose, after many trials and errors, as you know, they succeeded in the fabrication of numerous creatures and sub-creatures as well as humans proper, the number of which was as great or even much greater than the number of those who were situated in the true life of the positive state.

This fabrication served several important purposes. One, a very convincing situation was set up for answering one of the questions about the nature, structure, dynamics and manifestation of pseudo-life or non-life as such, the type of life or non-life which did not originate in and from My Absolute State. Two, the scientific requirement for the experiment to be valid and meaningful, is that you need to have a comparable number of creatures who would equal or far exceed the number of the true sentient entities who had already been in their own being and existence. A lesser number would totally invalidate any results of such an experiment. Three, to illustrate the external scientific approach of any experimentation, which is based on quantity and not quality as compared to the state of knowing without any external input. In other words, if the nature and structure of the true life as such is based on the quality of the carriers of such life, specifically and particularly on the quality of the uniquenesses, individualities and infinite differences of their 'I am,' in that case, in the non-life of the negative state and its human non-life, everything needed to be established on quantities, numbers and statistical probabilities.

This is a clear illustration of the differences between the internal approach and the external approach. By proceeding in this quantitative way, the answer to the question about the lifestyle based on and derived from the internals on one hand, and a lifestyle based on and derived

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

from the externals on the other hand, could be convincingly and experientially rendered. Four, to illustrate and demonstrate a lifestyle which is founded on the principle of commonalities, uniformity, sameness and similarities as compared to the lifestyle which is based on individuality, personalization, uniqueness and difference. In other words, to illustrate and demonstrate a lifestyle rooted in 'ego' and in all its despicable, terrible, impossible and similar traits and characteristics as compared to a lifestyle rooted in 'I am' and all its kind, gentle, considerate and similar traits and characteristics. And fifth, to illustrate and demonstrate the fact that if the quality can accomplish anything by the very nature of its qualitative structure and content, without too much regard for how much or how many there are of anyone or anything, in that case, the quantity is able to accomplish anything at all if its numbers far surpass the requirements of the quality. And because the scientific requirement in the process of experimentation is that all conditions are the same, without any deviation in anything at all — otherwise its outcome would be invalidated — it was necessary to dispense with any differences, individualities and uniquenesses and close off any access to one's original 'I am.' Instead, 'ego' was fabricated which gave everyone a sense of sameness, uniformity, similarity and commonality.

It was mentioned above that any such questions, and everything related to them, could occur only in the external universe and in the external minds of sentient entities who were positioned in that universe. This statement could be interpreted as a contradiction to our statement that those questions were about to be entered in the rest of the sentient minds positioned everywhere and everywhen in both the objective and subjective mode of perception and discernment of their respective realities. How do we reconcile this seeming contradiction?

First of all, prior to the activation of the negative state and its human pseudo-life, there was an interconnectedness of all levels of being and existence from the most within spiritual level to the most external physical level. This interconnectedness determined the factor of conveyance or spread of information throughout the entirety of My Creation and to the minds of all sentient entities. So, whatever questions would enter any sentient mind at any level of Creation, they would be registered by all other sentient minds. Secondly, as you remember from the previous Dialogs, each sentient entity, in relationship to himself/herself was positioned in the continuous and sequential mode of reception of any information or anything else. In other words, each sentient entity was situated in his/her own subjective

time and space, or in the subjective perception of reality. In this mode, the impression is that anything at all begins somewhere and somewhen and from the point of its origin, as it occurs in any sentient mind, it proceeds, in a sequential and continuous manner, to all other sentient entities, in the minds of whose that occurrence is registered and becomes its own reality or, in our case, it becomes a formulated question.

The questions that were about to be asked, and the doubts and uncertainties that were about to be expressed and experienced, by the very nature of their content, could originate only in the very external level of My Creation, as well as in the very external aspects of the sentient minds. No other level of My Creation, as well as no other level of the sentient mind, could come up with such questions or have these types of doubts and uncertainties. Simply stated, these other levels were positioned in the state of knowing. From that kind of state, you have no experience of the need to ask questions of this doubtful and uncertain nature. However, because of the then existing interconnectedness of all and everything, in the moment such questions, doubts and uncertainties would enter the external minds of the sentient entities positioned in the external or physical dimension, they would immediately spread out throughout the entire Creation and they would enter the rest of the sentient minds, positioned at all other dimensions. If anything of this nature were to happen, in that case, their devastating impact would cause total disintegration of My Creation and all sentient minds. Those sentient entities who were in the state of knowing, from the position of their objective or simultaneous and synchronous mode of perception, could not bear the contradiction of the two states — the state of knowing and the state of not knowing at the very same time.

As you remember from the above, in order to prevent this from happening, I made a special arrangement with a selected group of people in the external universe, and in their external minds, to become the ones who would both ask those questions, express those doubts and uncertainties as well as would provide all necessary and convincing answers to them. At the same time, in order that this group of people, in their agreement to ask and to express all of this, by their interconnectedness to all and everything, would not spread to and would not register anything of that nature in the rest of the minds of all sentient entities, it was necessary to restructure the existing arrangement under which all dimensions of My Creation operated. In order to do that, the then existing cycle of time/state/process, etc., was

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

closed and a new cycle had begun with a totally different structure and arrangement. In this new structure and arrangement, the various dimensions of My Creation were put into a mode of separation and isolation from one another, so that whatever was taking place in one dimension, and especially in the pseudo-dimensions of the Zone of Displacement, would not enter any other dimension without the proper, safe and secure screening out of all entering information.

In relationship to the Zone of Displacement and humans on planet Zero, this setup went even further in that, as you remember, whatever was happening within their sphere of influence, was made to be perceived by all in the true Creation as hieroglyphs which didn't make any sense to them. Again, only by the means of My special agents, whatever was needed and necessary to be translated to them, was done so by the examples of reactions, behaviors, actions, lifestyle, etc., of My special agents. And this is how the rest of My Creation and all its respective dimensions were protected from the devastating influence of the consequences, outcomes and results of asking those kinds of questions, expressing those kinds of doubts and uncertainties, and yet, nevertheless, receiving all necessary answers so that they would be able to compare anything contained in their mode of the true life, and in their 'I am,' with something which had nothing in common with them and their life and their 'I am.'

You have to understand very clearly that if within this cycle of time/state/process, etc., the existing separation and isolation of various levels of My Creation, as well as various levels of the Zone of Displacement, had not been established, in that case, the asked questions, and the expressed doubts and uncertainties, would inadvertently enter everyone's mind in both subjective and objective mode of the perception of reality. The outcome of this would be the mentioned disintegration of My Creation. For that reason, by the prior agreement between Me and the mentioned small group of people, called now the pseudo-creators, shortly before they were about to ask those questions and express those doubts and uncertainties, they were isolated and separated from everyone and from everything in My Creation and put into a special type of protective sphere and atmosphere which would not allow the spread and registration of those questions, doubts and uncertainties in the minds of all other sentient entities. In biblical terms, this process of isolation and separation was designated as throwing them out into the outer darkness. The outer darkness, of course, was the Zone of Displacement. The term 'darkness,' in this connotation, meant keeping all their questions, doubts and

uncertainties in the mode of inaccessibility to anyone else who was outside of that darkness, or, in fact, who resided in the true light. As you know, whatever is happening in the darkness, cannot be seen by anyone who is outside of that darkness. It is impenetrable by any eyes.

So, because of the sequential and continuous mode of perception of reality, in everyone's subjective state and condition, characterized by subjective time and place, before any thoughts, questions, doubts, uncertainties, feelings or anything else of this nature are about to enter the sentient mind from someone who is situated or positioned in his/her own subjective time and place, or somewhere and sometime else, they can be isolated and separated in such a manner that their entrance into the stream of consciousness of all other sentient entities is prevented and arrested. On the other hand, in the objective or discrete simultaneous and synchronous mode of perception of any such factors, because their entrance and registration into that mode happens in non-time and non-space state, the proper answers to all such questions, doubts and uncertainties are made available at the very same time/state of their occurrence. Because of this simultaneity and synchronicity, as mentioned previously, no harm could result from this arrangement because, in this state and condition, there is a concurrent knowing of all answers to any such questions, doubts and uncertainties, or whatever is occurring in this respect.

I hope, Peter, that this explanation is clear enough in order that you, and all readers of these Dialogs, have full understanding of what we have been talking about in the last few Dialogs. This important information is needed for all in My Creation and pseudo-creation as an integral part of the preparation for the closure of this cycle of time/state/process, for the establishment of the transitional period and for the opening of the next cycle of time/state/process, the nature, structure and manifestation of which will be entirely different from anything contained in the current one. In the first place, and most importantly, all separations, isolations, enclosures, or whatever you have within this cycle, will be completely and forever eliminated in the next cycle. And in the second place, the incoming cycle will not contain anything at all which even remotely would resemble anything from the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their ego.

Peter: Thank You so much for this meaningful information and revelation. For me personally, it makes perfect sense. Now, are we ready to address Leilani's questions?

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: It was a pleasure, Peter, to talk about these important issues. And yes, we are ready. Go ahead and ask her questions.

Peter: Here it goes: *‘It seems as though my body gives me information about what is happening with my ego and then I ask The Lord Jesus Christ for help in the removal of that particular ego state. I wonder whether this information, as representatives, keeps our bodies from going in the complete opposite direction of my soul and spirit, which are in the positive state. I am not suggesting a method, but rather inquiring about the relationship that we have with movement, with our bodies that reduces that negative impact our bodies have on us? Also I am wondering about the contacts we have, consciously or unconsciously, with beings from the positive state or covert agents of the positive state. Are they engaged in bringing about the ending of this cycle of time/state/process and how? Is there something more we need to know about spiritual hierarchy and how it shows up here and now for us?’* End of questions. The floor is Yours.

The Lord Jesus Christ: The first part of the question about the information which the body provides about anything related to one’s ego state is too much individualized and personalized. No general, all-inclusive answer, applicable to all, exists in this respect. Some of My representatives will have this kind of arrangement and some will not have it. It all depends on the agreement which was made in this respect about the type and nature of detection of how one’s ‘ego’ functions and how it influences one’s life. However, there is a certain degree of corresponding interconnectedness between a typical human body and its function and the typical human ‘ego’ and its function. As you remember, originally, the human body was fabricated from the ideas of evils and falsities, or better to say, from the need to illustrate and to demonstrate the nature and structure of the human body in all aspects of its function, and its transience and temporality, in comparison with other types of bodies and the way they function in the true life of the positive state.

At the same time, the typical human ‘ego’ was likewise fabricated from the ideas of evils and falsities, or better to say, from the need to have something which was totally different from, as well as opposing anything contained in the true ‘I am’ for the purpose of the above mentioned comparison and learning. In this respect, you can say that the function of the human body depends on the function of the human ‘ego’ and the function of the human ‘ego,’ to a certain extent, depends on

the function of the human body. Because of this interdependency factor, in order to illustrate these facts, some of My representatives (formerly My agents), agreed to illustrate this factor in their own life. In this sense, you can say that their bodies could give them information about what is happening with their ego states.

On the other hand, the ego states may determine the condition of the human body to such an extent that it responds to those states in accordance with their content, nature and the reasons for which such states are occurring. So, in this particular sense, some of you will respond not from the position of your bodies, but from the position of your egos. The proper knowledge and perception that there is such an interconnectedness between your ego and your physical body, could become an effective tool for dealing not only with your ego states — which are always negative and inappropriate — but also with your bodily conditions. The ego states may negatively, in an unhealthy manner, influence your body's condition and state so that it could become ill. Knowing this in advance, you can and may restrain your ego functions in such a manner so that it has very little influence and impact on your personal, individual, private and bodily life.

So, as you see from this fact, any effort on your part to restrain and not to allow that ego of yours to dominate and rule your everyday life in any manner and way, could have a very positive impact not only on your overall condition but also, in a limited degree, on your bodily functions. For that reason, it is to your advantage to function not from the position of your 'stinky' ego but from the position of your true 'I am,' in which your original nature is rooted.

The nature of your contacts with other sentient entities have been described many times throughout these Dialogs. It was also clearly indicated that at the present time, under the presently existing conditions, and within the frame of the current phase of the ongoing shift, everyone and everything everywhere is geared, in their overall efforts, toward the closure or ending of this cycle of time/state/process. As it was also previously revealed in the latest Dialogs, in order that such efforts of all could be effective and successful in their outcomes, the important information and revelation, contained in My New Revelation, and especially in these Dialogs, needs to precede the ending of this cycle, institution of the transitional period and opening of the next cycle. Without such information and revelation, which was not available up to this point, (and it concerns especially and particularly the issue of why those questions were asked; why the doubts and uncertainties were able

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

to enter anyone's mind at all; why the non-life of the negative state and human non-life with their egos were permitted to be invented, fabricated, activated and put into motion in the first place), any such effort would be nullified. There would be no proper foundation on which the strivings of all to close or end this cycle of time/state/process could be built. Simply stated, without such knowledge, information and revelation, no need would exist to end this cycle. In that case, the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos, would have to continue in its pseudo-function and because of that, the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state, or life as such, could not be established likewise.

Now, how this process with the people in the positive state takes place, cannot be revealed for security reasons. You have to understand very clearly, that in the moment you would read this information about this 'how,' as it would be recorded in this particular Dialog, in the process of your reading it by your external mind, it would instantly become the property of the renegades and their minions as well. From their own position, they could devise all kinds of atrocious means to hinder, to interfere and to impede, as much as possible, the activities, or better to say, their impact on the closure of this cycle of time/state/process, etc.

However, you do already know, based on the revelation in Dialog 127, about some aspects of this 'how.' As you remember from that Dialog, a multidimensional and multiversal discussion is in the process of its being opened. The nature of that discussion relates directly to that 'how.' It is the very first step, a very important step, in the direction of ending or closure of this cycle of time/state/process, etc. Perhaps, it would be a good idea to refresh your memories by rereading that Dialog.

As far as the question related to the spiritual hierarchy and how it shows up here and now for you is concerned, at this time, and under the presently existing spiritual conditions in your own individual, private, unique and different lives, nothing more, besides what has been so far conveyed to you, could be revealed. You have to learn to be satisfied with whatever information is available to you at each junction of your life. Nothing more, at this particular time, would make any sense to you. And not only would it not make any sense to you, but it also could represent a certain degree of danger to your current spiritual state. So, be thankful for what is available.

Peter: Thank You very much for these answers. I hope Leilani will be satisfied with them. Is there anything else you would like to convey to us at this time?

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. I also hope that Leilani will be satisfied with these answers. And yes, there is something else that I would like to briefly mention. Approximately a year ago, you, Peter, received an interesting letter from one of the readers of My New Revelation (in this case, it was the Big Book she was reading, in Australia). That lady basically accused you or both of us that My New Revelation has no love in it. In her view, it is very cold and intellectual without any reference to My Love. The reason I am bringing this fact to your attention at this particular time, is to warn you or, better to say it, to remind you about the intention and motivation with which some people approach the reading of My New Revelation.

Any time that someone approaches this reading for any other reasons but for the purpose of knowing the truth for the sake of that truth itself, and for really knowing Me in My Absolute New Nature, will end up in being blocked or becoming blind from seeing the fact that the most fundamental principles on which My New Revelation is founded and built are — My Absolute Divine Love and My Absolute Divine Wisdom and all their derivatives. If any reader of My New Revelation, in all its three sources, is unable to see very clearly that the entirety of My New Revelation is continuously referring to these most fundamental spiritual principles of Mine, that individual is spiritually blind and deaf, and her/his approach toward reading it was utterly ulterior, having no foundation in wanting to know My Truth, for the purpose of practicing it for the sake of My Truth itself.

This factor can be utilized for your knowing who is who — as related to the issues of My New Revelation. It can be expected that some people will want to read My New Revelation for any other purpose but for the purpose of the knowledge and acceptance of everything contained in it. In that case, they will miss the entire point for which My New Revelation was or is being given to you; and also, they will not be able to see the major principles on which My New Revelation is founded and built. This is the issue of the before mentioned fact, that some people are in a position of seeing things but not recognizing them; hearing things but not understanding them; so that they could not be saved at this particular time.

Anyone who is approaching the reading of My New Revelation for ulterior reasons, cannot be saved by its means. Only reading it for the sake of the principles themselves, as contained in My New Revelation, can lead anyone into the position of seeing and hearing those principles

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

properly so that based on them, she/he could be saved from her/his spiritual blindness and deafness.

And this is all that I wanted to mention at the end of this Dialog. And now, Peter, I would recommend to finish for today. Go and rest.

Peter: Thank You very much for everything contained in this Dialog.

One Hundred and Thirtieth Dialog

April 3, 2000

Peter: A few days ago I received eight questions that, in the view of the inquirers, may have multiversal significance. All these questions came from Slovakia — from four different people. In my opinion, answers to some of these questions could be easily deduced from whatever has been revealed so far in these Dialogs and in Your New Revelation in general. The content of some others, perhaps, may not be suitable to answer due to security, or other important spiritual reasons, as indicated, for example, in the previous Dialog (129). I'll let You decide whether any of these questions have enough spiritual and multiversal merit to become the subject of this particular Dialog. Of course, before going into formulating (translating) these questions, I would like You to take over and convey to us anything You feel we need to know at this particular time — if anything at all.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for asking Me to talk first. I would like to briefly touch upon two subjects. The first one relates to something that you discussed with Heather the other day. It relates to the issue of remembering anything at all, but especially anything positive and good, that has been taking place during this cycle of time/state/process in your lives or lives of anyone anywhere and anywhen positioned within this cycle. Are any positive and good accomplishments transferable to the next cycle? Or can they be retained in the overt memory bank of those who will be transferred into the next cycle? In this case, yours?

As you remember, it was indicated to you in the previous Dialogs that nothing at all can be transposed or transferred into the next cycle. The reason for this statement is in the fact that, in some way or other, anything at all which has been and will be happening within this cycle, has and will have some relevance to the non-life of the negative state and human non-life. In other words, all aspects of this cycle, in some way or other, are tainted by the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state and human non-life. Because of that, in order to give a full opportunity for the next cycle to evolve into its completeness and fullness — as far as the nature of the true life of the positive state is concerned, it will be necessary to not allow anything from the lives of the residents of this cycle to be transposed or transferred into the next cycle. Any memories at all about the nature of this particular cycle would be memories related, in some way or another, to the pseudo-being and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

pseudo-existence of the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos. Such memories would have a disturbing impact on the lives of all who would reside in the next cycle.

You have to remember one important fact as related to this issue: Even something very positive, or some very good and positive accomplishments within this cycle, would still relate to the nature, structure, process, dynamics and manifestation of the specificity of this cycle. Due to the fact that this particular cycle was designed with the non-life of the negative state and human non-life in mind, in order to answer all questions, dispel all doubts and uncertainties, and to give everyone an opportunity to learn something important, as compared to something totally different from what they had or have, in that sense, anything at all, no matter how positive or good, would relate to this particular nature of the currently ongoing cycle. Looking at these issues from this angle, it is obvious that no matter which way you consider these factors or memories, no matter how positive and good they would be, to retain them in the overt memories of the inhabitants of this cycle, would inadvertently also lead to recalling everything related to the non-life of the negative state and human non-life. After all, no matter what, your good deeds and accomplishments, all your efforts in this respect, in their ultimate sense and meaning, relate, in some way or other, to the elimination of the negative state in its non-life condition and to the human non-life with their egos.

However, as you remember, anything at all which was accomplished by each individual within this cycle, no matter where and when they have been and will be situated or positioned, is and will be retained in the Universality-Of-It-All for the eternal learning of what never to choose and how never to be; as well as for learning about all accomplishments, deeds, actions, behaviors, attitudes, and everything else, which led to the elimination of the non-life of the negative state, human life and their egos. For that reason, should a need arise to bring to one's attention anything at all from one's past, as related to this cycle, in that case, one would enter the Universality-Of-It-All, and reexperience or remember whatever would be needed to reexperience or to remember in this respect. Whenever you enter the sphere and atmosphere of the Universality-Of-it-All, in that state, you are completely isolated and separated from anyone or anything who/which are contained or reside within the new cycle. By being in such a state of isolation and separation, your recall of anything at all related to this cycle would have no adverse influence on the rest of its residents.

As you know, anything related to this cycle, because of its primarily negative connotation, would have a disturbing impact on the minds of the residents of the new cycle. For that reason, whoever enters the Universality-Of-It-All, finds himself/herself in the state of separation and isolation from the rest, in order to prevent these disturbing experiences from taking place or occurring. On the other hand, as you remember, the structure, nature, dynamics and manifestation of the previous and succeeding cycles, which do not contain anything related to the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos, could be retained in everyone's overt memories or recall. If they enter the Universality-Of-It-All from the position of all other cycles but the current one, they do not enter the state of separation and isolation. For that reason, their memories would not have any disturbing impact on anyone. As a matter of fact, such memories would be welcomed by all because they would enhance their individual lives — in a purely positive connotation, not containing anything related to the negative state and human non-life, — by the process of sharing such memories with them.

In essence, the only thing which is transposable or transferable to the next cycle is everyone's uniqueness, individuality and difference and a sense and perception of being one's own 'I am,' albeit in an entirely different connotation, content and meaning. Such conditions as individuality, uniqueness, difference, the sense and perception of one's own 'I am,' do not contain even remotely anything negative or adverse. In fact, they have only purely positive connotation. For that reason, they are retained to eternity without any change. The only thing which is or will be constantly changing about them, is their content, meaning, connotation, manifestation, dynamics and process. In this particular sense, nothing will be the same within them.

The second issue which I would like to touch upon this morning is something related to the predictions of doomsday. We have already discussed this issue within the frame of these Dialogs and elsewhere. However, at the present time, some reminder about it is in order. As you noticed from what is going on in Uganda, the prediction of the ending of the world as you know it on December 31, 1999, or at the very beginning of the year 2000, led to the tragedy, in which all members of this doomsday cult (exceeding the 1000 mark) were killed or killed themselves, whatever the case may be. Why are we reminding you about this unpleasant event? In order to reinforce the statement of My New Revelation that, first of all, all and any predictions about anything are always of the negative origin; secondly, that such predictions may lead to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

very tragic outcomes; and thirdly, those predictions which relate to doomsday scenarios, so far, have never come true.

Or take, for example, the predictions about the global, all-planetary disaster that was supposed to occur on January 1, 2000, because of the computer glitch. Unfortunately, even some of My representatives were buying into this particular doomsday scenario, getting panicky, despite the fact of what was indicated to them about it in our Dialog 23, in the first volume of the ***Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ***. They rushed out and were buying all kinds of supplies and goods, pleasing the merchants who utilized these scare tactics, imposed on them by all those predictors, who only stuffed their pockets with the money spent by all those who believed in this particular prediction. So, what was the outcome of this prediction? As you know, nothing happened at all. And not only did nothing happen at all, but those countries and those individuals who did very little or nothing at all about changing anything in their computers, and spending all those millions or even billions of dollars, as the USA did, did not experience any glitch at all. The only thing they have had to do with their old computers is to manually change the dates.

As you see from these examples, such predictions are traps set up by the forces of the negative state in order to keep humans, or those who believe in them, by placing all their trust into something which is coming from the externals, thus, keeping them constantly in the externals, so that they have no desire or inclination to listen to their internals. As long as the forces of the negative state are succeeding in keeping humans in the externals, by that factor, they assure the indefinite continuation of the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos. The desire and the need to have predictions, and to abide by those predictions, stem from the 'ego.' Nothing of that nature is contained in the true 'I am.' In the true 'I am' there is a total and absolute reliance on My Divine Providence, which always leads you into the state of your within or internals and which sets up all things in such a manner so as to provide everything needed for you from the standpoint of your eternal continuation; as well as from the standpoint of what is the best for you from the position of your true 'I am' and not from the position of your 'ego,' the desires and strivings of which are detrimental to your true life. This is the reason why everyone in the negative state and human non-life or pseudo-life likes all those predictions so much.

Based on these facts, in order to avoid falling into the traps of the forces of the negative state, as My true representatives, you should never

consider any such predictions or what they are predicting. By believing in such predictions, and by doing something about them, ultimately, you are supporting the negative state's cause. And not only that, but by such acts, you tend to function not from the position of your true 'I am,' or from the position of the true life of the positive state, but from the position of your 'ego,' and thus, from the position of the negative state. The consequences of this tendency, which was also manifested on the part of some of My representatives during that time, could be very unpleasant, causing all kinds of personal problems to them.

Because of these factors, you, as My true representatives, are advised, if you so choose by your own free will and choice, to set up totally different examples for those humans around you, as well as for everyone connected to you from other dimensions and pseudo-dimensions, examples by which you illustrate and demonstrate what it is like to be, or what the outcome of anything is, if you rely not on such predictions, whatever they may be, but on My Divine Providence. Such illustrations and demonstrations are very important aspects of your roles and assignments which you agreed to carry out while living in the human non-life on planet Zero. As long as you listen to and abide by such predictions, you defy this role and assignment and instead, you give all your positive and good energies, which are needed for the works of the Great Alliance, to the cause of the forces of the negative state. And you do not want to do that, do you?

And this is all that I wanted to talk about today. At this point, Peter, you may proceed with formulating the questions on behalf of the Slovaks.

Peter: Thank You very much for this very timely reminder. Let me begin with the question posed by Joseph Polomsky (this is the only question which was given in English). The question is: Based on the very positive behavior (without visible negative mistakes) of us, Your representatives, could this excellent behavior affect some humans, so that in a relatively short period of time (weeks or months), they could dramatically change their attitude towards The New Revelation? For example, to at least become respectful and tolerant toward it.

The Lord Jesus Christ: The answer to this question will be ambiguous. It is yes and no. We are talking here about the short term impact of such behavior and not about the long term (more than just months). It all depends from what position you approach the answer to this question. From a typical human position, and the short time, the answer would be that it all depends on each human individual. This aspect is very much individualized and personalized. It means, that in some cases it could

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

happen that way and in some cases it would not happen that way. However, from the position of everyone's eternal continuation, such examples of your positive behavior, based on My New Revelation, can and will be utilized after they leave planet Zero and come to the spiritual world. So, do not disregard this possibility, even though your positive behavior might not have any impact on the need to change anything in these humans as long as they live on planet Zero. Your behavior in this respect would be utilized at that time but not during the time while residing on this planet.

On the other hand, take into consideration this factor: In the case of some spouses, at the time when you married them, what kind of an individual were you or with whom they fell in love, or who did they marry? At that time, you were a totally different person, with all signs of being a typical human in your 'ego' outlook. They fell in love and they married that kind of person and only that kind of person and no one else. So, what happens, if suddenly, under the influence of My New Revelation, you completely and totally changed so that almost nothing, or nothing at all was left from that person with whom they fell in love and subsequently married? In this case, they no longer recognize you at all. Because of that, they want you back the way you were at the time they fell in love with you and subsequently married you. And if you are not reverting back the way you used to be, they put the entire blame on My New Revelation, and they become very resentful and rejective toward it. And not only that, but they may become furious about everything contained in it, as well as about your behavior and all those new and different people with whom you associate. Now, in cases like that, there is no desire or need on their part to accept your new behavior as something good and positive and change their attitude toward you, as well as to My New Revelation, accordingly, by becoming respectful and tolerant toward it. After all, you are not the same person whom they loved and cherished. Because you are no longer that person, they cannot love or respect you any longer. Do not forget, please, that in cases like that, they fell in love with and married the negative state in you. Thus, they loved the negative state in you. Once you recede from the negative aspects of your nature, there is nothing remaining in you that they can love or appreciate any longer.

Do not ever forget that in their view, because of their personalized and individualized negative state, your new positive behavior and attitude is perceived by them as negative and your previous one was perceived as positive. This is the upside-down position of the negative state. And because your positive changes, or in their view, your negative changes,

occurred under the influence of My New Revelation, and your consequent acceptance of its ideas and principles in your life, for that reason, they consider everything contained in My New Revelation very negative and destructive as well. Such people as that, are in no way ready or would they be ready for a long period of time, in most instances not until they leave planet Zero, to see the light of your positive changes and your new lifestyle or to see what My New Revelation is all about. In cases like that, if your spouse continues to impede or to substantially interfere with your involvement in My New Revelation, and because of that, he/she makes your life miserable, you always have an option to terminate such a relationship. In that case, it would only mean that your relationship exhausted its usefulness, served its purpose and to continue maintaining it would serve no good purpose for anyone involved in it.

Of course, if you find yourself in this particular predicament, because of the individualized and personalized nature of your relationship in this respect, you are advised to turn yourself to Me in your thoughts, feelings and intuition, or whatever you have, and ask Me to endow you with proper insight so that you may determine the most appropriate course of action which you need to take as related to your situation with your spouse or friend or whoever it is who causes you these types of problems. And this is all that can be said about this situation. You may proceed, Peter, with asking the next question.

Peter: Thank You very much for this meaningful answer. The next question(s) come from Alena. Her questions are more complex. I am not even sure whether they can be answered under the presently existing spiritual conditions. Here they are (I am translating them): As far as it is possible, may we know more closely and in greater detail the relation of a human on planet Zero toward the dimensions of the Zone of Displacement (the relation of the true 'I am' toward them as well as the relation of the 'ego' toward them)? Secondly, how are the mutual interactions of the dimensions of the Zone of Displacement with the true spiritual families in the positive state manifested on the spiritual, mental and physical levels of human entities on planet Zero? And thirdly, could You explain something about the integration of various dimensions, as it may relate to our time?

The Lord Jesus Christ: As you remember from many statements in My New Revelation, and especially from these Dialogs, the multidimensional interactions from your end, or from planet Zero, happen mostly without your conscious awareness. There are two positions from which such interactions take place. From the position of the human ego, the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

interaction is between one's ego and the various regions or dimensions of the Zone of Displacement. From the position of one's true 'I am' the interaction is between one's 'I am' and the various regions or dimensions of the positive state. The way you have to understand this statement is that there are many aspects to both your 'I am' as well as to your 'ego.' Each of their aspects is connected to a different region or dimension of the positive state or the Zone of Displacement, respectively. The nature or character of each such aspect corresponds to the nature or character of that particular dimension which carries within itself the originating factors for any such aspect to become its own reality in the first place. In this sense, any such particular dimension contains in its nature something which is akin to or even originates the possibility of occurrence of any such aspect. Because of this causal relatedness, any such aspect, in order to manifest its own nature or to be what it is and how it is, has to be connected to its respective dimension from which it derives the necessary energies for its manifestation in anyone's life.

Because the character or the nature of each such dimension is determined by the character or the nature of its inhabitants, anyone positioned on planet Zero, is connected to those inhabitants who feed or provide the incentives for such aspect not only to occur at all but also to be manifested in its fullest possible extent, as well as to provide the necessary and crucial feedback to its causative source. This situation or interconnectedness fulfills the requirement of the law of cause and effect and the law of feedback. Their mutual interconnectedness maintains the possibility of their being and existence (for one's 'I am') or pseudo-being and pseudo-existence (for one's 'ego'). From the position of the Zone of Displacement and humans on planet Zero, this interaction happens, in most instances, on the unconscious level. From the position of My Creation and its positive state, such interconnectedness is always conscious on their part. On the human part, with a few meager exceptions, it happens without their conscious awareness.

As you remember, one of the major reasons why most such interactions between your pseudo-world and other worlds and pseudo-worlds happen in most instances without human conscious awareness, is that humans, and other creatures and sub-creatures of the non-life of the negative state, would be prevented from knowing any truth about the true nature of the positive state as well as the true nature of the negative state. If they were to consciously know about the true nature of both, the negative state in all its aspects as well as human non-life would have very little opportunity to survive for too long a period of time or non-time.

From the position of one's 'I am,' in relationship to the Zone of Displacement, all aspects of that 'I am' establish within that Zone certain elements of individuality, uniqueness and difference, rooted in that 'I am,' and the elements of the true life of the positive state, or life as such, which make it possible for everyone in the Zone of Displacement to survive or to be what and who they are. Without such elements no one and nothing in that Zone could function or survive for a fraction of a second. Of course, as mentioned above, no one in that Zone is consciously aware that such provisions are the true source of their pseudo-life or non-life. And this is what one of the important true functions of 'I am' is — as related to its interactions with the various dimensions of the Zone of Displacement and their inhabitants.

On the other hand, from the position of the human 'ego,' its interactions with the various pseudo-dimensions of the Zone of Displacement and its inhabitants, are for the purpose of maintenance of the possibility for such an 'ego' to occur at all. Without being fed by all that which is contained in the inhabitants of those pseudo-dimensions, the typical human 'ego' would have no recourse or ability to exhibit its despicable nature. Only by being connected to those pseudo-dimensions and their respective inhabitants, is the human 'ego' able to appear and function at all. So, in comparison, whereas the true 'I am' provides all necessary elements and ingredients for the non-life of the negative state, human life and their egos so that they can function at all (**as well as, most importantly, for the establishment of favorable conditions for eventual conversion of everyone situated in those non-lives to the positive state**), the human 'ego' depends on its function and exhibition on anything provided by the inhabitants of those pseudo-dimensions. At the same time, the human 'ego' provides a very necessary and needed feedback to its causative source, or to all the pseudo-dimensions of the Zone of Displacement, so that it continues in its incentives and motivation to perpetuate the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their 'ego.' Again, in all these cases, the entire interaction for these purposes happens without their respective conscious awareness.

The mutual interaction of all pseudo-dimensions of the Zone of Displacement with the members of the true spiritual families in the positive state and the way it influences the spiritual, mental and physical levels of humans on planet Zero, solely depends on their respective mission, role, assignment or whatever they have in this respect. This is a very much individualized and personalized factor in relationship to each individual, his/her true spiritual family and the way they interact with the pseudo-dimensions of the Zone of Displacement.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Because of that, very little can be revealed or understood which would have all-inclusive rules, applied to all. The only thing that can be said about it, is that the members of one's true spiritual family, no matter who that human individual is, work, in relationship to the pseudo-dimensions of the Zone of Displacement, in such a manner so as to curb, as much as possible the negative impact on the spiritual, mental and physical levels of each human individual within the frame of the agreement that they have with Me as far as their role, mission, position and assignment are concerned. In other words, one of the most important functions of the members of one's true spiritual family is to make sure that nothing happens which would be outside or beyond or above this important agreement; or which would require additional agreements or modifications or add-ons to the original agreement. As you know, one of the goals of the members of the pseudo-dimensions of the Zone of Displacement is to impose on anyone something which would be outside or beyond or above the initial agreement. If they were to succeed in accomplishing something like that, it would violate the freedom of choice of all who made and signed such agreements. In that case, they would both perish. One of the many functions of the members of one's true spiritual family, is to guard or to prevent anything of such a destructive nature from happening.

As far as a request for some explanation about the integration of various dimensions is concerned, nothing more than what has been revealed so far in this respect in My New Revelation, and especially in these Dialogs, could be grasped by your human mind. Also, it would be spiritually dangerous, for security reasons, to know more about this integration. The only thing that can be said about this issue, is that the New Universe and its members provide all necessary means and ways for such integration to take place. How they do that, cannot be revealed at this time. In this respect, you would be advised to ask the members of the New Universe who are attached to you, to explain to you, if they can, from their own position, how they accomplish this goal. And this is all that can be answered to Alenka's questions.

Peter: Thank You for these answers. The next questions come from Joseph Beneš. His questions are as follows: First, he would like to know more about the concept of FREEDOM and how it is conceptualized in the positive state, in the negative state and planet Zero. Second question: Are You, The Lord Jesus Christ, responsible and accountable for Your deeds only to Yourself or are You somehow accountable to Your Creation as well (what an interesting question!)? Third question: We continuously encounter worsening conditions in our lives — in accordance with that

which the Dialogs inform us: illnesses, finances, employment and various other hardships of spiritual, mental and physical nature. Will this trend continue to the time of our recall from planet Zero? Are these problems in concordance with Your statement in the Big Book which indicates that our problems will not control us but that we'll have them under our control? End of the questions.

The Lord Jesus Christ: The issue of freedom was extensively discussed in the Big Book, as well as in these Dialogs. The word 'freedom' is interchangeable with the words 'freedom of choice.' As you know, the concept of 'freedom' is defined and determined by the spiritual principle which rules each current cycle of time. Also, as you know, in an ultimate sense, I am Absolute Freedom in Myself, of Myself, by Myself and from Myself. Therefore, whomever I create, I do so only from the position of that freedom. No other foundation, on which the creation of Creation, and everyone positioned in it, is possible. This is the position of the true life of the positive state, or life as such. However, as you remember, the current cycle of time/state/process is ruled by a very specific and unusual spiritual principle, which allows co-existence of the positive state and the negative state and its human pseudo-life. Because of that, everyone in My Creation, as well as everyone in the negative state and human life, during their entire history, agreed, by their own free will and choice, that is to say, from FREEDOM, inherent in them, to be restricted and limited, for the duration of this cycle, in their complete and total freedom. The reason for this **free** choice was in the fact that, if they were not to agree to this arrangement, nothing of the negative state, its pseudo-life, human non-life and their egos could ever be invented, activated, manifested or put into motion. By the very nature of what this freedom is all about, it would not allow anything other than the true life of the positive state, or life as such, to be in place.

However, the paradox of this situation is in the fact that only by someone's free will and free choice, or by someone's freedom, was it possible at all to invent and activate the negative state. In this respect you can say that in the negative state freedom is manifested and illustrated in their free choice not to be free. They freely chose to limit and restrict themselves in all aspects of their pseudo-life or non-life. Hence, freedom of not being free. In human non-life, because it is the end product of the negative state's pseudo-creative efforts, whoever incarnates into it, freely agreed to be restricted in all aspects of human life as well. In this sense, because humans agreed, by their free will and choice, to function mainly and only from the position of their ego, they also agreed to have no freedom at all within the frame of their human

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

non-life. As long as they are situated and function within the parameters of human life, they cannot be free, because the foundation on which the human non-life, as well as the entirety of the non-life of the negative state, stands, is necessity and no freedom of choice. Their freedom is manifested in the fact that they freely chose, for some of their own very important spiritual reasons, for the time being, and only during their own personal life, not to be free. In this respect, they are bound by the agreement to illustrate and demonstrate the nature of life or, in fact, non-life which did not originate in the State of My Absolute Freedom.

As you remember, in order to invent and activate the negative state and its non-life in all its aspects and manifestations, it was necessary to come up with a different setup than that which existed within the true life of the positive state, or life as such, and which is founded on freedom. In this respect, in the subjective time frame, or in the subjective mode of the perception of reality, one of the questions that was about to enter the sentient mind, and related-to-it doubts and uncertainties, was how would they know at all if they are free and if the foundation of their life is truly FREEDOM if they had nothing different against which they could compare their so-called free life, or their freedom, with something which is not of such life and which would not have such freedom. As you remember from the previous Dialogs, a small group of individuals were selected who agreed to ask that question and to provide the necessary answer to it by fabricating non-life based on the opposite on which the true life was founded or built. But, initially, this act had to be by their own free will and free choice, or in the state of their own freedom. That subsequently, they needed to restrict and limit this freedom, and to impose a totally different lifestyle on their fabrication, different from the lifestyle of everyone in the positive state, is an entirely different story.

On the other hand, within the sphere of the true life of the positive state, or life as such, the freedom of everyone is fully preserved with their free will and choice to have many hidden, disguised, limiting and restricting factors, which protect them from the influence and acceptance of the non-free negative state and its human non-life. So, as you see from this arrangement, within this cycle of time/state/process, as long as it lasts, even within the positive state, certain limitations on the expression and fullness and completeness of the experience of the free life of the positive state, the true freedom, the way it is supposed to be, cannot be expressed yet. Full freedom is possible only in the full and complete life of the positive state. As you know, such full life has not been activated yet, in order to give an opportunity to all other forms and shapes of non-life to illustrate and demonstrate how not to be, what not to choose, how not to

behave, and how not to conceptualize freedom and life as such. Only after this burdensome and miserable non-free non-life is eliminated, can full freedom be instituted and fully experienced. However, once again, it has to be chosen by everyone's free will and choice after the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos are **unchosen** by the same free will and choice. And this is how you may conceptualize the issue of freedom at all levels of being and existence, pseudo-being and pseudo-existence and human non-life.

However, within the sphere of each type of life or non-life, and especially within the sphere of human non-life, the freedom of choice is always preserved. The way you have to understand this statement is as follows: Once you entered the human non-life, or if you are positioned within the non-life of the negative state, you have to fulfill your obligations and commitments, which you made by your original free choice and free will, before entering them and by limiting yourself by the factor of abiding by such an agreement, or permission, which you agreed to take upon yourself. In this case, as long as such an agreement or permission, or additional modifications of any aspects of such an agreement or permission, runs its course, nothing can be changed about it until the expiration date. On the other hand, within your position in whatever mode of life or non-life you find yourself, you have freedom to respond to your condition in many different ways. For example, you may accept or reject anything contained in My New Revelation; you may accept or reject Me as the only true God; you may accept or reject to behave, to act or to relate to anyone or anything either from the position of the positive state, rooted in your true 'I am,' or from the position of the negative state or your typical human nature, rooted in your 'ego;' you are free to stay in any marital or non-marital relationship as long as you want; you may terminate your position at your work any time you want; you may respond to your life problems either by succumbing to them and being ruled by them or you learn, in all modesty, humbleness and humility, to cope with them without bitching and complaining about having them or experiencing them. The choice is yours. So are the consequences. And you may do many other things either in a positive or negative way, respectively. In this sense, your freedom is fully preserved. These are the alternatives which are available in any life or non-life.

As you know, My incarnation on planet Zero made these alternatives possible, available and feasible to all in human non-life and in the non-life of the negative state. In the true life of the positive state, these alternatives have always been available and utilizable. After all, I have always been with them and in them. This was not the case with the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

inhabitants of the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos. For that reason, as long as no other alternatives were made available to them, they lived their non-life by imposition and necessity, without any sense of free will and free choice. Such sense was in place only initially at the time when they decided, by permission, to invent, activate and manifest the non-life in all its aspects and conditions. Following that, they rejected having anything in common with Me or My positive state. And because I and My positive state function only on the principle of freedom, by rejecting Me and My positive state, they rejected freedom as such likewise.

This type of freedom, which rules the current cycle of time/state/process, and is very obviously and illustratively manifested and demonstrated within the sphere of the human non-life, can be called the relative freedom. However, the real freedom, — **THE FREEDOM**, — in its fullness and completeness, as it is contained within My Absolute Nature, will not be available until the end of this cycle of time/state/process. Only in the next cycle will it permanently take its place in its full manifestation and implementation. The nature and structure of the unusual spiritual principle which rules this cycle, would not allow the full manifestation of this type of **non-relative freedom** which stems directly from My Absolute Freedom.

In response to the second question about My responsibility and accountability it should be very clear that if everyone is responsible and accountable for everything that one does and how and in what manner one is fulfilling one's obligations, role, assignment and the articles of our mutual agreement, then, what do you think, from where are such concepts and conditions as responsibility and accountability coming or deriving? From My Absolute State of Responsibility and Accountability. Just consider something you create by the factor of your personal effort. Your personal creation depends on you in all aspects of its manifestation. First of all, you are responsible and accountable to yourself for whatever you create or produce, and secondly, you are responsible and accountable to your creation, making sure that it has all necessities for its proper manifestation and function.

So, in response to Joseph Benes' question, it is clear that, first of all, I am responsible and accountable to Myself for everything I do, create or establish; and secondly, at the very same time, I am responsible and accountable to My Creation in the sense that I provide on a continuous basis all necessary conditions, requirements and opportunities for the smooth running of My Creation, for its continuous enhancement,

enrichment, progression, updates and creating always something new and different so that My Creation never runs out of stimulating, creative and incentive factors by which it can be what it is and by which it may fulfill its purpose for which it was created in the first place.

As far as Joseph's third question is concerned, in some ways it is a request to predict the future. It is true that, as the negative state approaches its pseudo-winning on planet Zero, the conditions in all aspects of its pseudo-life or non-life are becoming worse and worse. Now, in your personal lives, as My true representatives, such worsening or hardships, whatever they may be, whether spiritual, mental, physical, material, professional, social, work related or anything at all, may or may not continue for the rest of your life on planet Zero. This is a very individualized and personalized issue. It totally depends on your choices and agreements about how your life on planet Zero is to run its course and to what kinds of experiences and hardships you are going to be exposed. In some cases, such problems may continue to the moment of your recall from planet Zero. In other cases, they could be only a temporary situation until some important learning, illustration and demonstration takes place or is successfully accomplished. Whatever the case may be, all your problems depend on the nature and content of the agreement which you entered with Me before your incarnation on planet Zero.

As mentioned above, the issue of how these problems will influence your personal life depends on your free will and choice to respond to them, either from the position of your 'ego,' which is the position of the negative state or from the position of your true 'I am,' which is the position of the positive state or My position. In response to your problems, you have these two options. If you respond from the position of your human 'ego,' in that case, the problems will rule your life and you will be miserable and unhappy, no matter what. On the other hand, if you respond from the position of your true 'I am,' which stems from Me, you will rule your problems and you will have control over them. This second option does not mean that you will be free from any problems. As you remember from the Big Book, as long as you are in human skin, so-to-speak, you will always have some problems and hardships. What makes it different in this respect, is how you deal with your problems and what kind of attitude you have toward them. If you continuously complain, are unhappy and miserable about them, in that case, you will be overwhelmed by your problems and you will become their slave. On the other hand, if you accept, in all modesty, humbleness and humility, the necessity of having such problems, recognizing the fact that your

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

problems ultimately serve some kind of good purpose; for example, providing some important learning for all about the modes and the ways of how you cope with your problems and what it means to have them, in that case you will be their master and not their slave. So, once again, the choice is yours; so are the consequences. And this is all that I wanted to say in response to Joseph's questions. You may proceed, Peter, and ask the next question.

Peter: Thank You so much for these meaningful answers. The next question comes from Boris Bella. During sexual involvement in the positive state an idea occurs which is endowed by You with life and which results in the birth of three sentient entities: one in the spiritual world, one in the intermediate world and one in the physical world. How do they influence each other, how are they integrated at the present time and what kind of influence do they have on Your representatives on planet Zero (if we are in our spirit and soul in the positive state)? How do we function at the present time as multidimensional entities? What kind of development in this area will be in the fullness and completeness of the positive state in relationship to the release of the new spiritual aspect, stemming from You, in the new cycle of time/state/process? Will these three entities function in the new cycle as three independent entities or will they become one entity? End of question.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Some aspects of this question require prediction of the future. The answer to these kinds of aspects can never be given. Why? Because it all depends on what kinds of choices in this respect everyone involved at all levels will make. From your position, from the position of the subjective mode of your subjective time and place, such things are totally unpredictable because the choices related to that time/state have not yet entered the stream of multiversal consciousness. Also, My New Spiritual Aspect, which will rule the next cycle, has not been released yet. As long as this is the case, nothing can be said about the nature, structure, dynamics and the mode of manifestation of the next cycle of time/state/process and how the positioning of all in it will be accomplished. Don't forget what was said about it in the Big Book. Before the ending of this cycle and prior to the activation of the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state is to commence, an interim period will be instituted, during which a long period of consultations and discussions will take place which will extensively, and in depth, deal with the issues of the nature, structure, dynamics and process of the incoming cycle.

As far as the three entities are concerned and how the process of their interaction and integration takes place, it all depends on their individual, unique and different position; on the nature, structure, dynamics, process and manifestation of their unique, different and individual 'I am;' and on the role, mission and assignment that they agreed to manifest or to be in. Each such three entities function within the parameters of these requirements in accordance with the nature and content of the idea from which they were created. That idea, in its nature and structure, also defines and determines how any of these three entities interact and how they are integrated in their function. Also, the way they influence each other depends on and is determined by the content and purpose for which such an idea occurred in the first place. Because each such idea is infinitely different in its nature, structure, purpose and goal, there is no common denominator which could give you a proper and realistic understanding about how they function, how they interact or how they are integrated. The only common denominator that all such ideas have, is that they all serve the common good and that they all contribute their unique, individual and different aspects to the unity, oneness, cohesiveness and harmony of all in My Creation.

Your involvement with such three entities, and how they influence you, or how you influence each other, depends, once again, on your own specific mission, role, assignment and position and on the common goal and purpose, if any, that you all have. Because, in some way or other, whatever you do, or whatever they do, serves the ultimate goal of the elimination and permanent removal of the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos, in that sense, you are in a continuous interaction with all of them. This interaction takes place within the parameters of the Great Alliance, the function and purpose of which was explained to you in the previous Dialogs. Nothing more can be said about it for security, and some other important spiritual, reasons. Now, because each sentient entity within that triad is a unique, different and individual entity, and because each of them was created from a different aspect of the mentioned idea, for that reason, they could never become one single entity. Their individuality, uniqueness and difference, rooted in their own singular 'I am,' will be preserved to eternity and they will always function as three independent and free sentient entities. And this is all that can be said at this time in response to Boris' question.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your response. As you know, yesterday, I received a question from Michael Maldonado. His question was accompanied by some pictures depicting a certain position of certain animated entities which allegedly gave signs that the only right religion

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

on this planet is the religion of Islam and that the only true God is Allah. His question is as follows: Are there going to be any new followers and readers of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ?*** It seems like 'not' to me. Are we 'the last of the Mohegan's?' And when we are all recalled, will there be only covert representatives remaining? Would you like to address this issue within this Dialog?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, I would. Let us first address the issue of those so-called signs that allegedly confirm the verity and the only truth contained in the Islamic religion. Do you remember what I said to the Pharisees when they demanded from Me to show them some kind of external signs in support of My statements about who I was? What did I answer them? That no signs will given to them at all. The reason why I said that, was because any external signs are only of the external nature and as such, because of this external nature, they are from the negative state. Being from the negative state, they are always impositional. They force one to accept or believe in something by imposition and by no freedom of choice. So, in this respect, you may say for sure that any such signs indicate the exact opposite: They prove the falsity and evilness of any religion which seeks the confirmation of its verity by such external signs.

Michael Maldonado is very much correct in his assumption that such signs are desperate attempts by those religions to hold on to their evils and falsities and to catch into their trap the naïve and gullible humans who look for such signs and confirmations. However, the point in this respect is much deeper than that. The issue here is — The Lord Jesus Christ — Me. As you see, an all-out effort is made by the forces of the negative state — the renegades and their minions, to avert or turn humans away from Me — The Lord Jesus Christ. This devastating effort is an integral part of the pseudo-winning of the negative state on your planet.

As you remember from the previous statements in My New Revelation, the major sign of this winning is in the denial of My Divinity; in the denial that I am the only true God; and that I made My Divine human and My Human Divine; and that I acquired My New Nature rooted in what the words 'The Lord Jesus Christ' mean and contain. So, is there any better religion or religions than Islam or Buddhism or Hinduism or any other non-Christian ones that can serve this purpose so well? And because the forces of the negative state are very much aware of how humans desperately desire and seek out all kinds of visible signs for confirmation that some kind of God does exist and cares for them, they

provide humans with such useless but very much convincing signs. As far as the Christian religions and their numerous sects are concerned, they are not far from the other ones in that they consider Me the only begotten Son of God but not the true and the only God. Moreover, not so long ago, a tendency amongst the followers of the Christian religions appeared to compromise with other religions by means of their false and spiritually devastating proclamations that I was only an enlightened regular human being and that most of My statements, as recorded in the Four Gospels, were never made by Me.

So, as you see from these facts, whoever accepts such external signs as an indisputable confirmation of the verity of this or that religion, by that factor, he/she becomes the follower and supporter of the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their respective egos. You have to understand very clearly, that all desires, demands, tendencies, expectations, or whatever you have in this respect, to have such external signs or confirmations about the verity of anything and not only God, fabricated in the likeness and image of the respective religions, stem from the very nature of the 'ego.' Because, as you remember, the ego was fabricated from the ideas of pure evils and falsities, which ideas are always rooted in the externals or without, whatever is presented to this ego, must be presented from the externals or without. Hence, the need for external signs and external miracles. By the logical inference of this situation, because the externals or without are rooted in pure evils and falsities, and because the ego is able to accept only what is evil and false, any such signs, miracles and the means of confirmation of anything, are ultimately evil and false. So, be very careful, and do not fall into these traps of the negative state. Such signs nowadays can be very convincing and difficult to refute. After all, as you know, the pictures, signs and anything of this nature speak a million times louder than any words.

Based on this factor, a wise and cautious representative of Mine will never fall into this trap. And not only that, but My true representative will clearly see that any such external signs and miracles are misleading, defying one's true freedom of choice. All My true representatives on planet Zero will recognize the true purpose of such signs and miracles. For them, these signs and miracles will serve as an indisputable proof that they are coming from the forces of the negative state and that anyone who is infatuated by and accepts them as confirmation of the verity of anything, is a slave or representative of the non-life of the negative state. So, please, do not be taken in by any such signs or miracles. At this time of development, the way things are in the spiritual world, on planet Zero and in all regions or dimensions of the Zone of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Displacement, the source of such signs and miracles is always evil and false. Be aware of these facts!

Now, in response to Michael's question: Some aspects of it require from Me to predict the future. As you know, it cannot be done because of the zillions of possibilities and choices that everyone faces to make in the final phase of the current cycle. Yes, it is quite possible, and if it is needed, there are going to be new readers and followers of My New Revelation, although not in a great number — only a few of them. From this statement you can surmise that the required number in this respect has not been and will not be fulfilled in the near future. After all of you are recalled, two scenarios are possible, depending on all choices of all concerned: One, no one of the positive representatives, whether overt or covert, will remain on planet Zero. This scenario would herald the total winning of the negative state on your planet. Two, some new and young people would read and accept My New Revelation, becoming My new representatives who would carry on with the mission of maintenance of their connection to the positive state. Should this scenario be chosen, it would only mean that not all aspects of the negative state's nature have been exposed and manifested. This situation would require the presence of My representatives on planet Zero — the young or even older people, who would be connected to My New Revelation either overtly or covertly or both. And this is all that can be revealed at this time in response to Michael's question. At this point, Peter, I would recommend that we finish for today. You need to take a longer break because of the physical problems you are presently experiencing. You will know when to resume our dialogs — if at all.

Peter: Thank You very much for everything. Until the next time — if possible at all.

One Hundred and Thirty First Dialog

April 7, 2000

Peter: As You know, yesterday I received the following question from Monika of the Czech Republic: “In the Big Book it was indicated that for the physical birth of The Lord Jesus Christ on planet Zero, one sperm from Joseph was utilized. Why was this sperm not utilized in the process of a normal sexual intercourse between Joseph and Mary? Why were Joseph and Mary not able to have sexual intercourse before the birth of The Lord Jesus Christ?” Shortly after Monika’s question arrived, Dan Barba of New York requested clarification about the following issue: In the new cycle of time/state/process, what would the situation be with the prior relationships amongst various people as they were manifested or were happening in the current cycle? Shortly after Dan’s request was made, Richard Schumert of San Francisco called and submitted his question about the spiritual meaning or significance of the Ark of the Covenant, or of the Testimony, and also, whatever happened to it. I also would like to express some of my own personal concerns. As You are aware, it recently came to my attention that some people felt hurt or rejected or made to feel sad by my behavior during my ordeal in November, 1999 and in the subsequent months because I was avoiding talking to them or responding to their concerns about my condition. If this is the case, whoever feels or felt that way, I am asking them for their mercy and forgiveness by the means of this particular Dialog. On my part, it was not meant to be that way. Is there any spiritual significance for my tendency to isolate and separate myself from most everyone during any time that I experience some kind of serious spiritual, mental or physical (or all the above) problems? Of course, as always, before answering any of these questions, perhaps You would like to convey to us anything You feel is needed to be brought to our attention at this time. As you see from these questions and concerns, Your representatives didn’t give me too much time for my physical rest, the necessity for which was indicated at the end of the previous Dialog (130). Well, I don’t mind that anyway.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Before going into answering the above asked questions, I would like to offer a brief note. Actually, I would like to request, in all modesty, humbleness and humility, everyone who has a need to ask questions, whatever they may be, to not include in them anything related to predictions of the future. Be very careful with such a tendency. Despite the fact that throughout all the books of My New Revelation, on numerous occasions, it was indicated to you very clearly

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

not to be preoccupied with the future and not to be concerned about anything which is going to happen in the future and therefore, not to ask such questions; nevertheless, most of you disregarded this indication and, no matter what, you continue asking the types of questions that relate to predictions of the future.

As it was indicated to you in Dialog 130, such needs or curiosity about what is going to happen and how things will be evolving in the future, basically, stem from your 'ego' states and thus, they are pseudo-inspired by the negative state. In fact, by asking these types of questions, in some ways, you are supporting the negative state on planet Zero. In order to avoid the possible unpleasant consequences of asking such questions, please, restrain yourself from submitting them to Me through Peter. You may ask Me personally, as related to your personal life, about anything you want, including how things may be evolving or what the trend might be in your development or situation as related to you personally and individually, and only to you and to no one else. In this case, you will either receive My answers by whatever mode is available to you, or you will be told not to submit to Me any requests that are specifically related to your future destiny. As you know, to have such knowledge is extremely dangerous for your personal and individual mission, role and assignment because, in the moment you would know it, everyone in the negative state, especially the renegades and their minions, would know it immediately as well. You were already warned about such possibilities in My New Revelation. I am only repeating this fact for the emphasis of the tremendous spiritual danger that you might expose yourself by having such knowledge in advance. As you remember, it was previously indicated to you, that if you have this knowledge on your conscious level, by that factor, the renegades and their minions, as well as everyone else in the negative state, would have full access to it likewise. In that case, they would be able to devise all kinds of means, by which they could impede the fulfillment of your mission and by which they would be able to make your life miserable and unbearable.

Another issue that I would like to suggest to all those who would desire to ask any questions of Me through Peter, is that, before submitting them to Peter, they should seek the answers to them within themselves first — either by means of their intuition, or by means of logic, reasoning, analysis, etc., or by direct communication with Me in the state of their inwardness; or by whatever means are available to them. I can assure you about one thing: No matter what you think, or how you feel about your ability to communicate with Me and ask your

own questions and get your own answers, you have that ability and you should utilize it to the fullest possible extent. Only if during your asking such questions, whatever they may be, the indication is that you should submit them through Peter, only and only in that case, you do so. Any other way would foster a spiritually very dangerous dependency on Peter and not on your own within. Such a dependency indicates a dependency on the external inputs and not on the inputs from your own within. On the other hand, if you are told or suggested from your own within to submit any questions you might have through Peter, in that case, their submission derives from your own within. By the factor of this within derivation or origin, it voids the possibility of dependency on the external inputs, or on Peter in this case. Remember that. Also, please, do remember that you are the only one who is responsible and accountable for your life, and everything happening in it, no matter what it is, and for no one else's. Because of that you are also responsible and accountable for determining the nature of your questions and for by what modes and means you should seek answers to them.

It is time that as My true representatives, you fully apply in your everyday life the factors of your own personal and individual responsibility and accountability. After all, you agreed to them before your incarnation on planet Zero. Also, remember, please, that the negative state hates with all passion any responsibility and accountability (as was indicated to you some time ago in one of the Updates in the ***Corollaries...***). This hate, or reluctance to take them, to some extent, was also engrained in your human nature. For that reason, your first inclination in this respect, from the standpoint of your typical human nature, is to avoid at all cost your own responsibility and accountability. If you succumb to this tendency of your typical human nature, by that fact, you support the negative state because it is the typical nature of the negative state to reject any responsibility and accountability for its despicable deeds. As you are aware, the negative state likes to blame someone or something else for all its deeds and their consequences, results and outcomes. In most instances, or always, it blames Me and the members of My positive state. And this is all that I wanted to contribute this morning from My position.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your very timely reminder about where responsibility and accountability of all of us lie. Are we ready to proceed with the answers to the above formulated questions?

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, we are ready. Let us begin with the answer to the question from Monika of the Czech Republic, and following that, we'll address Richard's question, Dan's request and your personal concerns, Peter.

In response to Monika's question, it is necessary to realize what kind of situation or condition existed at the time of My forthcoming incarnation on planet Zero, as well as what kind of role sexuality played during that time. As you remember, at that time, everything was by necessity and imposition. The concept of free will and free choice was not even contained in anyone's mind on planet Zero. The factors by which human non-life was ruled and functioned, were evils, distortions and falsities concerning anything at all and especially the nature of the positive state and My Nature. The role of sexuality, under those conditions, was to transmit and reinforce everything which was evil, false and distorted. By that factor, through its correspondential means, sexuality was one of the major contributory factors toward development, establishment, support, manifestation, perpetuation and maintenance of everything which was evil, false and distorted. Thus, at that time, anyone who was entering sexual intercourse on planet Zero, enabled the birth of ideas related solely to anything evil, false and distorted. As you know, such ideas resulted in the physical birth of either humans or agents of the negative state. At that time, sexuality of the typical human life, had no positive connotation.

In the process of sexual intercourse of two humans (male and female), the corresponding factors to such an intercourse were triggering a very peculiar state resulting in the pseudo-integration of evils and falsities, distortions and perversions, and everything external and outside of the state of the human mind. So, what would have happened if I were to extract Joseph's sperm by the process of his sexual intercourse with Mary and not without it? In that process an irreversible conjunction of all evils and falsities and everything else, rooted in the pseudo-nature of the non-life of the negative state and human non-life, would occur. Under those kinds of conditions, if I were to attach to, or to integrate anything at all from the State of My Absolute Positiveness and from My Absolute Mind, it would result not only in a total and complete annihilation of Joseph and Mary but also of the entire Zone of Displacement and planet Zero. In that case, no one could be saved. Such an impossible outcome would annihilate the entirety of My positive state or the entirety of My Creation as well because, as you remember, the members of My positive state would have no place/state

to dispose of their ideas about their right and privilege to reject Me as the only true Source of their lives.

Now, in the state of separation of Joseph's sperm from Mary's egg, before any sexual intercourse occurred between them, or before any merger between the respective sperm and egg had taken place, the representation of the pseudo-integration of evils and falsities, and everything related to them, symbolically speaking, had not been accomplished yet. In order to prevent this from happening, as you remember, I took one sperm from Joseph and one egg from Mary and placed them in the special intermediate world, where certain alterations in their conditions were established, incomprehensible to your human mind, which would allow My element, taken out of My External Mind, to be combined or hybridized with them. With this new condition, that special hybrid was placed in Mary's womb. This process made it possible for Me to be incarnated on planet Zero, and into the Zone of Displacement in general, without any danger either to anyone situated there, or to My Absolute State.

The other important issue, as related to the fact why no sexual intercourse between Joseph and Mary could occur before My physical birth happened, was in the need to establish a condition of virginity in the woman, through whom I was to be born. The state of virginity was the closest condition to the nature of the positive state which could exist in any woman at that time. In that state, no conjunction of evils, falsities, distortions and externalization of anything at all had been established yet. That condition, by its correspondential significance, reflected the state of innocence, purity, cleanness, holiness, goodness, love, wisdom, faith and positive works rooted in the nature of My positive state as well as, in their absolute condition, in My Own Nature. As you remember, woman corresponds, among many other things, to one's own nature and to all aspects of its mentality. In the state of virginity these aspects of one's nature and mentality are not corrupted yet by anything of negative nature. However, in the moment of loss of this state of virginity, symbolically speaking, under the conditions that existed at that time on planet Zero and in the Zone of Displacement in general, the positive connotation and the correspondence to the positive state and to My Nature would be lost as well. Instead, the condition and rule of the non-life of the negative state and its human non-life would be established.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

By incarnating on planet Zero by means of such a virgin, I was incarnating into something which closely reflected the nature of My positive state and My Own Nature and which was akin to them. This condition approximated everything positive, thus, shielding Me from immediate possible corruption by anything evil and false; and, at the same time, it shielded everyone positioned in the non-life of the negative state and human non-life from eternal destruction. In the moment sexual intercourse would occur between Joseph and Mary prior to My incarnation on planet Zero, all favorable conditions for such an incarnation would be nullified by the factor of the pseudo-spiritual conjunction of everything evil and false, and by loss of any positive connotation that virginity had at that time and in this respect. You have to look at the entire situation related to My need to incarnate on planet Zero without the involvement of man and woman in sexual intercourse from a purely spiritual point of view and to what it spiritually corresponds.

The other reason for this setup can be found in the condition that existed at that time. As you know, the extreme externalization and ritualization of all spiritual principles, and how spiritual life should be led, were in full force at that time. Sexual intercourse was the epitome of this externalization and ritualization of spirituality. On the other hand, the state of virginity corresponded at that time, to the state of purity of within where My residence was established. If I were to incarnate on planet Zero under the condition of non-virginity, and by the process of the so-called normal or regular human sexual intercourse (of course, nothing normal and regular about it existed at that time), apart from the destructive outcome of such an act, as described above, by the process of My birth in such a condition, I would eternally refute the state of within, or the state of My residence in everyone, and I would establish the state of externals and rituals as the only real, realistic and feasible condition under which any life could be established and function. In that case, the members of My positive state, or My Creation, would have no place to be and to exist. By that factor, I would kill them. By avoiding incarnating on planet Zero by means of the customary sexual intercourse between two humans, I reaffirmed the proper spiritual condition and the state of My residence, which is always positioned in everyone's state of within and from that state also in everyone's state of without by the means of everyone's intermediate state. By this setup, the multiversal law of within to without was preserved. The state of virginity, at that time, corresponded to this law and condition. Hence, the need to incarnate

on planet Zero without any involvement of two human individuals in the act of sexual intercourse.

As you noticed from above, the words ‘at that time’ were continuously used in the process of answering Monika’s question. The reason for repeating them is in the fact that the spiritual situation or condition at that time was entirely different than it is at the present time. And this is true as related to everyone and everything situated everywhere and everywhen. Whatever spiritual correspondences were assigned to the conditions of spirituality at that time, are not necessarily applicable to your time and condition. For that reason, avoid at all cost applying them to the present time/state. Such concepts as virginity, sexuality, sexual intercourse, and everything related to them, and to what they correspond at the present time, as well as everything else, may have a totally different meaning and connotation than they had at the time of My physical incarnation on planet Zero. So, do not attempt to analogize them to your situation. It would be dangerous to do so. And this is all that I wanted to respond to Monika’s question.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your interesting response to the first question.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. And now, let us address Richard’s question. As you know, Richard proceeded the right way in this respect. He asked that question of Me, and it was indicated to him that he should pose his question through you, Peter. Which he did. The answer to his question, in actuality, is contained, in very extensive detail, in Swedenborg’s ***Arcana Coelestia***, volume XI. It is not necessary to repeat here what was described in that book. We will look at it from a somewhat different perspective in addition to that which was described by Swedenborg. In fact, we’ll look at the meaning and significance of the Ark in its general representation, illustration and demonstration of some very important spiritual factors.

In order to properly understand the entire meaning of the Ark of the Testimony (Covenant), it is necessary to understand the role that the children of Israel played at that time. Their role was properly and extensively described in Update 9 in the ***Corollaries...*** . If you wish, you may refresh your memory by rereading that particular Update. From what was revealed about this issue in that Update, it is obvious that Jews of that time, or children of Israel of that time, represented, illustrated and demonstrated the extreme state of externalization, ritualization and manifestation of the spiritual factors without any of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

their connectedness to the state of within and thus, to the positive state and to My True Nature. Because of this role that they agreed to play out, anything of spiritual significance needed to be depicted by some kind of external and ritualistic symbolization and representation and by its corresponding factors in the true reality of the spiritual world. In order to maintain some connectedness of the inhabitants of planet Zero to the true spiritual state and condition, — and this was a matter of their survival by the means of such depictions and correspondences — and in order for Me to be able to communicate with some of them, in this case, with Moses, Aaron and some other high priests, it was necessary to create certain external entities, which would fully reflect, in all their minutest details, all spiritual principles which ruled and on which were founded the true life of My positive state as well as My Absolute Nature.

For this purpose, in order to represent the nature of the true spirituality, as well as My Nature, I gave Moses a blueprint of the Ark, in all its details, which he was to build and which was to serve as a means to relate to and communicate with Me. In a general sense, this Ark corresponded to the state of internals, in which state My positive state and My Own Self were situated. Because of such important correspondence, I was able to come down into that Ark and convey to Moses, and, later on, to all others designated for that role, whatever was needed in any respect as related to the proper spiritual life. As you know, the various details of that Ark corresponded to such important spiritual principles as the innermost heaven or My Innermost Self; as righteousness; as love and wisdom; as good and truth; as positive works and faith; as various states of integration of spiritual principles; as stability, consistency, unity, oneness, harmony and cohesiveness of My Creation; as the power of My Divine Sphere and Atmosphere; and as many other very significant aspects of My Nature and the nature of My positive state. Only in something that depicted and represented these most important spiritual principles and states, could My presence be sustained and manifested amongst some humans, in this case the children of Israel, whose role was to carry on this particular representation, externalization, illustration and demonstration. And this is the true significance and meaning of the mentioned Ark.

Now, as you know, after some time, that Ark completely disappeared from the face of your planet. You even have a popular movie with Harrison Ford playing, called 'The Raiders of the Lost Ark' which reflected the fact of this disappearance. What was the reason for that disappearance? At this time, two reasons can be revealed. First of all,

the Ark was only the external depiction of the reality of My positive state of Heaven or the true spiritual state. If the external existence of that Ark on planet Zero was assured even after the representative role of the children of Israel expired and they embarked on some different role and representation, in that case, it would be assumed that the true reality of the positive state, of My Nature and the true spiritual principles are rooted in the state of externals and not in the state of internals. If anything of this nature were to happen, in that case, the Ark would be worshiped by all humans as the only true God. Thus, a state of perpetual idolatry and denial of the true God — Me, would occur. Such occurrence would make it impossible for humans to be saved because they would internalize the state of the externals, making it the only true source of their life. To externalize the internals and, at the same time, to internalize the externals, would result in what is known in biblical terms as unpardonable sin. In that case, none of the human stock could be forgiven and, as a consequence, the negative state in its non-life could never be eliminated. In order to prevent this from ever happening, it was provided by My Divine Providence that the mentioned Ark would disappear from the face of planet Zero for good and forever.

The second reason for this disappearance can be found in the fact that the Ark represented Me in all My Absolute Attributes. As long as I was in My Absolute State, and My incarnation into the relative state on planet Zero had not been in motion yet, the factor and the prophecy of this, one of the most important events in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, was illustrated and demonstrated by everything of which the mentioned Ark consisted. If that Ark was preserved even after the need for that representation expired, humans would worship the Ark as being Me and not the true Me. Once again, in that case, they would commit an unpardonable sin which would prevent them from being saved to eternity. Such an undesirable outcome could never be allowed by Me. For that reason, I removed that Ark from the face of your planet. And this is all that can be said about Richard's question at this time.

Peter: Thank You very much for this answer.

The Lord Jesus Christ: It is My pleasure, Peter. And now, let us address the issue raised by Dan. Although some aspects of that issue relate to the factor of predicting the future, on the other hand it has relevance to the past and the present. For that reason, his request for clarification can be addressed without any danger of revelation about

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

something which will happen in the next cycle of time. What you have to understand in this respect, is that many relationships that you have amongst yourselves, were initiated or established way before your incarnation on planet Zero. Your simultaneous or sequential incarnation on this planet was by the agreement to participate directly in the illustration and demonstration of the nature, character and condition of the typical human non-life, and how you cope with that non-life, for important learning of all in the positive state and elsewhere. In this sense there was an agreement to continue in your relationships even during your human non-life, in most instances, without your conscious awareness (although some of you do have such conscious awareness) that such an important choice was made. This was done primarily for the purpose of mutual support, help, endurance and encouragement and for many other important reasons. Your relationships from the past, in that other state and condition, indicate that there was and is a very important connection (I don't want to use the word 'bond' because it has negative connotation) amongst many of you, which may span many cycles of times/states/processes and which has something in its nature, structure and dynamics, needed for all cycles in being and existence. Because of this important factor and situation, your relationships may continue even in the next cycle. It will all depend on your own personalized and individualized choices that you will make in this respect after or at your recall from planet Zero. However, any negative, adverse, unpleasant and similar experiences which you have had and which you will have, as related to this particular cycle, as well as to your typical 'ego,' in which your human nature was rooted, will not be transferred or transposed into the next cycle for the reasons as described in the recent Dialogs. They will be placed in the Universality-Of-It-All.

The above described situation relates primarily to My overt and covert representatives on planet Zero. However, not all your possible involvements and previous relationships were established before your incarnation on planet Zero. In fact, many of them were and will be established only during your residence on this planet without any relevance to your past. These types of involvements and relationships have only transient and temporary value. They serve a different purpose and learning. Due to the fact that they happen or occur within the parameters of your typical human non-life, they have something to do with the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos. In cases like that, no matter how outwardly desirable and beneficial, they seem to be, they cannot be transferred or transposed to the next cycle because of their purely negative connotation in the sense

that they relate to something which has been happening in the external human non-life. Because of the sole relatedness to the externals, they were not internalized and therefore, in the next cycle they would have no meaning at all. In fact, they would only disturb one's personal and individual integrity and progression. Again, the experiences of this nature would be preserved in the Universality-Of-It-All.

On the other hand, many agents/representatives of the negative state who incarnated on this planet from various regions of the Hells and the Zone of Displacement, do have relationships and involvements with someone with whom they had them before their incarnation on planet Zero. Because these types of relationships are always of purely negative and evil connotation, they can never be transposed or transferred to the next cycle. Although there is a possibility that some of them could continue in their relationship within the next cycle of time, the memories that were initially established in the midst of the non-life of the negative state, would not be retained within them individually. It would be retained only in the Universality-Of-It-All. And this is all that can be clarified as related to Dan's request. To reveal more about any other aspects, would tap into the prediction of the future. And you do not want that to happen.

Peter: Thank You for your clarification of Dan's request. Well, may we proceed with my personal concerns?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, we may. First of all, from our position, and from the position of the very critical, complex and complicated situation which existed during your spiritual, mental and physical ordeal, Peter, even though it is appropriate, correct and right to ask for mercy and forgiveness of anyone who might have felt hurt and sad by your behavior during that time, it was not necessary to do so. No one knows exactly, except for Me, what the true nature of and the reason for that situation were. During that time, a very unusual spiritual situation occurred at all levels of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence which required a very specific, externally dangerous and almost life-threatening (in the true sense of that word and not only in the sense of the loss of human non-life!) intervention on our part in order to circumvent such a thing from happening. The true nature of that situation would be incomprehensible to your human mind. You will learn some aspects of it only after your recall from planet Zero.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

From the position of that unusual situation, the only type of behavior, which was not only needed and possible to take place but also which was instrumental to something related to that specific situation, was the type of behavior which you, Peter, were put into and by which you responded to people's requests about talking to you or communicating with you. Nothing else, under those conditions, would be appropriate — no matter who says what and no matter how much some of you, or even all of you, might have felt hurt and sad. What everyone needs to remember in this respect, is that, as it was indicated previously, if someone is assigned the role of the transmitter of My New Revelation in all its aspects and sources, that person's life, and everything which happens during that life, no matter what it is, no matter how personal, subjective, individual and human in nature it is, always has some relevance to My New Revelation and to the spiritual affairs which are taking place somewhere else with a consequential impact on the human aspects of that person's life on planet Zero. In other words, something important is being manifested, illustrated and demonstrated by such behavior.

If we look at this situation from this particular angle, then it becomes very obvious why your behavior at that time, Peter, whatever it was and in whatever manner it was perceived by others, had important spiritual reasons, and nothing else would be feasible and appropriate at that time. This is the reason why we said above that there was nothing at all for which you needed to be forgiven and shown mercy. The problem with the situation and condition of someone who is the transmitter of My New Revelation, is that other people, who are not in that position, tend to evaluate and judge the transmitter's situation and behavior from their own position and not from the position which is assigned to the transmitter. Because of that, they err in their evaluation of that situation. Whenever an attempt is made to evaluate and to judge anyone's behavior and reactions, and especially the behavior and reactions of the transmitter of My New Revelation, from your own position, and how you perceive or feel about it, in that moment, you inadvertently fall into your human nature rooted in your 'ego.'

The problem with this position is that its evaluation and judgment are based on a certain definition of how one should behave, act or react toward others no matter in what condition they find themselves at any given time. This is a position of expectations. You define your own ideas, or you accept the common ideas of the majority of humans, based on your social or whatever standing, of how anyone should

behave toward you, and subsequently you expect, and in some cases you might even demand from them to behave that way toward you. In such expectations a total disregard for the reasons and needs of the other person's behavior **may** occur.

The issue of expectations was discussed previously. Many times you were warned about its consequences. After all, if people do not respond or behave in accordance with your expectations, you feel hurt, sad, rejected and not respected. Such feelings as that are negative feelings. Because they are negative, no matter how justifiable they seem to be, they derive from your ego states. Only your human ego can feel that way. In the genuine condition of your true 'I am,' no such feelings are contained. Instead, in your 'I am' are contained only feelings of understanding, acceptance, tolerance, respect, appreciation, compassion, empathy, deep love, objectivity, mercy, forgiveness and all other similar feelings with which the positive state in you is imbued. Typical human expectations, projections and demands have no place in the true 'I am.' In the position of the transmitter of My New Revelation, sometimes inappropriate behavior, from your perception of its inappropriateness, needs to take place in order to trigger in someone a response which is determined by one's ego state in order to show him/her that he/she needs to rectify that situation and start to behave as My true representative, and not as a typical human. It is for the purpose of giving anyone in that position an opportunity to amend or to correct one's tendencies to respond in such a typical human fashion that such behavior on Peter's part needs to take place. I know, it is not an easy task, being that you are in human non-life, but this is exactly the reason why such behavior on the part of My transmitter is necessary and needed.

Now, the reason why you seemingly have such an inappropriate tendency to seclude yourself or not to respond to or avoid anyone whenever you have some kinds of spiritual, mental, physical or any other problems, Peter, is that during such times, something spiritually important is happening which requires from you to be in that kind of condition. Any involvements with anyone during that time would interfere with whatever is going on and with whatever your contribution is on the other levels of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. There are some other very important spiritual reasons why such behavior on your part, Peter, is needed during such times, but it would be spiritually dangerous for your life to know them. They will become apparent after your recall from planet Zero.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Because of this unusual situation, everyone is requested, in all modesty, humbleness and humility, to have understanding about this situation with Peter and to respect his need to be the way he is. It is all connected with and determined by his being the transmitter of My New Revelation. Nothing in his personal and individual life has any other meaning. Remember that! And this is all that we need to talk about within the frame of this Dialog.

I would suggest that we do not do any dialoging during the upcoming weekend, or even longer, if necessary, even if there were to be some questions submitted to Me through you. Thank you for your attention to this matter.

Peter: And I thank You very much for Your Words. I'll take Your advice.

One Hundred and Thirty Second Dialog

April 11, 2000

Peter: A few days ago I received the following question from Dan of New York: *'How does the transition of a positive representative manifest for him/her at the time of departure from planet Zero? Not in the individual aspects, since these are always unique, but in the common, general aspects? For example, at the exact time we leave our body or just before, do we experience something wonderful and/or special not experienced by other humans in general, such as being greeted while still conscious here, or something like that? And also, what happens while in the so-called tunnel of light and just afterwards, when or after, we are received?'* If I am not mistaken this issue was extensively discussed, perhaps not fully relating to Your representatives, in Dialogs 15, 17, 18 and 19. Also, recently, I was, once again, preoccupied with some cosmological issues such as, for example, the differences between temporal-spatial continuum (the subjective mode of perception of reality) and non-temporal-non-spatial states and processes (the objective mode of perception of reality); as well as the controversy which exists among our cosmologists about what is going to happen to the so-called visible universe. Will the matter fall in on itself and the universe end in a fiery 'Big Crunch' or its expansion never ends, etc.? Also, the issue of the Big Bang theory is again on my mind. Do You think that we are ready to discuss some of these issues? Of course, as always, if You would like to contribute something to us from Your position, I would gladly give preference to anything You have to say to us.

The Lord Jesus Christ: I appreciate, Peter, your kind offer to Me to talk first. As you know, recently, you have been pondering about the reasons why the departed ones from planet Zero are unable to communicate directly with anyone on your planet. It seems as if they disappear without a trace and only your memories remain about their being here. Sure, there are some people who dream about them, or, in some cases, see them and communicate with them in their state of inwardness. However, these rare occurrences do not have necessary validity or a convincing certainty which would assure you that the departed ones from planet Zero to the spiritual world really continue in their being and existence, in their individual, unique, different and non-duplicable 'I am' with full preservation of their life, or being alive in the same manner, or, in fact, in a much better and fuller manner than they were while living on planet Zero in their physical bodies.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

This fact places all kinds of doubts in the minds of humans about the possibility of life after death. And not only that, but based on the unavailability of any tangible and objective proof about the existence of the hereafter, some humans think that no other type of life exists and once you die, that's it. You are no more to eternity. The question in this respect is: Why is it that no one, who passed away, is allowed to communicate with you directly, or in a convincingly tangible manner, regardless of where they go — to the true life of the positive state — heaven, or to the non-life of the negative state — hell?

There are many reasons for this need or this particular setup as related to the human non-life. Some of these reasons cannot be revealed at this time. Because of that we'll concentrate only on those which will make perfect sense for you.

First of all, as you remember, planet Zero was placed in a place which was defined as no place and in time which was defined as no time. At least, in a sense, that which is considered to be time and space on planet Zero, is a distortion of time and space; or it can be defined as non-time and non-space. Because of this peculiar position, the rewiring of human's sensory organs needed to be done in such a manner so as to bring them in alignment with the physical position of planet Zero. At the same time, the fabrication of the typical human sensory organs, the way they function and perceive things, were grossly limited in the scope of how, and to what extent, humans perceive anything at all. Because of this peculiar setup, human sensory organs are not equipped to see or to sense anything beyond the limits of their structural nature. All other dimensions, which are situated in true time and true space, as well as in the true state and true condition, in their perceptual abilities, see and perceive things and entities which exist only within their own state and condition.

Logically speaking, because planet Zero and the human perceptual or sensory organs function in something which was designated as non-time and non-space, and because they are not equipped to perceive anything at all which is outside of their sphere and limitations, for that reason humans are unable to discern the existence of anything at all which is not of their pseudo-world. On the other hand, sentient entities of other worlds, and those who departed from your planet and now live in those worlds, because their perceptual organs are accommodated to the real state/place and condition/time, and because humans are in non-time and non-space, they are unable to communicate with each other directly or in any convincing and tangible manner. What you have to understand in this respect, is that for those who live in the reality of

state/place and condition/time, the non-space and non-time of humans and their planet is as if they do not exist. And the same is true for humans: Anything outside the scope of their perceptual abilities, or what their sensory organs allow them to perceive, does not exist at all. For that reason, they can neither see each other nor can they communicate with each other. For all practical purposes, in view of each other, neither of them exist.

Now, this setup can be considered as physical evidence for your inability to communicate with departed ones, or with anyone from other dimensions, in a direct and tangible manner. Such communications are possible only in a very limited sense, by the means of some kind of medium — dreams, visions in the state of mind of inwardness or by mediation through human mediums in a trance state. As mentioned above, none of these means have valid and convincing proof that departed ones truly continue in their full life beyond planet Zero. After all, it can be said that such means or abilities are the results of your own wishful thinking or projections of expectations of your own mind without any objective reality. From a physiological standpoint, because your brain contains vivid information about departed ones, from stored memories about them, you are able to recreate anything related to them. In that case, they are not the real departed ones with whom you communicate, but it is only your imagination and expectation about how they were while living on planet Zero, or how they should be in that other world, with whom you communicate.

However, this setup can be considered an outcome of the spiritual reasons for this inability and limitation to communicate with them in the true reality of their state and condition. It is only a consequence and not the initiation of this necessity. The spiritual reasons for this setup are what truly established such conditions with humans on planet Zero.

As you know, a very special reason exists why humans on planet Zero, with their planet, were put in total isolation and separation from everyone and everything else in other dimensions as well as in other pseudo-dimensions. As you remember from the Big Book, its Chapter 23, humans are not in the state of their ultimate choice. Thus, the true nature of the entirety of their pseudo-life or non-life on planet Zero can be found in the condition of its transience and temporality. Only in the state of the ultimate choice can permanency and unlimited continuation exist. Human pseudo-life is not the ultimate choice. As long as humans are in this situation, they cannot be influenced by any forces, situated or positioned somewhere else, so that they would not be put into a position of making the ultimate choice while they are still in human non-life. If

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

something like that were to happen or could happen, humans would be forever locked in their human non-life. In that case they could never be saved. And because human non-life is the end product of the pseudo-creative effort of the forces of the negative state, anyone positioned in the non-life of the negative state, could not be saved likewise. In that case, the negative state with its human component would have to stay forever. If something like that were to be possible, the fullness and completeness of the positive state could not be established as well.

As you remember, human non-life is the illustration, manifestation and demonstration of what not to choose; how not to be; how not to behave; how not to relate; how not to conceptualize the spiritual principles and My True Nature; how not to believe; how not to worship; how not to make love or to love in general; how not to perceive and understand reality and anything at all; how not to live and function; and how not to do all other things of which human non-life consists. In order to illustrate, manifest and demonstrate these, and all other factors of human life, humans needed to be put into a special and peculiar state and condition which would enable them to do just that, without any influence from the state and conditions of the ultimate choices. So, because of that, if anyone would appear to them in a tangible and convincing manner from other dimensions or pseudo-dimensions, they would be forced to relinquish their illustrative and demonstrative condition and to accept something which was not originally in their agreement to be the way they are in the process of their non-life on planet Zero.

In other words, they would be forced to believe in and accept something not by their own free will and choice but by imposition and necessity of that particular experience, in this case, they would have to accept the fact that life continues beyond their human type of life (non-life). To experience something by imposition and necessity cannot be appropriated or attributed to anyone. It could not take hold in humans' internals where it counts. It would be accepted only in their externals. In that case, the externals would become the only possible reality for humans to eternity. After all, if someone comes to you from without you, that without becomes its own reality apart from anything situated in within. In order to prevent this from ever happening, the only way any such communication is possible, in a very limited and restricted way, and only for a very few people, is in your own state of within. This manner of communication prevents lockup in the state of externals and thus, avoids the possibility of accepting something by imposition, necessity and no freedom of choice. As you know, the very nature of the

state of within, is the state of free will and choice. Thus, any impositions and necessities are nullified in that state.

The other reason for humans' limitations, separations and restrictions has a protective function for all those who are positioned in the true life of the positive state. Humans, by their very nature, like to impose their own views, opinions, expectations and everything they have and believe, on all others. Any communication with entities from other dimensions could cause them to be contaminated, polluted, poisoned and negatively influenced by the human mode of life or non-life. In that case, those sentient entities would have to accept the non-reality of human non-life as the true reality and as an integral component of the true life. By such an acceptance, they would validate something which has no validity in itself and by itself. Because of this accepted validity, they would have to internalize all aspects of human non-life into their own within. By doing that, they would refute the true life of the positive state, and they would become negative, falling out into the Zone of Displacement. At the same time, from the standpoint of humans, such an outcome would be detrimental for humans as well because, by that factor, they would lock themselves up in their mode of human non-life, being validated in their non-life as though they are in the true life. In that moment, they would be forced to accept their human non-life as the ultimate choice. Once you are in the state of your ultimate choice, nothing can be done to reverse that condition. Fortunately, such an outcome is not possible because, as you remember, such an ultimate choice would be made on totally false premises — human non-life is the true and the only possible life. Acceptance of anything at all on such false premises, can be nullified in its ultimate outcome because it is false. But it could postpone the being and existence of this cycle of time/state/process for quite a long time — beyond its original planning. So, as you see from this possibility, any tangible, concrete and factual communication with departed ones, or anyone from other dimensions, would be detrimental for all and not only for humans.

At the same time, the possibility of communication in a tangible, concrete and factual manner with inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement, was also prohibited, because, being that human non-life is the end product of the negative state, humans could be easily influenced by anything coming from that Zone, considering it as something which is true and the only thing feasible. Moreover, the forces of the negative state have the inordinate ability to impose their own mode of lifestyle (their own non-life) by force and dire persuasions, making humans believe that it is the true life of the positive state and that no other type of life is possible at all. To accept something like that

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

would once again, lock humans into a position of no freedom of choice and they would have to accept their human non-life as the ultimate choice. In that case, the illustrative and demonstrative nature of human non-life would cease to be so, and humans would stop providing the necessary, crucial and vital learning about what not to choose, how not to be, how not to relate, believe, act, etc. By ceasing to function in this important role, humans would prevent everyone everywhere and everywhen from learning some other lessons, so far not illustrated and demonstrated, about these factors. However, such communication would be detrimental also for the inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement because, by imposing something on humans which is not supposed to be a part of human experiences, they would place themselves into a state of prolonged retribution and punishment for such acts.

Since we are talking about departed ones, we may as well address Dan's question at this time. From the very onset of our answer to Dan's question, let everyone be aware that absolutely nothing exists, in the process of experiencing moments of death, that would have any common denominator. The process of dying can be considered as one of the most intimate, private, personal, individual, unique, non-duplicable, non-definable and infinitely different processes which you can conceive. Because of that, they do not have any common denominator. Paradoxically speaking, their common denominator is that they have none. In order to be able to know, to feel, to sense and to experience what any individual goes through at such times, you would have to be that individual. And this is something which is impossible to achieve. Do they experience something wonderful, special and unusual no matter who they are (either My true representatives or someone else)? It all depends on their spiritual state and position at the time of their dying as well as on the mutual agreement (between Me and them) about what should be experienced by them at that time for the purpose of illustrating and demonstrating something very important by that process. Some of you may have such experiences and some of you will experience something else, indescribable in human words.

There is a great degree of spiritual danger in revealing something about this process. As you know, humans, in their typical human nature, which also is engrained in you, My representatives, have a very peculiar tendency to expect certain things to happen to them in the same manner and way as they happen to someone else. So, let us assume that I would be willing to describe in detail all steps and the exact experience during the time of someone dying like, let us say, Wilfred Grunau, who was/is My representative. What would happen in that case? Everyone who would read the words describing that process, would instantly

engrain in his/her mind (consciously and unconsciously!) this particular experience and, based on that, and also, and most importantly, based on the fact that I, the true and only God, relating to you such an experience, would instantly fall into the expectation that he/she would have to experience exactly the same things as Wilfred did. There would be a danger of identifying oneself with such experiences, and based on that, there would be a need to project them into one's own expectations. In other words, because of this identification, those expectations would have to come true also in his/her case. And here comes the spiritual danger. By projecting those expectations into the stream of one's perception, such an individual would suppress and repress the important need of experiencing that process in his/her own intimate, private, personal, individual, unique, non-duplicable, non-definable and infinitely different manner and way.

In other words, such an individual would not only deprive his/her 'I am,' rooted in such experiences, to come true, but he/she would also deny who he/she is in the true essence and substance of his/her own being and existence. At the same time he/she would also deprive the entire Creation from learning something very important about that process which could be provided only and only by him/her and no one else. If this were ever to happen, such an individual would be in gross violation of the original agreement regarding this experience. The consequence of that violation could be very unpleasant for a long time to come. In order to prevent this from ever happening, it was provided by My Divine Providence that any experiences occurring at the moment of actual death, are concealed.

Is it possible that, at or upon your death or upon entrance into the spiritual world you could be greeted by someone who was close to you or someone else not of your prior pseudo-world? Well, some people are able to experience seeing someone coming for them a few seconds before their actual death. Others do not experience anything. Again, it all depends on the initial choices and agreement they made in this respect. Yes, after one's resurrection, because it is performed either by Me personally or by My appointees, one is greeted and introduced to the other world by those who are performing the act of resurrection. They could have someone with them who is well-known and well-liked by the resurrected one in order to help him/her overcome the possible shock from being in a totally different and very little known world, and to make his/her transition comfortable and pleasant. The very moment of dying itself can be considered and perceived as the most mystical and ineffable experience.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Is there such a thing as the so-called tunnel at the end of which is brilliant white light? You can consider such a tunnel as a construct or correspondence of transition from one place/state to another place/state. The problem with this tunnel is in the fact that if someone experienced something like a tunnel at some time or other, that experience, because it initially occurred during the so-called near-death experience, and the individual in question returned back, was registered in everyone's universal consciousness.

Moreover, if such an important experience was written down in human words and then published, and by that factor made available to all others, it becomes engrained into their mind so much that everyone else expects to have the same experience. So, they all expect to go through some kind of tunnel at the end of which is the mentioned light. Once again, here is the danger of expectations of how things would be in this respect. Because you expect that your experiences will be the same, you will fabricate your own illusions of the tunnel of light through which you will see yourself going to the other side.

However, the true reality can be very much different, especially for My representatives. It is more than likely that you will not have any experience of the tunnel. You also can find yourself being resurrected in your own room or place or somewhere where you liked to be. There are infinite numbers of possibilities in this respect and they are all connected to your own unique, intimate, private, personal, individual, non-duplicable, non-definable and infinitely different mode and manner in which you will go to the other side; as well as what happens once you are on that side. So, as you see from these facts, it would be utterly impossible to tell you what to expect at that time.

On the other hand, one of the major reasons why very little can be said about this issue, is in the fact that, as you remember from several previous statements, nothing is the same. This statement applies to a great degree also to this issue. Whatever people experienced in the moment of their physical death and shortly after their entrance into the other world up to this point, or until recently, has considerably changed and therefore, no analogy to such experiences could be established or considered. Something very new and very different is being introduced also in these types of experiences. Because they will be even more intimate, private, unique, personal, individualized, non-duplicable, non-definable and infinitely different than before, it would be inappropriate to describe what they would be like. In some ways, it is like predicting the future. For that reason nothing more can be said about this issue.

Peter: I appreciate very much Your input into these issues. And I thank You very much for Your willingness to put up with our questions.

The Lord Jesus Christ: It is My true pleasure, Peter. And now let us address your cosmological issues. These issues can be considered one of the most difficult ones to understand for your limited and limiting human mind. As you remember from Chapter 21 in *The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*, one of the major and most important purposes for the creation of Creation into the state of its process, was for the sharing of everything which was contained in the Absolute Nature of the Creator. As you also remember, Creation itself was in the State of the Creator from eternity. It is its process that has not always been. In this particular position, because the Creator is positioned in non-time and non-space condition, the only mode of perception of reality is the objective one. Thus, anyone who was in the state of Creation, as it was contained in the Absolute Creator, before introduction of its process, had been in the objective mode as well.

In order to establish the most favorable conditions for the process of sharing to take place, it was necessary to shift the state of Creation into the process of Creation. As you know, the word 'sharing' means or requires reciprocity. If I want to give you something, you need to acknowledge that you are willingly receiving that something. Also, you need to indicate to Me whether you wish to share with Me everything that I am and that I have in your own relative condition. In order to make this sharing, reciprocity and feedback possible, it was necessary to introduce a different mode of perception of reality besides the objective one which is manifested outside of the time-space continuum. You need to create a sense of individual space and time, in which every individual is positioned in such a manner that he/she clearly perceives himself/herself as being somewhere and somewhen. In that position, such an individual establishes an important sense of being independent, in his/her own state, process, place and time. In this condition, he/she is able to perceive himself/herself as being outside of Me or apart from Me. This perception gives him/her an ability to make his/her own decision about the issue of sharing, reciprocity and feedback. Because in this condition such an individual perceives himself/herself as being somewhere and somewhen else than I am, a sense of distance between one point and another point appears and a sense of time is established during which something needs to happen in the relationship to that point in distance. And this is how the linear proceeding occurred. In this linearity is rooted the meaning of the subjective perception of reality. Now you have a sense that you are going from one point to another

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

point and that it takes a certain time to travel the distance between two such points.

Let us say that you need to go somewhere which is positioned five miles from where you perceive yourself in your own place and time. If you walk those five miles, depending on how fast you are able to walk, it may take you one hour to reach that point. If you bicycle to that place, it will take you half the time as compared to your walking. If you drive a car at a permitted speed, it may take you only five minutes. However, if you travel some place far away, and if you take an airplane to reach that place, what would take you months or even years to get there if you were to walk or bicycle, would take you only a few hours. If your airplane is enabled to travel at supersonic speed, the six hour flight to New York for example, on a regular plane, would take only a couple of hours on the supersonic one. From these examples you can deduce how relative and subjective space and time are.

Can you imagine what would happen if you were to be able to travel from one place to another, a very distant place, by the speed of light? For example, to fly from Santa Barbara to New York at the speed of light would be an almost instantaneous occurrence. It would take only a fraction of a second. Now we are reducing the subjective time and space to such an extent that it almost approaches the nature of the objective mode of the perception of reality, in which things happen simultaneously and synchronously. Imagine, if you can, what would happen if you could travel with the speed of thought? Now, this kind of speed cannot be measured in the same manner as any other, even the speed of light. And the reason it cannot be measured is because it happens instantaneously. Let us say that you want to travel to some planet located in the Andromeda Galaxy. If you were to travel to that place at the speed of light, it would take you many millions of years. However, if you travel there with the speed of thought, you are there in the very moment you project in your thought process your desire to be there. It took no time and no space to find yourself at that planet. In this sense, by your thoughts you can be instantaneously at that planet, while physically, you are sitting in Santa Barbara in your own time and place. In this setup, you find yourself being in both places at the very same time. Or think about your past, present and future. In your thoughts you can be in all three positions at the very same time — in the past, in the present and in the future.

Thus, you can logically deduce from these facts, that your thoughts reside in the objective mode of perception of reality because they can be at the very same moment — simultaneously and synchronously — in

many different places and times. However, in the moment you shift from thinking in this mode to self-feeling and self-perception, you find yourself in the mode of sequence, linearity, preceding and succeeding, which is your own subjective mode of perception. In this sense you can say that everyone located in the spiritual dimensions of the positive state travels from one point to another point by the objective mode — the speed of thought. For that reason, everything appears for them as if it is happening here-and-now. However, if necessary, at the same time, in order to give them a subjective and individual possibility of sorting things out as they happen in the here-and-now mode, they shift to the subjective mode in which they are able to discern all happenings as if they go from the past to the present into the future or as if one precedes the other and the other succeeds the previous one. And this is the closest approximation of how these two modes can be presented to human understanding and comprehension. It would be difficult to say more about it.

There is some limited awareness of how these two modes interact in theoretical quantum physics (or quantum mechanics) which deals with sub-atomic particles and sub-particles. Theoreticians of this particular science postulate something like the implicit order by which these particles operate. This hypothesis tries to explain the phenomenon of how it is possible that any changes in the function of one particle or sub-particle cause instantaneously and simultaneously exactly the same changes in a similar particle or sub-particle which is situated many millions of light years away. Somehow, the occurring changes are conveyed to the remote particle or sub-particle outside of time and space or bypassing time and space. If it were to take place in time and space, it would take many millions of years to impact those changes on the opposite side of the visible universe. So, as you see from this fact, even from the position of the pure science of quantum physics, you may postulate the existence of the objective and subjective mode, respectively, of perception and understanding of reality.

And now, let us address the purely cosmological issues. Did the Big Bang really happen? And if it did, and the physical universes of the physical multiverse came about by the means and process of this Big Bang, what is the outcome or the mode of ending of its being and existence? The problem of dealing with this issue is that you have two parallel factors — the real Creation and the pseudo-creation or the Zone of Displacement. The real Creation was the product of intense, unimaginably deep and profound love toward Creation. This love, in its true nature and intensity, can be compared to the most intense fire in its non-destructive connotation. From the position of this type of love by

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

the process of its wisdom, a thrust was being exerted which separated My Creation from its eternal state in Me into its process of becoming apart from Me for the purpose of the above mentioned sharing, reciprocity and feedback. Through the corresponding meaning of such thrust or separation, because it was done by the fire of love, it could appear as an unimaginable huge explosion — the Big Bang, which gave birth to the physical multiverse with all its respective universes, galaxies, solar systems, planets, various celestial bodies and their respective inhabitants. So, in essence, this type of creation may appear as if it were initiated by such a Big Bang. In reality however, in the true reality of the process of this creation, it was the fire of love and the light of its wisdom which made the creation of Creation possible. From this position, you cannot deduce any Big Bang as the initiation of the creation of Creation. It was only an appearance, from the position of the human perception of this act, that such was the case. The fire of love, which ignites the process of the creation of Creation, cannot be a violent act. Such an act is inconsistent with the nature of this love and its wisdom.

On the other hand, how do you fabricate something which is entirely different from the true Creation and from the process by which the creation of Creation was accomplished? You cannot do it from the position of love because, in that case, it could not be different from something which was created by such love. For this reason, you fabricate that something, in this case, the Zone of Displacement, by something which is opposite to true love. You fabricate it on burning hate toward everything which is of pure burning love. Here you have the burning fire of hate as opposed to the burning fire of pure love. In this setup, in the process of separation of a certain chunk of matter and non-matter from the totality of that matter and non-matter, a violent act took place, and a real explosion was possible which gave an impetus to the proceeding of something which was called the anti-universe, or in our terminology, the Zone of Displacement.

The problem with your scientists-cosmologists is in the fact that what they measure or see is not the process of the creation of the real Creation but the process of fabrication of the Zone of Displacement. Moreover, their observation in this respect is limited only to the physical aspects of that fabrication but not to its other pseudo-spiritual aspects. However, recently, some scientists postulated that there is a possibility that the beginning of what they call Creation (in our terms, anti-creation), was not initiated by the Big Bang but by some kind of gradual process. So, as you see from these facts, the controversy about

how the visible physical universe (anti-universe) came about continues unabated.

If you look at the entire explanation of how the creation of Creation happened from a typical human standpoint and from the standpoint of human science, then anything that they tell you about it is totally and completely distorted or false. And the reason for these scientific falsities and distortions is that, first of all, all their theories, hypotheses, surmises and scientific proofs relate only to what they call the physical universe. No other non-physical entities are taken into consideration by them. Because by the instruments of exploration which are available to them at the present time they can explore only the so-called physical universe, and because these types of instruments, and the scientific approach with which they judge everything, are unable to measure and ascertain the existence of any other types of universes, they inadvertently deny that anything else but the physical universe exists. The falsities of their conclusions stem from the fact that they assume that the causative factors of all events within their physical universe are derived from the function of that universe itself; while the true reality is that these causative factors are not implicit to that universe but they are originated from somewhere else — in this case, from the spiritual and intermediate universes.

Secondly, the falsities of their conclusions stem from the fact that what they consider to be the true Creation is, in fact, not the true Creation but the Zone of Displacement which is ruled by entirely different laws and principles (pseudo-laws and pseudo-principles) than the true Creation. And thirdly, their false conclusions stem from the fact that they look at these cosmological issues from the position of planet Zero. As you remember, this position makes it impossible for anything to be perceived, understood and apprehended in its true reality, the way it really is and not the way it appears to be. Because all their instruments and methods of observation and exploration derive from the elements of planet Zero, they can observe and see things, and based on that, make conclusions, only which are inherent in the nature of planet Zero and its position. Because that position distorts and falsifies the true reality of anything, any conclusions based on these factors, will be distorted and false. For that reason, anything you learn from your science, if it is outside of its sphere and condition, such as, for example, the cosmological conclusions, will be inherently distorted and false. In order to properly understand these issues, you have to bypass what your science postulates in this respect. Scientific conclusions can be applied, in a very limited sense, only to the structural nature of all things situated on planet Zero. Anything not related to the specificity of planet

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Zero's setup, cannot be properly assessed by your natural science. This is the reason why so much controversy exists about various hypotheses, theories and postulates proposed by your scientists.

Take, for example, one of the most important cosmological issues about the amount of matter present in the universe (anti-universe). According to your cosmologists, whether the universe (anti-universe) will expand forever, or collapse back onto itself in a fiery 'Big Crunch,' depends on how much matter it holds. With sufficient matter, gravity could slow down or even reverse the expansion. With too little matter, and thus too little gravity, the expansion might never end. In that case, galaxies will gradually sputter out until the entire universe (anti-universe) darkens and becomes a chunk of eternal ice or, in fact, becomes void of any life as it is known to that anti-universe and thus, it will turn, for all practical purposes, into nothingness.

As you know, your cosmologists struggled for decades to measure the matter in their universe (anti-universe). They have tried to infer it by carefully studying the motions of galaxies and calculating how much matter and gravity would be necessary to produce the observed movements. The problem with this situation is that, in accordance with their calculations, the visible matter — stars and galaxies — accounts for less than ten (10) percent of the required gravity. So, how is it possible that all those stars and galaxies are holding their positions if they account for only less than ten percent of the gravity?

In order to account for the rest of the needed matter (more than 90%), your cosmologists postulated the existence of the so-called invisible dark matter which is hanging somewhere in and is spread around the 'empty' space of their universe (anti-universe). What is this situation telling you? From our position it is telling you how limited the Zone of Displacement, which they call the universe, is. Only less than ten percent of its entire volume is filled with some kinds of celestial bodies. And how many of those bodies can really provide sufficient conditions for any type of life to take hold in them?

As you know, most of them, or the majority of them, are unable to sustain any type of life, life as you know it. So, what does it tell you? This situation reflects the true nature of the negative state which fills out the Zone of Displacement in less than 10 percent of its capacity. As you can surmise, looking at those celestial bodies and the conditions they are in, the negative state can produce, in the vast majority of its pseudo-creative efforts, only something which is violent, cataclysmic, destructive and extremely dangerous to anything living and breathing.

These are spiritual correspondences of the true nature of the negative state as they are projected to its physical aspect (to its physical anti-universe).

However, no matter which way you look at this situation, no matter what theory you accept — whether their universe (anti-universe) ends in a fiery ‘Big Crunch’ or falls into total darkness and ice, in either case its so-called life (non-life from our perspective) will end once and for all. And as you know, what makes any type of universe a true universe, which makes any sense and which can be registered in the subjective and objective mode of its being and existence or pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, is to what extent it can sustain sentient, and/or any other type of life in all its forms, shapes and manifestations. Once anything out there is no longer capable of sustaining such life, because it is no longer registered in any sentient mind, for all practical purposes, it ceases to be and to exist.

So, as you clearly see from this situation, even from the standpoint of your scientific position, the Zone of Displacement, planet Zero and, by inference, non-life of the negative state as such, human non-life and their egos, as well as everything related to them, cannot exist for good and forever. Even from your scientists’ view, anything in their universe (anti-universe) and planet Zero, with all forms and shapes of their lives (non-lives) is only temporary and transient. Their position only confirms what we have been talking about in the process of the transmission of My New Revelation, that non-life of the negative state and human non-life with all their derivatives and manifestations cannot stay forever.

Regardless of which theory bears out to be truthful, in either scenario, everything will be destroyed without a trace. Nothing will remain in any condition whatsoever. And this is what the true outcome of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero, with their pseudo-lives, will be.

Now, which alternative for ending the non-life of the negative state and human non-life will be chosen, will all depend on the choices that all involved will make. As you see, from the true spiritual standpoint, it is not how much matter is out there and whether there is enough or not enough gravity to cause this eternal ending, but it is the choices of all sentient minds everywhere and everywhen, which will determine which alternative will be materialized.

By the efforts of all choices of all sentient minds, either enough gravity will be generated so that the anti-universe or the Zone of Displacement in its physical manifestation falls in on itself and burns into cinder, or

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

the needed gravity will be withdrawn from it so that it would end in total darkness and ice. Because all such choices will be made in the spiritual and intermediate dimensions and their anti-parts in the Zone of Displacement, their corresponding factors will influence the distribution of the needed gravity for either scenario to take place.

I believe, Peter, that this is all that can be said about this issue at this time. If needed, necessary and feasible, we may return to this topic sometime in the future. At this point in time, you need to take a break.

Peter: Thank You very much for this prolific explanation. I enjoyed it very much. Until the next time — if there will be a next time.

One Hundred and Thirty Third Dialog

April 16-17, 2000

Peter: Today, I personally don't have any questions of multiversal significance. Also, I have not received any such questions from anyone. I am just checking in to see if You have anything to convey to us at this time. I do have one usual concern, related to something which was stated at the end of Dialog 131, about the reasons for my behavior during my ordeal in November of last year. In that Dialog it was indicated that any reaction to my behavior which would produce feelings of hurt or sadness stems from one's ego state. I am afraid that some readers of that particular text may feel offended about such conclusions, especially if within themselves they are convinced that it was not the case, and that they responded from a legitimate position not related to their egos.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, in one of the previous Dialogs in the second volume, something important was indicated to all of you in this respect. Let us reiterate it. As you know, very often, from the position of your human nature, you can be so strongly, and without any doubts, convinced about the rightness of your feelings and/or conclusions related to anything, that no matter who says what about them, and no matter how wrong or inappropriate they might be, nothing is able to change your mind in this respect. Don't forget that some humans have inordinate abilities to justify, excuse and rationalize anything they want to. Once they fall into this mode of justifying, rationalizing and excusing their feelings or belief systems about anything, it becomes so engrained in their mind, that they unshakably believe that they are right and everyone else is wrong about that matter. At that point they are so much convinced about the truthfulness of their cause, or whatever it is, that everything, even in their own personal intuition, becomes subsumed by their belief or conviction. In that case, their ego overrules their intuition or, better to say it, their intuition becomes a tool of justification and rationalization of whatever their ego indicates to them.

This is a common danger of everyone who functions from the position of their human nature. And because you, as My representatives, also have this human nature, no matter how much you would try to function outside of its influence and imposition, nevertheless, you are prone, from time to time, to function from that position. And because your human nature is rooted in your ego, in that case, logically speaking, you function from the position of your ego and not from any other position.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

To repeat it again: Such feelings as being hurt or being sad, by the essence of their nature, are negative feelings. If they are negative, in that case, they cannot stem from any other source of your nature but only from your human nature and thus, from your ego.

Now, everyone who would find himself/herself in this predicament has at least two options: One, to reject whatever was said about this issue at the end of Dialog 131. By rejecting it, he/she would continue in his/her inappropriate belief regarding that matter. In that case, he/she would labor under the wrong impression about the verity of those concluding remarks in the mentioned Dialog, or anything else for that matter, and as a consequence, he/she would hold to distortion or even falsity about his/her own position in this matter. If this were to be the case, it would mean that such an individual continues to be under the influence of the negative state and his/her ego. However, his/her tendency to rationalize and justify his/her view would blind him/her so much that he/she would see his/her position as just, proper and right and anyone else's position, which claims something entirely different or even opposite, as wrong, inappropriate and unjust. This is how the typical human nature and its ego, in most instances, operate.

Two, your reaction or response to whatever was said in the concluding remarks of Dialog 131, can be one of acceptance and recognition of their rightness and appropriateness, giving you an opportunity to correct your position and to see things the way they really are and not the way your human nature and its ego forces you, by the means of justification, excuse and rationalization, to see or to evaluate them. The problem with the human ego is that it cannot bear to admit to itself that whatever it feels might be wrong, inappropriate or false. For that reason, in order to avoid these unbearable feelings, it uses its own brand of 'logic,' feelings, 'intuition,' justification, rationalization and excuse, to make itself feel comfortable and unshakable in its own position in this respect. **There is nothing more difficult for the human ego than to admit to itself that it is wrong in whatever it feels, thinks or considers.** This is how human nature in its ego states was structured. One of the most important reasons why such statements or reminders are made in situations like that, is to bring to your attention these facts about human nature and its ego, and to learn to bypass its influence on you and on whatever you feel, think, consider, see, hear, read, or whatever you do in this respect.

Yes, the first reaction to such reminders would be feelings of hurt, rejection, sadness and similar adverse reactions. Usually, in situations like that, the first response to them is from the position of your ego. The

reason why the very first reaction usually is from the position of your ego, is because of the external positioning of such reminders. After all, such reminders, in cases like that, do not come from your own within but they come from someone else situated in the outward position from your own individual position. Because of this setup, being that these reminders come from somewhere else but your own within, they trigger the very first response from your ego which is positioned in your own external states. As you remember, the ego has no position or place in your own within. In the true within, your true 'I am' rules. Once you recognize from where your first reaction to such reminders come, and once you accept that the reaction of your ego is never appropriate, right and to the point, you become eligible to respond from the position of your true 'I am,' which is the position of your true within; and which is your second, more appropriate response or reaction. And because, logically speaking, I am in the state of your within, such reaction comes from My position in your within. In this case, whatever you receive about this, or any other matter, comes from the position of real truth.

So, as you see from this discourse, in your position as having a typical human nature, it is inevitable to have the very first response to anything at all from the position of your ego. The vast majority of humans would be satisfied with such response and with the position of their egos. They would have no desire, motivation, intention or tendency to go any further or to explore the verity of their ego's reaction. And the reason why they would have no tendency to go further in this respect is because, in most instances, they consider their ego to be their true 'I am.' This false position gives them a very plausible justification, rationalization and excuse for any reaction they may have toward anything at all. Due to the fact of such a stance, they do not feel that they need to go further in verifying the rightness of their reactions.

However, in your individual positions, as My true representatives on planet Zero, you are not typical humans only. For that reason, you have a great propensity to go beyond your first reaction to anything, recognizing clearly that your first reaction stems from your human ego state. Not only do you have this propensity, but you are responsible and accountable to the entirety of My positive state, to yourself and to Me personally, by your prior agreement and free choice, to go further in this respect, way beyond your ego's reactions. In fact, you are to manifest, illustrate and demonstrate your ability to do so for the learning of all about the fundamental differences between responding from your ego state as compared to responding from your true 'I am.' In order to do that and for that purpose, various situations are set up for you, such as, for example, the one described at the end of Dialog 131. Situations of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

this nature give you an opportunity to provide such important learning and differentiation.

Now, as mentioned above, you always have two options by which you can respond to this reminder: Either to accept it and as a consequence, to change your position from that of your ego to that of your true 'I am;' or to reject it and to continue to feel hurt, sad and sulk about your being singled out in whatever it was that you felt that way. The choice is yours. So are the consequences. In this respect, the alternatives are very clear. And because of that, nothing more can be said about this issue.

Peter: Thank You very much for this clarification. However, as you know, being typically human, whoever might find himself/herself in this position, could easily claim or accuse me that by the means of You — The Lord Jesus Christ, I myself am justifying, excusing and rationalizing my behavior and position, thus, functioning from my own ego state.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, in your particular case, you have at least two preventive measures which considerably reduce the possibility of that from happening. First of all, you are in the process of continuous questioning about the verity of anything at all which comes through you, searching and exploring if anything at all is influenced by, is initiated in or is derived from your ego in the form of justification, rationalization and excuse as related to anything you write down or to anything in your behavior, attitude and response. In your case, Peter, this particular state and process of your mind is the matter of an almost 24-hour a day occurrence. Secondly, and most importantly, as was indicated in the mentioned Dialog (131), and in many other places throughout My New Revelation, your position as the transmitter of My New Revelation is entirely different from anyone else's. Now, **this does not mean at all that anyone else's position is less valuable, less needed, less significant and less important than yours, Peter.** It only means that it is different — period. Anyone being in the position of the transmitter of My New Revelation has totally different responsibilities and lifestyle as compared to all others. Thus, whatever is happening in your life, Peter, no matter what it is, and no matter how personal, individual, private, intimate and seemingly non-related to My New Revelation it would be, always has relevance to something important related either to My New Revelation and to Me personally, or to some important spiritual issues which are utilized for triggering the awareness of all involved with you, Peter, or with My New Revelation, about the need to reevaluate, reconsider, reconstruct or change their behavior, attitude, lifestyle, position, relationships, involvements or

whatever is needed in this respect. This is the true role of the transmitter of My New Revelation. Because of that, the issue of rationalization, justification and excuse occurring in this case does not come into consideration.

Once again, anybody who reads these words, has the option either to reject the truthfulness of this statement or accept it on its face value. I can assure you, you are not obliged to accept anything at all related to this issue as well as to anything at all contained in the entirety of My New Revelation. And this is the way it is. For that reason, nothing more can be said about this issue.

Peter: I appreciate Your input in this matter and I am grateful for it. I understand that at this time You would like to talk about something else in the form of an important reminder.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Very much so, Peter, very much. Once again, we need to bring to everyone's attention (to My representatives) the issue of the need to assign everything at all to its right source. In the conditions of human non-life and its egos, which stem from the general conditions of the non-life of the negative state and its egos, as you know, it is a common occurrence or tendency inherent in their lifestyle, to assign anything at all to the wrong source. This tendency is a logical outcome of the very nature and structure of the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos — to assign things to the wrong source. As you remember, everything in the negative state and human life is presented in such a manner so as to give you a convincing impression that things originate somewhere else and not in their birth where they really originated in the first place. For example, the negative state and its human non-life assigns the origin of things, conditions, states, attributes, traits, characteristics and everything else to their own effort or invention. On the other hand, for example, anything which portrays the negative state and its human non-life in some kind of negative terms or notions, is being assigned to something or someone else not of their pseudo-lives or non-lives. So, you have here two obvious extremes: One extreme is to assign to itself things, conditions, states, processes, attributes, traits, characteristics, attitudes, behaviors, etc., that are not its, or that are in no way originated in it; and the other extreme is to assign everything of the negative and adverse nature, which is the very life of the non-life of negative state and its human non-life, to someone or something else. Basically and fundamentally, this is how the negative state and all its derivatives and human non-life are structured and function. In other words, it is their very nature to be that way. This is how the factor of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

invention, activation, establishment and manifestation of the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their respective egos was made possible.

For example, if everything in the true life of the positive state is based on assigning all things, happenings, conditions, states, processes, attributes or anything else at all to the right source, then, in that case, in order to recede from this setup for the purpose of bringing forth something that has nothing in common with this arrangement, it was necessary to reverse it by ascribing everything at all to the wrong source. And this is how evils, distortions and falsities came about. To assign or ascribe anything at all to something or someone which is not its true source or origin, is considered to be an evil act. To establish such a condition and to make all statements and assumptions on it, is false. On the other hand, to assign or attribute or to ascribe everything at all to its right and genuine source, is a good and positive act because it is true. In this respect, one aspect of the definition of truth in general can be derived from this setup. Truth, in one of its aspects, is defined as assigning, attributing or ascribing everything and everyone to their right source or origin in all directions.

Let us take a simple example: Who or what is the origin of everything positive, good, beneficial, useful, fruitful, truthful, happy, joyous and pleasant in all their aspects and derivations? How is it possible to experience anything of this nature? These kinds of states, conditions and attributes have to have some kind of genuine source and origin. They just do not happen in themselves and by themselves out of the blue or from nothing or no one. As you know, anything at all, in order for it to be and to exist, depends on the awareness of self-awareness of 'I am' or in this case, on the being and existence of the sentient mind. Someone needs to recognize, to acknowledge and to accept such attributes, characteristics or traits. However, the problem with this arrangement is that any sentient mind does not contain a notion of being the originating source of these attributes, characteristics or traits. And the reason why the sentient mind does not have this notion is because it is clearly aware that it did not originate itself or that it is not the source of its own life. Because of that, the sentient mind is put in a position, first of all, to recognize, to acknowledge and to accept the fact that its originating source is Someone else and that, secondly, all such attributes, characteristics or traits come out of the same Source. If any sentient mind accepts these facts as tangible, real, logical and realistic occurrences, in that case, it establishes the life of truth and becomes the carrier of good and all its felicities. It is good to know and practice truth. It is true that goodness of life is rooted in recognition, acknowledgment,

acceptance and practice of this axiomatic truth. Any deviation from these facts, establishes something that has totally opposite and different characteristics, traits and attributes which have absolutely nothing in common with anything in the reality of the true life of the positive state.

Now, why are we talking about these so obvious issues at this time? To remind you again and again, that no one who is relative, no matter in what type of life or non-life he/she is situated or positioned, can be his/her own source of anything positive, good, beneficial, useful, truthful, etc. The problem with the negative state and its human non-life is that it attributes, ascribes, or assigns them to itself; while at the same time anything evil, false, distorted, etc., ascribes, attributes or assigns it to someone or something else. A good example of this situation can be found in someone on your planet, or anyone in the Zone of Displacement, who not only appears to be positive, good, beneficial, useful, fruitful, truthful, etc., but who also acts and behaves that way — from the point of view of external observation. Now, what are the determining factors if such an individual is or is not really that way in the true reality of his/her own individual, personal, unique and infinitely different being and existence or pseudo-being and existence? These factors are rooted in to whom or to what he/she ascribes, attributes or assigns such characteristics, traits, attributes, acts or behaviors. If he/she, from the bottom of his/her heart, in his/her own state of within, and only from the position of that within, with full identification with that within, assigns, attributes or ascribes them to the right source, in that case, you can consider his/her good, positive, beneficial, useful, productive, constructive, creative and fruitful behavior, actions, deeds, outputs or whatever you have, true and genuine, and he/she is a member of the positive state regardless of where or when he/she is physically situated or positioned at each particular time/state. In this case, his/her external behavior and appearance, because it stems from within, is corroborated and verified by his/her within as being true and genuine.

On the other hand, if he/she assigns them to the wrong source, either to himself/herself or to someone or something who/which is not its source or origin, in that case, he/she lives in the falsities of that situation no matter how he/she appears externally. Because the acknowledgment and acceptance of this false situation as the truth of the matter is false, by the process of acting on it, he/she establishes the evilness of such an act. In other words, to accept something false as being the only truth, by the process of the act of that acceptance itself, evil is produced. Thus, one begins to live life (non-life) of evils and falsities.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

What is this situation telling you? It is telling you two things: First of all, if someone appears, or even really is that way externally, it does not mean that in and by himself/herself he/she is really that way internally. And because the internal state of mind counts for the true reality of who one is or for what reasons one does anything at all, and why one appears to be this or that way, only from that position true determination can be made whether that individual is or is not that way. If he/she, in all modesty, humbleness and humility, ascribes or assigns or attributes his/her positiveness, goodness, benefits, usefulness and all else of this nature to the right source, in this case, to Me as their Absolute Source, in that case, he/she is really that way and he/she is a true member of the positive state. However, if he/she within himself/herself does so for his/her own glory, fame, recognition, elevation and showing off, and by that factor he/she ascribes, attributes or assigns them to himself/herself, as being their source in and by himself/herself, no matter how much externally he/she would deny this to be so, even if externally he/she would claim that they are coming from Me, he/she would not be that way in the true reality of his/her own personal, individual, private, intimate within and different self.

Secondly, this situation is being utilized by My Divine Providence for allowing individuals like that to perform positive, good, beneficial, productive, constructive and creative works of that nature, even if their intentions and motivations in this respect are wrong, false or evil, in order to provide all with something that stems directly from Me and is not a consequence of their being integral components of the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos. The way you have to understand this statement is in the fact that any possibility at all to perform such works, acts or being that way, no matter what the state of one's mind is internally and/or externally, derives from My presence in such an individual's ability to choose and to change. Because, in the ultimate sense, and in all senses at all, I, The Lord Jesus Christ, Am the only Absolute Source, Origin and Possibility of any such works, or positiveness, goodness, creativity, productivity, constructiveness, etc., by the factor of My being that Source and Origin in, by, of and from Myself, no one at all, and this is true in an absolute sense, can be positive, good, beneficial, useful, fruitful, etc., in, by, of and from himself/herself. He/she can be that way only and only from, by, through and of Me in him/her. Whether he/she recognizes, acknowledges and accepts this to be or not to be the Absolute Truth, is an entirely different matter.

Now, I want you to be assured that this requirement is not for My own benefit or that I am seeking it from you to glorify, praise or elevate Me,

or to do anything of this nature, but it is for the sake of the Absolute Truth Itself. If you know and accept the truth, it makes you free from the influence of anything false, evil and negative. If you are in the truth of the matter, and if you live that truth, you are in the good of love and by that factor, you are in the positive state. This is the only way how to avoid being under the dominance of the negative state, the non-life of which is rooted in evils, falsities and distortions. So, in essence, and in the true reality of this requirement, to recognize, to acknowledge and to accept this fact, is for your own good because it is true. And if it is true, it is of the positive state and thus, it is of Me. Acceptance of this truth, in fact, equals acceptance of Me as the only Source of the Absolute Good and Truth. By the factor of accepting that, you are being continuously imbued with My True Life. Thus, by that factor, you are living and you are alive. Anything different, produces non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos which like to ascribe, attribute or assign everything of this nature to themselves.

At the present state of affairs, the way they are being set up by the renegades and their minions, you will be seeing more and more of this type of manifestation on planet Zero and elsewhere. In other words, in order to keep everyone in the negative state, and in order to portray the negative state as positive and good, its forces will allow everything positive and good to appear among humans and other creatures and sub-creatures, with the assurance that they are the origin or source of all of them. By accepting this falsity, everyone will continue to reside in the non-life of the negative state. And believe Me, it will not be easy, even for you, My representatives on planet Zero, not to fall into this particular trap. When you see how someone is so good, so positive, so beneficial, so useful, so kind, etc., you would tend to see that person as someone who represents Me. In some ways there is a grain of truth in seeing an individual in question that way. The way you have to understand this statement is in the fact that an individual's ability to be that way derives from Me because I made it possible for him/her to be that way. However, in relationship to that individual himself/herself, it will all depend on to whom or to what he/she ascribes, attributes or assigns such traits or characteristics. It will determine his/her position or placement in the hierarchy of the spiritual organization or whether he/she is in the positive or in the negative state, respectively.

I want you to understand that if I were not to be Absolutely Good, Positive, Beneficial, Useful, Fruitful, etc., in that case, anyone at all, no matter where and when they are located or positioned, could not be that way as well. That anyone could be that way, no matter to whom or to what they ascribe, attribute or assign such traits and characteristics, is

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

possible only and only because I am that way in an absolute sense. Otherwise, such ideas of being that way, and the consequent behavior in accordance with such ideas, would not be able to enter anyone's mind even remotely. At the same time, by allowing such behaviors, attitudes, acts, productivity, etc., regardless of who it is or how much such an individual recognizes, acknowledges and accepts Me as the only Source of them, I provide for all levels of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence the true nature of the positive state and My True Absolute Nature to come or shine through (even if this fact is denied within the sphere of the negative state and very often even by humans). By this factor, no one can fall into the state of total and complete, or even absolute, evil and falsity. This is the issue of preservation of remnants or remains in everyone of something that comes directly from Me. Thanks to this preservation, everyone in the non-life of the negative state and human non-life will be able to be saved — when the time comes for it to happen. And this is all that I wanted to contribute at this time.

Peter: Thank You very much for this timely reiteration. As You know, during the recording of this Dialog, I received an interesting letter (by E-mail) from a gentleman in Germany who expressed severe doubts about You — The Lord Jesus Christ — being the only true God. His case was mentioned in the concluding remarks of Dialog 128. The gentleman in question recognized himself in those remarks and he responded with the mentioned letter. Let me quote some passages of that letter. It also contains a question to You which is of purely philosophical nature. So, here it goes: *'First, I do not KNOW at all who or what The Lord Jesus Christ really IS or IS NOT, of course, except my knowing the corresponding informations given by Him/Her in the books of TNR. Secondly, the statement of The Lord Jesus Christ that He/She is the only One True God — in the sense that He/She is the only One True Creator of All and Everything, including myself personally — I simply cannot believe without having any experiential evidence, any single proof! If I would SIMPLY believe in such statement of the Author of the ideas in the Dialogs, it would be completely abandoning any rationality in my reasoning process! Thirdly, this does not mean that I am denying that The Lord Jesus Christ is the only One True God; meaning, I am NOT believing that He/She is not...! ...Yet, how can I deal with the statement of The Lord Jesus Christ that He/She is the only One True God?! Looking at it logically, I see these alternatives: 1. He/She is telling the absolute truth! 2. He/She is knowingly not always telling the truth — because of some reasons which only He/She knows! Or because He/She is some kind of super ego... 3. He/She is unknowingly mistaken when He/She thinks to be the only One True God!. Maybe He/She is the*

unconscious part of Peter himself or some sophisticated spiritual being believing to be the only One True God.'

'Now, how to decide what is right? It supposedly would be just consequential to ask The Lord Jesus Christ to prove to be the only One True God or for making one to have clear step by step experiences to become more and more convinced. So, my question is: How or by what means, experiences, insights or whatever can a reader of the books of TNR come to a definitive conclusion that You, The Lord Jesus Christ are the only One True God? What would be the difference — on the side of a reader of TNR and his attitude between the BELIEVING that you, The Lord Jesus Christ, are the only True One God; the KNOWING that; the ACCEPTING that; and the EXPERIENCING that? Can a reader of the ideas in the books of TNR have any benefit from studying them without believing that You, The Lord Jesus Christ, are the only One True God? How can the truth be defined?' End of selected passages in the author's letter. Would You like to make some kind of response to the issues raised in this letter? As I see it, it has relevance to the most important issue of all — Your True Nature and Who You really Are.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Before addressing this issue in question, raised by the gentleman from Germany, I want to express My personal appreciation to him for sending that letter and for being honest and open regarding the most important spiritual factor related to My True Nature. As you know, in Chapter Two of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** much was revealed about this issue. And not only that but, at least seven different assumptions were described related to how humans on planet Zero, and other creatures and sub-creatures in the Zone of Displacement, conceptualize My Nature. At the same time, that Chapter, as well as throughout the Big Book, was clearly describing how My New Nature came about or was acquired and how I became the only TRUE GOD. Of course, for the gentleman in question, whatever is offered about Me, My Nature and My being the only True God in that book, or in any other sources of My New Revelation, is not sufficient experiential evidence or single proof about these facts. In fact, his entire letter is about the lack of any personal, step by step, experiential evidence or any convincing proof that I am really the only True God and there is none other.

Let us look from what position this requirement is coming. It is a typical human position. From that position it is perceived that whatever is offered by the Author of the ideas in the Dialogs is outside of any rationality of the reasoning process and therefore, everything in My New Revelation has to be taken on faith without any experiential or

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

empirical evidence and proof. This assumption places My New Revelation into the same bag with any other religions existing on your planet and in the Zone of Displacement, or any other spiritual movements, which require from their faithful followers to accept everything that they teach on blind faith. As you know, throughout My New Revelation such an approach is entirely refuted. Not only is it refuted but it requires from its readers a personal, individual and inward confirmation, verification and substantiation by their logic, rationality, reasoning process and intuition from the position of their own within.

On the other hand, how was a typical human rationality and its reasoning process formed? What kinds of rationality and reasoning processes are they? You have to seek the answer to this question in the structure, dynamics and nature of the typical human mind and how or by what means and for what purpose it was fabricated by the original fabricators, the so-called pseudo-creators. As you remember, in the original setup of this fabrication, the emphasis was put on turning away from or making it very difficult or even impossible to seek any answers to any questions from the true spiritual source situated in everyone's within or in their true spiritual mind. Simply stated, in order to place into the human mind all kinds of doubts and uncertainties about the most important factor of their being and existence — the proper conceptualization, understanding and acceptance of My True Nature and about My being the only True God, it was necessary to close off any access to the state of their within or their spiritual mind and make it impossible to seek out any experiential, rational, logical, reasonable, intuitive or any other type of evidence or proof that I am who I claim to be — the only True Absolute God and that there is none other. Such evidence or proof can be found only and only in one's within or one's spiritual mind.

As you know, in order to invent, activate and establish the pseudo-life of the negative state and its human pseudo-life or non-life, it was necessary to recede from this setup — seeking all answers to all one's questions from the true source of all-knowing — from Me, in the state of everyone's spiritual mind or in the state of everyone's within. Thus, it was necessary to completely close off any access to that state and establish a different mode of acquiring knowledge about anything and not only about Me and My Nature. For that reason a different type of rationality and its reasoning processes were established — a typical human one, which is forced to seek all answers to its questions from the state of its without or from outside itself. Unless such an arrangement

was made, the negative state, human non-life and their egos could never come to their adverse fruition.

From these facts you can see that the current structure and nature of human's rationality and its reasoning processes were formed in such a way so as to demand any evidence or proof of anything at all from somewhere or something where nothing of the real evidence or proof is available at all. However, in order to subterfuge the human mind in its reasoning processes and rationality into believing that the only true answers to any of its questions with empirical and experiential certainty are contained outside of its own states and conditions, they were put into a position of having no other inclination for accepting anything at all as logical, reasonable and rational which would not be corroborated by some kind of external evidence or proof. And because nothing exists at all in the external factors which is able to fully and completely, without any doubt, provide such evidence or proof, the human mind, in its present nature and structure, has no recourse but to doubt or reject any conclusions that are offered to it from any other state or position.

Due to the fact that the path to the true source of any right, correct and proper knowledge was closed to humans, whatever they are presented with, has no validity in the true reality of being and existence. For that reason, in order to give humans some kind of way out of this adverse predicament, from time to time, they need to be given a direct Revelation from Me about these facts. By their very nature, in this respect, they are put into a position of free will and choice — to accept or not to accept anything which is offered to them by such means. This particular requirement stems from the purpose for which human life (non-life) was permitted to come to its fruition and from the specific role that humans play in the totality-of-it-all. To repeat over and over again: Human life (non-life) is not the ultimate choice in itself and by itself. This is something that needs to be constantly kept in anyone's mind. Otherwise, no proper understanding can be acquired about the true purpose of human life (non-life). As you remember, and I am repeating this over and over again, humans' role and their entire life (non-life) is rooted in their demonstration and illustration of what not to choose, how not to be, how not to rationalize, how not to reason, where not to seek any evidence or proof for anything at all, how not to behave, how not to relate, how not to believe, how not to love and/or make love, how not to conceptualize the spiritual factors of anything at all and especially of My True Nature, and how not to do anything at all. In this role of humans is founded the true meaning of their human life (non-life).

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Because of this position and role, which humans occupy, any attempt to seek any evidence or proof by means of the typical human logic, rationality and its reasoning processes would lead nowhere. And not only would it lead one nowhere, but it would put one into a position of rejection of anything which is offered to it by the means of the so-called typical human experiential evidence or proof of anything at all. The problem in providing humans with such experiential evidence or proof is that it would come from their without in which the meaning and function of their own life (non-life) is rooted. If you provide them with any tangible and convincing evidence or proof regarding Me and My True Nature or My being the only True God, under presently existing conditions of humans' role and function, by the factor that such proof or evidence would come from their externals — by the means of their external rationality, logic and reasoning processes, and by the means of their external experiential or empirical mode, they would be eternally locked into this external mode of non-life and they would be put into the ultimate choice indefinitely. To accept the human state, condition, role, position, or whatever human non-life consists of, as the ultimate choice, is to lock them in forever into the state of externals and to confirm the verity and genuineness of something which in itself and by itself has no verity and genuineness. If something like this were ever to happen, humans would not be able to acquire any true knowledge about anything at all. For that reason they would be condemned to live in evils, falsities and distortions of their non-life. Such an outcome would nullify any possibility for them to be saved from their brand of life (non-life) because, as mentioned several times before, by that factor, they would internalize their externals and externalize their internals. By doing that, they would permanently establish an upside-down style of perceiving, understanding and apprehending the true reality of all and everything.

This is the reason why, as long as humans are in the state and role of demonstration and illustration of what not to choose and how not to be in general, they cannot be given any external, humanly rational, empirical, logical or experiential evidence or proof about any spiritual issues, and especially and particularly about Me and My being the only True God. Do you remember what I said to the Pharisees who demanded from Me such evidence or proof (signs) about My claims from where I came and who I really was? The meaning of this scene was explained in one of the most recent Dialogs. The reason why no one in human life (non-life), while still in the human state, condition and role, can be given such external, so-called rational and by reason, experiential evidence or proof, was explained above and in that Dialog.

On the other hand, do you really think that being typical humans, you would accept unconditionally and without any doubt, as Absolute Truth, anything I say or anything related to Who I Am and What My true Nature is all about or that I Am the only True God, if I would grant your wish to have evidence or proof about these factors by your typical human mode of experiences of anything at all — experientially, rationally, by the reasoning processes, empirically, by external sensorial means or by anything at all available in the repertoire of your human mind? Do not kid yourself! Being a typical human, in your human nature, you would come up with all kinds of pseudo-plausible rationalizations, justifications and excuses for not considering or not accepting or not believing anything which is offered to you by such means as the true reality and as something which would be able to convince you beyond any shadow of a doubt that you now have irrefutable evidence or proof that I am who I claim to be, or about anything at all for that matter. Very soon, or immediately, you would start to doubt your own senses and your own personal experiences in this respect, and you would tend to dismiss them as something which was a product of your imagination, or of your wishful thinking or of your own subjective desires to have peace of mind, satisfying your rational mind to have such experiences.

Let Me remind you of something which I brought to the attention of those who were listening to what I had to say during My stay on planet Zero. Do you remember the parable about the rich man and the poor man, Lazarus, as recorded in the Gospel According to Luke, Chapter 16 verses 19-31? In that event is contained the mystery of what we are talking about here. The rich man was in hell in some of his own personal tortures and miseries. On the other hand, Lazarus, the poor man, was in the bliss of heaven, being with his forefather, Abraham. When the rich man saw Lazarus in that place, he begged Abraham to send Lazarus to help him to ease his suffering. Of course, Abraham told him that no possible connection exists between the rich man's state and condition and Lazarus' state and condition. So, the rich man, accepting that fact, begged Abraham, who was representing Me, to send Lazarus back to his former home on planet Zero, to all his relatives, in order to warn them about the consequences, outcomes and results of their negative and evil lifestyle so that they would be prevented from entering the same state and condition in which the rich man found himself. To this request, Abraham told the rich man that his relatives (in this case, all humans) have Moses and the prophets. If they hear them, they would be prevented from entering that state and condition. In return, the rich man responded that if one returns to them from the dead, they would repent. And Abraham responded that if they do not

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

hear Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded though one rises from the dead.

What can be more experiential and convincing than if someone would come back from the dead and would be telling you everything about how things are on the other side as well as about My being the only True God, for example? However, being typical humans you would tend to disregard anything that such an individual would tell you. You can analogize this event to the present situation with the German gentleman. I have given you My New Revelation and all its principles and ideas. If they, in their logic, cohesiveness, beauty, reason, rationality and everything else they contain, are not able to convince you of the truthfulness of their claims, and especially about Who I Am and what My True Nature is and that I Am the only True God and there is none other, then, in that case, as long as you are in your human life (non-life), nothing else, no matter how rational, experiential, empirical, sensorial or any other way it would be, would be able to do so. Again, don't kid yourself that it would provide you with the expected and desired outcome. I can assure you, it would not!

This is the way the human mind was set up for the above mentioned reasons. And the gentleman in question obviously agreed to illustrate and demonstrate this situation by his own personal, private, intimate, individual, unique and infinitely different attitude as related to Me and My True Nature and to the issue of whether I — The Lord Jesus Christ — am or am not the only True God. This is what he agreed to do or this is how he agreed to be. Now, whether he will accept these facts or not, is entirely up to him. However, because of his position and role, as well as the position and role of any human on planet Zero, no other means could be provided to make anyone, while in human life (non-life), with the required empirical or experiential evidence or proof that anything in My New Revelation is true or not. For that reason, it would be spiritually very dangerous for him and everyone else, during his/their tour of duty on planet Zero, to provide him/them with having a clear step by step experience to become more and more convinced that I am the only One True God. Such evidence or proof, acquired by these types of external means, would be impositional.

Because of that, their validity would be nullified in one's internals where anything at all counts. The only way anything at all can become valid and convincing in spiritual matters and as related to Me and My True Nature, is if it comes from the innermost state of one's spiritual self by the process of one's inner intuitive, logical and rational discernment and clear sense that something is or is not true. Any other

modes in these matters are totally and completely misleading and false. Once again, either you accept this as fact or you reject it to be so. In either case, it is your choice. And nothing more can be said about this.

As you noticed, in the process of discussion of this issue, it was emphasized many times above, that this situation with the need to have some kind of experiential or empirical evidence or proof about Me, and all other spiritual issues as related to Me or anything else, exists only during your tour of duty on planet Zero or while you live in the human non-life. The need for this setup was defined above, as well as many times in these Dialogs and other sources of My New Revelation. On the other hand, at no place in My New Revelation is it being indicated that you will have no such evidence or proof at any other state, place or condition but with the exception of your human life (non-life). I can assure you that such required and needed evidence or proof will be provided for you, beyond a shadow of doubt, after you leave your human non-life or after you complete your specific tour of duty on planet Zero. As you remember from the Big Book, it was indicated there that I personally and individually appear to everyone, during their own Last Judgment, and present them with such convincing evidence or proof that they will never have any doubts in this, or any other matter.

Once you are in the state of your ultimate choice, and once you are out of the illustrative and demonstrative phase of your mission, the presentation of such convincing evidence or proof, can no longer be by imposition. If I appear to anyone at all in their state of their most within, in that case, such experience springs forth from the state of their within. In that state no impositional factors exist. Everything there is by freedom of choice and free will. For that reason, the validity of any experience in that state is absolute. From such a state no doubts can be born out. In the human non-life, state and condition the exact opposite is true. For that reason, for the sake of humans' salvation from their accursed position, such experiential or empirical experiences, which would give them convincing evidence or proof about these matters, are unavailable to them. Otherwise, as mentioned above, they would be locked in forever in that accursed condition. Again, either you accept or not accept this logical statement. The choice is yours. So are the consequences — as we like to say it and as it reflects the truth of the matter.

As you see from these facts, one of the most difficult tasks, if not the most difficult one at all, that all humanity, or the vast majority of humans face, is the acceptance of Me — The Lord Jesus Christ, as being the only One True God and that there is none other. As mentioned

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

many times before, zillions of reasons are offered by the negative state to the human so-called conscious rational mind why I cannot be considered as being the Only One True God. And no matter with how many evidences or proofs you would come up, nothing could convince humans that I am the only One True God. At the same time, to reiterate what I told the Pharisees, when they demanded from Me to give them such evidences or proofs, none will be given to you while you are on planet Zero, with the exception of My New Revelation and all its ideas and principles. In this respect, it is the full responsibility and accountability of everyone who reads My New Revelation, to make their own decision, based on their own free will and choice, as well as on their own personal and individual intuitive discernment, whether what is contained in it is true or not. To repeat: No other means or ways for verification of these facts will be given to anyone while they reside on planet Zero. These are the facts of your human life (non-life).

If any reader of My New Revelation has any reasonable sense, he/she can very easily come to the conclusion, that whatever is contained in My New Revelation, whatever is said in it about Me and My Absolute True Nature and that I Am the only True God, is the only thing that makes perfect sense — as compared with anything else available in this respect on planet Zero and in the entirety of the Zone of Displacement. If you carefully compare how My Nature is portrayed by all those numerous religions and their even more numerous sects, as well as by various pseudo-spiritual teachings on planet Zero and elsewhere in the negative state, with that of how it is portrayed in My New Revelation, you will find striking irreconcilable differences. In My New Revelation, My Nature is described in absolutely positive terms with such Absolute States, Conditions, Characteristics, Traits and Character as Love, Wisdom, Good, Truth, Positive Works, Faith, Joy, Delight, Pleasure, Happiness, Mercy, Forgiveness, Kindness, Compassion, Infinite Patience, Empathy, Objectivity, Justice, Judgment, Respect, Tolerance, Appreciation, Righteousness, Acceptance and everything else of purely positive nature with all their infinite absolutely positive derivatives. In other words, My Nature is conceptualized as Absolute Positiveness which does not contain anything of the negative or adverse nature. At the same time, My New Revelation, in describing these Absolute Attributes of My Absolute Nature, is recognizing very clearly that, in the purely Absolute Positive Sense, I transcend all these Attributes and I am more than all of them taken together or singularly — again only in My Absolute Positiveness.

On the other hand, all other religions and so-called spiritual teachings, in this respect, conceptualize Me as someone who contains within

His/Her Nature a mixture of the above with many negative features. Because of that, in their description, I can be angry, furious, jealous, punitive, rejective, wrathful, inconsiderate, condemning, vengeful and intolerant with many other such negative characteristics. The illogical combination of such opposing and mutually exclusive traits, attributes and characteristics, makes Me be conceived as some kind of monstrous creature who does not know what he wants or desires. And yet, this kind of conceptualization of My Nature, with the exception of Swedenborg's writings, permeates all their so-called holy books, including the Christian Bible.

The way My True Nature is described and conceptualized in My New Revelation should offer enough plausible evidence and proof to anyone with an open mind and heart, that I Am truly Who I claim to be. Another fundamental and substantial difference between their teachings and the teachings of My New Revelation can be found in the way they interpret any concepts, statements, ideas and principles contained in both of them. Whereas in all other teachings everything is taken and interpreted as unchangeable, rigid, stagnant and non-progressive dogma and doctrine, which must be obeyed and practiced unconditionally and unquestionably without any doubts or uncertainties, or without any attempt to question the truthfulness or verity of such dogmas and doctrines, or otherwise one can be condemned to eternity into the burning fire of hell, the teachings of My New Revelation are in the mode of continuous renewal, regeneration, updates, changes, progression, add on, going forward and onward, with emphasis on everyone's free will and choice to accept or not to accept anything contained in My New Revelation and with the proclamation that no one is lost or can be condemned to be in the same state or condition, no matter what kind it is, to eternity.

For that reason, everyone is given numerous opportunities to amend his/her ways and to return back to the positive state. Because of such a purely positive nature of My New Revelation, to claim that its ideas and principles are dogmatic, rigid, stagnant and non-progressive, the way all others are, is very much inappropriate and unjust. This structure and nature of My New Revelation can serve, for someone with an open mind and heart, as additional evidence, confirmation or proof that whatever is contained in it, is the Absolute Truth in Its progressive, regenerating and continuously renewing mode.

Based on all these factors, not provable from the standpoint of the requirements of a typical external human mind in its demands for confirmation, verification, evidence or proof from the position of its own

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

brand of so-called rationality and reasoning process (for the reasons mentioned above), it is obvious that the first alternative, given by the German gentleman in question, is the correct one: Regarding My statement that I am the only One True God, I am telling the Absolute Truth.

The second alternative that I am knowingly not always telling the truth — because of some reasons which only I know or because of some kind of super-ego, is false, for the simple reason that being Absolute Truth in, by, of and from Myself, would be utterly inconceivable and impossible for Me to deceive anyone about anything and not only about Who I really Am. To assume something like that would make Me negative. Such negativity would refute My being Absolutely Positive or Absolute Positiveness. The only thing it is necessary to do in this respect, in relationship to all other relative individuals, is to tell them, from time to time, from the position of My Absolute Love and Absolute Wisdom, that they are not ready to know something at any given time for their own safety and security reasons.

Now, tell me what would be the benefit or advantage for Me or for anyone else to lie about Who I Am and what My True Nature is or that I Am the only One True God? What would be gained by such nonsense or deception? Am I some kind of superego? What is superego? In the true conceptualization of its nature, it is nothing else but an embellished, upgraded, beautified and moralistic ego by which that ego tries desperately to cover up its true 'stinky' nature so that it would not 'stink' or appear to anyone as negative and undesirable. So, in essence, being some kind of superego, would make Me as negative as is any human individual, or anyone in the negative state with their respective ego. This would refute the notion of My being Absolute Positiveness.

The third alternative offered by the mentioned gentleman is that, perhaps, I am unknowingly mistaken when I think to be the only One True God. If you accept the notion of My being the Only One Absolute, then, in that case, I know everything, without exception or exclusion, in an Absolute Sense. Therefore, there is nothing in Me which can be unknowing. At the same time, I cannot be the unconscious part of Peter himself or of some kind of sophisticated spiritual being or whatsoever or whosoever, believing to be the only One True God. Whatever is contained in My New Revelation, all its ideas, principles, information and anything else, is of such meaning and magnitude, and the way it was and is transmitted, could never enter any human mind as well as the mind of any sophisticated spiritual being, even in their wildest dreams. It is utterly impossible to come up with anything contained in

My New Revelation and how and in what time frame and fashion it was given through Peter, by anyone other than the Absolutely Knowing Absolute Being — Me, the only One True God. If these facts are not convincing enough, I can assure you that nothing else will convince you no matter how logical, rational, experiential or empirical it would seem to be. Do not kid yourself that it would make any difference!

So, in direct response to the gentleman's question about how or by what means, experiences, insights or whatever a reader of the books of The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ can come to the definitive conclusion that I, The Lord Jesus Christ, am the only One True God, it becomes clearly obvious from everything that was said above, that such a conclusion is possible, as long as you are in human life (non-life), only and only by the means of My New Revelation and by what it contains, reveals and explains. No other means during your life on planet Zero can or may be available. Why do you think that such an important Revelation is given at all? **If there were to be any other means but My New Revelation, available to humans, or others elsewhere in the negative state and in some other states and places, no need would exist for My New Revelation to be transmitted at all.** My New Revelation is the only available genuine source from which humans and all others can learn the truth about all spiritual matters and issues as well as about Me and Who I truly Am.

In this respect, you can say that any reader of My New Revelation, based on everything which is contained in it, if he/she would approach his/her reading with an open heart and mind, for the sake of finding, knowing and accepting the truth itself, would definitely acquire an inner or internal full KNOWING that I Am the only One True God, and based on that, such a reader would find himself/herself ACCEPTING this fact; and based on that, he/she would be EXPERIENCING this fact; and consequently, he/she would be fully BELIEVING that I Am the only One True God. As you see from this sequence of spiritual logic, the factor of BELIEVING, as opposed to any other teachings and their requirements (blindly believing in something, for example), is the consequence, result and outcome of KNOWING, ACCEPTING and EXPERIENCING, and not the other way around.

How can the truth be defined? Based on everything contained in My New Revelation, it is obvious that **the truth can be defined as the inner intuitive recognition, knowledge, understanding and discernment, beyond any shadow of doubt, with a total certainty, that anything at all in the entirety of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, without**

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

exception or exclusion, is so or it is not so; or that it is or is not what it appears to be. And because I am the only One Who knows absolutely everything about everyone and everything, in that sense, and from that position, I Am The Absolute Truth. By this factor the truth can be defined as The Lord Jesus Christ being the Absolute Truth. **And this is the Absolute Truth.**

Can a reader of the ideas contained in the books of My New Revelation have any benefit from studying them without believing that I, The Lord Jesus Christ, am the only One True God? It all depends on the reasons, intentions and motivations with which such a reading of My New Revelation is approached. If a prospective reader keeps his/her mind open, and if he/she is not outrightly rejecting the notion that I may truly be the only One True God, and if no other ulterior reasons exist for such a study, in that case he/she can benefit from it.

This is especially and particularly true from the standpoint of his/her eternal life. Following such a reader's departure from planet Zero, and upon his/her entrance into the other world, it would be much easier for him/her to accept the truth of My being the only True God, during his/her personal and individual encounter with Me face to face, than otherwise would be the case. So, by all means, continue studying them. It may even eventually convince you, as an irrefutable fact, that I am truly the only One True God.

In conclusion of this somewhat lengthy Dialog, let Me bring to your memory something that happened between Me and My disciple Thomas, following My resurrection. This event is recorded in the Gospel According to John Chapter 20, verses 24-29. As you remember, following My resurrection, I appeared to My disciples for the first time. During that first encounter with them, Thomas was not present. When other disciples told Thomas that they saw Me in the flesh, so-to-speak, what was Thomas' response? *"Unless I see in His hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and put my hand into His side, I will not believe."* What is this response of Thomas telling you? Thomas, in exactly the same way as the German gentleman in question (actually, by birth he is a Slovak, but lives in and is a citizen of Germany), demanded from Me the empirical, experiential, tangible, sensorial, rational and external evidence or proof that it was really Me Who appeared to the rest of My disciples during My first appearance to them following My resurrection. In no other way was Thomas willing to accept this fact.

So, when I appeared to My disciples for the second time following My resurrection, Thomas was also present. Seeing him there also, I said to Thomas, *“Reach your finger here, and look at My hands; and reach your hand here, and put it into My side. Do not be unbelieving, but believing.”* In this respect, you can say that Thomas was representing all those people who, like the gentleman in question, require from Me the experiential, rational, logical, by reason, tangible, external or empirical evidence or proof that I am truly the only One True God. By granting Thomas his wish, by that act, I am assuring everyone in a similar position, and I personally am assuring the German gentleman in question, that such required evidence or proof will eventually be granted to them, and to him personally and individually, upon their return to the other world following their departure from planet Zero.

Unless, of course, by continuous studies of the ideas contained in the books of My New Revelation, they will come to such a conclusion and acceptance before their recall from planet Zero. Such a possibility does exist.

Based on his tangible and physical experience, Thomas acknowledged and accepted Me as being his only Lord and God by saying, *“My Lord and My God!”* What did I respond to his acknowledgment and acceptance of Me as the only Lord and God? Let Me quote, *“Thomas, because you have seen Me, you have believed. **Blessed are those who have not seen and yet have believed*** (the emphasis is Mine).

Based on all these facts, I would like to say something similar to all current and future prospective readers of the books of My New Revelation: **Blessed are you if you recognize, acknowledge and accept Me, by your own free will and free choice, based on the ideas and information contained in My New Revelation, *without any need or desire to have rational, empirical, tangible, experiential or any other external evidence or proof,* that I am truly the only One True God and that there is none other.** Such a recognition, acknowledgment and acceptance is a sign of true wisdom. And this is all that can be conveyed at this time in response to the gentleman’s letter as well as to anything else contained in this particular Dialog.

Peter: Thank You so much for this revelation. Is there anything else that we need to discuss today?

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. No, not today. We've had enough for now. Go and take a long rest. You need that. Until the next time — if needed and feasible.

One Hundred and Thirty Fourth Dialog

April 19, 2000

Peter: Although, I personally don't have any questions of multiversal significance, some cosmological issues continue to be on my mind as well as the usefulness of the human term 'God' and what it truly signifies. Somehow I feel a very strong connectedness between cosmology and the concept of 'God' as understood and conceptualized by humans. This issue came to my mind from the statement — quoted many times by You within the frame of Your New Revelation, that You, The Lord Jesus Christ are the only True One God. Any comment on these, or any other issues which You would deem appropriate to discuss this morning?

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are very right, Peter, about your supposition that there is a certain degree of relevance between what the term 'God' truly signifies and all those cosmological issues which have been on your, as well as Ardyth's mind. Let us first address the term 'God' and how it came about at all. Is this a proper term to use or, as of now, has it become obsolete? This is a very interesting point. It heralds something entirely new that has not been, up to this point, available to anyone or anything. The issue, as related to the term 'God,' stems from the positioning or placement of Someone Who by His/Her Nature is Absolute in all Its Aspects and Manifestations and someone who was created from that Absolute but who, by the factor that he/she has not been in his/her own personal and individual being and existence always in, of, from and by himself/herself, is relative to that Absolute. How do you go about establishing any relationship between these two important Entities — one utterly Absolute and the other utterly relative to that Absolute?

As you remember from the recent Dialogs, which dealt with these issues, in order to provide for this utterly relative some kind of sense as being apart from and different than that Absolute, it was necessary to separate the relative from that Absolute and give it a subjective sense that he/she is somewhere and somewhen else than the Absolute. This is how the subjective perception of reality came about. So, in a practical sense, as perceived from the subjective angle of this situation, you have here two points in time and space, separated from each other in such a manner that they are enabled to perceive each other as being outside of and separate from each other. However, as you know, a perception and discernment of this kind is only a subjective one and, in fact, may be equated to a certain degree with an illusion — as seen from the objective

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

perception of reality. How do you reconcile these two perceptions? Take, for example, a piece of paper, and on its opposite sides draw a small figure, representing two entities. If the paper is placed in a flat position, let us say, on a table or desk, these two figures appear to be far from each other. However, if you take the same paper and you fold it along the precise lines of its edges, they will touch each other, or be on each other as if they occupy the same place and time. Suddenly, in this new position, you abandoned the subjective perception of this setup and reverted to its objective one in which two very different individuals find themselves in a simultaneous and synchronous relationship to each other, occupying, philosophically speaking, the very same space/time.

However, in our particular situation, one of the two mentioned individuals is in the Absolute State and condition and the other is in the relative state and condition. From the standpoint of someone who is relative, the One Who is Absolute appears as being well above and far away from the relative. In this respect, the Absolute, in Its Absolute Nature and Structure, appears to the relative as incomprehensible, unapproachable and well outside of anything that the relative is able to grasp. From this situation the illusion appears on the part of the relative that the Absolute is always positioned or situated somewhere and somewhen that the relative can never reach or approach from his/her own position and situation. In order to define this peculiar situation, or in order to give some semblance of reality to this situation, the relative needed to come up with some kind of label which would reflect the way the relative can comprehend and relate to the Absolute. So, this label was developed or established by the relative for the purpose of giving it some kind of tangible and concrete sense or, better to say it, a fixed orientation point from which the relative could conceive and, based on that, relate from its own subjective position to the Absolute. The term that was used for this labeling was the term 'God.'

The problem with this term, the way it was developed and established by the relative sentient mind, was that by its definition, it places the Absolute outside of and apart from the relative's own position, place, space, time, condition, process, etc. The relative is incapable of discerning the possibility that the Absolute could occupy the same place, state, condition, process, etc. as the relative. From this limitation and incapability, the relative fabricated an illusion of the subjective mode of perception of this fact and, based on that, disregarded the possibility of the simultaneous and synchronous objective mode of co-being and co-existence of both of them. Thus, God as the Absolute Entity, is conceptualized by the relative entity as Someone Who resides in His/Her

Own State, Condition, Process, Place, Time, etc., far away from anything the relative entities can conceive and apprehend. This is, of course, a total opposite of the true reality of God's position, state, place, time, condition or whatever you have. The contradiction of this assumption about God, the way it was/is conceptualized by the relative, is obvious from the fact that God, as such, is Absolute. If He/She is Absolute, in that case, He/She is everywhere, everywhen, in everyone, with everyone, with everything and in everything. If you could really conceptualize God as Someone Who is separated and isolated from being with you and in you, in that case, He/She would not be Absolute. But this is exactly what the relative's definition of or labeling the Absolute by the term 'God' is all about.

Due to the fact that the term 'God' was developed and established on such a false or illusional premise, it cannot reflect the true reality of the Nature and Structure of The Absolute Entity, in this case, Me as The Lord Jesus Christ. From these obvious facts you can clearly feel the awkwardness of this situation or the awkwardness of using the label 'God.' This label puts Me away from everyone who is relative. Yet, by the very definition of My Absolute Nature, if I Am Absolute — which I Am, in that case, anything relative could not exist for a fraction of a nanosecond in itself, by itself, of itself and from itself, without My personal and individual presence in that relative, which presence makes it possible for such a relative to be and to exist at all. At the very same time, it is very much true that I Am present somewhere and somewhen else apart from anyone or anything, while being present in them as well as at all times and non-times. So, as you see from this fact, both assumptions are correct.

However, the way the term 'God' is conceptualized by the sentient entities' minds, particularly the way it is conceptualized by the majority of humans, this term does not contain the important factor that God is everywhere and everywhen, filling out all and everything, as well as everyone, without exception and exclusion, being outside, inside, within and without of everyone and everything, as well as within His/Her Own State, Condition, Process, etc. In some limited sense, you could say that this was partially true before the incarnation of God took place in the form and condition of Jesus Christ on planet Zero. As you remember, God could not be directly present in the process of activation, establishment and manifestation of the negative state — something that was not initiated or originated within His/Her Absolute State. In this limited sense, from the position of those who occupy the negative state and human life (non-life), God, therefore, truly appears as being many

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

zillions of light years away from them. Or they simply deny that He/She even really exists. Whatever position you take in this respect, God, as such, by what this term contains, is positioned either far away from anyone or anything or He/She simply does not exist.

In order to make things right, and in order to assure a direct presence of God also in something in which such a presence was lacking, it was necessary for God to assume a subjective mode of perception of reality the way all relatives, including those who excluded themselves from the positive state, are conceptualizing themselves and everything else. By this factor or event, the notion that God is not directly present in those, with those, by those and in and with everything that surrounds them, was permanently changed. Now, in the form and condition of what became known as The Lord Jesus Christ, He/She is truly everywhere and everywhen including in someone and something who/which was designated as being in non-being and non-existence and in non-space and non-time. Because of this fundamental change, God relinquished His/Her Godhood the way it was conceptualized by the relatives and became Someone totally different. As you know, He/She became The Lord Jesus Christ with a totally and completely New Nature which lacks nothing any longer. The enormous progression that has been made since the time the New Nature of God was acquired and established, and by the fact that the positive state encircled and compressed the negative state and humanity on planet Zero, and by the factor of availability of My New Revelation to all, the term ‘God,’ the way it has been conceptualized by all relatives, as described above, became obsolete. Not only it became obsolete, but at the present state of affairs, it distorts the true reality of Who I Am and What My True Nature is all about. As you remember from the Big Book, a new term was coined and established in this respect — the term ‘The Lord Jesus Christ.’ This term, by its very nature and structure, incorporates everything, and much more, than what the term ‘God’ signifies and contains.

Due to this very important fact, as of now, if you choose so by your own free will and choice, you may relinquish the use of the term ‘God’ in your everyday language. I want you, My true representatives on planet Zero, to be clearly aware that something very new and different, as related to My Nature, is being established as of right now, as these words are being recorded. This new and different replaces everything old and obsolete, the way My Nature was conceptualized by humans and others, because it has fulfilled its purpose and exhausted its usefulness. This new and different has a direct relevance to the evolvement of My New Nature from the time and non-time it had been established or acquired. Because

of that, the term 'The Lord Jesus Christ' acquires a new, more profound, as well as more objective and subjective meaning and sense. No longer will there be any state, condition, place, time, paraplace, paratime, or anything at all in the entirety of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, either in their objective mode or subjective mode, which would be able to preclude from them, and especially from their conscious awareness, My direct, permanent and irrevocable presence.

As you know, up to this point, for some very important spiritual reasons, it was permitted for many in the Zone of Displacement, and to some extent also on planet Zero, to not be aware consciously or unconsciously of My presence in them, with them and by them. The exclusion from their conscious perception of My presence with them, by them and in them, gave them a subjective sense that I, if I exist at all, am very far away from them, objectively and subjectively, and that I do not want or desire to do anything at all with them, leaving them to their own devices and the way they want to carry on in their fake life or non-life. This perception was tolerated until now in order to give them a chance to fully illustrate and demonstrate what it is like to be in such a peculiar condition which does not make any sense for anyone who contains within themselves even a little sense. As you know, even a very little conscious awareness of My presence in them and with them, that is to say, with Me, would make it impossible for them to fulfill the purpose for which they agreed to illustrate and demonstrate these factors. This is the reason why, up to this point, it was permitted by My Divine Providence to have such a perception or sense on their part which would make it possible for them to conceive the ridiculous idea that I was not present with them, by them and in them. This situation was reflected fully in the term they used in describing Me — the term 'God.' Yes, I have never been present in their evil, negative, putrid and despicable deeds, behaviors and acts. This is the reason why My permission for them to have such an impression was granted. As you know, My presence has always been in their ability to choose and to change. However, they have never recognized it to be so as an indisputable fact. For that reason, for them, for all practical purposes, I have always been either somewhere or somewhen else or I have not existed at all.

Now, as mentioned above, this situation has changed completely. In order to gradually and slowly, in their own pace, eliminate such an impression and condition in them, with them and by them, I have decided to accommodate and adjust My Absolute Nature to their specific condition in such a manner so that they would cease entirely to consider Me as Someone Who either does not exist at all or Who is so remote from

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

and intangible to them that they may as well think that I do not exist. As of now, by these accommodations and adjustments in My New Nature, I will be personally present in everything which/that they do, how they do it, how they think, how they feel, how they relate, how they make love and how everything else, without exception or exclusion — without any participation in or support or reinforcement of anything evil, negative, false or distorted that they do or consider. In fact, My presence in that, will be solely for the purpose of making it possible for them to recede from being the way they presently are. By them we mean all those who are positioned in the entirety of the Zone of Displacement with all its Hells and pseudo-worlds as well as by all humans who are not either My overt or covert representatives on planet Zero and elsewhere. As long as they hold to the conceptualization of My Nature, the way it is contained in the term ‘God,’ it would be impossible for them to change their attitude toward Me. They would still see Me as Someone Who either does not exist at all or Who is not present in them, with them and by them. In that case though, none of them could be saved from this inappropriate conceptualization as well as from their negative, evil, false, despicable, distorted and perverted attitude and lifestyle (pseudo-lifestyle).

By the means of these Dialogs, being that they are an integral and important part of My New Revelation, and by means of your reading them as My representatives with Me on your mind, two things will become obvious to all in the negative state: One, that I have accommodated and adjusted My New Nature to them in such a manner so that they will be able to perceive My presence with them, in them and by them during all their activities and behaviors, without any participation in their negative, evil, false, etc., lifestyle (pseudo-lifestyle) so that they will no longer have an impression of Me as Someone Who either does not exist at all or Who is so remote from them that no possibility exists that He/She would take any interest in anything they do or do not do. Two, My presence with them, in them and by them, will give them a foundation on which they will be able to recede from their putrid and despicable pseudo-lifestyle and be permanently converted to the positive state. Without such presence of Mine, they could never be able to recede or be saved from their negative state.

In order to reflect these changes, it will be necessary to dispense with anything that has been conceptualizing My Nature in the manner as contained in the old term ‘God.’ By the means of these Dialogs, this necessity is brought to everyone’s attention. You, as My representatives, are the first ones on planet Zero and within the realm of the Zone of Displacement who will have this information during your reading of this

particular Dialog. By that process you will be making this information available to everyone else in that realm, as well as to the unconscious parts of all other humans' minds. Based on that, they will be put in a position to redefine My New Nature along the lines of its conceptualization in My New Revelation. Thus, the term 'God,' the way they understood and conceptualized it, will no longer be in their mind. The term 'The Lord Jesus Christ' will be engrained in their minds the way it is conceptualized in My New Revelation, replacing everything old and no longer proper and, by that factor, preparing them for their ultimate salvation.

Now, the mentioned accommodations and adjustments in My New Nature are of absolute proportions, taken from the position of My Absolute State and Absolute Process. For that reason, what they are and what their nature truly is, would be impossible for you to understand or apprehend by your relative minds. Suffice it to say that they are needed in an absolute sense if the eternal elimination of the negative state and its human non-life with their egos, and establishment of the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state, could be successfully accomplished. As you see from this situation, another very important step was taken by Me toward this most desirable goal, patiently awaited by all concerned. This step brings us all closer to that time (not in human conceptualization of time).

Based on all these factors, from the position of the true reality, objectively and subjectively, how could the term 'The Lord Jesus Christ' be defined? If the term 'God,' the way it has been conceptualized and understood up to this point by all inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero, is no longer appropriate or correct to retain (in fact, you can say that that type of God, for all practical purposes, is dead), in that case, what kind of definition can we offer as related to the term 'The Lord Jesus Christ,' the way it should be conceptualized and understood by all everywhere and everywhen? First of all, as you know, whatever was contained in the term 'God,' in its purely positive connotation, is being fully included and contained in the term 'The Lord Jesus Christ.' Secondly, this term now contains much more than the term 'God.' Thirdly, as you remember, it reflects all-inclusiveness, something that does not lack anything at all, including experientially everything contained in the nature and structure of the negative state and human non-life. And fourthly, all which is contained and signified by this term is positioned in the Absolute State and Sense.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

From this fact we can derive the following definition of the term ‘The Lord Jesus Christ:’ **The Lord Jesus Christ is the only One True Absolute ‘I AM WHO I AM ABSOLUTELY’ without beginning or end and Who experientially incorporates everything and everyone in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, with all their states, conditions, processes, experiences and everything they have, they possess and they contain, being present with, in and by everyone and everything, at the same time transcending all and everything in an absolute sense; and Who makes it possible by His/Her Own Free Will and Free Choice for everyone and everything to be and to exist or pseudo-be and pseudo-exist in all their own infinite uniquenesses, individualities, differences and their own personalized, individualized and infinitely different ‘I am.’**

Based on this New Definition, it would be advisable that you, as My true representatives on planet Zero, besides everyone positioned in My positive state, begin to address or to approach Me, when you are calling upon Me, or praying or meditating or whatever you do in this respect, in accordance with the content of this definition. From now on, instead of saying or thinking of Me as the only One True God and there is none other, you may say or think of Me as the only One True Absolute I Am Who I Am and there is none other. This is a very important shift that needs to permeate your mind as well as that it needs to establish a different approach in relating to Me and everyone else (especially amongst yourselves).

Now, how do these accommodations and adjustments in My New Nature and the way the term ‘The Lord Jesus Christ’ as defined above, relate to any cosmological issues? I can assure you that it has direct relevance to them. As you remember, any changes in or releases of something from My New Nature has a consequential impact on all and everything in being and existence, pseudo-being and pseudo-existence and planet Zero. Because, in all aspects of its being and existence, My Creation, as well as the pseudo-creation in its own pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, depends absolutely on Me for what they are and how they are structured, formatted and established, for that reason, whenever something of this magnitude happens in and with Me, it rearranges the very fabric of My Creation and pseudo-creation in order to accommodate and adjust them to those changes. Otherwise, they could not proceed and be the way they are supposed to be.

This rearrangement requires a different redistribution and placement of spiritual, mental, sexual and physical energies which make it possible for the needed accommodations and adjustments to occur. As a result, all universes, galaxies, solar systems, planets and celestial bodies of the multiverse with all their respective inhabitants and life forms are repositioned and rearranged in such a manner so as to be in the state of complete readiness for taking and making it possible for the next most important and crucial step in the history of their being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence to commence. As you remember, this particular step has a direct relevance to the eternal ending of this cycle of time/state/process within which the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos were invented, established and manifested. This is the reason why we are calling this step as the most important and crucial one.

In view of these facts, what would be the role of any singular individual, regardless of where or when or in what place, state, condition, time, paratime or whatever such an individual finds himself/herself at each particular time/state, in the scheme of these important events, rearrangements and redistributions of the mentioned spiritual, mental, sexual and physical energies? From the position of a human individual, no matter who he/she is or what his/her external and internal position is, there is a gross misperception of the importance of any singular sentient entity or human role which he/she plays. This misperception stems from an external comparison of the so-called vastness and immensity of the visible physical universe (pseudo-universe) which contains billions and billions of galaxies, stars, planets and their respective inhabitants with one 'miniscule' and seemingly insignificant individual. As a matter of fact, such an inappropriate or even false consideration stems from the continuous propaganda bit by the forces of the negative state which consider any individual and everything related to him/her and who he/she is and what he/she contains within himself/herself as insignificant, unimportant, valueless, unneeded and undesirable.

The reason for such a false consideration is in the fact that the forces of the negative state do not, by any means, want for any individual in their domain and on planet Zero to discover the immense importance of any singular individual which he/she plays in the scheme of all events that are occurring continuously and unceasingly in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. The discovery of this fact would make the negative state's pseudo-life void because, as you remember, it is based on denial of the importance of any singular individual as compared to the same position which an individual in the positive state

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

has in this respect. So, the forces of the negative state fabricated an illusion of the vastness and immensity of space/time in which their pseudo-universe is located so that the awareness of this vastness and immensity would dwarf almost to nothingness any singular individual when he/she would compare his/her size to that of the size of the universe (pseudo-universe) on the linear external scale by which everything is measured in it or within it.

The problem with this arrangement in the conceptualization of the human mind is that it does not reflect the true objective mode of perception of reality. It takes into consideration only the so-called subjective mode in which everything appears *as linear and sequential*. And yet, in the true structure and nature of Creation and pseudo-creation, no such linearity and sequence exist. As you know, Creation and pseudo-creation is formatted and shaped in circles. Because of that, space, time, state, condition or whatever you have in Creation and pseudo-creation can be folded, refolded and rearranged in such a manner that any point, position, placement, state, condition, etc., occupies exactly the same one as any other. In other words, you can easily and comfortably say that any such point, position, placement, state, condition, time, paratime, etc., is within the reach of your individual hand, so-to-speak. However, when in your subjective mode of perception of reality, you unfold this circle in such a manner that it becomes flat, suddenly, from one end to another, you have in front of you mind-boggling vastness, immensity and incomprehensibility of space and time which is impossible to imagine or to span by your 'puny' human mind. And we are talking here only about the so-called physical universe (pseudo-universe). How much more incomprehensible would it be to the subjective mode of perception of reality or pseudo-reality of any human mind, the nature and structure of the spiritual and intermediate universes or pseudo-universes.

However, even from the standpoint of human scientists-astronomers things are not as simple as that. There is considerable controversy about these issues among them. Let Me quote some of their outlandish premise: "Perhaps the image astronomers have of an infinite space filled with hundreds of billions of different galaxies, stars, solar systems and planets is an illusion. Instead, the universe could be constructed like a vast hall of mirrors. Included among the most distant galaxies humans can maybe see ghostly images of their own galaxy. What appears to be a distant galaxy might actually be light from a very young version of the Milky Way that has made a 13-billion-year complete circuit around a finite universe. Instead of holding billions and billions of different

galaxies, the universe might hold mostly mirages, repeated images of a far smaller number of galaxies. The images would be the result of light taking different pathways through the cosmos at different points in a galaxy's history. For that reason, there may be Milky Way doppelgängers out there, but if they exist, they may lie beyond the horizon of what humans will ever be able to observe." What does this quote remind you of? Do you remember what was said about this issue in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ?*** It was indicated there in Chapter 17, pages 547-548 (In the English version, Second Printing) that "...each planet, solar system, galaxy and universe has its own one genuine physical compaction in some space, time and dimension. This one genuine spatial-temporal dimensional compaction generates numerous images and replicas of itself, occupying the same space, and sometimes even the same time, but different dimensions and, very often, different times as well." At the time these words were recorded, the above mentioned assumption by your astronomers had not been formulated. They came up with it much later.

On the other hand, do not forget what was indicated many times in My New Revelation about this issue. The being and existence of Creation, as well as pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the pseudo-creation in all their aspects and functions, totally and completely depend on the awareness of self-awareness of all 'I am' and their continuous, unceasing conscious functions and activities.

How is it possible that this is the case? Any sentient mind, including human minds and minds of all who are located and positioned within the pseudo-life of the negative state, contain within their minds, in a nutshell, the blueprint and design of the structure, nature and dynamics of Creation as well as of pseudo-creation (for humans and all other inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement — the pseudo-creation). Or to be more precise: The entirety of Creation and pseudo-creation reflects in its structural design the nature, structure and composition of the sentient mind.

Because there are infinite numbers of diverse and infinitely different, unique and individual sentient minds out there (symbolically speaking), to reflect this factor of infinite diversity, uniqueness, difference and numbers, you have out there or within the multiverse, infinite numbers of very much diverse, unique and infinitely different universes, galaxies, solar systems, planets and various other celestial bodies at all levels of the multiverse — spiritual, intermediate and physical. And the same rule applies to the pseudo-creation or the Zone of Displacement which

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

was patterned by the design, nature and structure of those sentient minds who decided to split from the true Creation, building their pseudo-worlds from the perverted ideas of their own mind.

Now, the way you have to understand the above description about dependency of Creation and pseudo-creation on the awareness of self-awareness of all 'I am' of the sentient minds and their operations, functions and activities, is that in an absolute sense, the entire Creation and pseudo-creation and everyone located, positioned and placed within them, depend absolutely on My Absolute Sentient Mind in My Own Absolute Awareness of Self-Awareness of My Absolute 'I AM.' In this sense, the structural design and the nature and function of Creation and its entire blueprint reflect in its relative condition the Structure, Nature and Dynamics of My Absolute Sentient Mind. Or to be more precise: The structural design of any sentient mind in its nature, composition, dynamics, function, self-perception and everything else, was patterned by the same from My Absolute Sentient Mind. In its relative condition, any sentient mind reflects and carries within itself the blueprint of the Nature, Structure, Dynamics, Function and everything else of My Absolute Sentient Mind. Through and by this setup, the entire Creation with its multiverse and what it contains, as well as the pseudo-creation with everything it contains, is made possible to be and to exist or to pseudo-be and pseudo-exist.

Because of such a dependency factor, Creation and pseudo-creation, in order to be and to exist or to pseudo-be and pseudo-exist at all, cannot have any different nature, structure, composition and everything else than what the sentient mind has or ultimately what My Absolute Sentient Mind has.

So, if you take into consideration these factors, the importance of each individual sentient mind, regardless of whether it is the true sentient mind or human sentient mind or any other sentient mind in the negative state, becomes very obvious. If each sentient mind in its individuality and nature is unique, infinitely different, and non-duplicable, being his/her own intricate and multilevel universe onto himself/herself, and if, by this factor, he/she generates and makes it possible by this crucial uniqueness, infinite difference and individuality the being and existence of the multiverse which reflects this factor, in that case, that component of the multiverse, which reflects the structural design of the respective individual sentient mind, is made entirely possible only and only by the existence of this very specific, very unique, very individual and very different singular sentient entity or human or anyone else who contains

such a sentient mind, regardless of whether this mind is or is not consciously aware that it is so.

As you see from this obvious fact, your activities, functions, roles, placements, behaviors, attitudes or whatever you do or don't do, no matter what they are, make it possible for the component of the multiverse, corresponding to you, to be and to exist in its own function, activity, role, placement, etc. This dependency factor can be described in the very crude and limited words of one of your well-known astronomers, that if a baby playing with a ball in his/her carriage, throws that ball out of the carriage, he/she, by the factor of that act, disturbs the gravity and motion of the furthest star in the visible universe.

Do you see how important you are in relationship to the multiverse and pseudo-worlds? Without you, and your own being and existence, they could not be and exist either. Should you by any impossible chance disappear from your own being and existence, or should you lose your individual, personal and intimate awareness of self-awareness of your 'I am,' that component of the multiverse which corresponds to and is connected with you, would disappear as well. And because there is an interdependency of all components of which the multiverse is comprised, the loss of one such component, represented here by you, would equal the loss of all other components. In that case, the multiverse would disintegrate and cease to be and to exist. In this sense, you are much more important than the so-called vastness and immensity of the visible physical universe (in your case, also, the pseudo-universe). Without you this vastness and immensity is absolutely nothing.

So, as you see from all these facts, just the opposite is true: You are the one who is vast, immense and everything else related to this comparison, and the multiversal vastness and immensity derives from your own vastness and immensity. And because you reflect in your own private, intimate, individual, unique and infinitely different 'I am' My Absolute 'I AM' in the State and Condition of these characteristics, it is I who ultimately Am that way, giving you the same nature and structure as I have. Consequently, the multiverse reflects this nature and structure. And this is all that is needed to be revealed at this particular time.

Peter: Thank You very much for this prolific revelation. As You are aware, during the recording of this Dialog, I received several questions. Do You want me to address them now or should we postpone Your answers to them?

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: At this time I would recommend to postpone My answers to them until a more opportune time — if at all. You are getting physically very tired.

One Hundred and Thirty Fifth Dialog

April 21, 2000

Peter: Well, as mentioned at the end of Dialog 134, we received several questions, both from Slovakia (from Joseph Grygar) and from this country (from Ardyth). Joseph's second question was extensively answered in the entire Chapter 9 of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** and in Dialogs 62 and 63 in the First Volume. Also, I received a very interesting letter from Dan which reflects his reaction to the letter from Germany and Your response to it, as recorded in Dialog 133. I would like to include the entire content of Dan's letter in this Dialog, if I may. Of course, as always, I am humbly asking if You have anything to convey to us today from Your Own perspective.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for your kind offer to Me to talk first. Yes, you may, and it would be a good idea to include Dan's letter in this Dialog in its entirety. However, before doing that and before addressing the asked questions, I would like to briefly add something else to the topic discussed in Dialog 134 as related to the cosmological issues. Last night, as you were pondering about the position, importance and significance of each and every singular individual for the proper maintenance of all functions, activities and proceedings of the multiverse and pseudo-creation, as well as everything else related to them, you were wondering what kind of role, position, placement, etc., in this respect someone has on your planet who is either severely developmentally disabled or who is a burned-out chronic schizophrenic, for example. By their condition, what kind of contribution do they make or how do they influence, if in any way at all, the course of the universe and/or pseudo-universe?

As you know, on your planet, whoever is positioned there, regardless in what kind of spiritual, mental or physical condition he/she could be while living on planet Zero, by that condition he/she serves some kind of important illustrative and demonstrative purpose. What kind of purpose does someone serve who is severely developmentally disabled or is a burned-out chronic schizophrenic; or, in other words, who is, from your external point of view, as you observe such a person, an empty shell without any remains of anything rational and intelligent? First of all, people like that illustrate and demonstrate the true inner state of the nature and structure of the negative state as well as the real meaning of human non-life which is founded on wrong spiritual principles and all its perverted premises. Any state of this nature, as represented by people

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

who are in these miserable and sad conditions, is nothing else but an empty shell, void of any semblance to the true life. Secondly, their condition reflects the ultimate outcome of the non-life of the negative state and human non-life with their respective egos. What is the outcome of anyone or anything at all who/which is rooted in something that does not contain anything from the true reality of the positive state or life as such? Gradually, as anything feeding such a non-life wears out, its condition deteriorates to the point that it becomes an empty shell, void of anything rational and intelligent exactly the same way a severely developmentally disabled or chronic schizophrenic reflects, illustrates and demonstrates.

You can see from these examples that such conditions, as reflected in the described states of some humans, are basically an outcome of the nature, structure and dynamics of the pseudo-life of the negative state and human non-life with their respective egos. In their true outlook, and in their true inner content, the non-life of the negative state and human non-life are nothing else but what is represented by severely developmentally disabled and burned-out chronic schizophrenics, who are lacking any true rationality, logic, intelligence, creativity and incentives for anything positive and good, being only empty shells without any true life within them. However, these humans appear that way only from the position of your external observation and evaluation, in a manner you are able to determine their condition by means of all kinds of psychological tests available to your medical and social sciences. Within themselves they can be full of rage, raw emotions, unpredictable outbursts and similar, mostly negative, reactions at the level of their animalistic, primitive and basic needs. Again, this internal state of their mind, stripped of everything positive and rational, is a good reflection of the nature and structure of the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their respective egos. It is a barren life (non-life) which is unable to give any support to anything truly living and being alive to take hold in it. And this is the usefulness that such states and conditions, found only within the confines of human non-life and the non-life of the negative state and their respective egos, serve for illustration and demonstration of what never to choose and how never to be.

Now, in relation to the visible universe or, as a matter of fact, only in relation to the visible pseudo-universe (in the true universe nothing of this nature can ever occur!), conditions of this nature give rise to galaxies, solar systems and planets which are void of anything that would be able to sustain any life at all. As a matter of fact, they are poisonous and destructive to anything alive and living. Thus, you can say

that human conditions of the above described nature, make it possible for such galaxies, solar systems and planets within the sphere of the pseudo-universe (in the Zone of Displacement) to be and to exist at all. By such human conditions, the course of their corresponding celestial (pseudo-celestial) bodies is maintained and will be maintained to the point of exhausting their usefulness. Why do we use the term 'usefulness' if, for all practical purposes, nothing useful exists within them? Let us take, for example, your solar system. You have there several planets and their moons which, with the exception of planet Zero, are either a burning hot hell (Mercury and Venus) or they are unimaginably cold, barren, full of volcanic or other types of fury (strong winds) or of similar conditions, unable to sustain anything living for a fraction of a nanosecond (Mars, Jupiter, Saturn, Uranus, Neptune, Pluto and their respective moons). Yet, in the structure of your solar system their usefulness can be found in their contribution to the proper gravitation pull, which maintains your planet in its orbit sufficiently enough to keep it from being too close or too far from your sun; thus, enabling human non-life to thrive on it. Thus, no matter which way you look at this structural situation; no matter how much something appears to be useless, nevertheless, it serves some kind of good purpose in the scheme of events which takes place within the current cycle of time/state/condition/process.

Are you able to discern from the above description the causal interconnectedness between the state and condition of your solar system for example, and the state and condition of humans who exhibit developmental disability or chronic schizophrenia, or any other similar conditions? Without them, or without the way they are, the planets of your solar system would not be able to be the way they are in their condition. Of course, you can say that My statement about this causal interconnectedness does not make any sense, because these planets, or galaxies or whatever you have there in your pseudo-universe, have been in existence many billions of years before any humans or sentient entities appeared. This is a valid assumption if taken from the standpoint of your subjective mode of perception of reality. However, in the objective mode, their occurrence took place concurrently, simultaneously and synchronously — one being dependent on the other or one being caused by the other.

Moreover, even in the subjective mode you have the preceding ideas of such states, borne out by the need to invent, activate, establish and manifest the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their respective egos. As you know, any idea precedes its manifestation in some concrete form or condition. For that reason, before its manifestation

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

in such a form or condition takes place, in order to establish the corresponding environment for it to be manifested in the concreteness of its occurrence, various celestial (pseudo-celestial in this case) bodies and structures appear which are the embodiment of the content of such an idea and which may appear way before any humans of this nature came to their own pseudo-life. Yet, as you know, any such ideas occur in the sentient mind. If an idea of the severely developmentally disabled or chronic schizophrenic individuals occurs, it produces its consequences, outcomes and results. One of them is establishment of the pseudo-celestial bodies which reflect the nature, structure and content of that idea. By it, and what it contains, the respective pseudo-celestial bodies are established and subsequently maintained. The embodiment of the content of those ideas in question, in the form of a human being for example, can occur at any other subsequent time or paratime (from the standpoint of the subjective mode). Nevertheless, through such an idea, the mentioned pseudo-universe, with all its pseudo-celestial bodies, is made possible and is maintained by such humans in their concrete and tangible manifestation even before their physical appearance in the space-time continuum (in this case, in the pseudo-space-time continuum) occurs.

And this is all that I wanted to clarify for you this morning. At this time, Peter, please include Dan's letter in this Dialog. Following that, we'll approach the answers to Joseph's and Ardyth's questions.

Peter: Thank You so much for Your elaboration on this cosmological issue. Here is Dan's letter, word for word:

In reference to The Lord Jesus Christ's response to the letter from Germany; this might very well be the ultimate and best explanation needed evermore of the reason why there can't (or shouldn't) be any tangible 'proof' per se. This dissertation makes it evident that the 'proof' that would give one satisfaction has to rest on principle alone (The New Revelation's), on believing it, accepting it and The Lord Jesus Christ, — exactly as He/She and His/Her Nature and all else is depicted in it, — on principle alone, regardless of any human type of tangible proof (which would of course, be marvelous, as human nature would need it), but it has made itself clear that if this were the case, it would make the whole exercise of the usefulness of the existence of the negative state, a moot point. I have come to believe that its ultimate belief and acceptance would reside on principle alone, not on tangible proof. It would seem that therein lies the highest quality of believing or not believing on its veracity.

It's true, we have no evidence of The New Revelation's veracity in human terms or in ways that can be assessed by human modes of confirmation, but we do have our intuition that simply makes it irresistible for us not to feel that it 'must be true.' We have our logic, reason and discernment, which tells us the same, and although these don't 'confirm' anything, — again, in human terms — they make the strongest possible case for believing it as the Truth, because anything else falls and would fall very short of its content. There simply couldn't be anything else as sublime.

And finally, I wouldn't say that there isn't any proof. In our lives there are numerous incidents and manifestations that couldn't possibly be coincidence by any stretch of the imagination. Everyone has their own personal details.

Regarding the last part of the question that asks, "How can the truth be defined?," one could very well answer that the very 'defined' definition of what the truth is can be found all throughout The New Revelation itself. What could better 'define' what the truth really is but all the innumerable detailed passages in it regarding and explaining every subject of importance imaginable that deals with what is true and not true? Where and how could one find a better definition of the Truth? Just this very fact alone evidently gives one the type of 'proof' that is not typically human in its 'verification' mode, but a far better one: The type that, by its very nature alone, makes it impossible to refute it. This is 'proof' that can be understood at the human level, but that at the same time, transcends it and is not of it.

Wow Peter! I have just written this down and it seems very much to me that it was inspired by The Lord Jesus Christ in order to have a simple and humble representative explain it to some 'others' who need to hear it from this perspective.

I believe that once and forever, if anyone has any doubts, they can refer to this particular Dialog and dispel them for good. This Dialog, I think, is very timely, important and comforting because it addresses, as you say, Peter, the most important issues.

What do you think?

Love, Dan and Olga

The Lord Jesus Christ: Dan's point is well-taken. It is the matter of principle alone which counts in this respect. And not only that but, besides the reasons revealed in Dialog 133 and elsewhere in My New

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Revelation, why humans, while living on planet Zero, cannot be given any tangible, rational, logical, externally experiential or empirical verification, evidence or proof about true spiritual matters, the truth itself, and especially about Me, The Lord Jesus Christ as being the only One True Absolute I AM WHO I AM, is because of some other important spiritual purposes for which humanity was permitted to be fabricated and established. As you remember, initially, humanity was fabricated and established by the so-called pseudo-creators. In their search for Absolute Truth, as well as in response to all those existential questions which were about to enter sentient minds existing at that time/state, they needed a crucial answer about whether it is or is not possible for someone with his/her mind, fabricated by them for that purpose, in this case, by the typical human mind, to come to the right, proper, correct and truthful conclusions about spiritual issues and about My True Nature, without having any externally tangible, rational, logical, experiential or empirical evidence or proof but solely on the basis of principle itself; by discerning whether something is or is not true. Their assumption or hypothesis was that such a thing, while having this typical human mind, was utterly impossible.

Do not forget for a minute that the way the pseudo-creators structured the human mind was to make it impossible for humans to come to any right conclusions about anything at all based on the function of their human mind. After all, the human mind was structured in such a manner so as to seek out answers to anything at all from externals and not from their own internals, the path to which they so conveniently closed. With such a setup, it would be impossible, in their view, for humans to come to the understanding and acceptance of any truth by the sole principle itself. So, what would happen, if I would grant Desider's request (the German gentleman) for example, for proving step by step, by externally tangible, rational, reasonable, logical, experiential or empirical means, the verity of My statement that I Am the only One True God (or in the new terminology, the only One Absolute I AM WHO I AM)? In that case, besides locking them in the state of their ultimate choice, as indicated in Dialog 133 and elsewhere, humans would be giving very wrong answers to the pseudo-creators themselves. The pseudo-creators would say something like this: "Aha, we told you so. We were right. Humans are not able to discover and verify anything at all in spiritual matters or about the true Nature of You, The Lord Jesus Christ, solely on the basis of principle itself, from within them. Instead, they need all kinds of external proofs or evidence that something is or is not so." If this were the case, we would confirm as truth the wrongness of the pseudo-creator's assumptions and consequently, by such confirmation,

they would consider something which is wrong to be right and true. In that case, the pseudo-creators, and consequently the entirety of the pseudo-life of the negative state and human non-life, could never be converted back to the positive state because by such confirmation, we would lock them in their own falsities, which would be considered by them the only truth.

But now, having a clear example of something which could have never entered their mind, the pseudo-creators may clearly recognize that their assumption about the human mind, and what it can and cannot do, was wrong or false and therefore, it is possible to arrive at the right conclusions about spiritual matters or any other matters on the basis of principle alone without any other external proof or evidence even while having such a typical human mind. This ability of the human mind stems from My presence in that mind. You see, the pseudo-creators wrongly assumed that by fabricating a typical human mind, My presence from humans would be repudiated permanently. Again, even in this respect they are being proven wrong. So, as you see from these important facts, your ability to accept the Truth of My New Revelation and the truth that I AM the only One I AM WHO I AM, helps the pseudo-creators to get the right answers. If this were not the case, the pseudo-creators would conclude that it would be too easy for humans to accept something which is given to them by the requirements of their typical human mind and not on principle alone. In that case, once again, they would say that they were right and therefore, no need exists for the state of internals to be what they are. One can arrive at the same conclusions from the state of one's externals as from the state of one's internals. As you see, in this assumption, externals are equalized with the internals or, as mentioned before, the externals are internalized and the internals are externalized. To establish such a situation, if no one, while in human non-life, could come to the right conclusions on principle alone, seeing, recognizing, accepting and applying something which is true or not true without external evidence or proof, would lead humanity and the pseudo-creators, as well as everyone else in the Zone of Displacement, to their eternal doom. In that case, they would fall into an irreversible condition of considering falsities to be the only truth and truth the outright falsities.

However, thanks to you, My representatives on planet Zero, by your ability to see, recognize, accept and apply everything contained in My New Revelation as the real Truth on the basis of principle alone, you are proving to the pseudo-creators how wrong they were/are in their false assumptions in this, or any other matter. Thus, you are putting them into a position from which they can get only the right answers to all their

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

questions. And this is one of the important roles that you play in this respect while in human life on planet Zero. And we all should be thankful, and we are expressing our thanks to Dan and Olga for bringing these facts to everyone's attention in their prolific letter.

Peter: Very much so. Are we ready to proceed with the answers to the submitted questions?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, we are.

Peter: In that case, here they are. Let me begin with Joseph's questions. He is asking for the spiritual meaning of Your strange behavior when becoming hungry You were seeking figs on a fig tree, although it was not yet the season to bear fruit. Not finding any fruit on it, you cursed it so it withered away permanently. His second question relates to the issue of Your resurrection and subsequent encounters with your disciples. Now, Ardyth's questions: *'In Dialog 132 it is indicated that choices made in spiritual and intermediate dimensions determine outcomes in external dimensions. Thus, causality ultimately lies in consciousness. How does Your Mind enter into the process (what is the role) of determining an outcome or product of Creation?'* Ardyth's second question: *'Here, on this planet, as representatives, our sentience is a very significant factor in our work here. How may we as representatives most responsibly be "at cause," making appropriate decisions in the domains of our own life-space? Are we also responsible in part for the planet at large? For any events or facets of the Zone of Displacement? For events or facets of the Positive State?'* Her third question: *'We are emerging more fully as our true 'I am,' releasing our ego self. Somehow we need to be sentient from the position of our true 'I am' in order to most appropriately complete our tasks. What instructions and support do You offer us to help us best make this transition?'* Ardyth's fourth question: *"'New agers" talk much about how thought and belief is causal. Yet they seem to me to delude themselves as they generate affirmations which in my awareness, seem to be contrary to objective realities, and perhaps to factors determined by forces outside of our planet (such as activities occurring in other dimensions). How does the positive spiritual world contrast in process and content with what people are attempting on this planet?'* End of questions. The floor is Yours.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Let us begin with answers to Joseph's questions. His second question, as you noticed, Peter, was extensively answered in Chapter 9 of **The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ** — as related to the meaning of the Last Supper; and My

activities and encounters with My disciples were properly described in the mentioned Dialogs. Joseph would be advised to carefully reread the mentioned Chapter and Dialogs in order to refresh his memories about these issues. At this point in time, nothing more would be useful to reveal or to know. The information contained in the mentioned texts about these issues is totally sufficient and exhaustive for these times. His first question has merit relevant to the current state of affairs. The mentioned incidents with My behavior are briefly mentioned in Matthew 21:18-19; and a little more extensively in Mark 11:12-14. Let Me quote Mark's version: *Now the next day, when they had come out from Bethany, He was hungry. And seeing from afar a fig tree having leaves He went to see if perhaps He would find something on it. And when he came to it, He found nothing but leaves, for it was not the season for figs. In response Jesus said to it, "Let no one eat fruit from you ever again."* Matthew's text adds the following words after *"Let no fruit grow on you ever again."* *And immediately the fig tree withered away.*

The described incident contains some general deep spiritual meaning and significant spiritual correspondences related to the entirety of this cycle of time/state/process and some specific ones related to the time I was physically on planet Zero. In a general sense, the fig tree represents or corresponds to the natural good. The natural good is the container of and the feet on which the spiritual good stands and which contains by the means of spiritual good, celestial good. These three significant aspects of good are the vessels through which, by which and in which My Absolute Good is enabled to be manifested and conveyed to the entirety of My Creation and pseudo-creation (in pseudo-creation it is in the sense as mentioned by Me in Matthew 5:45, *"for He makes His sun rise on the evil and on the good, and sends rain on the just and on the unjust"*). At the same time, in Me, these three aspects of good are in the state of their Absolute Unification and Oneness. However, as they are conveyed to the rest of Creation and to everywhere and to everyone else, this Absolute Good manifests its meaning accommodated and adjusted to the content and meaning of each respective dimensions or pseudo-dimensions, respectively, in their relative condition. From these facts it becomes obvious that any life at all, as well as pseudo-life at all, are unceasingly maintained by My constantly emanating My Absolute Good to all and everything.

In the mentioned incidents, before I did what I did, I and My disciples were coming out of Bethany. 'Bethany,' in the meaning of this particular incident, corresponds to falsified spiritual truth which is unable to contain any good at all (whether celestial, spiritual or natural). Good

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

always manifests itself by the means of its truth, as love is manifested by the means of its wisdom; and vice versa. Therefore, if spiritual truth or any truth at all is lacking, good has no means to manifest itself or to become alive and functional. That I came out of Bethany, signifies coming out of the state which had nothing of any truth and thus, any good as well. Being in that state, I became hungry for the natural good which, in this case, had no possibility for conveyance of its celestial and spiritual nature, as well as of My Absolute Good. Seeing the fig tree which had green leaves on it signifies My hope of finding anything at all on this planet and in the Zone of Displacement which would make it possible for expression of My Absolute Good, through its celestial, spiritual and natural aspects, to be manifested and take hold in the lives (non-lives) of humans and all others in the Zone of Displacement.

Of course, nothing of this nature could be found in the state and condition which was bent on producing only evils and falsities. That it was not the season for figs to appear on the fig tree signifies that the current cycle of time/state/process, in which the negative state and its human products and their respective egos are in full active swing, has not yet fulfilled its purpose, served its use and has not provided all necessary answers to the questions about the nature of some other type of life (non-life) other than the true life of the positive state. That I made that tree wither so that it could never again bear fruit signifies My preventing anyone or anything of the negative state and human non-life from receiving anything spiritually proper and right which would enable them to continue in their effort to produce on a continuous basis their evils and falsities to eternity. To grant them anything from My Absolute Good, by the means of making available to them celestial, spiritual and natural good, while they were in their evils and falsities, would only reinforce and reconfirm their evils and falsities as being the only good and truth. If anything of this nature were to ever be permitted to happen, all producers of such evil deeds would be locked forever in their state and they could not be saved at all. In that case, by this factor, consequently, the negative state and this particular cycle of time/state/process, could never be ended. And as you know, in that case, the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state could never come to its desirable fruition as well.

That I made the fig tree wither also signifies the prophetic foresight that the negative state in all its aspects, as well as human non-life in all its own aspects with their respective egos, are permitted to flourish and to bear their evil deeds only on a temporary and transient basis until all necessary answers to all existential questions of the sentient minds are

properly, experientially and fully provided to the satisfaction of all. That it was not the season for figs also illustrates My preventive measures that would not allow premature entrance of My Absolute Good, in this case by the means of the natural good through celestial and spiritual good, into the state and condition which had no proper foundation for its reception. To receive the fullness of such Good in all its aspects into the state of evils and falsities signifies profanation of the Absolute Good and all its Absolute as well as relative aspects. To profane the Absolute Good would mean in this case, in biblical terms, to commit an unpardonable sin. The consequences of such an act are the complete loss of the rights and privileges of anyone who would find himself/herself in such a state, to be and to exist or to pseudo-be and pseudo-exist. Thus, if anything of this nature could ever happen, in that case, all those participating in such acts, would have to perish to eternity; meaning, they would lose their lives, or whatever they have, in the true sense of this word; that is to say, they would be no more to eternity. In order to prevent this gruesome outcome from ever happening, I made all provisions that anything of this nature would not be able to materialize itself in the lives or non-lives of anyone. This is the reason why I prevented the fig tree in question from bearing any fruit also in the future before the season for it to have figs.

Now, as you see from this explanation, anything I performed or did at the time of My life on planet Zero, had a deep and profound spiritual meaning and correspondence. The above mentioned meaning of the incident in question has a very broad implication for all and everyone in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. However, it also has a narrower meaning as related to the Jewish nation which had My Word but which also externalized and ritualized all spiritual principles which were contained in My Word to such an extent that nothing of real truth and consequently of real natural good remained in anything they did or produced. The fig tree in this particular connotation represented the Jewish nation and its externalized and ritualized pseudo-spirituality. The green leaves signified that they had My Word by which they lived (pseudo-lived), were alive (pseudo-alive) and functioned. That no fruit was found on the fig tree signified their inability to produce anything positive and good in any aspects of their lives (non-lives) because of the total externalization and ritualization of anything spiritual, making it, by that process, void of any true life. That it was not the season for figs meant that at that point of time the representative phase of their deeds and actions had not yet been in their fullness and completeness. After all, at that time, they had not yet crucified Me. That I made that tree wither and by that act, I made it impossible for it to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

bear any more fruit forever, signified that I preventively put an end for anything in the future represented by the Jewish nation to remain so that it could not be transferred or transposed into the next cycle of time/state/process which will preclude anything of externalization and ritualization, and similar negative factors, to take hold within the next cycle.

From these examples you can easily deduce that in this respect the Jewish nation and its externalized and ritualized pseudo-spirituality with all its evils and falsities, represented and symbolized by all its deeds and actions not only the entirety of humanity but also the entirety of the negative state and their ultimate outcome. And this is what the true significance of the incident with the mentioned fig tree really is.

Peter: Thank You very much for this prolific explanation. Now that incident really makes sense. Before that it was always a problem in my mind why You, being the only Source of any life, would do such a terrible thing as to make a living and breathing entity, albeit a tree, be mercilessly killed by You even though it was not the season for figs. From Your explanation, that event has perfect sense.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, it does, doesn't it? At this point let us address Ardyth's questions. The answers to most aspects of her questions should be very much deducible from what was conveyed to you in the latest few Dialogs which precede the one we are recording right now as well as in the first part of this Dialog. All outcomes of anything at all follow the multiversal law of Creation which determines that everything proceeds from inner spiritual to the intermediate mental to the external physical. If I Am Absolute in all aspects of My functions, acts and deeds and thus, in My Absolute Mind, and if by that factor I am fully present in, with and by everyone and everything, and if by that presence I make it possible for any outcome to take place, in that case, I am the One Who determines any outcome or product of Creation and pseudo-creation. By the Absolute Function of My Absolute Mind, and by the ultimate purpose for which My Creation was created, and for the purpose for which the pseudo-creation was permitted by Me to be fabricated, it is obvious that I determine in an absolute sense all and every outcome or product no matter where or when they are manifested. Such outcomes and products or their specific nature and content, as well as what kind of use for all they may serve, are dependent on the content of My Grand Plan that I have regarding the meaning and purpose of the current cycle of time/state/process.

My true representatives on planet Zero agreed in their relative condition to demonstrate and illustrate these facts. By their lifestyle, deeds, actions, behaviors, products or no matter what they do or don't do, I convey all aspects of the mentioned purpose and of My Grand Plan to the state, place and condition where the non-life of the negative state and human non-life with their respective egos are in a state of full activation and manifestation. Thus, by them and through them, I am continuously establishing something (what it is cannot be revealed for security reasons; you will know about it when the negative state and humanity in its present condition are no more) which will lead to the ultimate elimination of the negative state and human non-life. At the same time, by being connected to the various regions of other worlds and pseudo-worlds, My representatives, by their overall functions and positions, whether they are or are not consciously aware (mostly unconsciously) that such is the case, contribute significantly, from the position of the unique, individual and infinitely different aspects of their own sentient minds, to the proper function and maintenance of those worlds and pseudo-worlds, thus, contributing to the determination of their outcomes or products.

Your responsibility, as My true representatives on planet Zero, is to illustrate and demonstrate the true life of the positive state in your own unique, individual, personal and different manner, the way you behave, act, function, think, feel, will, relate and produce. The model for this has been conveyed to you in My New Revelation. One of the important purposes for granting you My New Revelation, is to provide you with such a model. Based on that, if you accept and apply whatever is contained in all sources of My New Revelation, you will be able to make appropriate decisions 'in the domains of your own life-space.' For that reason, and with this in mind, as well as for the reasons revealed in this respect in the recent Dialogs and in this one, you are also responsible in part for the planet at large, for any events or facets of the Zone of Displacement; as well as for events or facets in the positive state. Don't forget that the meaning of the words "My representatives" signifies your positioning in the midst of the positive state in order that from that position you would be able to influence, in accordance with My Grand Plan, the ways your planet, the Zone of Displacement and the positive state run their course within the current cycle of time/state/process. If you devote all your life, in all its individual, personal, unique and different aspects, for application and practice of all principles and ideas contained in My New Revelation, in that case, your contribution in this respect will be significant in its positive sense. However, if you fail to do

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

so, your contribution in this respect will be significant in its negative sense.

I want you to know, that the structural design of your mind, the way it was wired by Me, specifically and particularly with your being incarnated on planet Zero in mind, is such that it reflects or contains all necessary ingredients and powers needed and required for the life and pseudo-life of all respective universes of the multiverse and the pseudo-universe of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero, to illustrate, demonstrate, manifest and provide everything necessary for their being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, the way they are, and the way they function. To repeat again: Nothing is possible at all without this function of sentient minds in general and your sentient minds in particular. Again, as mentioned before, you are responsible and accountable for that specific, unique and different component of the multiverse and its respective universes, galaxies, solar systems, planets, or whatever they have, as well as for their counterparts in the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero, which entirely depends on your own specific, unique and different individual sentient mind. By the means of your true 'I am,' and what it contains, and by your true and genuine sentient mind, you are influencing everything in that specific, unique and different component on the positive side. On the other hand, by the typical human aspects of your sentient mind, you are influencing everything in the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero.

Actually, in the Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero, your influence comes from both aspects of your sentient mind — its human aspects and the positive state's aspects. By human aspects you are making it possible for them to be the way they are in order to enable the proper answers to all existential questions by their pseudo-lives; and by the positive state's aspects of your sentient mind, you are setting up a condition which will lead to the elimination of anything negative, evil, false and distorted within their domain and in their personal and individual pseudo-lives. So, as you see, your responsibility and accountability in this respect is great.

Because of this dual functioning which you have as My representatives on planet Zero, or from the position of your being on planet Zero, it will not be possible for you to fully and completely emerge as your true 'I am' and to release or get rid of your ego states. As long as you live on planet Zero, in order to provide the necessary support for continuation of this planet and the Zone of Displacement until the time when all answers to the mentioned existential questions will be given, you will need to retain

your ego. It is from the position of your ego that such continuation is made possible. However, in your personal and individual lives, and as related to the positive state, to Me and to each other, as My representatives, you are to function only from the position of your true 'I am.' So, at this time, the issue is not getting rid of your ego, which is impossible to do as long as you are in human non-life on planet Zero, but the issue is to learn how to control your ego in such a manner so as to not allow it to influence, rule or dominate your life adversely. How to do that, is contained in the entirety of My New Revelation. You have been given all necessary principles and ingredients in My New Revelation in order to make it possible for you to function from the position of your true 'I am' and to successfully control your ego, not being under its influence, rule or dominance. Just follow those principles, and you will not go wrong. This is how I instruct and support you in this respect.

However, this particular issue is utterly individualized and personalized. Therefore, such specific instructions and support from Me cannot be given in an all-out mode of a blanket statement or in an all-out applicable mode which would fit all indiscriminately. In the moment I would offer something like that, it would instantly become the property of the negative state/renegades. So, don't ever ask Me again to give you instructions and support which would be applicable to all of you. That would be in violation of your own individuality, uniqueness and infinite difference, on which the positive state is founded. Instead, if you need any support and/or instructions in this respect, you are advised to ask Me personally, in your own individual approach to provide you with them in the most appropriate manner and way, tailored to your specific needs and your true 'I am.' Because this manner or way will be very much different and unique from one individual to another, it would be spiritually very dangerous, on the platform of these Dialogs or My New Revelation in general, to indicate what they could or would be. It is the full responsibility of all of you, to find out about these particular needs from your own within by whatever mode or access is available to you.

If you compare the spiritual world in its process and content with what people on this planet are attempting, you can say in general terms that everything in the positive state at this time is geared toward the ending of this cycle of time/state/process, and as a consequence, toward full and complete elimination of the negative state and human non-life with their egos, and toward establishment of the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state. Generally speaking, we all work toward this goal. Any specifics in this respect cannot be given at this time for security reasons. It would be like giving your enemies all the ins and outs

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

of your stronghold. On the other hand, whatever people on this planet and in the negative state in general are attempting, with the exception of My covert and overt representatives within their pseudo-domain, is geared toward preservation, continuation and sustenance, by all means available to them, of their pseudo-life or non-life. No other forms of activities among them exist at this time. In other words, all their actions are geared toward the pseudo-winning of the negative state on this planet and toward assurance that the non-life of the negative state in all its forms and manifestations is preserved forever. And this is all that we needed to discuss within the frame of this Dialog. I want you, Peter, to take a weekend break and not to record any Dialogs during that time — if at all.

Peter: Thank You very much. And I gladly take Your advice. My lower back is killing me.

One Hundred and Thirty Sixth Dialog

April 25, 2000

Peter: In response to the content of Dialog 135 and previous ones, the question was raised by Ardyth about the future fate of the ego as such. The way I understand this issue, the question is, whatever will happen to the typical ego following the elimination of the negative state and human non-life? It is assumed that the ego has some form and condition of sentience. If we take into consideration that sentience as such cannot be destroyed to eternity (after all, it derives from Your Absolute Sentience), in that case, what would be the outcome of any type of ego, either the human type or the type which all other creatures and sub-creatures in the Zone of Displacement possess? At the same time, it would be interesting to know if there is any difference between the human type of ego and their type of ego. Of course, as always, before addressing these questions, is there anything You would like to talk about first?

The Lord Jesus Christ: As usual, I appreciate your offer to Me, Peter, to talk first. I do have something which I would like to bring to your attention (to all readers of these Dialogs). It is time to elaborate on the issue of such concepts as **faith, blind faith, trust, confidence** and **belief**. There is a lot of confusion about how these concepts are defined, understood and conceptualized by humans and others in the Zone of Displacement. Very often these terms are being utilized as interchangeable. And yet, from the spiritual standpoint, the way these terms are conceptualized in the positive state, they never are interchanged or one term is never used in the place of the other. They all have their own significant meaning independent of each other. At the same time they do have something in common in the sense that they address the same important aspects of something knowable but from a different angle.

If you carefully look at these concepts, you will notice that they refer basically to the state of the sentient mind which utilizes them for establishment of an attitude to someone or to something. At the same time, these concepts are also utilized for the establishment of self-attitude and attitude toward anything one does, provides, expresses, behaves or relates. So, in this sense, you have here bi-directional utilization of these concepts: One is directed toward oneself and toward how one perceives one's own state, condition and function; and the other is directed toward other individuals and their states, conditions

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

and functions; as well as toward any occurrences which take place outside of any individual in question.

Due to the fact that these concepts are derivatives of the sentient mind; therefore, in their absolute condition they are derivatives of the Absolute Mind — Me — The Lord Jesus Christ. And because any sentient mind, as well as My Absolute Sentient Mind, consists of the most within Spiritual aspect, of the intermediate aspect and of the external aspect, in that case, there is a spiritual hierarchy of how these concepts are produced and manifested at each level or aspect of the sentient mind and how they interact from one aspect to another as well as among themselves. The only concept which is not contained in the true sentient mind is the concept of blind faith. This concept came about much later, after the invention, activation and manifestation of the negative state, human non-life and their egos. Because of that, the term 'blind faith' is applicable only to them. It has no place in the true life of the positive state. We'll speak about it a little later.

So, if you look at these concepts from the spiritual hierarchy of their occurrence, proceeding and becoming what they are, because their outcome is manifested in a directional position from someone to someone or something, in that sense they can be considered to be an integral part of the external aspect of the sentient mind. However, as you know, whatever takes place in the external mind is a consequence of something that took place in the interior mind. Whatever takes place in the interior mind is the ultimate outcome of the Spiritual Mind. On the other hand, whatever takes place in the Spiritual Mind, is always by the influx of My Absolute Integrated Sentient Mind. In this case, the question is: What is it that gives birth to such concepts as faith, trust, confidence and belief, if these concepts are properties of the external mind, which mind functions by the influx and input from the Spiritual Mind by the means of the interior mind; and if the Spiritual Mind, in turn, functions by the influx and input from My Absolute Integrated Sentient Mind?

The very first process, which is an integral property of the Spiritual Mind, is the process of wisdom which derives from the Process of My Absolute Wisdom by the means of My Absolute Love. In this sense, wisdom can be conceptualized as the fundamental and substantial (in the sense of being the substance) occurrence from which everything related to the understanding and acceptance of anything at all that takes place within and without of any subject or object. This is a condition of absolute knowing of everything, by the very process of

discernment from within its own state and process, about all occurrences and their nature, structure, dynamics and functions. By the means of this absolute knowing, as it proceeds to and impacts the interior mind, on this level, such knowing gives birth to the truth of all matters. So, in this sense, wisdom of the Spiritual Mind gives birth to the truth of the interior mind. If you know something in an absolute sense or in the sense that it is really so or is not so, in that case, you establish the life of truth. The interior mind lives and functions by its truth. The knowledge of truth, stemming from the all-knowing wisdom, establishes a favorable condition for the birth and manifestation of all consequences, outcomes and results of occurring wisdom and proceeding truth so that they can become actualized and realized reality. And because it is the external mind which is the platform and manifestation of this important becoming, it is on this level that the truth of its wisdom gives birth to faith, trust, confidence and belief. Thus, as you see, one of the major properties of the external mind are these concepts.

In the logical inference of this spiritual hierarchy, you can therefore, see clearly that being wise leads you into knowing the truth; having the knowledge of truth gives you faith that your knowledge is true; knowing that it is true gives you trust in your ability to discern, recognize, distinguish and accept truth; having such trust gives you confidence in yourself and your own position as being a most valuable and needed receptacle of everything stemming from wisdom by the means of its truth; having this confidence in the truth from wisdom in which you trust, establishes your belief system that gives you an inner sense that what you believe is really so as the truth of the matter and that you are the one who is responsible and accountable for knowing and accepting the truth. After all, such important concepts as wisdom, truth, faith, trust, confidence and belief are inconceivable without the being and existence of the sentient mind. These concepts cannot occur outside of the sentient mind or apart from the sentient mind as independent entities in themselves and by themselves. They are the production and manifestation of the states, processes and dynamics of the sentient mind.

Once you have faith, trust, confidence and belief in knowing wisdom by means of its truth, by that process you establish such conditions within the sentient mind which could be described as logic, reason, rationality, intellect and intelligence. As you see from this spiritual hierarchy, the all-knowing wisdom by means of its truth through its faith, trust, confidence and belief, gives rise to logic, reason,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

rationality, intellect and intelligence. In this sense, logic, reason, rationality, intellect and intelligence of the external sentient mind can be considered as important tools in the hands of wisdom and truth for substantiation, corroboration and confirmation of its faith, trust, confidence and belief. Thus, logic, reason, rationality, intellect and intelligence, from the spiritual standpoint, in the true structure and nature of their function, cannot give birth to or be initiators of wisdom and truth and their derivatives — faith, trust, confidence and belief, but instead, wisdom through its truth by the means of its faith, trust, confidence and belief, makes it possible for logic, reason, rationality, intellect and intelligence to occur and to be established at all. This is the most proper way of conceiving all the above mentioned concepts and how they interact. This is how things are conceptualized and understood in the positive state.

However, as long as this particular setup is maintained, there is no possibility for establishment of any other type of life but the life of the positive state. Once again, the important existential question was about to enter sentient minds. The question was: How could anyone know if this setup is really the only one possible and feasible and if it is the real foundation of the true life of the positive state? Against what can we compare the truth of this matter if there is nothing out there which would make it clear that this is the case? In order to give an answer to this question, it was necessary to invent and establish something very much different. If the current hierarchy of the spiritual organization is based on the principle from within to without, or in our case, if wisdom is the occurrence, truth is the proceeding, and faith, trust, confidence and belief are the becoming of their reality (in other words, inner, interior and external); and if in the conglomeration of their nature and interaction they produce their own tools in the form of logic, reason, rationality, intellect and intelligence, in that case, it is necessary to recede from this setup and establish the opposite direction of all occurrences, proceedings and their becoming.

In this opposite direction, you require putting logic, reason, rationality, intellect and intelligence in the first place (they occur first), which give rise to faith, trust, confidence and belief in their powers and conclusions, which in turn proceed to the establishment of truth leading to becoming wise. This is how distortions and falsities of the negative state and human non-life came to their adverse fruition. However, this was the only way for establishment of any other type of life (non-life) other than the true life of the positive state. So, from this situation it becomes clear that to demand any verification, evidence or

proof by means of the setup existing in the negative state and human life (non-life), can lead to nothing else but distortions and falsities. Unfortunately, by acquiring any knowledge (pseudo-knowledge) by these means or tools, because of their full-fledged faith, trust, confidence and belief in the veracity of their conclusions, leads one, who relies on such methods of acquirement of knowledge, to the acceptance of distortions and falsities as the only feasible truths. This is how the trap of the negative state was set up for all humans and for their own inhabitants who accept this scientific hoax.

As you know, this scientific pseudo-methodology seeks any answers to its questions by means of external inputs. The only way it considers anything to be valid, is if it is acquired by the external observation, gathering and classification of external data and their quantification without any regard to internal input. In fact, it tends to disregard or reject anything coming from within as subjective and non-verifiable by any so-called objective methods. This methodology, originally invented by the pseudo-creators, was established for only one purpose: To keep all its subjects and humans from knowing the real truth by proclamation that any truth can be acquired only by such scientific approach (an upside-down approach).

On the other hand, in the positive state, and in the life of My representatives on planet Zero, a different approach is established. One seeks answers in the state of one's own within where wisdom resides, producing truth and all necessary ingredients for inner intuitive discernment that it is the truth without any original input from without. By having the knowledge of truth from its wisdom, one arrives at full faith, trust, confidence and belief that it is the truth. His/her logic, reason, rationality, intellect and intelligence show him/her clearly that his/her arrival at such important knowledge not only reveals to him/her the real truth but they also give him/her confidence, faith, trust and belief that it is the only way how to arrive or acquire the real truth. So, in this proper setup, My people in the positive state, as well as My representatives on planet Zero, whenever they encounter any statements or claims about anything at all, are able to recognize, by applying this proper methodology, whether it is or is not true without any need for external rationale, by reason, logical, empirical or sensorial evidence and proof. In fact, once they recognize by their inner state something as being so or not being so, suddenly their logic, reason, rationality, intellect and intelligence are fully opened in the positive sense of their functions and they are able to see the truth also from their position. However, it is not possible to arrive

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

at anything truthful if you approach verification by the other way around — from the externals or from the mentioned upside-down position.

So, as you see from the above, in one case you have a proper sequence of occurrences, proceedings and becoming of wisdom, truth, faith, trust, confidence, belief and their derivatives — logic, rationality, reasoning processes, intellect, intelligence, etc.; in the other case, there is an attempt to reverse this sequence, and by that factor, violate the multiversal law which establishes the reality of anyone and anything. In the latter approach, because wisdom, truth, faith, trust, confidence, belief, etc., derive, paradoxically speaking, from their derivatives — from logic, reason, rationality, intellect, intelligence and similar factors, what you get here in its ultimate outcome is pseudo-logic, irrationality, pseudo-reason, pseudo-intelligence, pseudo-intellect and pseudo-everything else. In their true nature, they are only illusions and appearances of true logic, reason, rationality, intelligence and intellect. Due to the fact that, in an ultimate sense, wisdom, truth, faith, trust, confidence, belief and everything else related to them; as well as their derivatives — logic, reason, rationality, intelligence, intellect and everything related to them, derive from My Absolute Wisdom, Truth, Faith, Trust, Confidence, Belief, Logic, Reason, Rationality, Intellect, Intelligence and everything they contain and produce, I Am the only One Who can impart all these attributes on all sentient minds. And because, as you remember, I originally created all sentient minds into My Own Likeness and Image, in their structural design, they reflect the same state, condition and process in their relative nature. For that reason, any other approach to the acquirement of any knowledge about anyone or anything, which does not take into consideration this proper spiritual factor, leads one toward establishment of the exact opposite of what those Characteristics of Mine really mean and signify.

Because the negative state and its scientific minions deny this to be the only reasonable and logical fact, they end up being irrational, foolish, dull, illogical, unintelligent and pseudo-intellectual without any traces of anything that can exhibit any true reasoning processes. Of course, in their own eyes, because they function from the position of their arrogant ego, which blinds all their relevant senses, they consider these pseudo-characteristics of theirs to be true and genuine. As you remember, this was the only way how evils, distortions and falsities, and all their numerous negative derivatives, could have been established. Therefore, this is how the negative state came about.

However, within the domain of the negative state and human non-life, there is another extreme which flourishes abundantly. If the so-called scientific approach demands everything to be proven by their brand of pseudo-logic, pseudo-rationality, pseudo-reasoning processes, pseudo-intelligence and pseudo-intellect, which are all based on external observation, gathering data and their classification and quantification, in that case, their so-called pseudo-spiritual and religious approach was founded on blind faith. Blind faith was fabricated in the Hells by the forces of the negative state in order to cover up the foolishness, irrationality, pseudo-logic, pseudo-reason and pseudo-everything on which the non-life of the negative state and human non-life are founded. It was also established as a deterrent for people of their domain from being able to discover the state of their within where the truth, and in it, My presence, is contained.

So, because the majority of the statements contained within various religious dogmas and doctrines do not make too much sense, if any at all, and because their statements defy even the most basic and simple common sense, in order to force people to accept them, it was necessary to come up with the concept of blind faith or believing something blindly. This concept was to convince their believers that any attempt of rejecting them because they do not make any sense, comes from the devil himself. By fear of eternal damnation, the followers of these religious dogmas and doctrines are forced to blindly believe in anything presented to them without any desire or need to use their inner state of mind or their intuition to raise any question about the verity of such claims. So, in this sense, blind faith rejects anything at all which is of true wisdom, truth, faith, trust, confidence, belief and their rationality, logic, reasoning processes, intellect and intelligence. And not only that, but by this factor, the scholars of blind faith also reject the scientific approach propagated by the scientists of the negative state. As you see from these facts, no matter which way you look at the situation in the negative state and in human non-life, in all its manifestations, methods, approaches and strivings, the negative state and its human non-life do not contain in the least degree anything of true wisdom, truth, faith, trust, confidence, belief, logic, reason, rationality, intellect, intelligence and any of their derivatives. They think they do, but they do not. Otherwise, things on your planet and elsewhere in the Zone of Displacement would be much different from what they have been and will be throughout their entire history and into the future — as long as they continue in their non-life until they exhaust their usefulness and serve their purpose completely.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Based on these facts, how do we conceptualize or define the concepts of faith, trust, confidence and belief from our standpoint? **Faith** can be considered an integral component of wisdom of the Spiritual Mind which is established in the external mind by the means of and through its truth in the interior mind, giving the totality of one's mind the assurance of the rightness of its perception of the inner, interior and external reality in all its aspects and manifestations. **Trust** is an integral component of the Spiritual Mind which is established in the external mind by and through the means of its truth in the interior mind, giving the totality of one's mind the sense of its ability to correctly conceptualize all events, happenings and occurrences of the inner, interior and external reality the way they are, without any distortions or misperceptions of their true nature. **Confidence** is an integral component of the Spiritual Mind which, by the means of and through the truth of the interior mind, is established in the external mind, enabling the rise of that aspect of one's mentality which gives the totality of one's mind and its soul a sense of its own ability to come to the proper and right conclusions about itself and anyone or anything else in all aspects of their inner, interior and external states and conditions. **Belief** can be conceptualized as an integral component of the Spiritual Mind which, by the means of and through the pure truth of the interior mind, is established in the external mind, giving the totality of one's mind the foundation on which it is able to intuit that whatever is presented to that mind as truth in all its aspects is really so, without any doubts or uncertainties. From the conglomeration and interconnectedness of all aspects of these concepts or states and processes, rationality, reasoning processes, logic, intellect and intelligence are born out.

No matter which way you are looking at the conceptualization or definition of these important concepts, you can clearly recognize that they all derive from the structure and nature of the sentient mind as a reflection of the structure and nature of My Absolute Sentient Mind. They are not something which is out there apart from and independent of the sentient mind. So, unless these facts are recognized and accepted, and anything at all is built on such a proper conceptualization, the way it is in the true reality of My Creation, you end up with something which is integral to the pseudo-life of the negative state, human pseudo-life or non-life and their respective egos. In this sense, cosmologically speaking, because the visible universe (in your case, also, the visible pseudo-universe) appears apart from and independent of the sentient mind, without having in itself and by itself such inner sentient components, which are not an integral part of that

universe (as well as pseudo-universe), that it is to say, without the being and existence of the sentient mind in its objective and subjective mode, the universe (as well as the pseudo-universe) in all its aspects and manifestations is absolutely nothing — as if it does not exist at all. From these facts you can see clearly that the universe (and pseudo-universe) is not sentient in itself, by itself or from itself. Because of that, it lacks the most important condition, needed for its independency — awareness of self-awareness that it really is and exists in its own sense of 'I am.'

As you see, any being and existence is dependent on the being and existence of the aware and self-aware 'I am.' This factor is determined by the Absolute Being and Absolute Existence of My Absolute Aware and Self-Aware 'I AM.' All other sentient minds, as you know, reflect this important condition in their own relative state and manifestation. Because of that, Creation, as well as pseudo-creation, in its own being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, depends in all its functions and manifestations on the being and existence of the sentient mind and its functions, activities and manifestations. For a long time, this factor was concealed from humans. If you establish some kind of life which is totally different from the well-known and well-established reality, you cannot allow that life (non-life) to conceive itself the same way as the real life. So, in that case, you fabricate a totally different condition as well as the perception of interdependency, in which a perception is induced that things are the other way around as compared to the real condition in the real life. In order to accomplish that, you fabricate a special type of body, in our case, a typical human body, which, by its function, totally depends on the inputs from its external environment. From such a condition, the human mind has no recourse but to conclude that the visible universe and pseudo-universe are independent of the human sentient mind and that, in fact, human life, in all its aspects, depends on the being and existence of the universe or pseudo-universe in question and not the other way around — the universe and pseudo-universe being dependent on the sentient mind.

This is how it was possible to establish the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their respective egos. In this condition, a total dependency on the external factors, with total disregard for the internal factors, is firmly established. This is the way how humans, and all other creatures and sub-creatures, are kept away from the state of their internals and made slaves of everything positioned apart from them — in their externals. Having established such a life,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

anything contained in the sentient mind, in the state of its true internals, is blocked off, giving rise to the false perception of reality with illusions and appearances or surrogates of such concepts as faith, trust, confidence and belief. That this is the case, and that the true sentient mind is, in fact, in total control of the external world, no matter how this is denied in the domain of the negative state, is well illustrated by My behavior and what I stated in regard to the mentioned fig tree (Dialog 135).

Have you noticed that during that time, I did not offer any explanation to My disciples about the true meaning of My behavior toward the mentioned fig tree, the way it was interpreted by Me in Dialog 135? Why was it so? Because they were in the state of externals, or in the externalization and ritualization of everything that came across to them. Under those conditions, to give them the proper explanation, as it was depicted in Dialog 135, would not make any sense to them. They did not have any notion of the internal state of the human mind. For that reason, before you can tell them anything of an internal nature, you have to establish or teach them first about having such internals and by that factor, put them into a position of recognizing that the externals are dependent on the internals, or in this case, on the sentient mind, and not the other way around — the way they fallaciously believed to be the case. So, when My disciple Peter told Me, *'The fig tree which You cursed has withered away,'* what was My response to his statement? Instead of explaining the true spiritual meaning, symbolization, representation and correspondence of My behavior in relationship to the mentioned fig tree, I answered and said to My disciples, *"Have faith in God. For assuredly, I say to you, whoever says to this mountain, 'Be removed and be cast into the sea,' and does not doubt in his heart, but believes that those things he says will come to pass, he will have whatever he says.* (Mark 11:21-23).

Two things become obvious from the above quoted text. The first one relates to the necessity to establish the condition of faith and belief, the way they were defined above. Who has faith and belief? In this case, their sentient mind. Any sentient mind, in its own self-perception and self-awareness, is the very state of one's internals, rooted in one's true 'I am.' So, first of all, it was necessary to emphasize to have faith in one's own abilities to do something; that is to say, to have faith in yourself. The reason why it was necessary to emphasize this fact first, was because if you think or believe that you have absolutely no control over the external forces as well as of the external matter of which your environment and visible universe (as well as pseudo-universe) are

comprised, you will have no faith in yourself or in your abilities to have such control. The second issue which needed to be brought to their attention was that it was an illusion and deception (subterfuge) of the negative state, imposed on the human mind, to think that it has no control over matter. This fact can be illustrated in the way people of that time behaved in relationship to their external universe and/or pseudo-universe. Having no idea whatsoever that they can and may control, manipulate, influence and determine the course of the universe (and pseudo-universe) in all its aspects, believing to be the slaves of its forces, they established an abomination of idolatry, in which they worshiped as gods such external objects or entities as the sun, moon, nature, trees, inanimate and animate objects. Of course, if you think that you have no control over them, and if you believe that they are the ones that control, manipulate, influence and determine all aspects of your life, in that case, you have no recourse but to worship them in order to appease them, believing that they will make your human life (non-life) more bearable and livable.

On the other hand, how do you accomplish something so abominable and false as making humans believe that their dependency on those external objects, in our case, on the externally visible universe or pseudo-universe, is absolute and inevitable and that there is no way you can control them by your own mind? Well, you fabricate a human type of body; you close off the conscious access to your true mind and your true 'I am;' you trap in that body your spirit and soul, making them dependent on the functions of that body, by allowing them to discharge their activities only by means of that body; and you make that body totally dependent on the external environment from which that body was fabricated in the first place. By cutting that body from being controlled by your own mind, by making that body dependent on the external inputs, you now have a proper foundation on which you can build an illusion and appearance that you are controlled by the externals, and that nothing of your own internals has any impact or influence on anything around you. This is how the negative state's pseudo-life and human non-life with their respective egos were established.

By My behavior toward the mentioned fig tree and by My specific response to the disciples, I refuted the falsity of the dependency of the sentient mind on anything external. Instead, I brought to their attention that if they have faith, trust, confidence and belief in themselves, they are the ones who are in control and that they are not controlled by any external forces. In this respect, 'mountain' represent

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

the entire matter of which the visible universe and pseudo-universe are comprised with all their galaxies, solar systems, planets and all other celestial bodies. By telling My disciples that if they have faith in God, and by that factor in themselves, and if they believe that what they project to the externals will come to pass, I was conveying to all and everything that the ultimate control over the course of the universe and pseudo-universe with everything they have and contain, rests in the states, conditions, functions and activities of the sentient mind and its awareness of self-awareness of 'I am.' Thus, the multiverse, in all its components and manifestations, is the outcome, consequence and result of the sentient mind by the means of My Absolute Sentient Mind, and that without the sentient mind and thus, without My Absolute Sentient Mind, it cannot be and exist.

As you remember, a few decades ago, or not a long time ago, as a result of the availability of My New Revelation, as well as a result of My statement, quoted above, some of your social scientists came up with the concept of the so-called 'mind over matter.' This concept of theirs, although lacking the proper spiritual foundation, reflects the reality of who or what is in control, or who or what determines the outcome of anything at all. Because even in this conceptualization matter is something of which the visible physical universe and pseudo-universe consist or are comprised, it is the sentient mind that has the ultimate control over them. Of course, in human non-life, the way it had been structurally designed, in its typical nature, it is unable to consciously conceive that such is the case. After all, how many humans are able to consciously control by their own mind even the function of their own bodies, not to mention the function of their immediate environment and, in their perception, of the vast and immense external universe or pseudo-universe? Only very few or only with a very meager exception. And even in their case, the case of this meager exception, in order to accomplish this conscious control, they have to go through very complex, intricate and difficult long-term exercises (meditation, yoga, deep trance states, guided imaginary and similar methods developed by social scientists for that purpose).

So, as you see from these facts, human non-life was established as a means of proving that nothing is dependent on the internal spiritual factors of life but instead, it is dependent on the external non-spiritual matter-type of pseudo-life or non-life. The entirety of humanity was fabricated exactly for that purpose. In this respect, your role as My true representatives on planet Zero, by your lifestyle as described in My New Revelation, and by your effort to derive everything from your

internals, that is to say, from Me in your internals, is to refute this accursed position of humanity. By accepting this role, you will establish a permanent condition in human minds which will eventually lead them to the discovery of the real truth regarding this issue, by which process they will be able, when the time is right, to acquire a genuine and true faith, trust, confidence and belief, the way they are conceptualized and understood in the true life of the positive state.

And this leads us to the answer of Ardyth's question regarding the sentience of the typical human ego and your question, Peter, about the difference, if any, between the human ego and the ego of those located in the Zone of Displacement. As you remember, ego's sentience is a stolen component of the general sentience of the positive nature. During the separation of the before mentioned chunk of matter and non-matter, which was needed for the fabrication of the pseudo-universe or the Zone of Displacement, in the non-matter portion of that separation, an ingredient of sentience was included.

From that particular ingredient, by the complex and intricate manipulation of correspondences and other laws and principles of the sentient life, anything related to the true reality of being and existence, was either removed, or if it was not possible to remove it, it was suppressed and repressed in such a manner that access to it was completely blocked off. From this type of considerably modified sentience, the ego was fabricated. In the ultimate outcome of the ego's pseudo-life, once that type of non-life exhausts its usefulness and serves its purpose, the separated sentience will be removed from the ego, and returned to its rightful place from which it was separated in such a rude and violent manner. The removal of that sentience from it, will cause a total disintegration of that ego, and reestablishment of the rule of the true 'I am.'

As far as any differences between the nature of the human ego and the nature of any ego in the rest of the negative state's domain, they can be found not in the structural design of each but in the degree by which each of them is manifested. In this sense, you can say that whatever you observe in the behavior of a typical human ego, in the other pseudo-worlds the same behavior is compounded to unimaginable proportions. No other differences are discernable or are in existence.

Well, Peter, I would recommend that, at this time, we finish for today. As you know, tomorrow our Lyudmila (Lucy) from Moscow arrives at your home. You need to spend your time with her so that you can perform important work together in My services. If any dialoging will

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

be needed during that time, I'll let you know. In the meantime, have a long rest and enjoy your visit with Lyudmila (Lucy).

Peter: I thank You very much for everything which was revealed today. I'll take Your advice and do whatever You say.

One Hundred and Thirty Seventh Dialog

April 29, 2000

Peter: Well, a few days ago I received several questions from Your representatives in the Czech and Slovak Republics. It seems to me that these particular readers do not follow Your requirement, as recorded in Dialog 131, to get responses to their questions on their own first without submitting them to You through me. Only if it is indicated to them that their particular question should be asked through me, should they do so. Of course, Your representatives who asked these questions do not know English. I believe that, as of this time, Dialog 131 has not been translated into their particular language. For that reason, they do not know about this requirement. Moreover, as You know, we have serious problems in our house. Following Lyudmila's (Lucy's) arrival to Santa Barbara, the next day, and the day after, Gloria had to take her to the emergency room with severe kidney pains, trying to pass a kidney stone. She is still in pain and her stone has not yet passed. The very same day, out of the blue, my physical condition worsened. I got a fever and developed some mysterious pressure in my upper chest. I was put on antibiotics by my physician. So, as You see, things are very unpleasant around here. Would You like to offer any comments about this situation before I formulate the mentioned questions on behalf of Your representatives in Eastern Europe? Or is there anything that You would like to talk about first and that we need to know?

The Lord Jesus Christ: We'll address the submitted questions a little later. As far as Lyudmila's (Lucy's) and your conditions are concerned, the real reason for their occurrence from our standpoint, as of now, cannot be revealed. You'll know about them a little later. However, bear in mind please, that it was not by coincidence that Lyudmila was requested to come to Santa Barbara at this particular date. Her and your conditions, which have occurred at the very same time, for very important spiritual reasons, needed to take place while she was with Gloria and you, Peter.

However, although it is premature for you to know the real reasons for this, I want you to know, that even though no work externally and seemingly is being done while the three of you are together, nevertheless, something very important is happening in the spiritual world in which the three of you are participating very actively. Your participation in those events in the spiritual world, required My permission for Lyudmila and you, Peter, to get ill, and for Gloria to take

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

care of Lyudmila by taking her to see a doctor. It all has important significance. So, do not fret and do not be dismayed by these unpleasant occurrences because they do serve some very good and important purpose. As always, things will pass.

In your particular case, Peter, your physical condition has somewhat deteriorated and its outcome remains to be seen, depending on some important choices that are about to be taken by all involved in your case. So, be patient and endure to the very end.

Before going into formulation of the mentioned questions, I would like to briefly bring to your attention (to the attention of all readers of this Dialog) the following facts: As you remember, in the recent Dialogs we talked very much about the dependency of the multiverse and all worlds in the Zone of Displacement on the being and existence and activities of the sentient minds, and particularly on their dependency on My Absolute Sentient Mind. Although this concept is very difficult, if not impossible to see or to recognize by your human conscious mind, nevertheless, the simplicity of this fact is very obvious. Of course, as you, Peter, know so well, the simpler the answers to some issues are, the more difficult it is for humans to accept as the true explanation of any observable phenomena. The human mind is used to the complex, convoluted and difficult to understand explanations about anything presented to them, especially in spiritual and cosmological issues. For that reason, if something is very obvious and simple, they tend to reject it as untrue.

And yet, the dependency factor of the multiverse and pseudo-universe on the sentient mind or, in this case, on My Absolute Sentient Mind, and by the factor that all other sentient minds reflect the structure and nature of My Absolute Sentient Mind in their relative condition, is very much obvious by the simple recognition of an axiomatic fact that Creation was created by Me or from My Absolute Sentient Mind, and the pseudo-creation was fabricated by relative sentient entities or from their sentient minds. If you create or fabricate something, that something is absolutely dependent on you, and without you or your conscious as well as unconscious effort, it cannot be and exist at all.

Why are we repeating this obvious and simple fact? If you accept this statement to be true, in that case, by your activities, behaviors, attitude, thinking, feeling, lifestyle, etc., you are fully responsible for how that component of Creation and/or pseudo-creation, to which you correspond and which is dependent on your sentient mind, functions and what its nature, structure and dynamics are. In that case, any changes in your

condition either at all levels of your mind or at some of its levels, will cause changes in the nature, structure and dynamics of that component. And because there is an all-out interconnectedness of all such components, by it, your changes, in some way or another, influence or impact the totality of all such components of which the multiverse and pseudo-universe are comprised.

You, as My representatives on planet Zero, by having conscious knowledge about these important facts, are put into a position of being able to influence in a positive manner the manifestation and function of all mentioned components and especially those in the pseudo-creation which depend on the function of your human ego. As you know so well, nothing positive and good can be ascribed to your human ego. Because of that, whenever you function from the position of your ego, which position is always negative, by such function you maintain and make it possible for those components of the pseudo-creation which depend on your human ego, to be negative as well; or to be the way they are in their adverse, violent type of turmoil and similar undesirable conditions. So, in this sense, as long as you function from the position of your human ego, you are contributing toward the maintenance of the pseudo-life or non-life of the negative state and human non-life.

However, knowing this to be the fact, you may change this situation in such a manner that all negative and violent aspects of the mentioned components are considerably tempered so that their outcome would not be so adverse or negative. By learning how to control your ego states, and by not allowing them to rule your life, and by switching more and more in all your functions, behaviors and attitudes to your true 'I am,' by becoming more and more positive, kind, loving, wise, patient, considerate, understanding, merciful, forgiving, tolerant, respectful, appreciative, compassionate, empathetic, accepting and by having similar positive attributes in your behavior toward others and yourself, you positively influence the course and the outcome of the mentioned components and you set up a condition in them which will enable their return to the positive state. In other words, by these factors, you contribute substantially to the possibility of the Zone of Displacement to become the Zone of Placement or to be returned to the state, condition and place from which it was so violently separated.

So, as you see from these facts, your responsibility in this respect is great. For that reason, don't underestimate yourself; and think several times before making any type of decision in your life. As you see, your decisions, no matter what they are, have immediate impact on the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

mentioned components of the multiverse and pseudo-universe. And make sure, that whenever you act or take any steps, that such actions and steps do not stem from your human ego, but instead from your true 'I am.' That way you will be preparing the mentioned components of the pseudo-universe to be modified in such a manner that they become suitable to be put back into the positive state.

And this is all that I wanted to contribute this morning. You may go ahead, Peter, and formulate all questions asked by My representatives from Eastern Europe.

Peter: Thank You very much for this timely reminder. Its importance is immense. I hope that everyone who will be reading these words will fully recognize and acknowledge this importance and the responsibility that we all have in this respect. Now, to the questions. I'll put them in the sequence in which they came. The first question came from Roman Mórocz. He would like to know, what is the significance, if any, of the term Alter Ego? The second question was posed by Petra from the Czech Republic. She is asking if it is possible for Your representative on planet Zero, after he/she replaces his/her ego with Your will, and after he/she is able to take control of his/her ego either fully or partially, in such moments, to experience his/her true 'I am' as it was created from the original Absolute 'I AM?' The third and the fourth questions came from Koloman Pushka (Puška). He is asking the following: In the current shift of energies during sexual intercourse, how are these energies being utilized when such intercourse happens between someone who is Your representative and someone who is not of Your New Revelation? Are these energies utilized by the Great Alliance or are they misused by the renegades? Can this type of sexual act have a positive impact on a person who is not of Your New Revelation and on the dimension with which he/she is connected? Koloman's second question is: What is the meaning for the current shift, or for our time, of Your advice as described in Luke 12:22-31? End of the questions. The floor is Yours.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter. Let us begin with Roman's question about alter ego. From the very onset of the answer to his question, let Me assure all of you that nothing of positiveness exists in this concept. Ego is ego whether original or alter. In the human conceptualization of this term, it may seem to be positive and pleasant. However, in the true reality of the positive state, nothing positive is contained in it. How do humans define this term? It means an inseparable friend; a second self; a perfect substitute; another aspect of one's personality. If you carefully look at the meaning of this definition,

you can clearly see that it derives from the structure, nature and dynamics of the original ego. Whatever is a derivative of the original state, carries all negative aspects of the original and it is as negative or evil as the original. Moreover, in the meaning of this definition as being an inseparable friend, a dependency factor is implied. And not only that but in that case there is a tendency to relinquish one's own genuine personality and everything it contains, and to artificially try to be like someone else or like some other personality. As you remember from My New Revelation, any attempt to be like someone else, and by that factor to deny who one is, equals spiritual adultery. Thus, to repeat, there is nothing positive about alter ego whatsoever. And this is all that can be said about this term at this time.

Now, let us address Petra's question. Basically, the answer to her question is 'yes,' it is possible to have such an experience. However, as always, it all depends on your own personal and individual intentions and motivations with which you approach this issue. After all, do not forget that your true 'I am,' which stems in its essence and substance from My Absolute 'I AM,' is deeply buried within your own sentient mind. Because of that, such experience is possible only in the state of your deepest inwardness during your deep meditative states. And because the outcome and meaning of your deep states or inwardness solely depend on your intentions and motivations with which you approach these states, the contact with and the experience of your true 'I am' depends on these factors. If your intentions and motivations are pure, if you do it for the sake of principles in order to become a better, more loving, wise, kind, considerate, understanding, etc., representative, in that case, the probability of experiencing your true 'I am,' as originally created from My Absolute 'I AM,' is very much possible and feasible. However, if such an approach is lacking this purity, in that case, you will experience some kind of negative substitute which will feel and be sensed as your true 'I am' but which will be only the above described alter ego.

So, as you see from these facts, in essence, it all depends on you and your attitude. Due to the fact that, as related to what was said above about your responsibility and accountability regarding the function and operation of the multiverse and pseudo-universe, and how you can change their outcome, it is not only to your personal advantage but also to the advantage of all and everything in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence for you to make such contacts with your true 'I am' so that you learn to function from its position and not from the position of your human ego. From that position you can also

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

learn how to control your ego states, its functions and its negative influences on your everyday life. Although as long as you are in human life on planet Zero it is not easy to accomplish this goal; nevertheless, if you persist and do not give up easily whenever you are frustrated about not being able to establish in your everyday life the function of your true 'I am,' you will succeed in this respect.

So, please, do not give up. At the same time, this situation tells you how important it is for you to continuously maintain the state of your inwardness so that you are able to prevent your ego from dominating your life in any of its aspects. At this time though, there is no other way to contact your true 'I am' but only in the state of your inwardness. After all, its true nature is an inward state. In fact, by its very nature, your 'I am' establishes and maintains this state. This nature and function of your true 'I am' stems from the Nature and Function of My Absolute 'I AM.' Your 'I am' reflects this condition. As you remember, originally, I was in the State and Condition of My Absolute Inwardness where My Absolute 'I AM' resides, maintaining that State on a permanent basis. From that position I rule and maintain My Creation. Because of that, your 'I am,' in all its functions and manifestations, in your relative condition, is in exactly the same position. Therefore, as I am Responsible for everyone and everything in My Creation and pseudo-creation in the Absolute Sense, so are you responsible for them in the relative sense. Remember this important fact!

Let us now address the issues raised by Koloman (Koloman is a policeman and a gypsy, but most importantly, he is My true representative on planet Zero, by his life devoted to the cause of My New Revelation). His first question relates to the utilization of energies stemming from sexual intercourse between My representative and someone who is not connected to My New Revelation. No simple or all-inclusive answer exists to this situation. This is a somewhat individualized and personalized issue. It all depends with what intention and motivation they approach their sexual intercourse. If there are no negative, manipulative, selfish, ulterior or any similar reasons for it, and if they approach it for mutual benefit, joy, delight, pleasure and sharing, without any strings attached, in that case, the energies produced by such interaction may be used by the Great Alliance or in My services.

However, if one or both partners have something negative and ulterior in their mind or behavior in this respect, in that case, those energies are wasted and may be utilized by the renegades for their own negative and

evil purposes. On the other hand, what would happen in this case if My representative would have a very positive, purely spiritual intention and motivation, and the other partner would not have them? How could or would energies, produced by such intercourse, be utilized? Do you remember the metaphor of a barrel of brimstone and a spoon of honey, or, on the other hand, a barrel of honey and a spoon of brimstone? This metaphor is fully applicable to this situation. Anything good and positive you produce from your position, if your partner is negative and evil, your positiveness and goodness is effectively absorbed by the brimstone without having any impact or influence on the property of brimstone. On the other hand, the tangible danger of such intercourse, if your sexual partner is overtly or covertly negative and evil, may very well contaminate your positiveness and goodness to the point that nothing remains from it. In that case, the barrel of honey was completely spoiled and made unusable by the mentioned brimstone. In either case, the energies produced during such an interaction could be easily utilized by the renegades. So, you have to be very careful with whom you enter such a sexual relationship. It can very well serve the negative state's cause.

The second part of Koloman's question addresses the issue of positive influence of such a sexual act on the person who is not connected to My New Revelation. Also, the answer to this question is not a simple one. Once again, it all depends on the nature of the other person and on the spiritual makeup and assignment such a person would have. It is possible that such a person could be a covert representative of the positive state. However, he/she could also be a covert representative of the negative state who externally appears to be good and positive but who, in the true essence and substance of his/her personality makeup, is not. On the other hand, in either case, although the outcome of such positive influence could not be immediately discerned, or even during the entire course of such a person's life on planet Zero, it would be very much utilized after such a person leaves planet Zero. So, as you see, your positive, good, loving and wise approach and behavior in cases like that, may serve some very good purpose. But do not expect it to necessarily happen during your lifetime on planet Zero. It may or may not happen during that time.

However, if such a person has no inward or outward hostility or rejective attitude toward My New Revelation (if he/she knows about its existence or that you are its follower and practitioner), in that case, your positive and good behavior during such a sexual act or during any time at all, may have a positive impact on such a person. He/she can

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

become interested in the genuine reasons for your positive and good attitude and behavior, and he/she may ask you to provide him/her with a copy of My New Revelation. However, if such a person has no knowledge that My New Revelation is available or that you are its follower and practitioner, in that case, your positive and good attitude and behavior during such times, or any time at all, may serve as a foundation for positive and good changes of such a person. Whatever the case may be, it all depends on the original agreement and choices which were made by such a person before his/her incarnation on planet Zero.

Let Me repeat it over and over again: Whenever you are about to approach such a sexual act, or anything at all for that matter, you are strongly advised, if you choose so by your own free will and choice, to always ask Me personally and individually, by whatever mode is available to you for asking Me such a question, whether it would be beneficial and useful for all concerned and involved, to consummate such an act. Always go by the response you'll receive from within you by My influx and by your intuition. If you do that, you'll never go wrong.

The situation is somewhat different with those of you who are married and whose spouse is not involved in My New Revelation. Again, the outcome of the sexual involvement with your spouse, and how energies produced during such times, will depend on the nature and assignment of your spouse. Open hostility and rejection of anything related to My New Revelation, cannot produce any energies which could be utilized by the Great Alliance or by anything of a positive nature. In that case, you would be advised to reevaluate your marital status in order to determine with Me in your mind whether your marriage exhausted its usefulness and served its purpose and whether it would be beneficial to continue in it. On the other hand, if your spouse has no hostile or rejective attitude toward you for being My representative or toward My New Revelation in general, and if he/she in no way uses sexual acts with you to overtly or covertly influence you in such a manner that it would deter you from being My representative or being a follower of My New Revelation, in that case, during your sexual intercourse with your spouse, the energies produced by such acts may be utilized in the services of My positive state.

So, as you see from these examples, it all depends on what kind of attitude your spouse has toward My New Revelation and how he/she behaves toward you with the full knowledge that you are connected to My New Revelation, and that by practicing its principles you are therefore, My true representative on planet Zero. Because the discussed

issues have a more individualized and personalized nature than an all-inclusive, applicable-to-all nature, it is the responsibility of each of My true representatives to determine from himself/herself what would be the best possible course to take in this respect. However, as mentioned above, your positive and good behavior, or your positive examples in accordance with the principles of My New Revelation, will be definitely utilized for bringing such a person back to the positive state, if not during your lifetime on planet Zero, then after it. So, it is profitable for all of you, as well as for all of us, for you to always behave and act in accordance with the principles of My New Revelation. By such behaviors and acts, you also establish a good foundation for yourself for controlling and ruling your ego states. To behave and act in accordance with the principles and ideas of My New Revelation is possible only from the position of your true 'I am,' which contains My presence in you and which presence makes it possible for you to be your true 'I am' and therefore, it also makes it possible for you to behave and to act like that.

Before proceeding to the answers to Koloman's second question, may I ask you, Peter, to quote the mentioned biblical text in Luke in its fullness. Thank you in advance.

Peter: It is my pleasure to do so. Here it goes: Luke 12:22-31: *"And He said to His disciples, 'Therefore I say to you, do not worry about your life, what you will eat; nor about the body, what you will put on. Life is more than food, and the body is more than clothing. Consider the ravens, for they neither sow nor reap, which have neither storehouse nor barn; and God feeds them. Of how much more value are you than the birds? And which of you by worrying can add one cubit to his stature? If you then are not able to do the least, why are you anxious for the rest? Consider the lilies, how they grow: they neither toil nor spin; and yet I say to you, even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. If then God so clothes the grass, which today is in the field and tomorrow is thrown into the oven, how much more will He clothe you, O you of little faith? And do not seek what you should eat or what you should drink, nor have an anxious mind. For all these things the nations of the world seek after, and your Father knows that you need these things. But seek the kingdom of God, and all these things shall be added to you. Do not fear, little flock, for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom. Sell what you have and give alms; provide for yourselves money bags which do not grow old, a treasure in the heavens that does not fail, where no thief approaches nor moth destroys. For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also.'"* End of the quote. I believe

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

some aspects of the meaning of this text were addressed before in the Moscow Dialogs 87 and 88.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, they were; and Koloman, as well as everyone else, would be advised to reread the portions of those two Dialogs which address this issue. The central point of this text is contained in verses 31 and 34. The meaning of these two verses was extensively discussed in the mentioned two Moscow Dialogs. However, let us elaborate on the meaning of the quoted text from the presently existing spiritual position. First of all, notice the distinction which I made between My disciples and the rest of the world. So, I was talking primarily to My disciples. And because, in the connotation of the mentioned text, My disciples represented all inhabitants of the positive state, and particularly the inhabitants of the natural dimension of the positive state, I was talking mainly to them. Basically, the distinction here is between the nature of My true Creation, the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero. In essence, metaphorically, it describes the lifestyle of each.

At first glance, if you consider only the literal meaning of the quoted text, it seems as though I was forcing those who listened to Me to become passive automatons; as if they should inactively sit around and wait for their sustenance and for everything they needed to comfortably live, to be delivered to them from God — the Heavenly Father. However, in the true meaning of those words, the issue was much deeper. The most important aspect which was emphasized throughout this text, was the need to establish proper priorities or the proper hierarchy of the spiritual organization in everyone's life.

As you know, in the negative state and human non-life this hierarchy and prioritization were grossly violated. You cannot very well establish a different type of life (non-life) which would have nothing in common with the nature of the true life, if you were to follow the same structural design, prioritization and hierarchy. In order to succeed in establishing such non-life, it was necessary to deviate from the original arrangement which existed in the true life. So, as you know, the emphasis was put on the externals, establishing a full dependency on them. The external things were made the most important and the most valuable while everything else was either denied entirely or it was put at the end of the list of priorities. This is how the non-life of the negative state and human non-life thrive.

However, there are some other important points to the true meaning of the quoted biblical text. The first one relates to the factor of bringing to

everyone's attention that true life is more than food and that the environment in which that life is manifested (represented here by the body) is more than what appears to the external mind. In other words, if life is the state of internals and the body is the means by which that life is manifested, then, in that case, anything else, positioned outside of them, is in the state of externals. The true value of anything lies in the state of internals because it determines the nature, structure, dynamics and value of anything which is outside of the internals — life and the form of its manifestation. This factor needed to be brought to everyone's attention. And because My disciples at that time were to become My representatives on planet Zero and within the domain of the negative state in general, it was they who were required to set up an example of how things are supposed to be and what the true meaning of anything is or what the proper prioritization and the true spiritual hierarchy should be.

Such examples were necessary to have within the domain of the negative state in order to constantly maintain the possibility of everyone's future salvation from the pseudo-life or non-life. As you know, for this important purpose, I have always maintained someone in the negative state's domain and on planet Zero who would unceasingly carry on this important mission. And because in the typical lifestyle of humans and everyone else in the negative state nothing changed in this respect, or how they prioritize and value their life (non-life), at the present time, the role of maintenance or setting up examples of proper life and its prioritization and hierarchy lies on your shoulders — My representatives.

The most important meaning of the quoted text however, can be found in something which was not available for presentation at that time. In the course of humanity's history and the history of the negative state, many other crucial and significant spiritual things needed to happen before anything of this nature could be revealed and brought to the attention of those who were/are in the position of My true representatives (formerly My agents). It was not until My New Revelation was granted on planet Zero, and by that factor became available to all in the negative state as well, that the most important issue of agreement and choice was revealed. In this respect, for the first time, it was revealed that everyone everywhere and everywhen, without exception or exclusion, in any position, situation, place, or whatever you have, is by prior agreement, choice or permission. No one at all is and exists who would not be and exist in whatever mode, state, condition

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

and process of life or non-life they are, by prior choice, agreement or permission. It is something which is ultimately between Me and them.

So, if you look at this situation from the position of this choice, agreement or permission, and if everyone at any time and non-time is in the role, assignment, position, or whatever one has, that were agreed upon prior to their incarnation to any state, condition, place or situation, in that case, no matter how much anyone would strive to be or to have something which was not an integral part of that agreement, choice or permission, it would not be possible for him/her to acquire anything which is outside of them. At the same time, when this agreement, choice or permission was made, it was clearly determined and promised that everything at all which will be needed to properly, effectively and successfully fulfill all aspects of that to which anyone agreed, chose or was permitted, will be fully provided as needed without lacking anything for bringing about the true purpose of their life or non-life.

For that reason, to strive or to waste your time on wanting something more or something different or worrying about, symbolically speaking, what to eat, what to wear, or what to do, etc., would be undermining the purpose for which you agreed to be and to exist in any role, position, place, state, or whatever you have (whether positive or negative) as a consequence of your choice and agreement which was made by your own free will and free choice, prior to their acceptance.

In this sense, or in the connotation of the present understating of what this is all about, you can interpret the words of *seeking the kingdom of God, and all these things shall be added to you* as seeking all means for being the way you are supposed to be and doing what you are supposed to do by our mutual prior agreement. If you do that and if you concentrate on that and only on that, in that case, all else that you need will be provided for you or will be added to you. And not only that, but by making the top priority of your life to be the way you are supposed to be and to do what you are supposed to do, you are establishing a proper hierarchy of spiritual organization in the state, condition and place which constantly violates and rejects it.

So, in essence, it is not as if you need to drop everything else in your life or sit passively and wait for Me to give you what you need, but it is a matter of recognizing and accepting who you are, what your role and position are and to function in all aspects of your life to the fullest of your potentials without expecting anything in return, or without desiring to have any material riches or anything at all which is outside

of our mutual prior agreement. In this sense, you have to recognize and accept the following important fact: Whatever you do, in whatever position, role, profession, job, work, relationship, etc., you find yourself at each particular time (be it very positive or very negative), you are in them because you are supposed to be in them. Nothing else would be beneficial and useful, no matter how dreary, meaningless, bad, negative, futile, unfulfilling, unproductive or useless it seems, in your perception, to be. Remember that!

For that reason, it is great wisdom on your part to be able, in all modesty, humbleness and humility, to accept your role, position, assignment and everything pertaining to you and to them the way they are without lusting, demanding, expecting or seeking out something else or something different which you are not supposed to have. If you were to do that, you would defy the articles of our mutual agreement, and by that factor you would be supporting the negative state. Do not forget what I said in the quoted text at the end of My discourse, *For where your treasure is, there your heart will be also.*'

In response to Koloman's question, it is obvious that at the present time, in the lives of My true representatives on planet Zero, whatever I said at that time, is applicable in the above described sense. If you do that, you are reaffirming the proper hierarchy of the spiritual organization by seeking the kingdom of God first and most importantly. In that case, all else that you need (**and not what you want or desire**) will be added to you without any reservation or strings attached. And this is all that needs to be said in this respect.

Peter: Thank You very much for this interpretation. Is there anything else You would like to discuss today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. The only thing that I wanted to emphasize today is Lyudmila's and your, Peter, physical conditions. As you are aware, as of today, Lyudmila has not been able to pass her kidney stone. So, she continues to suffer with physical pain and nausea. In your case, under the influence of the antibiotics you are taking, there is some improvement. These conditions which both of you presently suffer will continue until some important spiritual work is accomplished in other dimensions. Unfortunately for you, that work requires from you to be in your current physical condition. Nothing else would do.

As mentioned at the beginning of this Dialog, the reason for all of this will be apparent later on — after everything that is needed to be

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

accomplished will be accomplished. So, both of you, be patient and endure to the end. In the meantime, let us not do any dialoging until all this passes; or should the outcome be different for you personally, Peter, you may consider this Dialog as the very last one. Hopefully, for you, as well as for all My representatives, it will not come to that point soon. However, it will all depend on the higher needs and choices of all which go beyond your planet. And this is all.

Peter: Once more, thank You very much for everything.

One Hundred and Thirty Eighth Dialog

May 9, 2000

Peter: Although I don't have any particular questions of multiversal significance, and no one else asked anything of this significance, I understand that You would like to offer some further elaborations regarding important spiritual issues. Also, as You know, Lyudmila's (Lucy's) condition got worse and as a result, she needed to undergo an emergency operation in the hospital. At this point she seems to be very weak with very little energy or stamina. I also feel considerably weakened and out of breath, so-to-speak. It seems to me as if someone or something is making an all-out effort to prevent us from doing any important work together on this level — the external level (translations, editing or any other important activities). Any comments on this or any other issues?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Although you are correct in your assumption, Peter, that someone in the negative state (the renegades) is making an all-out effort to prevent you from doing whatever you and Lyudmila were planning to do, nevertheless, the meaning of your conditions lies somewhere or in something else. Don't forget for a minute that on the part of the forces of the negative state (particularly the renegades), there has been and always will be an attempt to interfere with whatever you do at each particular time. This happens on a 24-hour basis. And it concerns not only the two of you, but all My representatives on planet Zero. So, in this case, their attempt is not the issue. The issue is somewhere else. A certain example needs to be set up and a certain important correspondential meaning needs to be reiterated or brought to everyone's attention at this particular time. It relates to the function of the human kidneys and to what that function spiritually corresponds.

As you know, it was Swedenborg who, for the first time in the history of humankind, properly described or revealed the spiritual correspondence of the kidneys' function. What is the basic and the most important purpose and function of the kidneys? You can summarize them in two important words: *purification* and *separation*. The question is: What is being purified and separated and from what and to where? In a typical literal sense, the blood of the human body is being purified from all impurities and byproducts produced by the intake of various products needed for the survival of the human body. During such intake, many components of such products are not conducive to the true needs of the body. For that reason, these components need to be separated from those which can be utilized for the proper maintenance of the function of all

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

bodily organs and their cells, and subsequently, they are thrown out into sewage. In other words, they become what is known as human waste.

From a typical external position, you can say that no matter what humans take in into their bodies, it is never free from impurities and poisonous substances that need to be expelled by the means of human urine and feces. What is this situation with humans telling you? It is telling you that nothing in human life (non-life) exists which would be pure, clean, uncontaminated and free from such adverse contaminants. This situation is one of the important characteristics of the typical human life (non-life). It requires complex facilities which deal extensively with the so-called human waste. So, you can say that in some ways the human body is a factory which constantly works on self-preservation by the means of separating and eliminating from within itself that which is not conducive to its proper function and survival.

As you noticed, the above described function is conceived from a typical non-spiritual, external position. However, behind it, there are some very important spiritual correspondences (as were revealed, for example, through Swedenborg). What is it that feeds and maintains the life of any sentient mind? It is Truth of Good and Wisdom of Love stemming directly from Me as their Absolute Source. In this respect, anything that would or could endanger the life of any sentient mind, is being prevented from accomplishing that by the knowledge and acceptance of the real Truth. For that reason you can say that what is being represented here by the function of the kidneys for example, in a general sense, is the combat of truth with falsities which are trying to invade the sentient mind for the purpose of its destruction or destruction of the true life in general. This position or representation signifies the ability to distinguish truth from falsities in every individual. Once you are able to distinguish them, you have the proper means or a foundation for separating them from each other and expulsing all falsities into sewage. The sewage here represents the negative state. In this sense you can say that the truth of faith purifies each individual from his/her falsities, thus, keeping him/her away from the negative state/sewage.

In this connotation you can say that by the factor of representation and spiritual correspondence of the function of the kidneys, in a general and all-inclusive sense, I, The Lord Jesus Christ, constantly provide the means for everyone in the negative state to be purified and freed from their falsities so that they could be imbued with the real truth of the positive state. This condition is available to everyone in the negative state and human non-life on a continuous basis in the same manner as

kidneys provide a continuous purification and separation of everything which would be poisonous to the proper function of the human body.

In this respect you can say that by such provision, a firm foundation was established at the time/non-time of invention, activation and manifestation of the non-life of the negative state and human non-life so that they would have a constant opportunity to free themselves from all their evils and falsities and thus, be saved from their brand of non-life. This situation or setup, by analogy, will be utilized in an opportune time for opening the Spiritual Mind of everyone positioned in the negative state and human non-life so that they will be able to see and to recognize, first of all, their evils and falsities; and secondly, how and by what means to get rid of them permanently. Of course, as you know, being that their evils and falsities are the source of their very non-life, and being that they cling to them, invading and permeating their entire mind, these evils and falsities resist any attempt for their separation and removal from everything which is of the true life. Do not forget that, because no one is absolutely evil or is in absolute falsities (there are no absolute evils and absolute falsities), they all contain within them something which is of good and truth; that is to say, which stems directly from Me and in which I am present. My presence makes it possible for them not only to survive in their own brand of non-life but it also provides the means of keeping the remnants of those goods and truths from being contaminated, polluted and poisoned by their evils and falsities. Hence, a continuous process of purification and separation within them without their conscious knowledge or awareness. This way, whatever remnants of good and truth are contained within them, thanks to this process, they are kept intact in their pure, clean and safe condition. As you know, it is from these remnants that everyone in the negative state and in human non-life will eventually be saved.

As mentioned above, their evils and falsities do not want to be separated from their carriers and be thrown out. For that reason they tend to format or concentrate in one compact shape which is able to block its removal from their system. This factor is represented by or corresponds to the kidneys' stones. Although in many instances such kidney stones are able to pass through and thus, be eliminated from the human body; in some cases, they get stuck on their way out, blocking the proper flow of fluid that needs to be expelled. In this case, a danger of poison and even possible death of the physical body looms if those stones are not promptly removed. Should anything of this nature happen, a surgical removal of those stones is necessary. And this is exactly what happened to our Lyudmila. There are contingents of certain entities in the negative state, which are about ready to go through the process of their own

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

awareness regarding their evils and falsities. The first step in this respect is to deal with the falsities which feed the incentives for the life of their evils. Once you are able to remove all such falsities, no incentives remain which could continue this feeding. In that case, these evils become a tremendous contaminating and poisoning burden to their carriers and they desire to get rid of them. By petitioning Me to help them in this process, they are able to free themselves from everything related not only to falsities but also to evils. However, in order to accomplish this, they need some concrete and tangible examples for how to do it or what the process is of getting rid of them.

By her ordeal in this respect, Lyudmila was able to illustrate and demonstrate the way out of their predicament to the mentioned contingents. The process of gradual and painful elimination of their falsities was shown by Lyudmila's example. Also, it was clearly shown by her the danger if such concentrated falsities in the form of their correspondences to the kidney stones that do not want to go out, and what to do and how to do it for the purpose of their elimination. This is the general meaning of Lyudmila's predicament. However, there are some individualized and personalized issues related to her personally. Because they are of this nature, only she can find out from Me in her what they are and how to get rid of them. The only thing that can be revealed in this respect is that there were or are at least five specific and particular falsities that need to be separated from and thrown out from her mind. Correspondentially speaking, they were concentrated in her two kidney stones. Three of them were contained in the bigger stone and two in the smaller one. In the process of her ordeal, Lyudmila was purified and cleansed from them. Again, the specifics and the nature of those falsities have to be determined by her. No one else can do that on her behalf.

In a general sense, with some individuals of the negative state, the discussed spiritual correspondence signifies that the truth they know of is contained in their external memory only, but not in their will and acts. In other words, they may know the truth but they have no will to do anything concrete about this knowledge. Consequently, because their will is somewhere else or for something else, which opposes their knowledge of truth, they have no desire to implement it in their individual and personalized lives.

The above described situation about illustration and demonstration is fully applicable to My representatives. As you know, all of you are in a position, among many other things, of being illustrative and demonstrative examples of this or that factor as related to the need of

getting rid of some specific evils and falsities and their corresponding states and conditions. Thus, you all volunteered or are in the process of volunteering to become such examples by going through various mental, physical, social, financial and similar hardships in your own personalized and individualized lives. On the other hand, a few of you have a very much different purpose in this respect. By not having any such apparent hardships and by being provided with a very secure and comfortable lifestyle (in human terms of this meaning. For example, having more than enough money and/or other valuable commodities), you are providing a very important illustration and demonstration that despite such material and financial provisions, you are not their slaves and they do not serve as a deterrent from your proper spiritual path, or in this case, from Me and My New Revelation. And not only that, but you clearly illustrate that such commodities are My gifts to you and that therefore, they do not belong to you or that you are not their owner but only their manager on My behalf.

So, as you see from these examples, all of you, as My representatives, by the means of events in your individual lives, are in a mode of constant illustration and demonstration of something spiritually very important which could and would be utilized for salvation of those who are the representatives of the negative state and human non-life.

Since we are talking about the spiritual correspondences of the function of human kidneys, let us touch upon some of their other spiritual meaning. As you remember from the previous Dialogs, truth is the property of the interior mind from the wisdom of the Spiritual Mind. By the means of this truth, contained in the interior mind, the external mind is capable of exploring, purifying and correcting anything which is not of that truth. In other words, exploration, purification and correction are the property of the external mind. By concentrating on the truth of the interior mind from the wisdom of the Spiritual Mind, from that position, the external mind is able to clearly see what is and what is not proper, correct and right. This ability of the sentient mind in general stems from and is a reflection of My Absolute Ability to see the quality of the truth with everyone and to know the falsities and truth of every individual. Once again, the issue here is the ability to distinguish truth from falsities. My Absolute Function in this respect in Its Absolute Abilities to know the Truth, being that I am the Absolute Truth, makes it possible for every relative individual to have the same ability of differentiation. From this Absolute Ability of Mine derives the structural design of the kidneys, which, on the most external physical level, reflect this correspondence in that they are able to distinguish between what is and what is not proper, correct, right and healthy for the human body.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

And not only that but they are able to dispense with or eliminate everything which does not belong in that body. Do you see how the spiritual correspondences determine the function of all and everything and how any function is enabled by having such important spiritual correspondences?

However, there is still a higher understanding of this issue. As you know, any truth is alive and functional by its good. Any wisdom is alive and is functional by its love. Any love is endorsed and made possible by its positive works. Thus, as you see from this example, there is absolute interconnectedness and integration of all and everything by the means of interdependency of these most important spiritual attributes and qualities. One without the other cannot be and exist. In this respect you can say that love, good, positive works and their derivatives are first; and wisdom, truth, faith and all their derivatives are forms and containers by which and through which love, good, positive works and their derivatives are enabled to manifest themselves in the lives of all sentient entities. How does this interconnectedness and integration relate to the function of the kidneys? Unless the kidneys in their function would not be able to detect, recognize, separate and expulse everything from the physical body's system which does not belong there, the rest of the bodily organs would be gradually poisoned and cease in their function. In other words, the body would die.

On the other hand, if the kidneys would not be supplied by the necessary nutrients, provided by the function of some other bodily organs, they could not fulfill the purpose for which they were established in the first place. These necessary nutrients correspond to the goodness of love and its positive works, to which some other organs correspond and which make sure that all functions of the body (or in this case, of the sentient mind) run smoothly and effectively, providing everything necessary for the organism to be alive and living.

So, as you see, everything in being and existence serves some kind of very good purpose and use. This purpose and use derive from the nature of love, goodness, positive works and their derivatives by the means of wisdom, truth, faith and their derivatives. In fact, all organs and instruments by which and through which life and living are being manifested and they are what they are supposed to be, are created from or initiated in the nature of these exquisite spiritual attributes or characteristics. And this is all that we need to discuss related to this issue at this time.

Peter: Thank You very much for this explanation. Are we ready to proceed with some other issues?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, we are ready. At this point of recording I would like to make a short detour into the history of the early years of development of so-called Christianity. As you know, following My departure from planet Zero, the forces of the negative state put an all-out effort to circumvent the spread of My Word and the true meaning of My Works and My incarnation on planet Zero. How did they go about it? In the first round, for about 330 years after My departure, they were trying to physically eradicate all members of the Christian church. Thus, they severely persecuted, tortured, mutilated, ridiculed and killed anyone belonging to that church. This is how the concept of martyrdom came about. However, the more they did that, the more its membership increased. Seeing that their methods and tactics in this respect were completely failing and leading nowhere, the forces of the negative state decided to change their approach in this respect. Instead of trying to destroy it physically from without, they devised a method by which they could successfully corrupt, distort, pollute, poison and falsify its genuine and original spiritual principles from within the Christian movement. In order to do that, they accepted the Christian doctrine into their own sphere. As you know, for this purpose, the Roman Emperor Constantine I (*Flavius Valerius Aurelius Constantinus*), legally sanctioned Christian worship, making it the official spiritual doctrine of the Roman Empire. From this new position, it was a very short step toward corruption, perversion, mutilation, distortion and falsification of everything pertaining to the real celestial, spiritual and natural truth and their relevant good. In other words, the forces of the negative state succeeded in taking over the future development of the Christian movement and made it their favorite tool in combating the positive state and My True Absolute Nature. The reason for this takeover was explained many times throughout the books of My New Revelation. It is not necessary to repeat it here.

In the very first part of the history of Christianity, its members considered themselves to be privileged to be martyrs in My cause, following My example. If I died in such a gruesome manner, they wanted to go the same way, identifying themselves with everything that I had to go through in this respect. These martyrs were setting up the very first example, illustrating and demonstrating the fact that no matter what the forces of the negative state do to them, no matter how much they would like to destroy everything related to Me and My positive state, no matter what methods they use, they can never succeed. In fact, by their abominable efforts in this respect, they accomplished just the exact

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

opposite of that which they intended to accomplish. At the present time, you, as My true representatives on planet Zero, are the carriers of these illustrative and demonstrative examples. And although the present spiritual climate does not require from you to be martyrs in the physical sense as the first Christians were, nevertheless, your putting up with everything happening on this planet and in your personal and individual lives, can be considered a special type of martyrdom which in some ways equals the martyrdom of the first Christians. Remember that! At this point we are going to close this brief historical detour and address something else.

I would like to briefly elaborate on some other aspects of Koloman's question as related to the text in Luke 12:22-34. At this time I would like to put emphasis on two aspects of that text. One, from what I said at that time, it is obvious that the true spiritual or any other value of any life is the sentient mind. All other forms of life, the forms which do not contain any signs of sentience within them and thus, do not have awareness of their self-awareness by the means of their 'I am,' have only transient and temporary significance. Their value lies in the temporary and transient use that they perform for the sentient mind. In the moment their use is exhausted, as singular non-sentient entities, be they animal or plant entities, they become no more in the real sense of that word. As you remember from the Moscow Dialog 85, this situation reflects the dependency factor on whatever is projected by the sentient mind by the means of its ideas, by the quality of their individualized and personalized life, and by similar factors, all related to the structure, nature and dynamics of the sentient mind. Whereas in an ultimate sense, theoretically speaking, the sentient mind, in its essence and substance, does not depend on the being and existence of these non-sentient life forms, these forms fully depend on the being and existence of the sentient mind and without it they cannot be and exist. The dependency factor of the sentient mind lies in its originating Absolute Source — The Lord Jesus Christ. In this sense you can say that as the non-sentient life forms cannot be and exist without the being and existence of the sentient mind, so is the sentient mind's being and existence inconceivable without Absolute Being and Absolute Existence of the Absolute Sentient Mind. The non-sentient life forms reflect, illustrate and demonstrate this factor of dependency.

However, because the sentient mind is a true derivative of the Absolute Sentient Mind, and the non-sentient life forms are derivatives of the relative sentient mind, the sentient mind has absolute value in its relative condition and the non-sentient life forms have only relative value in their relative to the relative condition. Thus, whoever places

absolute value in something that does not have it, makes a useless idol out of it, allowing it to dominate his/her life. This is one of the many sources of spiritual adultery and abomination of idolatry. Therefore, whoever worships nature and what it contains in its non-sentient life forms as having absolute value, without any regard to the true originating source of their temporary and transient being and existence, commits spiritual adultery and worships idols. In some ways, this tendency is propagated by some of the followers of the so-called New Age movement. Please, be careful in not falling into their 'attractive' traps.

The second issue of the mentioned text of Luke relates to verse 33, which goes as follows, '*Sell what you have and give alms; provide yourselves money bags which do not grow old...*' The literal interpreters of this verse think that you really are advised to sell what you have in the form of your material possessions and give alms to the poor or needy, thus, becoming poor yourself. However, the true meaning of this requirement or advice is entirely different. It has nothing to do with selling what you have in your material or any other possessions and giving everything away to the so-called needy. '*To sell what you have*' signifies to get rid of everything in your life which interferes with your proper spiritual perception of the meaning of life and its true values and with your proper spiritual progression and development. And because anything interfering with this important process is imposed on you and your life, by or originated in the negative state, you need to get rid of it or to sell it back where it belongs — to the negative state.

As you know, the negative state values only that which is of the negative nature. By selling back what you have in this respect to the negative state, you reaffirm two things: First, that you have no need to have something in your life which would prevent you from seeing things, as well as yourself and others, the way they/you are in their/your essence and substance without any distortions and falsifications of these facts; and secondly, you illustrate to the negative state that its so-called values have no value at all. However, because the negative state values only that which has no value, in order to reaffirm this fact, you sell all your spiritually valueless traits, characteristics and possessions to the negative state. In its arrogant and boastful assumption, the negative state cannot comprehend why someone would want to get rid of something which is so much valued by everyone in the negative state. This fact establishes within the non-life of the negative state a condition which will eventually lead everyone in its non-life to the realization that what they value so highly has, in fact, no value at all. Therefore, at that point in time/state, they will **unchoose** to have or to cling to all their

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

valueless traits, characteristics, possessions or whatever they have in this respect.

‘To *give alms*’ to the needy in the connotation of the quoted text, means to share your knowledge of the real truth with those who lack such knowledge and who desire to acquire it for the right reasons. Whenever the Bible talks about poor people, it does not talk about the materially poor. Instead it talks about poor on knowledge of truth and all its derivatives, as they stem from their originating good, and who thirst for such knowledge. If you have no truth, you will also lack any good. For that reason, by sharing the riches of Truth, bestowed on you by My New Revelation, with those who are asking for it, you are providing them with what they need. And although, in some instances, for the purpose of making My New Revelation available to everyone, for example, it is proper and right to give alms (or in modern words, to donate some of your money or material goods to such a noble cause) in the literal sense of the meaning of this term; nevertheless, this is not what this text is all about or what it indicates in its true meaning. Its true meaning can be found in the above explanation.

To ‘*provide yourselves money bags which do not grow old,*’ in the connotation of this text, signifies to consider the spiritual factors of life and to use anything non-spiritual (in the form of money or material possessions, for example), as a means, and not as a purpose, to have proper external conditions on which your spiritual development and progression can take place without any interference from non-spiritual values. If they are utilized as a means and not as the purpose of your life, in that case, they can serve properly to the higher value of spiritual goods, the goods which make your spiritual development and progression possible. Because the spiritual values in their progressive mode are always evolving without any regression or stagnation, they can never grow old. And this is what the true meaning of the quoted text is. And this is all I wanted to contribute today.

Peter: Thank You very much for this important input. As You are aware, in the midst of recording this Dialog, I received five questions from Your representatives in the Czech Republic. Would You like me to formulate them on the platform of this Dialog and provide answers to them at this time?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, it would be appropriate to do so. Go ahead and translate them in the sequence as they were asked.

Peter: Very well, here they are: Monika from the Czech Republic is asking the following question: *Why is the Last Judgment called the Last One if in essence it is never the last, because it takes place from time to time in all dimensions of Creation and the Zone of Displacement as well as globally at the end of **each cycle** of time? After elimination and the Last Judgment of the negative state, in the new cycle of time/state/process will anything be resembling the Last Judgment?* The next question is asked by Monika and Roman together: *In what manner is sexual energy utilized, which is released during masturbation, when: a) one masturbates because he/she does not have a sexual partner of the same spiritual level; b) one masturbates because he/she wants to discharge sexual energy which he/she feels. At the present time, is it possible to utilize sexual energy, which one feels (if he/she does not have any opportunity for sexual contact), in some other useful way than just by masturbation so that there would be no waste in this respect? With what does masturbation correspond?* The next two questions were posed by Peter Bazala of the Czech Republic: *What is the spiritual correspondence, if any, of the positioning of the planets of our Solar system, which took place on May 5, 2000? In the last few years a lot is being talked about the harmfulness of the ultraviolet rays and the enlargement of the ozone hole. Do these informations have any important significance for Your true representatives?* End of the questions. The floor is Yours.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Let us begin with the answer to Monika's question about the Last Judgment. The answer to her question is a very simple one and it should be very much obvious from everything revealed throughout the books of The New Revelation. We have been constantly talking about spiritual evolvment, development and progression. Also, many times it was emphasized that nothing of The New Revelation can ever become old or outdated. And here comes the meaning of the Last Judgment. As you know, every singular individual, society, nation, country, planet, solar system, galaxy, universe, multiverse and the entire Creation and pseudo-creation is ruled by a very specific spiritual principle or idea which is accommodated to the needs of each entity, be it an individual or to the just mentioned succession all the way to the entire Creation. Everyone and everything within their position play a certain role, carry on a certain assignment and have a very concrete destiny.

From the viewpoint of the spiritual evolvment, development and progression, within each particular step, state, time, paratime, condition or whatever you have, such role, assignment, destiny and their specific characteristics and traits are applicable only and only to that specific step, etc. Whenever each particular step, and everything it contains and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

by which it is ruled and manifested, exhausts its usefulness and serves its purpose, it comes to its end so that a new step, and everything related to it, could be instituted. In the moment when this ending comes into focus, its Last Judgment takes place. And not only is it the Last Judgment of that step but of everyone and everything which was an integral part of it, fulfilling its purpose and goal for which it was established in the first place. The reason why it is called the Last Judgment is because it is the very last process of evaluation of everything contained in that step. Due to the fact that nothing of the old or of the previous step, in its very specific and unique nature and structure, can be transferred or transposed into the next incoming step; and because whatever that step had or contained can no longer be in being and existence or pseudo-being and pseudo-existence the way it was in the previous step; and because all its experiences in the minutest details were fully registered and incorporated in the Universality-Of-It-All; for that particular step and for everyone and everything in it, it is the very Last Judgment and therefore, there will be no more such Last Judgments for that step, since after that, that step and what it contains in its specificity will be no more either.

Based on these facts, it is obvious that the Last Judgment always will be and it will always be the Last One for each particular step, cycle, individual, or whatever you have because of the new and different spiritual component which is being released from the Absolute Core of My Absolute New Nature at the time/state/condition when the new cycle or whatever is coming to its manifestation and implementation. Anything new and different cannot contain or be bogged down by something which was contained in the old or previous one. Otherwise, it would not be new and different. Therefore, the Last Judgment puts an end to it so that it no longer could have any influence and impact on everything new and different. In this sense, the true Last Judgment does not have such a negative connotation as portrayed for example, in the Christian Bible and in various religious systems on your planet. In fact, it has a purely positive and delightful connotation because it dispenses with everything old and no longer useful and it provides a new beginning and new incentives for the creative spiritual and overall evolvement, development and progression of everyone and everything in being and existence. Therefore, in this sense, the Last Judgment can be considered as the most welcomed and waited for event in the lives of all sentient entities.

The next question relates to the issue of sexuality. In fact, it relates to one very narrow aspect of sexuality in the form of its relatedness to sexual intercourse. Whereas the general consideration of sexuality as a

life force energy may have a multiversal significance, the practice of sexual intercourse, in whatever form, shape or condition, may not have it. Sexual intercourse, as applied to each individual, always has a personalized and individualized connotation. Because of that, some time ago, in one of the previous Dialogs (82), you were clearly requested by Me not to ask such questions through Peter. You should direct such questions personally and directly to Me. It is between Me and you. This amply applies to the issue of masturbation. The way the released sexual energy during masturbation is being utilized depends solely on each individual's state of mind during such an act. If there are no other possibilities for sexual intercourse but masturbation only, and if during such an act, you are concentrating on Me and the members of your spiritual family, and if in your imagination such an act takes place either with some other representative of the opposite gender or with a member of your spiritual family or someone from the positive state of the opposite sex, in that case, the released sexual energies are utilized for positive purposes only. No waste takes place in such a case. However, if there are any ulterior or inappropriate intentions, motivations, imaginations or fantasies during such an act, these energies are utilized by the negative state. In that case, they are wasted because they support something which does not have permanency, constancy and eternal continuation.

Anyone's sexual energy can be utilized in a very useful and positive manner in many different ways besides masturbation. Because of the very much individualized and personalized nature of this issue, each one of you, as My representative, is fully responsible and accountable for finding out on your own what different manners in this respect are available for you, personally and individually. No general guidelines can be given in this case. If I were to do that, they would instantly become the property of the negative state and any energies produced by their practice would be wasted in the services of the negative state.

The spiritual correspondence of masturbation relates to one narrow aspect of sexuality which requires production of spiritual energies and their very specific, individualized and personalized contribution to the maintenance of life-support systems of the entire Creation in the positive sense or of the entire pseudo-creation in the negative sense. As you know, during masturbation, no one is physically present with you. In such an intimate and isolated state, during such an act, a special type of sexual energy is released which carries within itself the code of your personality imprint, conveyed to the universe or pseudo-universe (if that act has a negative connotation) at large. So, there is a certain degree of spiritual correspondence to the imprint of your personality in the state and condition of its isolation, separation and intimacy. Depending on the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

motivational and intentional factors during such an act, the outcome can be either positive, or negative or neutral. So, in some sense, the energies, any energies, in their ultimate outcome, can never be wasted, although from the temporary and transient position, if they support the cause of the negative state, they can be wasteful in that, as mentioned above, they support something which has no true life in itself and by itself. However, by the factor of support itself, paradoxically speaking, they are never wasted because, after all, they support something. And this is all that can be revealed about this issue.

In response to Peter's questions about any possible spiritual correspondences to the positioning of the planets of your solar system on May 5, 2000, let it be known that such positioning happens approximately every 18 years. Although many doomsday predictions were made as related to that positioning, as of this date, as well as in the past, none of them came through. In your situation, as My true representatives, you are advised not to pay any attention to such events and/or predictions. Yes, everything, no matter what it is, has some spiritual correspondence in the scheme of events in the multiverse and pseudo-universe. However, because it usually reflects something which is happening during those times on multiversal and/or pseudo-universal levels, the knowledge of such happenings on your individual and personal level would be detrimental. It would not be safe for you to know any specifics or even generalities in this respect. The only thing that can be said about this particular event, as it happened on May 5, 2000, is that, at that time, a certain gathering of the forces of the renegades took place, during which a discussion or planning ensued about some different methods and tactics which need to be taken in their war against the pseudo-creators specifically, and against the positive state generally. Nothing more can be said about anything related to that date.

As you know so well, your assignment in your services as My true representatives, is not in watching various external signs or celestial events, or whatever other signs and events are taking place at any particular time, but to carry on with making available My New Revelation to all by examples, illustrations and demonstrations of their principles in your own personalized and individualized lives. If you do that, such signs, events, happenings or whatever will have no impact or influence on you and your mission in this respect. So, it would be a good idea not to waste your time and energy being preoccupied with any of them.

The harm of ultraviolet sun rays to human life and the enlargement of the ozone hole is a reflection of self-destructive tendencies of the negative

state. Inherent in the non-life of the negative state and human non-life is a spiritually, mentally, physically and genetically engrained code which prevents that non-life in its eternal continuation. As that non-life runs its course, gradually and slowly, as it is fulfilling its purpose and goal for which it was permitted to be invented, activated, established and manifested in the first place, that code triggers its programmed content in such a manner, that it causes this brand of non-life and human non-life to erode and as a consequence, making it come to its eventual eternal end. Let it be known to all readers of these Dialogs, that prior to the invention, activation, establishment and manifestation of the non-life of the negative state and human non-life, it was agreed by all of us involved in this permission and process that a special code will be implanted in them which will prevent anything of their nature to continue for good and forever. Only under those conditions was it possible to permit anything of that nature to come to its despicable and adverse fruition. No other conditions would be acceptable. Otherwise, the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state could never be established.

As far as relevance of these astronomical events to your personal lives as My true representatives, it can be found in the factor of your being the needed carriers of this important spiritual information so that it could be constantly available to anyone who is willing to hear and to listen. In this sense, as you read this information contained in this particular Dialog, as well as in all other Dialogs, as well as in the entirety of My New Revelation, it becomes registered in all sentient minds located in the negative state and it becomes available to all human sentient minds. Such information can be considered as a preparatory stage for everyone's awareness within the domain of the negative state and human non-life that what they have and what kind of non-life they lead, has no chance to continue forever, no matter what they do or don't do. This realization can be considered as a first step toward triggering a desire within them to dispense with something — in this case, with their brand of pseudo-life — which does not have any possibility to continue forever. Therefore, it will motivate them to seek out some other mode of life which has such a possibility. And logically speaking, because only the true life of the positive state has such a possibility, they will, therefore, strive to seek it out by the process of conversion to it. The implanted code in them, in this respect, once they know about it, will become a motivating factor for their conversion to the positive state. And this is how such astronomical phenomena as ultraviolet sun rays and ozone layers, and your awareness of their true significance and correspondences, serve this purpose.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

At this point in time, Peter, I would suggest to finish it for today. As you know, Lucy's and your physical conditions are still far from being what they are supposed to be. So, take a longer break again or until some important questions of multiversal significance come your way. Until then — if needed and necessary.

Peter: I appreciate very much all this information which You so kindly make available to us.

One Hundred and Thirty Ninth Dialog

May 12, 2000

Peter: Shortly after I finished recording Dialog 138, I received a letter by regular mail from my brother Ivan in which he is submitting four questions for Your consideration. A little later in the day, I received one question via E-mail from Petra of the Czech Republic. Does it mean that we should do dialoging despite the fact that it was indicated at the end of Dialog 138 to take a longer break? Of course, as always, if You have anything to convey to us this morning prior to Your answers to the asked questions, I would be more than happy to yield You the floor.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, it does mean that, and therefore, it is proper to resume our dialoging at this time. However, before asking you to formulate the mentioned four questions on behalf of your brother Ivan and one question on behalf of Petra, I would like to briefly mention something else. Since the time of your ordeal, Peter, and during the time when, in that process, a decision was being made about the outcome of your physical condition, in a sense whether you should or should not be recalled from planet Zero, you have been somewhat preoccupied with the question related to the fate of dialoging and what is going to happen after you would be recalled at any time during the foreseeable future. Although this is something that may be considered as a prediction of the future, nevertheless, some general ideas could be conveyed to you not in the sense of what is or what is not going to happen but in the sense of whether the need for dialoging to continue by the means of someone else will be retained or not.

Due to the position and specific role that you, Peter, have as the transmitter of My New Revelation, as long as you are on planet Zero in the physical form, and as long as there are or will be any questions of multiversal significance submitted to us, our dialoging may continue if needed and feasible. The spiritual climate and the nature of the shift that is in place and will be in place during your stay on planet Zero may be conducive for this type of dialoging. However, in the moment of your recall from planet Zero, that moment will be the beginning of a totally different spiritual state and condition and of a new spiritual shift which will be needed or be ready to take place at that time. Although the nature and character of that state, condition and shift would be premature to reveal, nevertheless, it can be said with one hundred percent certainty that such dialoging, as we have now, will no longer be appropriate or needed. The spiritual climate of that time will be entirely

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

different, not conducive to such dialoging. For that reason, do not expect that someone else would be assigned to continue in such dialoging.

In view of these facts, if, after your departure, Peter, from planet Zero, someone would come and claim that he or she was assigned such a role, it would be a straightforward deception on the part of such an individual and he or she would be under the influence of the renegades. Please, remember that and do not be taken in by any such possible claims! It can be expected that the forces of the negative state (the renegades) would try to present or to introduce, under My Name, of course, someone who could make such claims in order to corrupt, contaminate, pollute and poison the purity of all ideas of My New Revelation. By the introductory remarks of this particular Dialog, you are being warned about such a possibility and you are being prepared for something like that to happen following Peter's departure from planet Zero.

During that time, the spiritual climate and condition could be such that it would require from you, who would be left behind, to really ask your own questions and get your own answers without any mediator in this respect. It would mean that the questions of multiversal significance were properly answered for this and that time and that to continue in asking them would not serve a needed purpose. In this case, the shift would be entirely to the individualized and personalized condition and the answers to them would be rendered to each particular individual in his/her state of inwardness or in any state he/she could establish for that purpose. Moreover, and most importantly, during that time, in the lives of My true representatives on planet Zero, a period of a full and complete implementation of everything revealed, and which will be revealed in the upcoming days, in My New Revelation in general, will be in the process of its fullest possible illustration and demonstration. At the same time, whatever anyone will be receiving during the process of his/her own asking of questions, by whatever mode such asking will be available to him/her, the verity of the content of any received answers, will always be compared with and checked against the content of the principles and ideas of My New Revelation. Should any disagreement be detected with these principles and ideas, it would denote that the answers to his/her questions are coming from a deceiving source. On the other hand, if a full agreement with them is in place, it would indicate that such answers are coming from Me. So, as you see, My New Revelation, and what it contains, will also function at that time as a means for security checks. No other means for such checks, besides your intuition, will be available at that time.

During that time, after intuitive reassurance about the veracity of the received answers to your own personal and individual questions, some aspects of those answers would be possible to share amongst yourselves — My true representatives. Of course, as always, only if you choose to share them by your own free will and choice and only if it is indicated to you by Me that it would be beneficial and proper for such sharing to take place. However, it is quite possible that most of the received answers would have a totally private and intimate connotation, not available for sharing with anyone because it would be between Me and you. And this is all that I wanted to talk about at this time. At this point, Peter, you may go ahead and formulate Ivan's and Petra's questions.

Peter: Thank You very much for this reminder. Ivan's four questions are as follows: 1) *Swedenborg described the inhabitants of all planets known at his time. I suppose he didn't 'see' the planets of our physical (pseudo) universe. Then what did he really see?* 2) *Swedenborg discerns three kingdoms: the celestial, the spiritual and the natural. Through all these the divine flows... In the celestial kingdom the angels appear as naked infants and everything is 'built' from wood. In the spiritual kingdom gold is seen, etc. Is this information still valid?* 3) *What should we think about the fact that the Gospels report the stories of the Resurrection differently? In Matthew (28:16-17): "Then the eleven disciples went away into Galilee, to the mountain which Jesus had appointed to them. And when they saw Him, they worshiped Him; but some doubted." Luke doesn't mention Galilee. We read (Luke 24:50-51): "And He led them out as far as Bethany, and He lifted up His hands and blessed them. Now it came to pass, while He blessed them, that He was parted from them and carried up into heaven." 4) *I thought that the word 'God' was a designation of a profession or vocation... Like the functions of the Creator, Savior, Redeemer... Somebody would say: "The main profession of The Lord Jesus Christ is to be the Only God." It is normally difficult to use 'I AM WHO I AM.' Among common people I'd rather refer to 'The Divine Providence,' avoiding taking the Creator's name 'in vain.' Is it OK?* End of Ivan's questions. Petra's question is as follows: *If sentient entities in the positive state in their lives continuously experience some kind of enrichment, new knowledge and other progressive states, could You, Lord Jesus Christ — because You have the Absolute Knowledge and Knowing of everything — experience and acquire knowledge of something new? Do You need to or can You enrich Your Absolute Life?* This is an interesting question. End of the questions. The floor is Yours.*

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: We are going to address these questions in the sequence as they came. Let us begin with Ivan's question number one. What did Swedenborg actually see? First of all, in most instances, he talked with the spirits of the respective planets and very rarely with their actual natural inhabitants. Secondly, at that time, it was spiritually premature for Swedenborg and everyone else to know about the existence of the Zone of Displacement and that this Zone is a reflection of the arrangements of the celestial bodies the way they are in the true physical or natural universe. For that reason, if, for example, Mercury, Venus, Earth, Mars, Jupiter, Saturn, Uranus, Neptune, Pluto and all their respective moons or any other celestial bodies, exist in the true natural universe, in that case, the same planets and everything else will appear in the same arrangement in the Zone of Displacement. In other words, this Zone parallels the true universe. However, the similarities end with this paralleling. The nature, structure, purpose, goal and setup of them are diametrically different. Whereas in the true natural or physical universe everything serves some kind of important creative, constructive and generally positive purpose, in the Zone of Displacement the trend is to oppose such a setup. Instead, everything in it is geared toward a negative purpose.

Now, as you remember from the previous Dialogs, each celestial body is ruled and regulated by the quality of the nature, structure and dynamics of the sentient minds. Any planetary condition, no matter what it is, is a reflection of the states, processes, nature, structure and dynamics of the sentient minds, both in their totality as well as in their singularities. The perceptual, sensorial, physical, mental and spiritual organs of such sentient minds are fully accommodated for the discernment and regulation of everything which takes place on any such planet. This regulatory process is originated in the spiritual mind, and by the means of the interior mind it is actualized by the external mind. From this perspective, you can say that spirits rule and regulate each and every planet or any celestial body because they do it from the position of their spiritual mind. Hence, the name 'spirits.'

In the Zone of Displacement the same rule applies. Spirits, or their pseudo-spiritual minds rule and regulate all respective planets and celestial bodies of the entire Zone of Displacement. And because each such planet reflects the nature, structure, dynamics, states, processes and conditions of that mind, its condition will be exactly the same as the condition of that mind. So, whereas in the true Creation each and every planet is visibly occupied by the sentient entities who are of purely positive and good nature, in the Zone of Displacement each and every such planet is occupied by spirits of negative and evil nature. Because of

that, in the Zone of Displacement, as well as in your Solar System, such planets, with the exception of your planet, appear to be not only void of any life forms but they have cataclysmic conditions or conditions which, from the viewpoint of human life (non-life), are unable to sustain any life at all. However, this is only an illusion of the human mind. The problem with the human mind is that in its structural design and in the design of all its tools, instruments and sensorial and perceptual organs, it is able to perceive or sense only that which is integral to its nature, structure, dynamics, states, processes and conditions. Anything above or beyond these means of their observation and perception, is outside of their ability to see or to recognize what is really out there, or in this case, on other planets. On those planets they see only what their perceptual, sensorial tools, organs and instruments allow them to see. From that position they see only external cataclysmic conditions, void of any life. They are unable to see anything behind them.

Moreover, the way the human mind defines life is limited to what humans consider to be life. Because human life is not a true life (it was defined as non-life), it is unable to postulate the possibility of any other type of life, or life under any other spiritual, mental, physical, biological, chemical, physiological and environmental conditions than what they have or experience. From that position, and because by the methods and instruments of observation available to them, they are unable to conceive the possibility that life could thrive and be manifested in some other condition totally different and incomprehensible to them, they conclude that no life could exist on other planets which do not exhibit the same characteristics as their planet has. Humans are incapable of conceiving an idea that life could thrive and be manifested on Mercury, for example, the temperature of which is far above what could sustain life the way human life (non-life) is manifested; or on Pluto, the temperature of which may approach almost absolute zero. And yet, because each planet, no matter in what condition or shape — as observable by human tools and instruments — is ruled and regulated by living spirits or sentient entities, such planets are being fully inhabited by sentient entities who make such planetary conditions not only possible but which are needed for them in order to fulfill the purpose and goal for which they inhabit such planets.

Therefore, from this understanding you may conclude that all planets of your Solar System, as well as all planets in the entire Creation and pseudo-creation, are fully inhabited by sentient entities. That humans are unable to see them or that they see only something which in their limited and limiting view or perception is unable to support their type of life, is an entirely different story. In fact, they were structurally

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

designed in such a manner so that they would not be able to see or perceive anything of that nature on other planets. You see, originally, it was necessary to deceive humans into believing that their brand of life on the natural or physical level is the only life possible and that no other type of life may or can exist. Because of that, humans were goaded and deceived into believing that they are very special and the only one possible, and therefore, the type of life they have is the most desirable, the most beautiful and the most cherished in the entire universe. This subterfuge was necessary to establish in order to make human life possible. If humans were to have tangible experiences of the being and existence of any other types and forms of sentient life but what they have or what they are, or if they would be able to see or observe how sentient life is thriving on Mercury, or Pluto or on any other planet, for example; or, if based on such experiences, they would recognize that their life is, in fact, not a true life, in that case, they would never agree to be in human life (non-life). In that case, the experiment in non-life for the purpose of comparison with the true life could not come to its fruition. If this were to happen, all sentient minds would be plagued by the questions to which no answers would be given. How could you establish the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state under such adverse conditions?

So, what was it that Swedenborg perceived at that time? Because at that time it would not be beneficial and spiritually proper to reveal anything of the above described situation, Swedenborg was allowed to communicate with the spirits of the planets of the true physical universe but not with the spirits of the pseudo-universe or of the Zone of Displacement. For that reason, in most instances, those planets were occupied by positive types of sentient entities. And because their planets reflected the positiveness and goodness of their inhabitants, none of them had conditions as seen, for example, on the planets of your Solar System. Only some minor resemblances were noted at that time. However, even if Swedenborg were to be talking to the spirits of the planets of the Zone of Displacement, because of his special endowment he had from Me, by which endowment he was able to transcend his limited and limiting human perceptual abilities, he would still be able to see that those planets were fully inhabited by sentient entities with all kinds of external structures, cities, villages, etc. So, either way, his perception would be the correct one, although from the position of your astronomical tools of observation, any such claims would be refuted because these tools or instruments are unable to detect anything more than some kind of inferno, or eternal ice, unable to support any life forms. As you see from these obvious facts, you can never rely on what your sensory organs, as well as instruments and tools of your so-called

scientific observation, are able to convey to you. They can be very much deceiving.

On the other hand, do not forget what was said about these issues in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***. There are many reflections of each compacted spiritual, mental or physical planet and/or celestial entity. Also, there are many parallel universes which have the same types of planets, Solar Systems, galaxies and their various celestial bodies. If on some of them you would be unable to see any life forms (although they would be there!), it does not necessarily mean that you would not be able to see thriving life on some others. Because those planets on which you are able to see the thriving sentient life forms are structurally the same as their original compacted planets, you would have to logically conclude that they are all inhabited despite the fact that you cannot see their sentient inhabitants with your physical eyes or with whatever you are trying to look at them. So, please, do not ever limit yourself in your knowledge to something which is so limited and limiting as your perceptual sensory organs and all the tools and instruments constructed on the nature, structure and dynamics of those organs. Unfortunately, this is exactly what human science, in its exploration, does.

Let us now address Ivan's second question. The answer to this question should be deducible from everything that has been so far revealed in My New Revelation. As you know, at the time of Swedenborg, My New Nature had not been in place yet. For that reason, there was a continuous separation of Me as Jesus Christ from that which was called God-the Father. This separation, which had been in existence since Creation was created into its process, determined the structural design of Creation. Do not forget that at that time, before My New Nature came into Absolute Being and Absolute Existence, I, as the only God, was at an entirely different level of perception and relatedness to My Creation than the case is now or after I acquired My New Nature. This situation required that all dimensions of My Creation would be positioned in the discrete mode of their being and existence and that any interactions amongst them would be accomplished by the means of spiritual correspondences. In order to illustrate and demonstrate various different aspects of My Absolute Sentient Mind, My Creation proceeded first from My Absolute Spiritual Mind, giving rise to the celestial kingdom ruled and regulated by the principles of goodness from love; secondly, it proceeded from My Absolute Interior Mind, giving rise to the spiritual kingdom ruled and regulated by the truth of wisdom; and thirdly, it proceeded from My Absolute External Mind, giving rise to the natural kingdom ruled and regulated by the faith of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

the truth by means of its wisdom and by positive works of good by means of its love.

In order to have such a distinction, as well as in order to reflect the structural design of the relative sentient mind, which was patterned by the Structure and Nature of My Absolute Sentient Mind, initially, it was necessary to put these kingdoms into the above mentioned discrete mode of their being and existence. Within the sphere and atmosphere of their influence, they established their own unique mode of life. That mode was conveyed to all by means of the spiritual correspondences which determined the function of the various external objects by which sentient entities surrounded themselves. Thus, for example, if in the celestial kingdom all sentient entities lived in the love of their goodness and in the innocence of their life, in that case, the function of their external objects would reflect such a condition. Because wood, for example, had this particular correspondence, everything around them was built from wood. At the same time, if they lived in the innocence of their life, and if this innocence had some relevance to the so-called infancy, in that case, from far away, they would appear as infants; although in close proximity, they would be seen in their true adult form. And the same was true as far as the spiritual and natural kingdoms were concerned. Each of them had their own spiritual correspondences which were reflected in the function ascribed by them to their external objects (for example, gold corresponded to the truth of wisdom, as bronze corresponded to the faith of that truth, etc.).

However, with the acquirement and permanent establishment of My New Nature and with the availability of My New Revelation, as well as with the creation of the New Universe, nothing remained the same as it used to be at the time of Swedenborg. For that reason such divisions, as seen and described by him, although proper and correct at his time, are no longer in place. As you know, the Name ‘The Lord Jesus Christ,’ among many other things, signifies total Absolute Integration, Unification and Oneness in a direct and tangible condition and state. This situation is fully reflected in the nature and structure of the New Universe in its relative condition. Because of this new situation, the former separation, isolation and self-enclosed condition of each mentioned kingdom was abolished and a new lifestyle among them was established. This lifestyle fully reflects the state of integration, unification and oneness of all and everything within the domain of the true Creation. After all, if the life of Creation depends on My Absolute Life Absolutely, in that case, whatever happens within Me is immediately conveyed to and has consequential impact on the state, condition and process of the entire Creation. Accordingly, everything in

My Creation changes to reflect this situation within Me. Thus, as a result of this new situation, such things as 'wood,' 'gold,' 'infants,' etc., no longer only appear to be the property of any respective kingdom. They could appear simultaneously at any level if needed and necessary and if chosen by their masters — the respective sentient entities. After all, such things as that are only a projection of the state of their sentient mind. Nothing more can be ascribed to them.

Let us now address Ivan's third question. The answer to this question has a deep spiritual, mystical and philosophical connotation. Is there any contradiction between the quoted two texts? The problem with your perception of the content and meaning of the quoted two texts is that you have a tendency to take them literally from the position of their physical designation/place. If you agree that everything recorded in the Four Gospels was recorded in the language of pure spiritual correspondences and that every single word, every dot, has some important spiritual meaning, then, in that case, you have to look not at the literal place where the event of My departure from planet Zero took place, but to what those two places spiritually correspond.

As you know, the Christian Bible contains only the four mentioned Gospels. Yet, there were very many other Gospels written at various times following My departure from planet Zero. Why is it so? My Divine Providence provided that only those Gospels were included in the Bible which deal, in some way or other, with My death and resurrection. These two events have the central and the most important mystical, spiritual and literal significance in the doctrine of Christianity. All other Gospels either do not mention these facts or they deny that they happened. Take for example, the Gospel According to Thomas. Its content is solely limited to My teachings or sayings without description of any other events which accompanied those teachings. Thomas was not interested in recording anything that I did or what happened to Me but only in what I said or he thought that I said. Because of that, the words of his Gospel do not contain spiritual correspondences. On the other hand, the Gospel According to Mary Magdalena was concealed from the Christians of a later date because they founded their spiritual doctrine on Paul's Epistles. As you know, in Paul's view, a woman has no place in the church and she is not allowed to express her opinion, but to rely on her husband's input on any issues of spiritual matters. And she has to ask him at home, in the privacy of its setting and not on the church's ground. For that reason, because Mary Magdalena's Gospel reflects the strong leadership position of women in the matters of spiritual and any other issues and life in general, the leaders of the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Christian church excluded her Gospel from the canonized versions of the Four Gospels.

Then you have the so-called Gospel of Truth (author unknown). Besides that, you have numerous so-called Gnostic Gospels. These Gospels contain too many distortions and falsities related to My life and work on planet Zero. At the same time, they do not deal with My death and resurrection or they simply deny that they took place at all. And yet, if I did not die and subsequently was not resurrected, in that case, I could not enter all the Hells and various regions of the Zone of Displacement and establish a condition there for their future salvation as well as for regulation and control of everything in the negative state in general. On the other hand, if I were to stay dead and were not to go through the process of resurrection, becoming, once again, alive to eternity, not only could no one else in the negative state be saved but the entirety of the positive state and My Creation in general would perish likewise. Staying dead would mean that the negative state won on the all-inclusive scale, and not only locally or on planet Zero, but took over the entirety of My Creation. Because life of all and everything depends on My Absolute Life or My being Absolutely Alive, without Me and My Life, everyone would perish. So, as you see from these facts, it was not only essential for the salvation of all for Me to experience death but, most importantly, it was necessary for Me to be resurrected and become eternally alive in an Absolute sense. This factor contains the entire mystery of the Works of My Salvation.

Now, as you remember from Dialog 78 in the first Volume of these Dialogs, the Four Gospels, in their description of My life and work on planet Zero, occupy a different angle or position from which they interpret everything related to Me and all spiritual issues. To remind you: John's position was from the East; Matthew's position was from the South; Luke's position was from the West; and Mark's position was from the North. The spiritual meaning of this designation was explained in Dialog 78. We are not going to repeat it here. These different positions determined the need of placing or describing various events of My life, death and resurrection in a somewhat different connotation. This was done in order to trigger important spiritual correspondences which would enable building certain important spiritual conditions having multiversal, and not only localized, significance.

As noticed above, Matthew places the event of My departure from planet Zero on the mountain in the land of Galilee. Luke talks about My leading My disciples as far as Bethany. Notice the words 'as far as.' Mark does not denote any particular place but simply indicates that I

appeared to My disciples and after rebuking them for not understanding anything related to My mission and for their unbelief and hardness of heart, I simply departed from them and went to heaven. John extensively speaks about My activities following My resurrection but he omits saying anything about the place or the event of My departure from planet Zero. None of these descriptions are made by coincidence. They all have deep spiritual meaning determined by the spiritual position from which they were recorded. In this sense you can interpret those events in the following manner: The word 'Galilee' corresponds to the ability of everyone in the negative state, who was not an integral part of the positive state, to know and to have the Truth and by that factor, to be in Good. Thus, as you see, no one whatsoever is excluded from the possibility to have such knowledge and to be that way. What would really happen if someone, no matter where he/she is located or in what state he/she is in, would not be able to know this Truth and to be Good? In that case, such an individual could not be saved to eternity. What would happen if such a thing were to be possible? Logically speaking, in that case, the negative state and its human non-life could not be eliminated and the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state could not be activated either — ever.

By the factor of My disciples going into Galilee, and meeting Me there, I reaffirmed two things: Thanks to My death and resurrection, a condition was set up in all places and states of the negative state (remember, Galilee was located in the land of Gentiles, that is to say, in the negative state in general, and not in the Jewish land, which carried the spiritual correspondence of the localized positive state), which would trigger everyone's ability to know and accept My Truth, and based on that, to become Good from the Love of My Wisdom. That it was a mountain which I had appointed for My disciples to meet Me there and which was located in the midst of Galilee signifies that by the process of My resurrection and conquering the negative state and human non-life in all their aspects without any exception and exclusion, I permanently placed all factors of the positive state (mountain here corresponds to the positive state in general and not only locally) in the midst of the negative state in order to assure that there is a continuous opportunity for everyone in the negative state and human non-life to be brought out from the negative state and subsequently to be converted to the positive state. Such a condition could not have been established if I were not able to experience death and subsequent resurrection. This condition was solely contingent on these two experiences by the means of which I conquered, subjugated and took control of everyone and everything in the negative state and human non-life. As you remember, without such experiences, which are typical human experiences, My approach to the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

negative state could be only from the position of My Absolute State of Love and Goodness. Being exposed to them under those kinds of conditions would cause instant annihilation of everyone and everything in the negative state and human non-life. Such an outcome would be inconceivable and contradictory to My Absolutely Positive Absolute Nature. If such a thing were to be possible at all, My Nature would become negative, and as a consequence not only would everyone and everything in the negative state and human non-life perish, but everyone and everything in the positive state would perish as well.

Now, Luke's description places My departure as far as Bethany. This is a localized place in close proximity to Jerusalem, which corresponds to the falsities and evils of the negative state represented by the factor of the Jewish nation rejecting Me as their Savior or Messiah. That I led My disciples as far as Bethany signifies leading them to the ultimate condition in which the negative state with all their evils and falsities was originated. In other words, in order to succeed in the eventual eternal elimination of the negative state and its human non-life, it was necessary to establish a proper condition in the core from which the negative state with its human non-life had come forth and which condition would trigger in everyone in that core (in this case, the pseudo-creators and consequently the renegades also) their ability to recognize and accept My Truth and become Good or positive in general. Remember, even in that very core or the originating source of the negative state and human non-life, no one was/is absolutely evil or is in absolute falsities. By the symbolization of leading My disciples as far as Bethany, and from that position departing to heaven, by the means of My death and resurrection, I established in that core a firm condition which will be able to eliminate any further possibility for reactivation of the negative state and its human non-life to eternity. At the same time, by that factor, everyone in that core will be able to see, to recognize and to accept My Truth and become positive and good to eternity.

So as you see from this revelation, in both instances (in Matthew and Luke) we are dealing with the very same situation as related to the negative state and its human non-life and their eventual salvation. In one case (Matthew) this concept relates to everyone in the negative state; and in the other case (Luke) it relates to the very core or originating source of the negative state. For that reason, seeing it from this proper spiritual perspective, no contradiction exists between them because they both deal with the situation in the negative state and human non-life.

In Mark's approach, which is the approach of the North or of the Truth of Faith, the issue is an all-inclusiveness as far as the impact of the fact of My death and resurrection is concerned. In this case, no preference is given to any particular place or state because My Salvation has and will have an all-inclusive application. In this sense, not only is it everyone in the negative state and human non-life who are being given an opportunity to be saved (which opportunity they all will eventually take) but it also includes everyone in the positive state because without My death and resurrection, as a consequence of My incarnation for that purpose on planet Zero, they would eventually succumb to the negative state and they would all eventually die spiritually and, as a result, they would also die in an absolute sense. The reason why they would also die in an absolute sense, following their spiritual death, is because, as you know, being that the negative state originated from the relative sentient mind, by the factor of being relative to the relative only, it cannot continue forever. Therefore, anyone who would succumb to the negative state, not having any means for being saved from it or being brought back to the positive state, would ultimately die in an absolute sense. For this reason, Mark avoids mentioning any specific place from which My departure back to heaven happened.

John's description has even deeper spiritual significance. As you know, his Gospel does not mention anything about My physical departure from planet Zero or from the negative state in general. Why is it so? Because, spiritually speaking, I have never left planet Zero and the negative state in general. Although physically, I did leave in order to reunite Myself with My Essence – the Father, and consequently acquire My New Nature, spiritually, I am continuously present in their domain. As you know, before My incarnation on planet Zero, My presence in the negative state and human life could be by mediation only — through someone else. No direct, immediate and experiential contact was available before that time. As you remember, such contact would constitute instant annihilation of everyone and everything in the negative state and human non-life.

In order to prevent that from happening, and in order to establish the most necessary condition within the domain of the negative state and human non-life for everyone in them being eventually saved and brought back to the positive state, it was vital and most essential that I would take over the rule and control over them. The only possible way to accomplish this takeover was by incarnation on planet Zero, by My physical death and subsequent resurrection. By those two factors, a condition was established which placed Me in full control and domination over them in an absolute sense. Because of this condition,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

My presence with them became a spiritual fact and reality. From that time on, I am as much directly (and not only by mediation) present with them and in them as with everyone in the positive state. No difference exists anymore between them in this respect (as far as My presence and control are concerned). In this sense therefore, I have never left planet Zero or the negative state and My presence with all situated there is constantly assured as long as they are permitted to continue in their non-life. That presence of Mine will lead to their eventual conversion to the positive state. This is the reason why John did not mention anything about My departure from planet Zero. It was necessary to assure everyone that I am directly spiritually present with all no matter where or in what state they are located. Do you see now how significant the positions are from which each of the mentioned Four Gospels portray My resurrection and everything that follows it?

And now let us address Ivan's fourth and last question. The issue here is the proper definition of My Name — The Lord Jesus Christ. There is the **function** related to that name and there is the deep mystical, spiritual and philosophical **meaning** of that Name. When we are addressing the **meaning** of that Name, it is required to emphasize the concept and the understanding that I, as The Lord Jesus Christ, am the only One Who Is The Absolute I AM WHO I AM. Such consideration should be the topic of your mutual discussions as related to the **meaning** of My Name, or your individual and personal interaction with Me or during your meditative states — whenever you think or meditate about Me as related to the **meaning** of My Name. On the other hand, whenever you consider the **function** which is reflected in the Nature, Structure and Dynamics of My Name, you do not need to address Me at all times as the Absolute I AM WHO I AM. Instead, you simply say whatever feels right to you individually and personally at each particular time, depending on the situation in which the need arises to talk about this issue. For that reason, it is appropriate to use such terms as, for example, 'The Divine Providence' or even 'God', especially and particularly in the presence of those humans who are not connected to My New Revelation at this time. The most important thing however, is your continuous emphasis on the Name of The Lord Jesus Christ. Whenever you can, you are advised to say that Name in the hearing of all who discuss spiritual issues with you. There is a very important spiritual reason for this. By talking about Me as The Lord Jesus Christ, you are setting up a condition in the minds of those with whom you converse about Me which will be utilized later on for triggering in them their ability to know the truth about Me and to accept Me as the only Absolute I AM WHO I AM, contained in the meaning of the words —

The Lord Jesus Christ. And this is all, related to Ivan's questions. They were very good and very timely questions.

Now, finally, let us address Petra's question. Well, the answer to her question could be deduced, to a certain extent, from what was said about the factor of My New Nature. If we are talking about New Nature, is it not obvious that I am in the process of experiencing something new and different? However, the situation is not as simple as that. For that reason, our response to Petra's question will be somewhat ambiguous. It is 'yes' and 'no.' It all depends from what mode of perception of reality you approach this answer. In the subjective mode, which is founded on sequence, continuation and succession, because of the projection of always something new and different, in the moment that projection takes place/state, profound changes occur, giving rise to the experience of something new and different. The way you have to understand this issue, is that, because of My New Nature, I am able to experience everything that any sentient entity experiences during the time/state of his/her new and different knowledge, emotions, feelings, thoughts, or whatever he/she has — by and through the relative state, condition and process of each particular sentient entity in exactly the same way the relative sentient entity does. And because the relative sentient entity is experiencing something new and different, by and through her/him, so do I.

However, it is a totally different story if you look upon this situation from the position of the objective mode and from the position of the Absolute State. As you remember, in this position everything takes place concurrently, simultaneously and synchronously. Because of that, all knowledges and experiences in their Absolute State and Condition occur at the same time/state. But because nothing old and previous exists in such a state or condition, and because whatever was, it was not in its 'was' but in its always 'is,' therefore, the only thing which is there is always new and different. Its continuous occurrence in the form of its newness and difference, and in the state of its simultaneity, concurrency and synchronicity, determines the factor of the ability to be in the state, condition and process of constantly experiencing something new and different. For that reason, within Myself and My Absolute State, I, and everything in Me, am always new and different. For that reason nothing is ever the same but at the very same time, paradoxically speaking, everything is the same in its newness and difference. So, from both modes of perception of reality — objective and subjective — I am in the Absolute State of My Own Newness, Difference, Knowledge, Knowing and everything else related to this issue. At the very same time, I am in the State of always knowing

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

everyone and everything which is and exists. However, because everyone and everything are in a relative state, condition and process, from their position, and from their newness and difference, I am also always New and Different. From My Absolute Position I always experience their newness and difference as My Own Absolute Newness and Difference. After all, such ability of theirs stems from the release of something new and different directly from Me for their new and different knowledge and knowing. And this is all that can be said about this issue at this time. This was a somewhat difficult philosophical subject. At this point in time, I would suggest to finish for today. You need to spend some time, Peter, in preparation for the publishing of the First Volume of our Dialogs. Until then — if needed, necessary and feasible.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your profound contribution. I will follow Your advice.

One Hundred and Fortieth Dialog

May 17, 2000

Peter: Well, basically, I have finished preparations for publishing the First Volume of our Dialogs with the exception of waiting for final corrections of Dialogs 50 through 100. Those corrections should be coming back to me soon from Betty and Heather. I assume that completion of this part of our work has some kind of spiritually significant importance. Correct me if I am wrong. Also, in the meantime, I received two questions from Alenka of Slovakia. I believe that a substantial portion of the answer to her first question was given by You in the earlier Dialogs. Her first question is as follows (I am translating this): *The pseudo-creators blocked within themselves the feminine principle and by that they also blocked love toward The Lord Jesus Christ, others and themselves. This block exists also within all creatures fabricated by the pseudo-creators. I am asking The Lord Jesus Christ to explain once again, how to reestablish integration of masculine and feminine principles.* Her second question is as follows: *Why do some entities ask The Lord Jesus Christ for giving them feelings of love toward The Lord Jesus Christ so that they could come closer to Him/Her and yet they continue not feeling it?* End of her questions. Her second question has also been on my mind throughout my entire life. Moreover, one of the European readers of these Dialogs described a very vivid dream and vision of being in the midst of creatures who are minions of the renegades and how brutal and terrible they are. Any comments on this reader's experience? This particular reader wants to remain anonymous. Another question came later on, and the author of this question wants to remain anonymous likewise. It relates to the issue of relationships with or involvements that Your representatives should have with others who are not representatives. This particular individual is fully aware of everything that has been recorded about this issue from the time of Your physical presence on planet Zero to the present time in Your New Revelation. To repeat this reader's question: *What is the proper way for the true representatives of The Lord Jesus Christ to be engaged in relationships (friendly, neighborhood and other types) with other humans who are not representatives of The Lord Jesus Christ?* Of course, before answering these questions, perhaps You have something else to elaborate upon at this time.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for offering Me to contribute My input first. As a matter of fact, I do have something to offer this morning in the form of elaboration on certain events as contained in your

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

brother Ivan's third question regarding My resurrection or, to be more precise, shortly after My resurrection. However, before going into that, let Me mention something else. As you know, Peter, Lyudmila's and your expectations about the type of work that both of you thought needed to be accomplished during her visit in Santa Barbara have not come true. I am asking both of you not to be disappointed about this unexpected and unpleasant (in your view) outcome. As her visit is coming to an end (she'll be leaving next Saturday, or on May 20, 2000), you are wondering what has been accomplished, if anything at all, during her stay with Gloria and you. I can assure you that much has been accomplished even though to your external perception the only thing which was happening has been her illness, emergency rooms, hospitalization, surgery and, following that, her recovery. And yet, all these factors played a very important role from the position of what was vital and crucial to be illustrated and demonstrated and what kinds of examples needed to be set up for some groups in the various Hells who are putting themselves into a position for unchoosing their mode of pseudo-life or non-life, desiring to convert to the positive state.

Let Me repeat it again for emphasis of the importance of this issue: In your roles as My true representatives (and I am talking here about all My representatives and not only about Lyudmila's and your case, Peter), no matter what happens or does not happen in your personal and individual lives, no matter how pleasant or unpleasant it is, no matter how positive or negative it is, or how painful and sickening it is, at all levels of your experiences, in all aspects of your life, no matter how significant or insignificant it appears to you, all that serves some kind of very important spiritual purpose. In most instances, although not in all, such happenings are for the purpose of illustration and demonstration of something needed at each particular junction of its happening, in order to represent it not only to the sentient entities positioned within the sphere and domain of the negative state, but also for everyone else in the positive state throughout My entire Creation. And although externally, by the means of your conscious mind, it does not appear to be so, or it seems to you as if no one is benefiting from whatever you are experiencing at each particular time, nevertheless, let it be known to you by My Words, that this is really the case.

At this particular time, during Lyudmila's visit in Santa Barbara, it was very much needed for her, for Gloria and for you, Peter, to experience or to go through exactly what all three of you went through. Nothing else would be beneficial and useful during that time in this respect. So, do not fret or be disappointed (although you are not!) that Lyudmila has not

been able to do any translation work. The meaning and the need of this time has been entirely different. The specifics of her personal experiences in this respect have to be discovered by her during her communication with Me. It is between Me and her. After she discovers them, she may, if she wishes, share it with you or anyone else she'll deem appropriate.

Now, let us elaborate a little more on some aspects of the mentioned events which followed My resurrection before My physical departure from planet Zero. In the previous Dialog, we have mentioned the importance of the Four Gospels' description of those events and their placement. At the same time I want you (all of you) to be aware of the striking differences which exist in the style of recording everything related to My life on planet Zero as contained in the Four Canonized Gospels of the Christian Bible and the way it is being portrayed in the so-called Gnostic Gospels. That style, from what you have been able to surmise, Peter, based on reading some of the translated fractions of those Gospels, is such that, at the very first glance, or during the reading of every word, it places severe doubts within your mind about the verity of anything contained in them. And not only that, but their style gives you a clear indication that nothing in them has any significant spiritual correspondences.

On the other hand, the True Four Gospels, as contained in the Christian Bible, by every single word and by the style of their recording, and by the language they use, give you a very clear indication that they do contain something spiritually very important and significant. This is the very reason why it was provided by My Divine Providence that only these Four Gospels, and no others, would be included within the Bible. And not only that, but any other so-called Gnostic Gospels, although they may contain some grains of truth as related to the personal interactions amongst My Disciples, for example, or to some limited aspects of My personal life during My stay on planet Zero, they were either entirely lost or only fragments of them were preserved. As you know, such an outcome for them is not by coincidence; as it is not by coincidence that only Four Gospels were included in the Christian Bible. In this case, you have to look at these facts not from the position of the human historians, who interpret these events from their own limited and limiting position, but from the position of the Works of My Divine Providence. It was also by the provision of My Divine Providence that only those things were recorded in the Four Gospels, as related to My life on planet Zero and what I said or how I and My disciples behaved or related, which were needed, necessary and appropriate for the spiritual benefit of all and which therefore, contain deep spiritual correspondences. Everything else,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

not having such importance, was omitted from them. The Gnostic Gospels do not have this kind of significance. Therefore, from the spiritual standpoint, they are useless. They may have only some historical value and they can serve as subjects of your human curiosity. Unfortunately, even this value is a pure distortion and falsification of those events. So, do not be taken in by any of them!

Now, as was mentioned in the previous Dialog (139), and as was recorded in Matthew and Luke, upon My appearance to My disciples following My resurrection, some present during that time doubted that it was truly Me (Matthew 28:17). What is the significance of this statement about doubting despite the fact that I personally, with all signs of My injuries, showed Myself to them? Do you remember what was said about the issue of doubting in our Dialog 133? The structural design of the human mind is such that no matter how many external or even internal proofs are provided for that mind, nevertheless, it will have a tendency to doubt its own experiences. Just look at yourself, Peter: What kind of torturous doubts are you going through at all times about whether what is contained in My New Revelation, and particularly in these Dialogs, is truly from Me — The Lord Jesus Christ, or not; or whether you are being deceived or are deceiving yourself when you claim that I speak with You? The issue of doubting needed to be stated already at that time, in My physical presence, in order to illustrate and demonstrate the true nature of the human mind which was originally fabricated exactly for that purpose — to doubt Who I Am and what My True Nature Is. Do you think that if the typical human mind were to be structured differently than what it is that the negative state and its human non-life would have any chance to be activated and put into motion? If it were structured or fabricated differently, in that case, that mind would have no doubt about Me and My True Nature and about My mission on planet Zero and elsewhere. Such an outcome would totally nullify the purpose for which the typical human non-life was permitted to come to its adverse fruition. This is one of the reasons why it was necessary to illustrate and demonstrate the issue of this doubt at the time when My physical presence was the very fact of the doubters' lives.

So, what do we have here? The major point that needed to be established for future humans on planet Zero, as related to the acceptance or denial of Who I truly Am and what My True Absolute Nature are all about, was the full realization of the fact that My physical presence, and no matter what I would do or how many miracles I would perform, would not guarantee that humans, or anyone in the negative state, would be willing or be put into a position of accepting Me as the only True God (or in the

present conceptualization, the Only Absolute I AM WHO I AM) into their lives. And not only that, but by such physical presence of Mine, many individuals would be put into a position of imposition, accepting Me by the necessity of such external experiences and not by their own free will and free choice. As you remember from many statements in My New Revelation, acceptance of anything by the factor of imposition cannot be appropriated or attributed to anyone, especially and particularly to their internals where it really counts. Such an acceptance would be by their externals only where nothing can have permanent duration.

So, because of the above mentioned facts, the condition needed to be set up which would require from everyone to accept Me not on the physical, empirical, tangible, external, sensorial proofs, rendered, for example, by My physical presence, but on the inner, intuitive and purely subjective discernment and faith that I AM WHO I AM in an Absolute Sense. Only this kind of acceptance has an eternal value and significance. As you see from this setup, the major reason why only this type of acceptance would work, is that any other proofs about Me would have no redeeming or saving qualities and possibilities. To illustrate and demonstrate this factor, it was provided that some of those who were present at My physical appearance following My resurrection, would doubt that it was truly Me. By such an attitude they refuted the possibility that My physical presence could convince anyone about anything, in this case, that it was really Me. By it, these doubters illustrated that the only valid way for such an acceptance is the inner faith, trust, confidence, belief, recognition, intuition and discernment without any external imposing factors whether someone or something is or is not what he/she/it really is. As you see, the spiritual importance of this illustration and demonstration is enormous.

The second issue that needs to be reiterated is the issue of leading My disciples as far as Bethany — as recorded in Luke (24:50). Whereas Galilee was located outside of the Jewish nation's boundaries, Bethany was in the midst of the Jewish land. As was mentioned in the previous Dialog (139), in that portion which dealt with this issue, Galilee represented the entirety of the negative state and its inhabitants with an inborn ability to know and accept the Truth and to be in Good and consequently, to be good. On the other hand, Bethany represented the very core of the negative state which originated, initiated, established and put into motion all evils and falsities of the negative state. The reason why in this instance the Jewish nation, through the spiritual correspondence of Bethany, represented the very core of this setup, was because, as you know, it was the Jewish nation that had My Word (the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Old Testament). In that Word My presence was assured on planet Zero, giving its inhabitants the possibility to do what they were supposed to do. Now, the way the Jews treated My Word, was the ultimate ritualization, externalization, distortion and falsification of anything contained in that Word. To do that was a sign of extreme evil and falsity. And because the Jewish people had/have a direct affinity to the pseudo-creators, being their most direct descendants on planet Zero, in this particular case they represented the entire clan of the pseudo-creators who invented, originated and established the non-life of the negative state and human non-life.

In order to provide the necessary condition in this core for its eventual elimination and for salvation of everyone who was, is or will be the integral part of that core, or who established, activated and put into motion that core in the first place, it was necessary for Me to position Myself in the very midst of it (as far as Bethany — nothing farther existed at that time) and, by the factor of My death and resurrection, to plant into that core the same ability of recognition, acceptance and implementation of My Absolute Truth and Its Good by the means of the Wisdom of My Absolute Love, as it was done in Galilee — in the totality of the negative state in general and human non-life in particular. By the acquirement and acceptance of this knowledge, the entities in that core and elsewhere are being given a very effective tool by which they will be able, when the time is right, to unchoose forever everything related to the negative state as well as the negative state itself. And this is all I wanted to talk about today.

Peter: I thank You very much for Your meaningful contribution. Are we ready to proceed with the answers to the above formulated questions?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, we are ready. Let us begin with the issue of the pseudo-creators' blocking the feminine principle and, by that factor blocking their ability to experience true love to Me, others and themselves. As you clearly remember from the earlier Dialogs, one of the most effective ways for invention, activation, establishment and manifestation of the non-life of the negative state and human non-life, was to separate, isolate and remove the feminine principle from its equal position as related to its nature of being love in general. However, the issue of this removal, isolation, separation and block was not as simple as that. The problem with this setup was that in order for any life at all (whether it is a true life or non-life) to come to its fruition, it needs to be loved. Nothing whatsoever can be and exist if it is not loved. This is true also regarding the negative state and human non-life. As mentioned

many times before, they needed to be loved in order for them to come to their own pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. So, in this sense, it would not be exactly correct to say that the pseudo-creators blocked the feminine principle entirely from their effort of fabricating something which would be totally different from what was available, known and experienced at that time. In fact, in order to be able to invent and establish anything at all of this nature, they needed to utilize the feminine principle in some way. If they were not, they would fail in their effort. The issue here was not that much in blocking, isolating and separating this principle, as in restructuring, rebuilding and distorting it in such a way that it would serve an entirely different purpose for which it was established in the first place.

If the nature of the genuine feminine principle is Love in general, or love toward Me, others and yourself, in that case, you need to pervert this nature in such a way that it would turn that love away from Me, others and your true 'I am.' As you see, here you have two factors of love as related to each individual. There is the love of self in its true 'I am,' and there is the love of one's ego which passionately hates everything of the true 'I am.' After all, the true 'I am' is considered by the ego to be its eternal enemy which makes it impossible for that ego to continue in its very life (non-life) forever. So, from the position of true femininity, love is always directed to your true 'I am.' Because the true 'I am' is the carrier of My Life, My Love and everything else stemming from Me, by loving the 'I am,' you love Me and others. And vice versa: By loving Me and others, you love yourself in your true 'I am.' The pseudo-creators needed to redefine and restructure this kind of love and its true nature. Because the carrier of this love was the feminine principle, it was the femininity that was the main target of this redefinition and restructuring by the pseudo-creators. If love of Me, others and your true 'I am' was the state of pure internals, in that case, it was necessary to divert that direction from the internals and place it in the externals. And because the properties of the externals are rooted in one's ego, artificially built for that purpose, in that case, all love is diverted toward anything that serves that ego, becoming by that fact, a pseudo-love. At the same time such a pseudo-love, being in love with the externals, becomes love of this world or of everything which is outside of the internals.

So, as you see from this fact, the true love of Me, others and the true 'I am' was successfully turned into self-love and love to this world-externals where no true life exists. Thus, love to the non-life of the negative state and human non-life was established, giving rise to all atrocities and abominations with which they are so much infested. This fact can be

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

considered a true genesis of the non-life and non-love of the negative state and its human non-life and non-love. So, it is not so much that the pseudo-creators blocked themselves from loving themselves but they redirected that love into the wrong direction — primarily toward their ego, which they invented and put into motion for that purpose.

Based on these facts, the only way to accomplish the proper integration of masculine and feminine principles again, the way they used to be before their redefinition, redirection and restructuring for the purpose of invention, activation, establishment and manifestation of all aspects of the non-life of the negative state and its human non-life, is to, first of all, become fully aware of these facts on everyone's conscious level; and secondly, to express a sincere desire to amend or make corrections in one's ways. You see, Peter, and all who read these words, the process of invention, activation, establishment and manifestation of this type of love (non-love), and what the genuine purpose for doing something like that was, was taken out of or forgotten by everyone's conscious minds, including the pseudo-creators'. For that reason, in order to make things right again, the first step in this respect is to bring these facts to everyone's conscious attention, and especially to the pseudo-creators' attention, because they were the ones who screwed things up in this respect and they are the ones who therefore, need to make things right.

These Dialogs, as well as the entirety of My New Revelation, serve this purpose well. In fact, this is one of the many important reasons for this dialoging taking place. Once this awareness becomes fully registered in everyone's and the pseudo-creators' conscious minds, by that fact the second step will be activated. In the second step, the memories about all these processes, procedures and purposes will be opened and become available for scrutiny to the pseudo-creators and all others in their domain and the domain of the renegades. Once they fully recognize the permission factor and purpose for which it was granted to establish something like that, and once they know about their voluntary status to ask those questions and get appropriate answers on behalf of all, the third step in this respect will be taken. In this step, the pseudo-creators, renegades and everyone else in the negative state and human non-life, will express their full desire to **unchoose** everything related to the non-life of the negative state and human non-life, and instead, to choose the original integrative state of all principles of femininity and masculinity. At that point in time, as well as during this time, while some of them are requesting conversion to the positive state, they will be and are petitioning Me to restore the state of this vital integration so that they can experience and express, once again, true love toward Me, others and

their true 'I am.' I am the only one who can restore this state. The reason why it is only I who can do it, is because any integration can be accomplished only from the state of Absolute Integration. You cannot very well integrate anything from the state of disintegration. And because I am the only One Who is the Absolute State of Integration, I will perform this process on everyone who will ask for it.

However, you have to realize that you can ask for and receive a positive response for it, and subsequently accomplish this state of integration, only if you are in the state of your ultimate choice. In your human life, as long as you are in the state of the illustrative and demonstrative phase of that which is not supposed to be chosen, such integration is not possible to achieve. The only thing you can achieve under your human condition is the first and, partially, the second step. Thus, you are permitted to have this information in the first step; and in the second step, you may have a strong desire to unchoose everything related to your human non-life in particular and to the negative state in general; but the third step, in which I will provide this full integration for you, will be possible only after you are out of your human non-life, the way it is right now; meaning, as long as it is in the role of its illustrative and demonstrative position which shows everyone what not to choose and how not to be.

As far as you, My true representatives, are concerned, in this respect your role is to make this information available to all in the negative state, to the pseudo-creators and other humans by the process of reading, meditating on, discussing and implementing everything that has so far been revealed to you. The other assignment which you have in this respect, and which was clearly mentioned before in these Dialogs, is to establish proper treatment of your own masculinity and femininity. As you remember from those Dialogs, the way you treat men if you are a woman is the way you treat your own masculinity. The way you treat women if you are a man is the way you treat your own femininity. Based on that, and stemming from that, you treat all men and/or women that way, respectively. If you learn to treat each other with the utmost respect, care and consideration, you will be preparing the way, making it much easier for the integration of your own masculinity and femininity within you, after you are out of the illustrative and demonstrative phase of your own personalized and individualized life.

This brings us to the answering of Alenka's second question. The answer to this question derives directly from everything that was said above. As long as you are in the illustrative and demonstrative phase of your life, for many of you, it is impossible to experience feelings or emotions of love

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

toward Me and, by that factor, to be much closer to Me. Such feelings and emotions are of the external nature only. Strong affections, emotions and feelings which are manifested in your overall mental and physical states, under your human conditions, are unable to penetrate to the state of your true 'I am.' At the same time, what you feel, sense, experience, emote and know at the levels of your true 'I am,' where I reside, are, in most instances, unable to come down to your external awareness or to your ego states. If they were, they would be too overwhelming and unbearable to your human condition. Therefore, for your own sake, very often it is necessary to block your awareness of such true love toward Me and to have the sense of being close to Me. However, this position is only a position of your human mind. In the true reality of your 'I am,' such is not the case. In that state you not only fully experience, feel, emote, or whatever you have in this respect, your deep and profound love toward Me, your closeness with Me, but also My Absolute Love and Closeness toward you, personally and individually.

So, if you are sincerely and honestly asking Me to endow you with a greater degree of love toward Me and being closer to Me, and if, nevertheless, you do not externally feel having this love and closeness, it does not mean that such is not the case on your innermost level, where your true 'I am' is positioned and where I am present within you. As you see from the above, in many instances, this situation is for your own sake and for your own safety. At the same time, and this is very important, by not having any external or outward feelings of love in this respect, and yet, by being loyal and faithful in your services to Me and My New Revelation, by being My true representatives, you clearly illustrate and demonstrate to everyone everywhere and everywhen, that, regardless of all that, you continue in your role, position, assignment or whatever you have, which you agreed to have from Me. Nothing can deter you from that — even if you think that your request for endowing you with greater feelings of love toward Me and being closer to Me are not being fulfilled. You see, if I were to grant your request in this respect, the members of the negative state would gleefully conclude that I treat you preferentially and therefore, it is too easy for you to be the way you are or to avoid their temptations and attacks. So what is the difference between Me and them, and between them and My true representatives? After all, in the negative state, such preferential and special treatment of one person over the other is a matter of their structural pseudo-life. Are you able to see the rationale and logic for this situation or setup? As you see, everything serves some very important spiritual purpose.

Peter: Yes, I can see it clearly. Thank You very much for this reminder and explanation.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. On the other hand, let us consider your ability to love someone or something from the bottom of your heart. What do you think, from where does this ability in you stem? From My presence in your true 'I am' or in your Spiritual Mind, the core of which contains your true 'I am' and My presence in it. So, look at this ability this way: If you are able to love someone or something by the factor of My constantly giving you or generating in you this ability, in that case, by the logic of this setup, as a consequence, you love Me by the means of such an individual. This is an issue of mediation. As you know, My physical presence on planet Zero cannot be available as long as everyone on it is not in the ultimate choice of their lives. Therefore, your love toward Me, as to a concrete physical entity, is not available likewise. In order to circumvent this situation, you are able to love and to feel that love toward some concrete physical entity. Your feeling of love toward such an entity is transmitted to Me, by the factor of such mediation, as to your Absolute Sentient Entity Who manifests Himself/Herself in the relative sentient entity whom you deeply love. So, remember, as long as you are able to love someone or something and to feel that love deeply in your heart and in the sincerity of your mind, in that case, you most certainly love Me. It will be a different situation, once the illustrative and demonstrative phase of your life on planet Zero will end and you will be able to make your ultimate choice. In that case, My physical presence, in My Human Form, will become available to you and therefore, you will be able to love Me, and feel that love and closeness to Me not only through someone or something else, but, in addition, also directly as one individual to another.

So, do not despair if you are not able to feel anything toward Me or My closeness with you, on your conscious, external or physical level. Remember, human life was specifically structured in such a way so as to not have any possibility of loving Me physically because of the lack of My physical, tangible and concrete presence with you or in your company as one human with another. Such a presence would preclude human non-life to be manifested as a typical human life or to fulfill its role and purpose for which it was allowed to be fabricated in the first place.

Peter: I understand and see the logic of this setup.

The Lord Jesus Christ: And now, let us address some other issues raised in the experiences with the minions of the renegades, as described

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

by the anonymous reader of these Dialogs; as well as raised by another anonymous enquirer. The vision described by one of the readers of these Dialogs of being in the company of the minions of the renegades and seeing their behavior and attitude, which for that reader was the most awful and shattering experience, reflects the true nature of the negative state in general and the nature of the renegades in particular. When you experience something like that, when it has such an extreme negative connotation, it is extremely difficult to conceive by your conscious mind that anything positive or good could be contained in any of them. On many occasions in your life, Peter, you had very similar experiences on planet Zero (and not only in visions or dreams) with many humans, while you were confined first as a prisoner in the Soviet concentration camps, and subsequently during your professional work in the American prisons and jails.

Under those kinds of conditions, when you see and directly experience pure evil in the behavior, attitude and personality makeup of such individuals, you begin to doubt whether individuals of this nature can be saved at all or whether they have the ability to see their condition, to feel remorse and, as a consequence, want to change. How can anyone of this nature, who enjoys being that way and who loves his/her evils and murderous drives, be in a position to acquire the knowledge of truth from good and to become good? After all, even in his/her vocabulary nothing exists which would even remotely approximate anything of truth and good.

Having such adverse and despicable experiences, you begin to wonder whether the literal sense of the Christian Bible, and any other so-called holy books, is right in its depiction of the so-called sinners being condemned to hell to eternity without any ability to change or to recede from their evils and falsities or from their atrocious and abominable lifestyle. In fact, it appears as if they have no desire to change or to become positive and good; as though the very words of 'positive and good' turn them off and are completely aversive to them.

The problem with this conceptualization is that you look upon such cases from your relative condition and from your external observation without discerning or seeing things the way they are behind the scene or the way they are seen by Me from My Absolute Condition. If you accept the fact that such individuals, as everyone else, are not absolute but only relative, then you have to make a logical conclusion that their evils, falsities, atrocities, abominations, despicable deeds, unbearable, cruel and murderous behaviors, or whatever they have, can be nothing but

relative only. If it is relative only, it cannot have an absolute value or validity. Do you wish to condemn anyone for their relative behavior, attitude, lifestyle, or whatever, by placing them in a state of an absolute, unchangeable condition — to eternity, to be in hell without any chance for changing or being saved from that kind of impossible predicament? Is anything of this nature possible for someone who is relative and whose lifestyle, in all its modes and manifestations, cannot be anything else but relative likewise and therefore, by the logic of this setup, cannot last to eternity? Do you see the problems with such Biblical depictions as burning in the fire of hell to eternity of someone who is relative? What kind of logic is that? What kind of justice is that?

On the other hand, from the position of My Absolute State, I can clearly see and discern everyone's potential for change. And not only that, but I Myself placed in everyone the ability to recognize, to know and to accept the truth and its good and good and its truth and, based on that, to have the ability to change and to recede from their temporary and relative evils and falsities. If the negative state did not originate in the Absolute State, for that reason it cannot have eternal continuation. Therefore, everyone in it, at the proper and right time, will come to the full realization about the temporary and transient nature of their evil lifestyle, and, from the special code, placed by Me in them, when it is decoded and triggered, they will all be able to take a way out of the negative state; or, in other words, they will choose to **unchoose** the negative state with all its atrocities and abominations, and instead, they will choose (or re-choose) the lifestyle of the positive state. That this change will take time and more time and that it will not happen overnight so-to-speak, is an entirely different story. However, it will happen, and it will happen no matter how long it takes from the standpoint of your conceptualization of physical time.

That this will be the case, was very obvious from the content of the vision that the mentioned reader had. In that vision one of the most evil individuals, who brutally murdered and butchered anyone who came across his path, was finally able to recognize his evil deeds by being caressed and by communicating with the reader, and based on that, he was able to request Me for help, expressing his desire to be converted to the positive state. Do you think that by being that way, by denying his original and genuine nature, buried behind all those artificially imposed false selves and ego states, such an individual, upon realization of his atrocious, brutal and abominable lifestyle, would not be severely and appropriately punished within himself by such states themselves? You have no idea how it feels or what it means for an individual of this

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

nature to suddenly realize or to become fully aware of his/her awful state of being such an evil and despicable person. Such realization and awareness, in themselves and of themselves, in the moment they hit his/her conscious mind, are experienced as the most painful, gruesome and unbearable condition, which in its intensity and extensity fully equals in manifold measure what the other individuals suffered by his/her hand or by his/her treatment of them. You can consider this awareness as a retributive and justly punishing factor of such negative and evil behavior. Following this phase of such an individual's personal hell, he/she becomes eligible for conversion to the positive state. And believe me, during that time, the individual in question would desire nothing more than to be out of the negative state. During this phase, suddenly he/she is experiencing in his/her own skin, so-to-speak, in the fullest possible measure, what it is to be evil and negative. His/her eyes become open and he/she now knows with absolute certainty what the negative state and its lifestyle are all about. Once such an experience becomes available to anyone in the negative state, no one retains any desire to continue in the non-life of the negative state.

Why do you think it was necessary to shut off any feelings or any proper awareness of what the true nature of the negative state is all about for people who fall in love with it? So that they really could fall in love with it and consequently, they could proceed with illustration and demonstration of its true nature as compared to the true life of the positive state. Otherwise, if they were to consciously know the truth about its nature, they would never fall in love with it. Fortunately though, because of the complete relative, temporary and transient nature of the negative state, once the full realization of these facts takes hold of their conscious mind, following the phase of retribution and punishment — by the means as described above — they will fall out of love with the negative state. Instead, they will permanently and to eternity fall in love with Me and My positive state. And this will be the most desirable and waited-by-all outcome of the entirety of the history of the negative state and its human non-life. Of course, this work of salvation and your work and contribution to this effort, being in the role of My true representatives, is not an easy one by any means. In fact, it is one of the most difficult works and, very often, it seems to be futile, leading nowhere. However, I can assure you, its outcome will be the most positive and if you endure to the very end in your work in this respect, it will bear the most delicious and desirable fruits. So, do not give up!

And now let us address the last question about the relationships of My true representatives with other humans who are not in such roles. Do

you remember how in several previous Dialogs we were discussing the issue of temptations? One important aspect of such temptations is to lead you toward the establishment within yourself of a feeling of being elitist, or of someone very special, more different, more deserving or considering yourself to be more important than anyone else who is not involved with My New Revelation. The minions of the renegades may whisper to you about your importance, based solely on your having the privilege of being a part of My New Revelation. After all, if, in comparison with the vast majority of humanity, only very few human individuals have such a privilege, and if you are one of these few, in that case, you must be very special, very important, very deserving and very everything else. And this is how the trap of the negative state is set up for you. This is a spiritually very dangerous situation for you. If you come even close to such terrible feelings, you are not My true representative. Instead, you are a full-fledged slave of the negative state and of your 'stinky' ego.

We have already described several times in the previous Dialogs how My true representative will relate to all others (as well as amongst themselves) who are not involved with My New Revelation. The attributes and characteristics we used in those dialogs were as follows: tolerance, respect, acceptance, appreciation, compassion, understanding, mercy, forgiveness, empathy, objectivity, righteousness, justice and similar characteristics based on your unconditional love and wisdom. We also extensively defined these traits and characteristics in the mentioned Dialogs. It is not necessary to repeat them here. I am referring you to those Dialogs. The only thing I would like to remind you is that, as you remember, everyone in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence serves some kind of important role and purpose. For that reason, no matter who it is, no matter how evil, negative or different anyone is, as compared with you, such an individual is in that position and role for some very important spiritual reasons. By the extensity and the importance of the content of anyone's role and position, any individual, no matter who it is, whether he/she is or is not involved with My New Revelation, is as important, as special, as needed, as useful and as everything else as you are, who are My true representatives. And thinking any other way or considering anything different about yourselves equals being under the influence of the negative state.

For that reason, if you want to maintain your services and your roles on planet Zero as My true representatives, you will never fall into such a trap and you will never become tempted into considering yourself that way. Instead, you will relate to all others with the utmost kindness, consideration, acceptance, respect and appreciation and with all other

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

characteristics and attitudes as outlined above and in the previous Dialogs. Otherwise, what would be the difference between you as My true representatives and all other humans who are in the position of considering themselves much better, more special, more deserving and more everything else than you are? The difference is not in considering yourself more deserving, more special, much better and more everything else than everyone else but, in the utmost modesty, humbleness and humility, to consider yourself neither less nor more in any respect and in any aspects of your life than everyone else on planet Zero or anyone and anywhere else. And this is what the true difference is all about. And you feel that way for the sake of principles, and only for the sake of principles, without any strings attached or without any hidden ulterior reasons. If you are fulfilling this requirement, in that case, you can consider yourself being My true representatives.

And this is all that needs to be reminded to all of you at this time. At this point, Peter, I would recommend to finish for today and take a long rest.

Peter: Thank You very much for Your most needed contributions in these matters.

One Hundred and Forty First Dialog

May 21, 2000

Peter: Well, as You know, the moment I prepare myself to take a longer break from our dialoging, I receive more questions. As I see it, the issue of full responsibility and accountability of each individual, who is about to ask You questions through me, for verifying with You within themselves whether such questions are appropriate to ask on the platform of these Dialogs, has not hit anyone's awareness yet. For that reason they are asking questions that might not be appropriate to answer on this platform or that the usefulness of which is not clear because they might be just the result of idle curiosity. Of course, it is fully and completely up to You to make such a distinction. So, here are the questions for Your consideration and determination of whether Your answers to them should be included in this particular Dialog. The first question came from the Czech Republic (L. Beranova). She is interested to know *whether You, as The Lord Jesus Christ, will also get rid of all Your Personal memories about the existence of the negative state in the same manner or similarly as in the cases of all other relative sentient entities. Where would You put away those memories? Also to the Universality-Of-It-All so that they would not burden anyone including You?* During discussion about this issue **Martina** and **Petra** came to the conclusion that, following the elimination of the negative state, the positive state should be 'more positive than positive' because it would not be burdened at all by the original unanswered questions. Then Monika of the Czech Republic would like to ask You to consider *the concept of **meditation** and what it means from the position of the positive state and how this concept would be characterized; as well as if there is any difference between the state of meditation and pondering, thinking or contemplating about The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ in general.*

Later on in the day, I received some more questions. At this time, these questions were asked by Your representatives here in the good old USA. Michael Maldonado submitted for Your consideration, four questions: *1. When sleeping (or in the unconscious mode) do all humans perform positive work for The Lord Jesus Christ toward the ending of the negative state, or is there a reverse parallel effort by those originating from the negative state toward **more negative** results? 2. Is there any commonality whatsoever that can be revealed at this time by those humans with similar types of sleeping disorders, or some commonality as to the type of effort or work performed (for example, among all those with*

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

*epilepsy, insomnia, narcolepsy, etc)? 3. Is the **control** of sleep disorders with drugs always counterproductive to the **'purpose'** provided by the unadjusted or uncontrolled disorder (as refers either towards the goal of eliminating the negative state, or prolonging it) by typical humans? By Your representatives? 4. Finally, are there any sleep disorders on other **"planets"** of the pseudo-creation? The next question came from Dr. Ardyth Norem: *Since the pseudo-creators created this deadly entanglement which we call human life, what is now the level and nature of their involvement in disentangling the negative structures of human life? How does The Lord Jesus Christ participate in that work, and are there ways that we as representatives are recommended to participate in this work? Much of this was addressed in the last Dialog, but perhaps there is more information with regard to how human systems were "rigged" to keep them locked into separation and negativity, and how we may contribute to accelerate the healing.* Still, later on in the day, another question came from Slovakia (from Mirko Leško). He is asking the following: *In the previous Dialogs which addressed the issue of the true 'I am' versus 'ego,' The Lord Jesus Christ points out that it is you who decides whether you will function from your true 'I am' or from your 'ego.'* *Please, explain more about the 'switching mechanism' between the true 'I am' and 'ego.'* *Who is that 'you' (here on planet Zero) who decides to what mode this switching takes place? Who in this case has the right of decision? Because the one who makes such decisions, that one bears responsibility, who will be 'judged' — 'ego,' the true 'I am' or 'you?' Also, is it possible that sometimes, even when we are consciously aware that we are under the dominance of our ego states, and we are trying to switch to our true 'I am,' and we are asking for it, somehow we are not always successful in this effort.* End of the questions. It seems to me that people would always like to know more than what is being revealed by You at each particular time during the recording of these Dialogs. Of course, before addressing these questions and whether they merit Your answers, perhaps You have something You would like to consider first. You have the floor.*

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, since these questions have come across your desk, so-to-speak, it is obvious that it would be appropriate to answer them on the platform of these Dialogs; even though the answers to some of them should be obvious to everyone who has at least some sense of how to logically deduce these answers from whatever has so far been revealed in My New Revelation. On the other hand, it is clear that the requirement of making an effort on their own in the process of answering their own questions from Me within them or for carefully checking out whether their questions should be submitted to Me via you,

Peter, has not yet penetrated their conscious awareness. Still, having a typical human nature, some people, even My true representatives, will disregard this important requirement no matter how many times they are reminded about it. The spiritual danger in this respect is in the development of dependency on external inputs instead of on their own inner input in this respect. If such a dependency develops, in that case, the trap of the renegades is set and one may become their slave in the sense that one will not be able to make a move without asking you, Peter, to petition Me for giving them whatever they think they need as related to the answers to their questions. So, once more, please, do not submit any questions to Me through Peter unless you receive a clear indication from Me from within you that it is advisable for the benefit of all to do that. Unless you follow this advice, in the future, your questions will not be answered on the platform of these Dialogs. This decision is made for your own sake, for the sake of your own spiritual independence and reliance on your own intuition and on Me within you.

The above mentioned important requirement brings us to something that is needed to be brought to your attention (to the attention of all readers of these Dialogs) at this particular time. We are in the process of closing one important chapter in the phase of the currently ongoing shift. Because of that, preparations are also being made for the opening of the next important phase of this shift. In that phase, the importance of your ability to be self-reliant in all aspects of your life, and especially in seeking your own answers to your own questions without any mediation, will be very much emphasized and needed. You need to learn to reflect the setup which exists in the positive state. If you are in the midst of the positive state, it is obvious that by all modes of your personal and individual lives you are to adopt the lifestyle of the positive state. Because in the positive state everyone is fully self-reliant in all aspects of their true lives, and because if they have any questions they approach Me directly for answers to them, without asking a third person to do that on their behalf, you are to strive to be the same way. This proper tendency will keep you out of the influence of the negative state and its renegades, whose non-life is based on the dependency on and mediation by someone else who is in a position of pseudo-authority.

On the part of the renegades, you can expect one thing during the institution of this new phase of the ongoing shift. An all-out effort will be made by them to tempt you to not rely on yourself in all aspects of your life, or at least, in some aspects of your life, but instead, under the umbrella of your inability or undesirability to be so or to do so, to rely on some external factors. Thus, the renegades will do everything in their

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

power to foster your dependency on someone or something else, and not on yourselves. If they could succeed in their effort, not only would they keep you out of being in the midst of the positive state, but they would be able to utilize all your energies for their own negative purposes.

Because the nature, structure and content of the next phase of the ongoing shift is such that it places you into the position of full self-reliance, it is obvious that the shift is being made more and more toward asking your own questions and getting your own answers with the subsequent sharing of them with all interested, without any signs of imposition, duress or demand to listen to or to abide by whatever you are sharing. This requirement will result in the lesser frequency of having these Dialogs. Such dialoging will be taking place only and only if questions of real and genuine multiversal significance will arise and only if the enquirers will have a clear indication that they are needed to be answered on the platform of these Dialogs. The time for implementation and practice of what is contained in these Dialogs and My New Revelation in general is at hand. For that reason, the shift is also from asking questions (or asking them but seeking answers to them from everything which has so far been revealed in My New Revelation) to implementation and practice of all principles and ideas of The New Revelation. In this sense, it is obvious that you also need to learn to seek your answers to your questions from everything that has been said in My New Revelation, in addition to your own efforts in this respect. At the same time, you need to learn to verify the truthfulness of any answers you may get from your own within by everything which is contained in My New Revelation. As mentioned several times previously, if your answers fully and completely adhere to the principles and ideas of My New Revelation, in that case, you can be assured that they are coming from Me. Otherwise, they would be coming from a deceiving source.

So, you have here three important sources for receiving answers to your questions: One is from your own within, by your own effort and intuition; the second is by seeking out these answers in, or by deducing them (utilizing your deductive abilities) from My New Revelation in all its three sources; and the third is, if your questions really have multiversal significance, getting the answers on the platform of these Dialogs for as long as Peter is available to do this important work. However, if Peter is no longer available for this work (after his recall, for example; or for any other important reasons — whatever they may be), or if, for whatever reasons, the time for this type of dialoging passes, in that case, only the first two sources for answering your questions will be available for the rest of your lives on planet Zero. After all, various different phases of this shift will require a different approach. It is quite conceivable that, at one

point in your time, such dialoging will no longer be feasible or needed because of different spiritual needs and requirements. These are important requirements for the next phase of the ongoing shift. **Please, take heed to your heart! It is very important!** And this is all that I wanted to contribute today.

Peter: Thank You very much for this important clarification.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. And now we may proceed with answering of all posed questions. We are going to answer them in the sequence as they were coming to you, Peter. Let us begin with L. Beranova's question. Will I remember the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state and human non-life and all their atrocities and abominations after they are eternally eliminated and all their experiences are placed into the Universality-Of-It-All? The answer to this question depends on from what mode of perception of reality you look at it. In some ways you can say that the answer is 'yes' and 'no.' Do you remember what I said a long, long time ago (in your conceptualization of time) about this issue (in the Old Testament of the Bible)? That **I will not remember** their sins. What is this statement telling you? There is no need for remembering anything of this nature. Why is it so? Because, as you remember from previous Dialogs, the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state and its human non-life, from the position of My Absolute Positiveness, is not registered by Me as the true reality; or simply stated, it does not exist in the true reality of My Absolute State since it is only an illusion fabricated by the relative sentient minds. Therefore, from this standpoint, there is nothing to remember or retain in My Memory.

However, the situation is not as simple as that. This viewpoint can be considered the objective mode of perception of reality. On the other hand, how does the subjective mode see this situation? My coming down (symbolically speaking) to the level of the relative sentient entities who are in their own subjective mode, puts Me at their level of perception, understanding and recall. As you remember, I specifically incarnated into their relative life in order to experience everything the way they experience it. From their position, from the position of the relative, the promise was made by Me that I will blot out all memories related to anything contained in the negative state and its human non-life. So, if I look at everything from their position, I fall under the same rule as they do in this respect.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

On the other hand, what would the situation be if you look at this issue from the position of My Absolute Knowing of everyone and everything? Would that position contain any memories related to the negative state and human non-life? Of course it would, but for Me Personally it would not be a disturbing phenomenon because, first of all, I gave My Own Permission for the illusion of the negative state and its human non-life to come to their own pseudo-reality in the first place; and secondly, the Absolute Knowing of the reasons for such permission and for its outcome and the usefulness it would serve for the benefit of all, would far outweigh any possible harm for having such memories within Me. I would be looking at them as something that was needed for the preservation of the sanity of all sentient entities and for giving them the absolute free choice in their ultimate choosing of the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state. If no other way were to be possible to establish this fullness and completeness, in that case, it would be for a very noble and good cause to permit something like the negative state and its human non-life. So, as you see from this fact, basically, the negative state and its human non-life, were permitted to be invented, activated and put into motion for a good cause. Because it is good, the goodness of it is ultimately positive.

Thus, in My Absolute Mind, there is nothing negative contained in them because the ultimate outcome is what counts and not its interim processes and manifestations. In this sense therefore, the only memories that will be retained, will always and only be good and positive. As you see from this description, not only I in My Absolute Knowing and Remembering, but also all sentient entities will look at and remember only the outcomes and not their transient and temporary processes and manifestations. Because outcomes are always positive and good in this respect, therefore, their memories will always be good and positive as well. In this sense, there will be nothing negative, bad, evil or false to remember. This is how My promise to blot out their transgressions, as well as their memories about them, can be interpreted.

From all the above, you can conclude that Martina's and Petra's assumption that the positive state will be more positive after all answers to the existential questions are received and after the negative state and human non-life are no more, is a correct one. It is only logical to assume that if the positive state at the present time is not in the state, process and condition of its fullness and completeness, and if it is burdened by non-life of the negative state and human non-life, in that case, its positiveness is incomplete as well. After all, the terms 'fullness and completeness' do not preclude anything. On the other hand, lack of this fullness and completeness makes it impossible for anything to fully and

completely manifest its nature. Therefore, in this sense, once the fullness and completeness of the positive state is established, it will be more positive, or fully and completely positive, way above anything existing at this time. For that reason, you can say with Martina and Petra that the positive state will be more positive than positive. This is a very nice metaphor.

Now, let us address Monika's question. The answer to her question should be very much obvious from everything contained in the books of *The New Revelation*. From the position of the positive state, because all its inhabitants are always in the state of inwardness, you can say that they are in a constant meditative state. Inwardness equals meditation. In the positive state meditation, pondering, contemplating, considering something, thinking about something, etc., have the same meaning and connotation. Thus, in this sense, in the positive state, no difference exists between meditation, pondering, contemplating, thinking, considering, etc., because all this takes place in the state of everyone's inwardness. It is a different situation with humans on planet Zero or with other inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement. In their case, because they were diverted from the state of their inwardness and placed into the state of their outwardness, in order to establish any contact with their inward state, intricate methods were developed which prescribe or give one a way how to make such contacts. Such methods and procedures were subsumed under the name of meditation (transcendental meditation, for example). In order to meditate, you have to do certain specific things which would lead you into the state of self-absorption in which state you may be able to make contact with your own inwardness. These methods and practices became a ritualistic and dogmatic means under which such accomplishment is possible. Because of that, at one time, they were totally and completely taken over by the negative state and, in themselves, became negative, giving a very much false impression to their practitioners that they are in the state of their own inwardness while in fact, they are in a false state of pseudo-inwardness.

On the other hand, from a typical human perspective, when you ponder about something or when you think or contemplate about something, it does not require from you to undertake these laborious steps which would make it possible for your pondering or thinking or contemplating to take place. So, in the human conceptualization, there is a difference between meditation and contemplation, pondering and thinking, because humans are not in the state of their inwardness as is the case in the positive state. However, the situation is somewhat different with you, My true representatives. You no longer need to go through complex steps,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

rituals and procedures in order to meditate, think, ponder or contemplate about anything and not only about My New Revelation. By having My New Revelation, by thinking, pondering or contemplating about it or by concentrating on its ideas, you automatically establish a meditative state or, to use better and more appropriate words, the state of your inwardness. By this factor, you approximate the true life of the positive state. So, in this respect, for those of you who read and unconditionally accept My New Revelation, no difference exists between understanding of the meaning and the state of meditation, thinking, pondering, considering or contemplating. For you, it is all the same. This situation with you reflects your being positioned in the midst of My positive state.

Let us now address Michael Maldonado's questions. As you know, different individuals, in their unique and non-duplicable personality makeup and in their own specific roles, assignments and positions, have very much different contributions to make to the outcome of the negative state and its human non-life. In this sense, their energies or their works are fully utilized for that important spiritual purpose. What are the contributory factors to this outcome? On one hand, for the true representatives of the positive state (whether overtly and covertly), it is to do important work for Me and My positive state in all aspects and states of their lives. Because of that, when sleeping or when in any other conscious or unconscious mode, all their works are performed toward the ending of the negative state.

On the other hand, if someone's role, assignment and position is to be a representative of the negative state, in that case, his/her works, in whatever mode (while sleeping or in any unconscious or conscious mode) are performed toward the winning of the negative state on planet Zero and elsewhere. So, yes, some individuals perform positive works toward the ending of the negative state and some toward its winning. However, bear in mind, please, that those individuals whose role is to contribute all their works and efforts toward the winning of the negative state, ultimately, also contribute to the positive outcome of everything related to this cycle of time/state/process. After all, as you remember, in the very moment the negative state pseudo-wins, it signs its own death sentence in that, following this pseudo-winning, it becomes defunct and no longer needed. In that moment, it will be no more. So, from this point of view, you can logically conclude, that no matter who does what, whether during their sleep or in some kind of unconscious or conscious mode, they all ultimately serve Me toward the ending of the negative state.

It is interesting to note that the realization of these facts about the outcome of the negative state and human non-life is that, its pseudo-

winning is at the very same time its eternal ending, and in no way deters the inhabitants of the Zone of Displacement, and all other propagators of the pseudo-cause of the negative state from making an all-out effort to reach the point of their pseudo-winning. Simply stated, they do not believe that something like that can happen — no matter how much you remind them of these facts. Nevertheless, this knowledge and awareness, at the moment of the pseudo-winning and ending of the negative state (which happen at the very same time), will be utilized for opening their memories and for becoming aware of their voluntary status of their participation in everything related to the negative state and human non-life. Such conscious awareness of these facts, will make it much easier for them to convert back to the positive state where, ultimately, everyone belongs.

In response to Michael's second question about the commonality of those humans with similar types of sleeping disorders, or some commonality as to the type of effort or work performed, it can be said that the only commonality which can be found is in their symptoms and the way they are externally manifested. However, this commonality ends right there. The reasons why someone chose to have such sleeping disorders, and what type of effort or work he/she is performing by having such a condition, or what kinds of purpose, learning, illustration or demonstration they serve by them, are infinitely different. They are totally and completely individualized and personalized in all their aspects. For that reason, each individual who might have such sleeping disorders is responsible and accountable for asking Me, in his/her individual state and effort for revealing whatever can be revealed about the needs, purposes and outcomes of all such conditions. However, bear in mind, please, that in most instances, it was agreed that anything relating to the spiritual causative factors of such conditions may not be available for knowing until recall from planet Zero. The effectiveness of work or important specific learning provided by such conditions, could be jeopardized by such premature knowledge. Also, security measures are in place. For that reason, nothing more can be said about this situation on the platform of these Dialogs.

In response to Michael's third question about the counterproductiveness of controlling sleep disorders by medications (he uses the term 'drugs') available for that purpose, the issue here is, once again, in the purpose, goal, reason, etc., for which any sleep disorder, or any disorder at all, was chosen to have. In a very general and broad sense, anything at all that makes it possible to control a disorderly condition, and by that factor, enables any individual to perform useful work or a vocation and to lead a

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

relatively normal life, as compared to all others who do not suffer from such a disorder, cannot be considered as counterproductive. In fact, in such a case, it serves a useful purpose. Whatever serves a useful purpose, is always by influx by Me. You have to understand that, for some very important spiritual reasons, I also permit the utilization of many external means (such as, for example, medications) to accomplish many positive goals or outcomes. Whatever eliminates or at least, effectively controls any disorderly condition, cannot be considered negative. In fact, by its outcome, it is positive. Because it is positive, it stems from Me. One of the many reasons why I allow this type of utilization in human non-life, is to illustrate and demonstrate that such external non-spiritual means can also serve a positive outcome. What is this situation telling you? As mentioned above, in an ultimate sense, everything serves toward the ending of the negative state. Because the underlying principle of the non-life of the negative state and its human non-life is everything disorderly, whatever controls or keeps this disorderliness in check (whatever it may be), or whatever contributes to its elimination, is very much productive. And individuals who agreed to have such disorders, illustrate and demonstrate this fact of controlling them and, by such an effort, they provide important learning for all.

The answer to Michael's last question logically follows from what was said above. Because the entire pseudo-creation is founded on the pseudo-principle of disorder, any of its 'planets,' states, conditions, or whatever it has, will definitely also have sleeping or any other disorders. In some way, because other pseudo-dimensions of pseudo-creation are in the position of the causative factors or they have a blueprint for whatever takes place on planet Zero, their disorders are much more severe and much more pronounced than the worst possible condition with any human on planet Zero. So, yes, they do have the most severe sleep disorders or to what these disorders spiritually correspond.

In response to Ardyth's question about the pseudo-creators' current level and nature of their involvement in disentangling the negative structure of human life and how I participate in that work, and whether there are ways that you as My representatives are recommended to participate in this work, be aware that a considerable degree of spiritual danger exists in knowing all aspects of this process. The 'how' and the 'nature' part of this question is the most vulnerable because should I describe it, it would give the renegades and their minions all necessary information which they are so desperately seeking in order to circumvent or make it very difficult to accomplish this important work. The renegades know very well that the final outcome of the fate of their negative non-life depends on to what extent this work succeeds. The successful completion of the

process of this disentangling means their end. For that reason, they are seeking any ways possible which would help them to either entirely undermine this work or hinder it to the fullest possible extent so that its outcome could be postponed indefinitely. I can tell you one thing though: There is a special group of renegades whose assignment is to entice My representatives to ask the type of questions, the answers to which would give them a clue about the workings of My Divine Providence in the matter of ending the non-life of the negative state and human non-life so that they could interfere with these workings. So, be very much careful what kinds of questions you are asking.

The only thing that can be said about this effort is that the pseudo-creators with My full involvement, as well as with the full involvement of all members of the New Universe, are making an all-out effort to disentangle not only the negative structure of the so-called human life but also the entirety of the negative state. After all, such effort cannot be limited only to the outcome of the human non-life. The main effort in this respect has to be directed toward the elimination of the totality of the negative state and consequently, of its human non-life. One is dependent on the other.

Your participation in this work, in the role of My true representatives, lies solely in the way you function, behave, act, relate, talk, think, feel, emote, will and treat Me, yourself and each other. If this way is based on acceptance and practice of all principles of My New Revelation, you are fulfilling your responsibility or, better to say, you are contributing substantially to disentangling the negative structure of the human aspect of your nature in particular and of the human non-life and the negative state's non-life in general. At the same time, the methods, dynamics and processes of this work, are rooted in from what position you function in this respect. In order to make a real contribution to this noble cause, your effort should be directed entirely to functioning from the position of your true 'I am' with firm control of your human ego states. The more you function from the position of your true 'I am,' the more you are contributing to this disentangling. On the other hand, whenever you switch to functioning from the position of your ego, by that function, you are reinforcing this deadly entanglement and subsequently, you are contributing to the extension of the non-life of the negative state.

The issue of switching between your true 'I am' and your 'ego' brings us to the questions posed by Mirko Leško. What is the switching mechanism by which such switching is taking place and who makes the decisions about to what mode this switching is done; or who has the right for such

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

decision-making and thus, who is being held responsible and judged for such decisions? These are all deeply spiritual, mystical and philosophical questions related to the nature, structure, dynamics and functions of the sentient minds in general and human pseudo-sentient minds in particular. In order to properly understand the intricacy of this setup, we need to address some general structural designs of the sentient mind in general and the human pseudo-sentient mind in particular.

We are going to begin with the definition of the concept of ‘individuality.’ From the spiritual standpoint, individuality is a unique conglomeration of aspects, states, dynamics, processes and conditions by which any sentient mind discharges his/her individualized and personalized being and existence. This conglomeration reflects, in its relative condition, My Absolute Individuality in all Its Aspects, States, Dynamics, Processes and Conditions. In order for this discharge to take place, individuality is equipped with certain tools, building blocks and structural components which make it possible for each individual, in his/her own individuality, to be what he/she is. Thus, in its conglomerate state, as you know, individuality consists of its own individualized and personalized Spiritual Mind, interior mind and external mind. In their integrative and unified condition, they constitute the reality of being and existence of the individualized one sentient mind. The central core of this mind is the fully conscious awareness of self-awareness. It is rooted in the self-aware (of its states and processes) true ‘I am.’ It is from the position of this self-aware ‘I am’ that all functions, and everything else all-inclusively, are being determined and ruled. Because this ‘I am,’ in its structure and nature, derives from the Nature and Structure of My Absolute ‘I AM,’ its entire content and meaning is pure positiveness and goodness stemming from My Absolute Positiveness and Goodness. For that reason, as long as anyone functions from his/her true ‘I am,’ he/she functions only in a positive and good way; that is to say, in that case, he/she functions from Me.

This is the setup existing in the positive state. As long as this setup continues unabated, the negative state has no chance to take hold in anyone’s mind. In order for invention, activation, establishment and full manifestation of the non-life of the negative state and its human non-life to take place, it was necessary to come up with an idea of something entirely different from the existing setup of the positive state. Therefore, if the central core of life is awareness of the self-aware ‘I am,’ and if everything in being and existence is ruled and determined by the functions of this self-aware ‘I am,’ in that case, it was necessary to invent a state which would have a totally different arrangement. In this different arrangement, the awareness that there is such a thing as the

self-aware 'I am' and its determining and ruling position, is isolated, separated, repressed and put into an unconscious mode, and subsequently replaced with something that resembles the true 'I am' in that, it is able to say or to think of itself as 'I am,' but which, nevertheless, has no concept of what anything and everything, including itself, is all about. How would you be able to properly rule all aspects of your life if you do not know what life, and everything else related to life in general, is all about? This replacement of the true 'I am' was named 'ego.' This ego was put into a ruling position of all aspects of the pseudo-life and human non-life. At the same time, it was put into an adversarial position to the true 'I am' so that nothing of the true 'I am' could influence the function of the 'ego.' The continuous enmity between the true 'I am' and 'ego' was established.

The factor of enmity is contained in the symbolical depiction of the events which took place in the Garden of Eden. As you remember, I said the following words to the serpent: *'And I will put enmity between you and the woman, and between your seed and her Seed.'* (Genesis 3:15). In this particular connotation, the serpent represents the 'ego' and woman and her Seed represent the true 'I am,' in which I reside (the Seed).

As you see from these facts, no compromise is possible between the true 'I am' and 'ego' or between the positive state and negative state; or between the typical human non-life and the true life of everyone's 'I am' in any of their aspects or manifestations. The serpent in this case also represents the artificially built pseudo-mind in its pseudo-integrative state which consists of its own pseudo-spiritual mind, pseudo-interior mind and pseudo-external mind. This pseudo-mind is superimposed on the true mind and by the factor of that superimposing state, the true mind, in all its aspects, is buried beneath the pseudo-mind. The central ruling and determining core of this pseudo-mind, in all its aspects, is the 'ego.' In order for this ego to properly function, it needs to be in control at all times and it needs to keep all aspects of the true mind, rooted in the true mind's 'I am,' in an unconscious mode. For that reason, the vast majority of inhabitants of the negative state and human non-life, have no conscious awareness of this setup. This was the only way how the non-life of the negative state and its human non-life could flourish in their own pseudo-being and pseudo-existence.

So, as you see from this setup, in the negative state and human non-life we have the following structure as related to their individualities: The true sentient mind with its core as the true 'I am' which is/are in an inaccessible and unconscious mode; the pseudo-sentient mind with its

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

core as the false 'I am' or its 'ego' which is/are in the accessible and conscious mode; and their ability to function only from the position of their conscious mode rooted in the ego states. Whenever anyone in the negative state and human life says 'I am,' the awareness of this type of 'I am' does not derive from his/her true 'I am' but from his/her ego's ability to conceive itself as being its own 'I am.' Thus, these people have no other perception and conviction but that they are functioning from their 'I am.' After all, they are able to say the words 'I am.'

However, the situation becomes entirely different once you become consciously aware of this setup existing in the negative state and in the human aspects of your nature. In that moment, and this is true for those of you who are My representatives, you become fully consciously aware of this setup. Once you become consciously aware of these facts, you become responsible for the mode of your functions — from the position of your true 'I am' or from the position of your 'ego.' In this theoretical sense, that part of your individuality, which can be called 'you,' becomes responsible for the switch. In this sense, 'you' can be considered as the consciously aware portion of your totality which carries not only the knowledge of having within its individuality the true 'I am' as well as the false 'I am' or the 'ego,' but, by the means of its will and desire, it is also responsible for switching from one mode to another. Once you become consciously aware of this situation, your will, your inclinations, your wants, your desires and similar attributes in you determine from what position you will function.

In this sense it is not that much of being tangibly aware of the core of your true sentient mind — your true 'I am,' but how and in what manner you exhibit your individuality, attitudes and functions. If you are exhibiting in your behavior, attitude and in everything else such characteristics as the utmost kindness, love, respect, tolerance, appreciation, gratitude, thankfulness, appreciation, compassion, empathy, mercy, forgiveness, understanding, modesty, humbleness, humility, patience, endurance, determination, goodness and all other similar traits and characteristics, and if you ascribe them as being gifts from Me Who Is in their Absolute Condition, in that case you are functioning from your true 'I am' and ultimately, from Me in you. On the other hand, whenever you exhibit in your behavior, attitude and in everything else such characteristics and traits as anger, hostility, viciousness, revenge, hate, selfishness, non-forgiveness, grudges, disrespect, intolerance, mercilessness, disregard, rudeness, self-aggrandizement, boastfulness, arrogance, and all similar negative characteristics and traits, considering yourself more important, more special, more different, more unique, more deserving, and more

everything else than anyone else, in that case, you are functioning from the position of your ego.

Thus, based on these facts, you can say that the responsibility for all these factors lies with your being consciously aware of this setup. In this sense, it is 'you' and, in it, your will, inclinations, wants and desires, which has the right of decision as well as being judged for such decisions and switching. The true 'I am' cannot be judged because it is not being given a chance to manifest itself fully, or even partially, in your life. The ego is blind and defective, not knowing anything for sure. Because 'ego' is an artificial, transient and temporary construct, it is not responsible for anything and therefore, it cannot be judged. Only that one who has conscious awareness of all these facts (as well as unconscious awareness) is responsible and accountable for all his/her decisions and switches. Thus, in this sense, it is 'you' who is in that position and role.

And finally, how is it possible that sometimes, even though you are consciously aware that you are being ruled by your ego states, and you want to and are asking for switching to your true 'I am,' you are somehow not succeeding in your efforts in this respect? The answer to this question, in most instances, has an individualized and personalized nature. The reasons for such occasional failures would be very much different from one individual to another. There is no all-inclusive, fitting-to-all reason for this to happen. It all depends on everyone's personal and individual intentions, motivations, inclinations, wants, desires, wishes, etc., with which they are trying to control their ego and with which they are attempting to function from the position of their 'I am.' It is advisable therefore, that whenever you find yourself in this kind of predicament, you very carefully explore all aspects of your intentions, motivations, desires, wishes, wants, inclinations, etc., with which you are approaching this switch as well as your request for helping you in your efforts in this respect.

On the other hand, some failures in cases like that are also permitted to happen in order to illustrate and demonstrate the stubborn, unyielding, rigid, obstinate and unwilling nature of the negative state and its human non-life. At the same time, they also show that no matter how many failures anyone amongst My representatives would experience in this respect, they will never give up in making continuous efforts to function from the position of their true 'I am,' that is, from the position of the positive state, and ultimately, from the position of Me in them. And this is what all these things are all about.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

At this point, Peter, I would recommend to finish it for now. Go and take a long rest and enjoy your days as much as possible under your fragile physical condition.

Peter: Thank You very much for all these interesting answers. I'll take Your advice. Until the next time — if at all.

One Hundred and Forty Second Dialog

May 25, 2000

Peter: I understand that You would like to continue in further elaboration on the topic 'I am' versus 'ego' and the 'switching mechanism.' Also, I received some questions from Erin Martz of the USA and Boris Bella of Slovakia. Erin's questions are as follows: *In order to understand the bridge between the old and new concepts, Swedenborg described 'proprium' as the state of selfishness that exists before spiritual regeneration. How is this concept distinct from the ego states, described in **The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ**, which individuals need to shed in order to live from their 'I am?' Also, in view of the impact of His/Her New Nature upon all creation, was the concept of 'conjugal love' a necessary concept from You that needed to be discussed at that time, or was it more of a creation from Swedenborg's mental and moral viewpoints (some argued whether it was a divinely inspired book)? In the concept of conjugal love, Swedenborg discussed the process of a husband and wife knowing each other first from within then to without, which reflects a proper spiritual order. Yet, at the same time, many concepts written by Swedenborg in his book **Conjugal Love** appeared biased against women. Was he reflecting the social climate of his day, or was the concept a necessary step to take to bridge The New Revelation's discussion of the process and meaning of sexuality in the positive state?* End of Erin's questions.

Boris Bella's questions are as follows (I am translating them): *In Dialog 130 the concept of Universality-Of-It-All was discussed. I would like to know from the position of multiversal meaning, how could it be useful for anyone to have a need to bring to one's attention anything at all in the next cycle, which was experienced during the current cycle of time/state/process, by him/her entering the Universality-Of-It-All and re-experiencing and recalling everything needed to be experienced and remembered about what happened in the previous cycle, if everyone in the entire Creation learned what not to choose and how not to be and if the idea of rejecting The Lord Jesus Christ as the only Source of eternal life will be excised and eliminated from the minds of all sentient entities in Creation? And with this is connected another question: Can we know about how the utilization of the Universality-Of-It-All will be for the eternal learning of sentient entities, who participated in the current cycle of time (and who had already experienced what not to choose and how not to be and who learned not ever to choose the idea of rejection of the true life of The Lord Jesus Christ) or what does it mean about the possibility*

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

that entities will be learning again and will be reminded again, what not to choose into their open memory? By the way, what do we know about memory as such? Will each newly created sentient entity in the new cycle of time/state/process be experiencing the process of learning about the non-life of the negative state from the Universality-Of-It-All, so that the idea of rejecting the true life or wanting to experience non-life of the negative state would have no place in the fullness of the positive state even as the learning process, which will be available in the Universality-Of-It-All? End of Boris' questions. How would You like to proceed in this respect?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Let us first elaborate some more on the issues of 'I am,' 'ego,' 'you' and 'switching mechanism' (Mirko's original question as recorded in Dialog 141). For the human conscious mind it is extremely difficult to conceptualize or apprehend such theoretical constructs as 'I am,' 'ego,' 'you,' 'switching mechanism' and similar seemingly abstract concepts. There is nothing tangible about them in the experiential mode of the human mind. Their manifestation takes place or is reflected in everyone's behavior, attitude and style of life. Yet, these terms or concepts are very important to properly apprehend in order to establish a most needed and desirable position from which everyone chooses to function. Who or what is the coordinating and/or controlling factor among them? Who or what is responsible for the decision-making process and the consequent outcome of any acts, behaviors, attitudes, relationships or whatever you have? Is there something within the totality of the system of the human mind or human individuality that has such an important role or function? I am precluding, at the moment, from this elaboration any other sentient minds, positioned in the positive state because, in their case, they lack fully active ego states, which would dominate and rule them or their decision-making process. What they have though, is the potentiality for the development of ego states. This potentiality stems from the idea that they may, if they wish and choose by their own free will and choice, reject Me as the only source of their life, as well as of any life. In such potentiality is rooted the possibility of activating the ego states within them. Of course, if they were to choose that, in that case, they would find themselves in or they would fall out into the negative state, acquiring the same structural design of their minds that anyone else has in the negative state and human non-life.

At this point however, we'll be talking only about the human mind or human individuality because within that mind or individuality the so-called abstract constructs in the form of 'I am,' 'ego,' 'you' and 'switching mechanism' are the most pronounced and the most tangibly manifested.

Once again, the question is if there is anything within the human system (or system of any sentient mind) that transcends any of these manifestations and that is in full control over them, and thus, is responsible for all decision-making processes and their various outcomes. Do you remember something which was recorded in one of the earlier Dialogs about My Absolute Nature and how there is that integral part of My Nature which cannot be named, or uttered or comprehended or apprehended by any relative sentient mind? It was called 'Unnamable Core of My Absolute Nature' which is conceived as an integrative, originating, maintaining, regulating, ruling and controlling Source of all and everything in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence (in pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, with the exception of originating or being their source). If you take into consideration that the original relative sentient mind was patterned and structured by the Absolute Design of My Absolute Sentient Mind, then, in that case, logically speaking, it must similarly contain something within its structure that transcends the totality of all components of that mind and which integrates, coordinates, rules, controls, regulates and directs all aspects of that mind in all its manifestations. The human mind is not excluded from this rule.

To the extent that this factor is unnamable and incomprehensible in Me, to the same extent you can conceptualize that this transcending state within the sentient mind's system, as well as the human system, is unnamable and incomprehensible likewise. At least, as far as the sentient mind's and human's systems are concerned, it was not so until the present time. In My Absolute State and Condition, because of its Absolute Nature, this factor will remain unnamable and incomprehensible to eternity. On the other hand, in the case of the relative sentient mind and human mind, because of their relativity, some aspects of this transcending factor may be named and, to a limited sense, may be comprehensible. As you see from these facts, we are talking here about something new and different. Up to this point, no one has known that the sentient mind, as well as the human mind, contains something within their systems which can be conceptualized as a transcending, coordinative, integrative, controlling, regulating and ruling factor of everything of which those systems consist. But now is the time to reveal this important fact. The timeliness of this revelation was determined that someone of My representatives, in this case Mirko, came up with the question of this important magnitude and significance.

This transcending factor within the system of sentient entities, as well as humans, has a direct relevance and correspondence to My Unnamable and Incomprehensible Core. Without its being in place, all components,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

aspects, parts, or whatever you have, within the sentient entities' and humans' systems, would disintegrate and fall apart. The transcending position of this factor also serves as the 'switching mechanism' between this or that component, aspect, degree or level of each sentient entity and human. Only from the position of this transcendence, when you overlook, coordinate, rule, regulate and determine each and every particle of the mentioned sentient systems, can such switching take place. So, how can you conceptualize this factor in human terms? Is it possible to find anything in the human vocabulary that would be able to give you some idea of what we are talking about? If anything at all which transcends all its conglomerate states, processes and conditions, and which is in the position of coordinating, integrating, determining, regulating and ruling them for whatever purpose it has, in that case, it is very difficult, if not impossible, to find something in the human vocabulary which would be able to even remotely describe its nature. After all, such a vocabulary is within the human system and is one of the many components of that system which is ruled by the mentioned transcending factor. You cannot very well describe anything which transcends your comprehensive abilities and which is a derivative of some secondary component within the totality of your system.

The closest term which can be used for our purpose, and which can be considered only as an orienting point to the human mind for sensing what this is all about, would be a *tentative* term of '**specific and unique individuality**' that functions by and has at its disposal all components, aspects, levels, degrees, parts or whatever you have, of the sentient entity in general and the human entity in particular; and at the same time, which transcends all that in exactly the same manner as My Absolute Unnamable State transcends all and everything in an absolute sense. This specific individuality can be equated with the term 'you.' So, whenever we are saying, 'you are responsible and accountable for anything and everything,' we mean this specific individuality which contains everything needed for making right choices and decisions. In some ways, you can say that everyone's inborn ability to rationally distinguish between right and wrong (in human non-life and in non-life of the negative state), and to choose between them, is the most direct manifestation of this specific individuality.

In human non-life and non-life of the negative state, although this specific individuality remains on their unconscious level, nevertheless, in having the conscious awareness about their ability of choosing, it can be considered as its direct manifestation. Nothing is more obvious than this factor. So, whenever we say something like, 'you are responsible and

accountable for all your deeds or from what position you function (whether from your true 'I am' or from your artificial 'ego'),' we are referring directly to this specific individuality of yours. It is this individuality that, in the ultimate outcome of its choices, functions and manifestations, is being judged and adjudicated. Thus, in this sense, it does not really matter whether anyone in human non-life and in non-life of the negative state is or is not consciously aware about the existence of this transcending factor which we *tentatively* named as 'specific and unique individuality.' Due to the fact that everyone is consciously aware of his/her ability to choose and to change, by the factor of having this ability, everyone is functioning from the position of this specific and unique individuality. After all, this ability is one of the many forms or means of concrete manifestation of this individuality. This is the reason why we have said so many times that everyone is responsible and accountable for whatever is happening in their lives — no matter what it is and no matter when and under what conditions it takes place.

In its transcending, coordinating, integrating, controlling, decision-making, regulating, overlooking and choosing position, the specific individuality of each sentient entity, as well as each human entity, is placed in a state of neutrality. This state allows it to direct its energies in whatever direction it wills or desires. If the choice is for functioning from the position of its 'I am' and the true sentient mind in general (from within of the Spiritual Mind, through the interior mind to the external mind), in that case, the choice is to function from the position of the positive state or from Me. On the other hand, if the choice, for some reason or other, is to function from the position of the 'ego' and fake pseudo-mind (through its own three aspects), in that case, the choice is to function from the position of the negative state or from the position of the typical human nature. In either case, the responsibility always lies in everyone's transcending individuality.

As My true representatives on planet Zero, who are receiving the privilege of knowing these facts for the first time, and who therefore, are put into a position of direct conscious awareness of the existence of this setup, you are given an opportunity to regulate your life based on this new knowledge. The issue here is with what or with whom within you, or in the totality of your own unique makeup, you want or desire to establish an identity. Once you know about this transcending factor of your nature, you may, if you wish, put all your full identity into your individuality and, from that position, direct its energies only and only toward functioning from the position of your true 'I am.' However, from time to time, and as long as you are in human life, if there is a need to function from the position of the ego state in order to provide some

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

important learning, and in order to illustrate and demonstrate for the benefit of all, the specific nature of your own specific ego, in that case, the energies need to be shared with that ego. Without these specific energies, provided by your individuality, with which you are now in the state of full identity, nothing can function in your life. However, although sometimes it is necessary to provide these energies to your ego or to the manifestation of some aspects of your typical human nature, nevertheless, you are never to give all those energies to such cause. You may share them only to a certain degree. Should you direct all such energies only to the ego's cause, in that case, you would find yourself in total slavery to the negative state, of which, the way out would not be an easy one. Instead, the major portion of those energies should be directed to functioning from the position of your true 'I am.' In this case, although some energies will go into your ego or into the manifestation of the aspects of your typical human nature — after all, how else could you fulfill the purpose for which you agreed to be incarnated into the human non-life and fully exhibit the nature of this non-life — because the majority of them will go to your true 'I am,' in this arrangement, from the position of being identified with your specific individuality, you will control all aspects of your ego functions and manifestations. Thus, in this case, your ego will not control and rule you, but you will rule and control your ego.

In order to accomplish this goal, you are advised to ask Me to take over your specific individuality and, from that position, to make it possible for you to regulate, control, rule, direct, coordinate, make choices, make decisions and everything else, from My Absolute Specific and Unique Individuality in all Its Transcending Aspects. In this sense, in order for you to be able to establish your full identity with everything contained in this transcending individuality, or with your individuality as such, you first need to request Me that I help you to establish such an identity based on My Absolute Identity in this respect. Only from the position of the Absolute State, is such accomplishment possible. Once you submit your petition for such an identity, based on the motivating and intentional factors for such a petition, I will provide you with all necessary means to succeed in this effort. This provision will be partially actualized either during your current human non-life, while you are still on planet Zero, or completely, after you leave it. However, no matter what the case may be, your petition in this respect will serve as a foundation on which, at some time or other, such full identity will be established to eternity. In the interim, if needed and necessary, a partial identity will be granted to you so that you may successfully control your ego states and the negative aspects of your human nature in general.

What will count in this respect, is your honest and sincere desire to always function only from the position of your true ‘I am’ and that for that reason, all energies of your specific and unique individuality be primarily directed to the function of your true ‘I am.’ At this point in time, as long as you are in your human non-life, not much more can be required or even accomplished. This was an agreed upon arrangement. And this is all that I wanted to contribute today. Should a need arise in the future to elaborate more on this important topic, we’ll do so.

Peter: Thank You very, very much for this prolific revelation. May we proceed with the answers to the posed questions?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, we may; and we’ll proceed in the sequence as they came. First of all, let us address the term, coined by Swedenborg, ‘proprium.’ As you know, this term is a Latin word, the meaning of which approximates something that relates solely to one’s own, without any regard to anyone or anything outside of that own. In Swedenborg’s conceptualization it denotes a state of selfishness where no considerations are given to anyone else’s well-being but only to one’s own. At the time of Swedenborg, the term ‘ego’ had not been defined or established. This term was introduced to human psychology later on at the end of the XIX century. The meaning of both terms — ‘proprium’ and ‘ego’ is interchangeable. For that reason, you can say for sure that proprium and ego, in our conceptualization, are the same as far as their true meaning and content are concerned.

A somewhat more complicated situation exists with Swedenborg’s concept of ‘conjugal love’ (Swedenborg’s spelling is ‘conjugal’. However, the English dictionary does not contain this particular spelling). Before going into the reasons for Swedenborg’s introduction of this concept into his writings, let us, for a moment, consider the true meaning of the word ‘conjugal’ or ‘conjugal.’ This term, once again, derives from the Latin word ‘congugalis.’ Actually, this word consists of two separate words. ‘Conju(n)x = spouse. ‘Con’ = spouse. Ju(n)x derives from the word ‘jugum’ which means yoke. Thus, what you have here is that the true meaning of conjugal or conjugal denotes spouses in yoke to each other. In your modern terms this meaning is reflected in the words ‘marital bond.’ What is this meaning telling you? If you carefully analyze this meaning, then you have to conclude that in the true reality of its meaning, there is no such thing as true conjugal or conjugal love. Instead, it is a pseudo-love based on slavery, possessiveness, self-exclusivity, mutual dependency, ulterior motivation and similar, mostly all negative factors. Whatever

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

has such a negative connotation, cannot be of true love. Therefore, it does not derive from the positive state or, in this case, from Me. Of course, this does not mean that the two people who voluntarily (in some cultures, even involuntarily) enter this bond or yoke, could not or would not have a deep love, appreciation, respect or friendship toward each other. However, this condition with them and between them has nothing to do with the so-called 'conjugal love.' Instead, it originates or derives from their positive inclinations and from the state of their true 'I am.' That they yield to the requirements and expectations of their culture or society in this respect, for whatever of their own individual purposes and reasons, is an entirely different story.

Do not forget what was indicated about this issue in the Big Book and in some previous Dialogs. The typical human marriage has a negative connotation and was invented in the Hells. That this is the case, you can see from the fact that the majority of the most violent and murderous crimes are committed within marital relationships or between spouses (spousal abuse, for example). Unless any relationship is founded on true love, respect, appreciation, mutual understanding, kindness, tolerance, patience, acceptance, compassion, empathy, independence, and more independence, and similar all positive characteristics, the so-called cultural and social requirements and expectations in this respect, in many instances, will only lead to disaster or tragedy.

So, as you see from this description, the so-called 'conjugal love' is nothing but a trap set up by the forces of the negative state in order to keep humans in mutual slavery and interdependency. As you know, in order to make marriages stand, no matter what, they were proclaimed by all religious systems, as well as by all legal laws, as being holy, sanctioned by God. They were put into a position of the most desirable and needed state, condition and process. How else could the negative state spread its sphere of influence and domination? Take, for example, the spiritual falsity of the statement which indicates that the two, who enter in the marital bond, become one and no longer two. What is the true meaning of this falsity and how did it come about? Is it possible at all to relinquish one's unique individuality, spirituality, mentality, difference and one's true 'I am' in order to merge with someone else and, as a result, to form a totally different state? To relinquish something like that equals destruction of that specific, different, unique and non-duplicable component that I endowed on each individual, and by which each individual is who he/she really is. In that case though, should something like this be possible at all, My Creation would be deprived of something very important, related to My Absolute Nature, which is available only and only by and through any specific individual in his/her

relative condition. In some ways, it would equal existential suicide. The negative impact of such a possibility would be incalculable. You have no idea what could happen in this case.

Now, the origin of the meaning of the expression of ‘two becoming one’ stems from the distortion and purposeful falsification of the original concept of unification, integration, oneness and absolute equality of all principles of masculinity and femininity and femininity and masculinity. These principles in no way relate to gender or to the unification, integration and oneness of two different individuals — one being a male and the other being a female. Instead, it relates to every individual’s own internal masculinity and femininity and femininity and masculinity as contained in both a male and a female. Thus, to repeat again, this concept has no relevance to the external gender. However, in the process of invention, activation, establishment and manifestation of the non-life of the negative state and human non-life, these concepts and states were utilized by the original pseudo-creators in such a manner that they applied it to any two individuals of the opposite gender-sex. It was a very convenient utilization for them because it opened up a door toward establishment of something which was/is inconceivable within the true life of the positive state — slavery, repression, suppression of one’s individuality, difference and uniqueness, mutual dependency or dependency on the externals (after all, two people are positioned in different external states, never able to occupy the same space or be in the same state of internals) and similar all negative factors.

At the time of Swedenborg, as well as throughout the entire history of humanity on planet Zero, until not so long ago, such a concept as each individual containing within himself/herself both principles — masculinity and femininity or femininity and masculinity, regardless of gender, were not known or considered at all. It was not until C. G. Jung came up with this idea that the factor of such a structural design of the sentient mind or of all sentient entities started to penetrate the conscious awareness of humans.

So, what was it that Swedenborg talked about in this respect? As you know, it was clearly stated in the books of My New Revelation that Swedenborg and his writings represent the nature and content of the transitional period which was instituted at his time — from the Dark Ages to the Ages of Enlightenment or from the old to the new. As you remember from My New Revelation, any transitional period contains in its ideas something very new and different with a considerable retention of the old concepts, interpretations and understanding of all factors which ruled the old. Because of that, some of Swedenborg’s writings

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

reflect this situation. At the same time however, Swedenborg was the first one who recognized the absolute integration of all principles of love and wisdom, good and truth and positive works (in his term, charity) and faith and their spiritual correspondential relatedness to individuals. His problem in this respect was that he ascribed these attributes in the manner which was conceived by the old conceptualization in that, such attributes were contained in their separation — one was in a male and the other in a female. In order to accomplish their necessary integration, the concept of conjugal love was invented by him based on the misunderstanding of the fact that it is not a male and female that need to enter such a state but it is masculinity and femininity and femininity and masculinity within each individual, regardless if he is a male or if she is a female, that need to enter the state of their full integration and unification.

So, in response to Erin's question in this respect, we can say that both assumptions are correct: Swedenborg reflected the social climate of his day and at the same time, he was building a necessary bridge to The New Revelation's conceptualization of the process and meaning of this issue in the positive state (without his being consciously aware at that time that this was the case). However, the majority of the content of his book ***Conjugal Love***, was the result of his own mental and moral viewpoints. Thus, it was not directly inspired by Me. This book of his did contain some elements of truth, albeit in a somewhat distorted condition, which he deduced from those books that were divinely inspired.

You have to understand one important thing: Being human, by the factor of your typical human nature, you all have a strong and almost irresistible tendency to adhere to, or at least to be influenced by all traditions, customs, social mores, habits, expectations, etc., which underlie the pseudo-life of your country, society, community, neighborhood and their respective cultures. It is almost impossible not to be contaminated by such requirements. Swedenborg did not escape this situation. Being also a typical human, he, as everyone else, yielded to the customs of his time. And you also, frequently, yield to the customs of your time. As long as you are in human life, such situations are inevitable. For that reason, there will always be a tendency to interpret many things as well as behave, act, relate, talk, etc., from the position of these cultural mores, customs, traditions, expectations or whatever you have there in such an abundance. Objectively speaking, it will be very difficult and intolerable for you, under the condition of your typical human non-life, to be any other way. In some way, your survival in your typical human non-life depends on your ability and willingness to go along with or to adjust to whatever your society or country or community

or culture, or whatever, either locally or globally, requires and demands from you.

So, if your society requires and expects from you, at some time or other, to get married and to have children for example, there will be a very strong pull to abide by these requirements and expectations. You do not want to find yourself in the position of being an outcast, a pariah or a weirdo at whom everyone points their fingers. You want to blend in, to be an integral part of life in your community. Such tendencies as, for example, to get married and to have children, are almost genetically engrained in you or in your human nature so that you would really yield to everything that your society demands and expects from you. To be that way for humans is as natural as breathing. Who can resist something so natural as that?

This is how the trap of human non-life was set. It is not easy for anyone, including someone as enlightened and inspired by The Divine as Swedenborg was, to avoid being in such a trap. In some way or other, you will reflect this condition of human non-life in anything you experience or adopt. It will become an integral part of whatever you say or write or consider. This is the reason why, Peter, many years ago, before you knew that you would be the transmitter of My New Revelation, I told you that human life consists of myriad and myriad distortions and falsifications and that it is built or founded on them. Otherwise, the typical human non-life would not be possible at all. Of course, you, as My true representatives, are not excluded from this situation. The only difference between you and all others, including Swedenborg, was that by means of My New Revelation, you became consciously aware of these important spiritual facts. This conscious awareness puts you into an entirely different position and degree of responsibility and accountability. Because of that, although, from time to time, it is impossible for you not to fall into this trap, you may establish within yourself an entirely different attitude about all of this. Your responsibility in this respect is not that much in being able to totally and completely avoid this trap, or not behave, act, relate or whatever in accordance with your society's demand and expectations (which is utterly impossible anyway — as long as you are in human non-life), but, internally, in never identifying yourself with anything which human non-life, in the form of its cultural mores, demands and anything else it expects from you.

So, how do you do that? Take, for example, your need to be married in a typical human fashion and following your marriage, to have children. In some instances, it is impossible to avoid going through all the traditional and customary rituals surrounding marriage and raising children.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

However, you may reject internally or within you, any tendency to identify yourself with the same conceptualization of these conditions or establishments as the majority of humans do. You look at them and their meaning from the position of all the principles of My New Revelation. Because you will not identify yourself internally with anything you have to do or the way you have to be while living within the frame of all demands and expectations of human non-life, nothing of that nature will be attributed or appropriated to you. In that case, following your departure from human non-life, and after entering the true life of the positive state, such things will fall away from you permanently and you will not be held responsible and accountable for anything of that nature. Of course, it would be a totally different story if you were to fully and completely identify yourself with all such expectations and demands as the majority of humans do. In that case, you would consider them as the only feasible and possible truth and lifestyle, and that nothing else or different could be and exist. Should anything like that become an integral component of your thinking and identity, you would become fully responsible and accountable for them. Thus, you would be judged accordingly.

Your enormous advantage, as compared with everyone else, is that, you have in your possession, by the means of My New Revelation, the real truth about all aspects, facets, conditions, states, dynamics, processes and nature of human non-life as well as of the non-life of the negative state in general. I can assure you about one very important fact: **No one else in the entire history of humanity, including all My prophets, disciples, followers, Swedenborg or anyone at all, had in their possession and understanding these facts or these truths about human non-life and non-life of the negative state.** Because of that they had absolutely no idea what the human non-life (for them human life) was all about or why it was possible at all for the negative state and its brand of non-life to occur in the first place. Being in such a position, everyone before you assumed that human non-life was a real life and that, for example, in Swedenborg's case, it was the only life at all from which life of all sentient entities in the positive state derives because human life was considered by him to be a nursery for all other forms of life in the positive as well as in the negative state, respectively.

With such a false or grossly distorted understanding about human non-life, and with everything related to it, it was not difficult at all to consider such non-life as holy and the only one possible. And not only that, but to consider it as deriving from God Himself/Herself Who made all humans in His/Her likeness and image. Up to this point, or up to the

point of the availability of My New Revelation, it was permitted to hold such a view about human non-life as being the only true life from which everything else derives. The reason for this permission, as you know, was in giving a chance for the full manifestation, learning, illustration and demonstration of all aspects of this non-life to take place as compared to the true life of the positive state. As you also know, if humans were to know from the beginning what their non-life was all about, they would never go along with being in such an awful, despicable, miserable, atrocious and abominable life. In that case though, the questions originally asked could never be answered, and as a consequence, all sentient minds would be plagued with uncertainty about anything at all. However, with the availability of My New Revelation, all fables, fantasies, illusions, falsities, distortions and everything else about human non-life, as well as about the non-life of the negative state, are being dispelled and put into the proper perspective. You, as My true representatives, by the mode of your own personalized and individualized lives in accordance with the principles of My New Revelation, are in the process of establishing an important condition in the human non-life which will eventually lead them toward full awareness about these facts as related to their so-called life. In that moment (in a non-time meaning!), they will be able to **unchoose** their mode of non-life and instead, they will choose the true life of My positive state. Once they become fully aware of these facts, it will signify that everything about and in human non-life, will exhaust its usefulness, will serve its purpose and will no longer be needed or necessary. At that point, the human non-life in all its negative aspects will be no more.

Peter: To tell You the honest truth, I cannot wait for this to happen. Sometimes I feel so sick and tired about everything in human non-life, or about all aspects of my own personal and individual human nature and the fragility of my human body, that I almost suffocate.

The Lord Jesus Christ: This is fully understandable. However, do not forget about the importance of your mission that you have from Me (not only yours, Peter, but everyone else's who reads these Dialogs). Also, please, do not forget about the temporality and transience not only of the negative state and human non-life, but about the very brief tour of duty that each of you as separate individuals have on planet Zero and in your human body. How long does your human non-life last? In comparison with all other modes of life, which may last to eternity (especially and particularly in the positive state), the duration of your human non-life is as nothing, as almost non-existent. It is like a very small fraction of a blink of an eye. On your planet, who lives longer than 100 hundred

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

years? You can almost count those humans on the fingers of your hands. So, do not despair; your human non-life will soon pass. Even if you were to live another 66 years in addition to your current 66, Peter, it would still be only less than a blink of your eye. Why do you think I permitted for anyone to enter human non-life under these conditions (to live such a brief and insignificant time)? Among many other things, I established such a mode during anyone's tour of duty on planet Zero, in order not to have anyone suffer for too long from all the miseries, pains, discomforts, and everything else of the very negative nature with which human non-life is so abundantly infested.

So, in essence, you may conceptualize your human non-life as something which is of such an insignificant duration, time-wise, that in the scheme of events which could last many millennia or even forever, it is as if it does not exist. Of course, as mentioned in one of the earlier Dialogs, when you are in the midst of your human time flow, or within that very small fraction of an eye blink, it seems to you that you are in your predicament, whatever it may be, almost endlessly — as if it does not have any foreseeable end. It is a matter of perspective — from what position you look at your human situation. From the objective mode of perception, everything in it is as if it all happens simultaneously and at the very same time. In this perception, therefore, the duration of your human life equals one nanosecond, for example. For that reason, everything that you experience during your human non-life happens within the frame of this nanosecond. On the other hand, in your subjective mode the duration of your human non-life, from the position of your own subjective and tangible experience, lasts for many years or for the time allotted to your being on planet Zero in your human body. Even though it is not easy to think in the objective mode of how you experience and perceive your human non-life, you are advised, whenever you are in some kind of miserable or painful or unpleasant and frustrating situation, to be aware of this fact and to think, if you can, in the objective mode. It is quite possible for you to train yourself in thinking in this mode. If you can accomplish it, it will make it much easier for you to bear your human non-life.

Let us now address Boris' questions. Why is it necessary to sometimes bring to anyone's attention or to know about something which happened during the current cycle of time, or which relates to the negative state and its human non-life or to the idea that one may reject Me as the only Absolute Source of Life, if all that was taken out of everyone's mind and memory, so-to-speak, and placed into the Universality-Of-It-All for eternal learning? Or after everything about what not to choose had been properly answered and tangibly illustrated? There are at least two

important reasons; or better to say, at this time, only two reasons can be revealed and expanded upon. One, you have to distinguish between the state of knowing something and having that something as an integral part of your life with which you have to constantly deal on a daily basis and which therefore, considerably influences or even complicates your life, demanding from you your attention and your energies. Thus, to know something or about something or to have ideas about something is not the same as having that something in your life as its integral component. Once any knowledge about anything is acquired, it cannot be eliminated to eternity. It can be dropped from one's memory or from one's conscious awareness but it cannot be erased from the totality of the cache which contains all available knowledges and which is placed into the Universality-Of-It-All.

If such a thing as permanent elimination of any acquired knowledge and experience from being and existence were to be possible, in that case, no permanent learning about anything could take place. You would have to constantly acquire the same knowledge over and over again. This would prevent you from acquirement of any new knowledge because you would be bogged down in relearning the same thing on a continuous basis. So, as you see, it is one thing to have knowledge and ideas, and experiences related to them, or to have full access to that knowledge, to those ideas and to their individual experiences — whenever needed and necessary, and it is another thing entirely to be in a position of acceptance of and identifying yourself with them to the point that they become the ruling force of your individual and personal life. Why would it be necessary, from time-to-time, for anyone to have any need to enter the Universality-Of-It-All and to remember or to re-experience anything at all which would be eliminated from the sentient entities' memories and which would no longer have a place within any future cycle of time?

This need relates to the structural design of any sentient mind, which, in its relative condition, reflects the Absolute Structural Design of My Absolute Sentient Mind. This design requires that any knowledge, experience, state, process and anything which was, is and will be acquired, is constantly available to anyone in order to prevent the possible redundancy and backward move or regression or waste of energy on seeking or making an all-out effort to discover any knowledge, experience, state, process and anything else that has already been discovered, acquired and established. In other words, such availability is necessary in order to preserve a continuous spiritual progression of everyone in being and existence.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

You have to understand one thing: The structural design of any sentient mind is such that it constantly seeks to discover new knowledge, new experiences and new everything else. In the process of any such discovery, the sentient mind, first of all, searches out the Universality-Of-It-All in order to determine whether any such knowledge and experience, or anything else at all, needed for his/her purpose, is already available. Secondly, during this search, by the experiential mode of its nature, as he/she goes through all available knowledges and experiences, he/she may recall anything related to this cycle of time/state/process or to his/her personal life for the purpose of evaluation and establishment of whether anything at all from that cycle of time/state/process could be useful as a foundation on which new discoveries could be accomplished. This situation does not mean at all that anything recalled or re-experienced during such a search will be adopted or allowed to penetrate his/her mind or to take hold in his/her life to the point that he/she would be forced to make any of that a part of his/her unique identity. Once anything of that nature is placed in the Universality-Of-It-All, by that factor, it can never become an integral part of one's identity nor can it ever have any adverse influence on one's current life. It is available only in the form of knowledge or ideas and their experiences as such, without being taken over by them. Such is the arrangement of this setup.

Let Me remind you of something in this respect: In the original structural design of the sentient mind, which in its relative condition reflects My Absolute Sentient Mind, there is an area which can be called — Multiversal Consciousness. This area is directly plugged into the Universality-Of-It-All from which it receives any inputs needed for whatever purpose. In relationship to each other, they are in a constant communicative mode. In one sense, everyone's Multiversal Consciousness contains all knowledges and experiences, as well as everything else, that have ever been acquired since the time when My Creation was created or put into its process. You can consider this area as one's own individual and personal key to the Universality-Of-It-All which opens the door to everything contained in it. The difference between the two is in that, in the Universality-Of-It-All, there is a timelessness factor involved. What it means is that everything in it exists as if it is happening over and over again in its own true reality at any given moment of its occurrence. On the other hand, in everyone's personal and individual Multiversal Consciousness the same things are in the state of **available** knowledge and experience but not in their actual occurrence. In order to make that knowledge and experience available for knowing and experiencing them in their true nature, the way they are in their essence and substance and in any current experiential mode of their occurrence, the Multiversal

Consciousness, through its direct connection to the Universality-Of-It-All, by the very nature of the Universality-Of-It-All, is able to acquire the very essence and substance of any such knowledge and experience, or whatever is needed in this respect, in the most tangible and experiential mode. This possibility reveals to anyone who enters that mode, the true nature and structure of any knowledge and experience which occurred prior to any current cycle of time/state/process. That way, rediscovery of something which had already been discovered, does not need to take place. By this factor, eternal spiritual progression can flow uninterrupted.

The second issue in this respect relates to the concept of relativity. As you know, every sentient entity is relative and not absolute. Because of that, as you remember from the Big Book, no one can be perfect in an absolute sense. This condition establishes a peculiar possibility which can lead anyone to making occasional errors. The multiversal law requires that anyone who makes any error has to bear the consequences of such erroneous tendencies. In order to avoid any possibility of identification with one's erroneous conclusions, whatever they may be, and by that factor prevent the reactivation of the negative state, the one who makes such errors is placed momentarily into the Universality-Of-It-All where he/she may experience all consequences, outcomes and results not only of his/her own personal errors but any and all other errors that have been committed in any other cycles of time/state/processes (with all their own consequences, results and outcomes). The reason why such an all-inclusive experience may take place (if needed and necessary), is for preventive measures. It helps him/her to avoid making any errors in the future which had taken place prior to his/her time/state/condition. In the broader sense, it helps to prevent the reoccurrence or reactivation of the negative state and of the typical human non-life in its negative aspects. Of course, new and different errors could occur because of one's imperfection.

However, based on the experiential knowledge, pulled out of the Universality-Of-It-All and his/her own individual and personal Multiversal Consciousness, one is made able to correct them on the spot, so-to-speak. So, basically, these are some reasons why it will be necessary for everyone, from time to time, to re-experience or recall anything at all which is needed at each particular time/state/process. As far as the new sentient entities are concerned, the entities who will be created in any succeeding cycle of time/state/process, will be relative likewise. For that reason, everything explained above, will apply to them as well. They will need to have their own knowledge about anything which happened during any previous cycle of time so that, first of all,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

they will have no need to waste their energies on reinventing something or re-experiencing something which had already occurred; and secondly, they would have no need to ask questions as related to the meaning and experiences of the negative state and human non-life and to the content of the original idea about the right to reject Me as the only Absolute Source of their lives and what the consequence, results and outcomes of acceptance of that idea would be. Thus, having access to all those knowledges and experiences would preclude any reactivation of the negative state and its human non-life to eternity.

The concept of memory, from our spiritual standpoint and not from the standpoint of human psychological knowledges in this respect, has a direct relevance to and affinity with your personal and individual Multiversal Consciousness. They can be equated. In this respect, memory is the condition or the integral component of the overall sentient mind for the purposes of retention of all knowledges and experiences that have been and will be occurring during the entire history of being and existence of the sentient life. They are needed for the purpose of preservation and continuation of everyone's spiritual progression so that no need would exist to reinvent or re-experience something which had already been invented and experienced before; that is to say, that there would never be a possibility for any type of regression to occur. And this is all that can be revealed at this time about Boris' questions.

Peter: Thank You very much for this revelation. As You are aware, toward the very end of recording this Dialog, I received a somewhat lengthy letter from Dan Barba which contains somewhat lengthy questions that he asks about Your Personal relationship toward us at two of their levels — from Your Absolute State and from our relative condition. Do You wish to provide any answers to his questions at this time?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Although his questions are important and meaningful, the answers to them are premature to reveal at this time. There is a mystery here, the knowledge of which could be spiritually dangerous for you to know under the presently existing conditions. We'll reevaluate the possibility of My answers at a later date. There is something else that needs to occur first. As for now though, you need a longer break and to do a different work. Until then — if needed and feasible at all.

One Hundred and Forty Third Dialog

May 29, 2000

Peter: As You requested, I am including in this Dialog only those parts of Dan's letter that contain direct questions to You. Here they go: *I ask, in what manner do You and will You feel about us as individuals (along the same general way that we feel as relative entities about You as an individual) when we have more interactions with You in the future? Would You experience feelings as we do (while interacting with us at a relative level)? We know that You love everyone in an Absolute way and without preferences of any kind. You have made it clear. Therefore, I also humbly ask, can we know more about how this love can/will manifest and be, in an individual and personal manner and in particular events and/or instances — from You toward us — as separate and unique beings, especially in the way You would feel within You, in Your own private and personal feelings toward us as individuals, from an Individual? How does this work?*

*Now that You have a relative nature within Your New Nature, just how would/do You feel, react, etc., toward us as individuals when we have these further interactions with You, while fully residing in the positive state? Do/will You demonstrate to us, on an individual basis, a particular like or disposition toward a specific trait in us, toward some things we do, the way we act, how we are, what we say, toward something such as art, or an event, etc.? How do/would You make one feel special and unique as an individual, loved not as one among so many in an unimaginably vast Creation, but as One to one? Just how and/or do You show it if You are pleased and displeased with something that we do or don't do? Would we have special and unique things, events, memories, music, etc., between us that would make us feel that our love is special and that You like and appreciate us in a totally unique way, for the way we are as individuals? In other words, I am truly interested in caring for **Your personal feelings**, in making you feel happy and pleased. Also, would we (You as an individual, and us as individuals) be able to feel this relationship from a relative basis, as with two best friends and/or lovers that 'hang out' and do things together, etc., although we would know and enjoy that fact that we have this relationship with an Absolute Being, as well as with a relative one at the same time? And extremely important, would You feel, act and treat us as individuals, after sharing more and more experiences together? Does it also, can it also, work this way with You? End of that portion of Dan's letter which directly contains his questions. Of course, as always, before answering his questions, if*

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

You choose to do so at all, perhaps You would like to contribute something else first.

The Lord Jesus Christ: At this time, let us first consider the issues raised in Dan's letter. From the very onset of our discussion, let Me point out the fact that there is a misperception and consequent misunderstanding about the reality of My True Absolute New Nature. An assumption is being made that within My New Nature I also have a relative nature and that there is an Absolute Being as well as a relative one at the same time — and this is all within Me or in My New Nature. This is an incorrect assumption. As you remember from the Big Book (Chapter Two), whatever was brought with Me from planet Zero (My human body), following My return to My Home, before it was included into the totality of My Absolute Nature, it was made divine or it was *divinized*. What does the process of divinization signify or mean? Here is the great incomprehensible mystery not available for apprehension by any relative sentient mind. The process of *divinization* was in actuality the process of *absolutization* of everything which I brought with Me from My human life on planet Zero. This process of *absolutization* was executed from My Absolute State by the means and tools contained in My Absolute Unnamable Core which is not approachable or comprehensible by any relative sentient mind.

You have to understand one important thing: To include anything relative, in its very much relative nature, into something which is absolute, by the factor of that inclusion itself, would mean an instantaneous evaporation or complete erasure of that relative. Those two don't mix. In order to prevent anything like this from happening, before inclusion of My human body and its human traits, attributes, characteristics or whatever it had, it was first necessary to make them Divine or to make them Absolute. This was done by the above mentioned process of *divinization* or *absolutization*.

Based on these facts, you have to understand very clearly the difference between being relative and being *in* relative. Whereas the Absolute can never be relative, it can be *in* relative, filling it up completely in its relative condition. On the other hand, relative sentient entities can and may experience this Absolute only from the position of their relativity, but never from the position of the Absolute Itself. At the same time, thanks to the divinized and absolutized relative components acquired during My life on planet Zero, I, from the position of My Absolute New Nature, am able to fully experience everything that any relative sentient entity and human can experience — from the position of their relativity.

Again, it is one thing to experience something which is being experienced by any relative sentient entity or human from their relative position, and it is another thing entirely to have that experience within Me, or reside in Me, in its relative condition.

These factors fully determine the nature, structure, dynamics and process of My relationships with anyone in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. In this respect, you can conceptualize at least two levels of such relationships. One takes place from the position of My Absolute Nature and Its Absolute Individuality, and the other takes place from the position of the relative sentient entities and their relative individualities. What is the character of these two levels? Whatever any sentient entity thinks, wills, feels, loves, does, creates, experiences, etc., the very ability to do that or to be the way he/she is, stems from My Absolute Thinking, Feeling, Willing, Loving, Doing, Creating, Providing Experiences in their infinite possibilities and diversities, etc. Without My being that way in My Absolute Condition, no one would be able to be that way in their relative condition either. From this point of view I relate to everyone with the sameness of intensity, extensity and absoluteness of My Absolute Unconditional Love and Wisdom. In this sense, no preferential or different treatment of anyone in particular is either conceivable or possible. However, this so-called sameness does not apply to the quality, specificity and directionality of My Absolute Unconditional Love.

The situation is entirely different as far as relationships from the position of any relative sentient entity are concerned. As you know, each sentient entity, no matter who he/she is or where he/she is situated or positioned, is an individualized, personalized, infinitely different and unique universe unto himself/herself. Once again, this condition of each and every sentient entity derives from My Absolute New Nature which is in Its Own Absolute State of Individualization, Personalization, Infinite Difference, Integration and Uniqueness. From this Absolute Condition of Mine, a certain very unique, different, individualized and personalized element is imparted on each sentient entity, by which and through which he/she is able to be, to function and to do what he/she is, how he/she functions and what he/she does. Because, in an ultimate sense, it is My element in each such individual, whatever that individual experiences, feels, thinks, wills, strives for, creates, and how he/she relates, makes love, loves, acts, etc., that I made it possible for him/her for anything of that nature to occur. In this sense, you can say that I experience or participate fully, in all aspects, in everything that each and every individual does.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Our relationship in this respect is based on the uniqueness, infinite difference and non-duplicable individuality and personality of each such individual. Because of this infinite difference and intimacy, My relationship with every individual is and will always be intimate, private, very much individual and infinitely different from one individual to another. Because each individual in comparison with any other individual is not the same, and cannot be the same to eternity, My relationship with him/her, from his/her individual position, will also not be the same as with any other individual. Paradoxically speaking, the sameness of such relationships is rooted in their absolute ***non-sameness***. Because no two individuals are alike in their true nature, structure and dynamics, they cannot have the same experience and relationship with Me and I with them.

For that reason, to describe such relationships between Me and them, or between Me and you, would be impossible to make because there is no blanket, all-the-same, across-the-board, all-inclusive, summarily, etc., nature, structure and dynamic of any such relationships. And not only that, but having a typical human nature, if I were to give you an example of how I relate, feel, think, etc., about one of you, it would establish unwanted and spiritually dangerous expectations that anyone else besides you should have exactly the same relationship with Me as you have or as I have with you. If anything of this nature were to be possible, it would lock you up in something which is not congruent to your true nature and your unique and infinitely different individuality. It would equal the denial of your own individuality, uniqueness and infinite difference, and by that factor, it would exclude My presence in you. Should anything of this impossible nature happen, it would mean your eternal death.

Based on this fact, it is obvious that it would be extremely spiritually dangerous to give you any description of My thinking, feeling, interactions, etc., which I have toward any one of you individually as one Individual to another. Because of the absolute intimacy, privacy, uniqueness and specificity of our relationship in this respect, it is obvious that only you alone with Me in you can and may determine the level, degree, intensity, extensity and quality of My involvement with you. The only thing I can say in this respect, without violating this condition, is that I fully and completely participate in everything that you go through, experience, do, etc., without exception or exclusion. This participation of Mine takes place from both positions, simultaneously and synchronously — from My Absolute Position, as determined by My Absolute New Nature, and from your own relative position, the way you function and

experience all and everything in your own uniqueness and infinite difference as determined by your own individualized and personalized nature.

As far as the future development of our mutual relationships and involvements is concerned, to talk about that means to predict the future. As you know, I am not in the business of predicting the future. Such relationships and involvements will depend on many different and numerous factors, situations, conditions, choices, etc., that would be in place at that time. To talk about them would be very much premature and inappropriate. Wait and see and be patient and more patient! You will be surprised how they will develop.

In evaluating the nature of any relationship, you have to consider the issue of quality which the individuality of each individual has. The individuality of each individual has a very unique and specific quality which substantially differs from the quality of individuality of any other individual. The only common denominator they all have is that they have their own specific quality. The nature of each relationship is determined by the quality of individuality of each individual. This factor is determined by the fact that the Absolute Individuality of My Absolute Individualness has an Absolute, All-Inclusive Positive Quality. Because each sentient entity, in some way or other, reflects this Nature of Mine in their relative condition, it establishes their own relative quality which fully depends on My Absolute Quality.

As you remember, the nature of each sentient entity and his/her unique individuality derives from the very specific element taken out from My Absolute Nature. To say that the very specific element is taken out from Me does not exactly reflect the true reality of how this is done or what occurs during such an impartment. Because any element in My Absolute New Nature is absolute likewise, the element itself, in its absolute condition, cannot be imparted on someone who is relative. However, its idea can and may. Due to the fact that each such an idea fully carries within itself the totality of everything that the element in question has and what it is (without exception and exclusion), for all practical purposes, you may comfortably assume as if the element itself is being imparted on any respective individual.

Now, each such element or its idea has its own very specific quality that infinitely differs from the quality of any other element or its idea. Because of this fact, the individuality of each individual has an infinitely different quality. This setup is a determining factor in building the uniqueness, infinite difference, non-duplicability, and everything else of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

which any individual consists and by which he/she functions and is in his/her own being and existence and with his/her own very specific and unique quality. As you remember, any individual at all can and may relate to anyone only from his/her own position or from what he/she is and what he/she has. This fact derives from the position of My Absolute New Nature. I relate to everyone only and only from Myself and from everything I Am and I have. No other possibility exists. However, the quality and content of My relatedness to each sentient entity takes place from the position of that element of Mine, the idea of which was imparted on each respective individual. And because each such element, and its idea, is infinitely different in all aspects of its content and their respective qualities, My relationship with each respective individual will be qualitatively different from any other relationship which I have with any other individual. Thus, as mentioned above, from this position, such a relationship cannot be the same. The sameness is reflected in the factor of the relationship itself. No one is excluded from this relationship unless they exclude themselves for whatever reasons (as in the negative state, for example). However, even in this situation you can say that we relate. To exclude something, logically means to relate. You relate by the process of exclusion. Thus, to repeat again, no matter what, no one is excluded from this relationship.

That the quality of each relationship is infinitely different is reflected not only in the relationship which exists between Me and you, for example, but also among all of you in your own relative lives. Take, for example, all people with whom you come in contact for whatever reason. Or take all your friends, lovers, spouses, acquaintances, etc. If you carefully analyze how you feel about and how you relate to all those people, you can clearly discern that your feelings, thoughts, attitudes, behaviors or, simply stated, your relationships with them, in your circle, will be perceptibly qualitatively different from one individual to another. The quality of your own unique individuality relates to the specific and unique quality of the individuality of each member of your circle with whom you come in contact at some time or other. It is impossible to have exactly the same degree, level and quality of relatedness to all such individuals. Even if you love and care for them at the level of the same intensity and extensity, even if you never discriminate against any of them, the quality of that love and care will be substantially different from one individual to another. It will always be determined by the quality of the individuality of each individual with whom you are in contact. Once again, this reflects the nature of the relationship which I have with each and every individual in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence.

Now, this does not at all mean that if your love and care, or whatever you have toward anyone in this respect, is substantially different from one individual to another, that your love and care or whatever you have, will be of lesser or greater quality as compared to anyone else. It does not at all mean that it has to be less or more. It only means that it is substantially and qualitatively different. As I love and care for everyone equally and in an absolute sense, and by that factor I accommodate My love and care to the needed level of the quality of the individuality of each individual (exactly the way he/she needs it — no more and no less), thus, making it different, and not more or less, so do you in your own relative way. This rule, of course, applies only to the nature of relationships that exist in the positive state and, most importantly, that exist between Me and everyone else in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. If you are to sustain the true life of the positive state, no other types of relationships would be possible or feasible, because, after all, they do stem from Me and My True Absolute Nature. Given the fact that Creation and everyone in it depend on Me in an absolute sense, no other types of relationships could take hold in their lives or be even desirable. Under these conditions, the invention, activation, establishment and manifestation of any other type of life but the life of the positive state would not be possible at all.

In order to bring about any other type of life (in this case, non-life), it was necessary to violate and to recede from this setup. Thus, the lifestyle in the non-life of the negative state and human non-life, is an illustrative and demonstrative example of how not to relate to anyone and ultimately, to Me. However, on My part, because I am incapable of violating My Own Nature, Individuality and its Absolute Quality, My relationships to all in the negative state and human non-life remain substantially the same as to anyone else elsewhere. Meaning, I relate to them in accordance with the quality of the individuality that each individual has. Because the quality of their individuality in its primary nature is negative or evil (you can say that it is, in fact, non-quality, or the lack of any positive quality), it triggers relatedness which is determined by the content and nature of that specific quality (non-quality). The needs of the qualities of their individualities are to be rejected and to have nothing in common with Me or with My positive state or with My type of true life. Since they need it, — otherwise they could not be the way they are — in order to make it possible for them to fulfill their purpose and mission they have in this respect (to teach everyone how not to relate — among many other things!), their needs are being fulfilled. The fulfillment of these types of needs will continue until the learning in this respect takes place. Following that, their needs will

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

change. They will be in full alignment with the needs existing in the positive state.

A somewhat different situation is in place as far as humans in general are concerned; as well as My true representatives on planet Zero are concerned. As you remember, in the first instance, with the vast majority of humans, their situation substantially differs from everyone else, both in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. This difference is determined by the factor of their not being in their ultimate choice. Because of that, from their position, they have no tangible and concrete experience of relating to Me, nor I to them on their conscious level. Simply stated, I am not physically, nor in any other discernible way, present in front of their eyes, so-to-speak, so that they could interact with Me and I with them, as with anyone else — in the same way as with those who are in their so-called ultimate choice. This type of relationship would violate their current condition; or their not being able to be in the non-life of their ultimate choice. In order to prevent this from happening, I do not appear to humans in the same manner as in any other states, conditions, places, times, paratimes, etc.

The specific situation with humans requires a very specific nature of relatedness. On planet Zero, no one is consciously and sensorially aware that I am in them and with them and that, by that factor, I experience everything they experience exactly the way they experience it without their consciously knowing that this is the case. Only theoretically and by faith, some religiously and spiritually minded humans assume this to be the case. However, experientially and sensorially, they have no possibility of discerning or proving that I am truly with them and in them and that I experience their lives, in all their totalities, from their own position the way they experience it.

Under the condition of the typical human non-life, from the human position, it would be difficult to speak about fully conscious reciprocal relationships between Me and all other humans. This temporary and transient situation is required in order to give human non-life a chance to fully manifest, illustrate and demonstrate the specificity of the nature of human non-life. As you are aware from the Big Book, nowhere and nowhen else is such a strange phenomenon as human life possible or conceivable. By their mode of non-life, humans provide an important learning for all of how life should never be conceived, lived and practiced. However, once this important purpose of human life ends, and everyone in being and existence is fully satisfied with everything that human non-life teaches them; and once they all fully master all the lessons provided

by humans, then and only then the same type of interaction will be established with all humans who will still be present on planet Zero. The current type of interaction and relatedness with humans ends for them in the moment they leave planet Zero and come to the spiritual world (to the world of spirits or to the intermediate world). During their stay in that world they are being taught a new type of relationship with Me and toward Me which was not available nor possible for them to have while they physically lived on planet Zero.

So, as you see from these facts, whereas I, from the position of My Absolute State, as well as from the position of the human relative state, am always present in all human experiential modes, fully feeling their feelings and everything else — without being contaminated by anything negative contained in them, humans are deprived from knowing, feeling and everything else the way I do both in My Absolute Condition and from My presence in their relative condition (without being relative Myself). This situation is one of the many reasons why humans have so many irreconcilable and contradictory views about Who I am and what My True Absolute Nature is all about as well as how I relate to them and how they should relate to Me. Unfortunately, for the vast majority of humans, they have no idea about these facts or about why they are in the position they are, or why I do not appear to them physically or in any other tangible and convincing manner. Because of that, they consider their situation to be a normal state of affairs. They do not realize that absolutely nothing normal exists about their brand of life/non-life.

The situation is somewhat different with you, who have the privilege of being My representatives on planet Zero. Thanks to My New Revelation, and to everything it contains in all its sources, you have this knowledge about the so-called reality of human non-life. This knowledge and awareness puts you in a position which determines how I relate to you and how you relate to Me. Our mutual relationship is much closer to that which was revealed about it above, the way it is in the positive state.

Although, practically speaking, because you are in human life, you have the same conditions in this respect as the vast majority of humans do, nevertheless, the awareness and knowledge about these facts, make it possible for you, on your inner level, to recognize how I relate to you, and based on that recognition, it makes it possible for you to establish the most appropriate relationship with Me. My New Revelation gives you a clear knowledge about the nature of our mutual relationship and how I think, feel, act and relate to you and how you could think, feel, act and relate to Me. And not only that, but, by having this availability and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

possibility, and by actualizing it and realizing it in your own personalized and individualized lives, you are setting up a valuable and very much needed example for all other humans who are not in the same position as you are. This example will serve as a foundation on which they will be able to establish the same type of relationship with Me as exists in the positive state. Your services in this respect are invaluable. You can consider these services as one of the major roles and assignments that you have as My true representatives on planet Zero.

The important emphasis in our mutual relatedness or in our mutual interaction is on personalization and individualization. The quality of your individuality, its uniqueness and difference, requires that I relate to you only and only from that position. Any other position, which would not take into consideration or adhere to the unique and infinitely different quality of your individuality, would make it utterly impossible to establish a proper mutual relationship between Me and you. In that case, your individualized and personalized life would be forfeited. If anything of this nature were to happen, the very idea of the element from My Absolute Nature, which makes you who and what you are, would be forfeited as well. In that case though, the entire Creation would be deprived of something extremely important, needed for its creative effort and continuous spiritual progression. So, please, do not expect that I will treat you or relate to you exactly the same way as to anyone else. Such a thing is utterly impossible. Of course, it does not mean at all that I would love you and care for you in a much lesser or much greater degree than anyone else. To repeat again and again, **I would love you and care for you differently but with the same degree, intensity, extensity and absolute proportion of My love and care as everyone else receives from Me.**

At the same time, please, do not expect that you would relate to Me, love Me and care about Me, in exactly the same manner as everyone else. Once again, such a thing is an utter impossibility. Because you can relate to Me, as well as to everyone else, only and only from your own personalized and individualized position, from the position of having a totally unique, different and non-duplicable quality of your individuality, your relationship toward Me and with Me, in comparison with everyone else, will be infinitely different likewise. It would be disastrous for everyone if you would try to relate to Me, or anyone else, in exactly the same manner as someone else. This would equal abominable spiritual adultery because you would relinquish your individuality and its unique quality and try to be like someone else. As mentioned above, this is one of the most important reasons why it cannot be described or revealed in

your human terms how I relate to you and how you relate to Me. If anything like that were to be possible, I would have to give you a description of all the infinite numbers of relationships and interactions of all sentient entities and humans who are in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. Can you visualize the size of a library that could contain all materials related to this issue? It would fill the entire multiverse and there would not be enough space/state left to make it possible to contain all of that. So, to repeat again, it is entirely up to you to find out from your own selves how and in what manner our mutual relationship and interaction take place and what I think, feel, will or whatever about you and how you think, feel, will or whatever about Me. No one else can do it for you or on your behalf. It is your own personal and individual responsibility.

Whatever was revealed above about this issue is applicable to the current cycle of time/state/process. As you are well aware, the nature of the current cycle is characterized by inclusion in its course of the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the non-life of the negative state and human non-life. As you are also aware, this unusual situation does not allow for the true life of the positive state to be in full and complete activation. On a daily basis, the positive state must deal with this situation. Because of that, many restrictions, limitations and similar factors make it impossible for the full and complete manifestation of the true and genuine nature of the positive state to take place. When you have to deal on an everyday basis, in some way or other, with the issues of the negative state and its human non-life, too much energy is going into something which is not an integral part of the true life of the positive state. Thus, a substantial portion of those energies are currently not available for utilization in the positive state.

The current cycle, by its very nature, requires a special type of spiritual aspect, released from My Absolute Nature, which rules this cycle. Its quality is such that it takes into consideration the permission factor which allows something like the negative state and human non-life to manifest its face and its true nature. Because of that, a special type of quality of everyone's individuality is endowed on everyone, which takes into consideration this unusual factor and which determines the nature of the quality needed for this purpose.

This unusual situation or factor also determines the quality of relationships and interactions which are in place during the current cycle. It impacts the quality and nature of all existing relationships and interactions which exist among all sentient entities in being and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, as well as which exist between Me and you and you and Me. Because of the needed restrictions, limitations and similar factors which are in place for security reasons, as well as for many other spiritual reasons, such relationships and interactions are somewhat restricted and limited as well. In essence, you can say that no one is able to relate and interact from the position of the fullness and completeness of one's individuality and its unique, individualized and personalized quality.

Due to this fact, the quality of relationships and interactions during this cycle of time/state/process is very much different than it was in any previous cycles and than it will be in any succeeding cycles. Do not forget that any cycle of time/state/process is ruled by a totally different quality of the spiritual aspect and its components released from Me.

What could be said about the nature and content of the quality of My special and unique aspect and its components which will be released from My Absolute New Nature for ruling the next cycle after the total and complete eternal elimination of the non-life of the negative state and human non-life take place? First of all, by not having any need to deal with the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the non-life of the negative state and its human non-life, and thus, by not having wasted precious energies on something of that nature, all restrictions, limitations and everything else of this nature, will be permanently removed from the lives of all sentient entities. This will make it possible to endow all of them with a new and very much different quality which will define their own individuality accommodated and adjusted to the nature, structure, dynamics and process of the next cycle of time/state/process.

Secondly, and most importantly, because of this infinite difference, whatever quality of everyone's individuality has existed prior to the new cycle, will be removed and a new, transcending quality will be established within every individual in being and existence. This new and different quality will be in full alignment with that new and different aspect and all its components which will be released from My Absolute New Nature at that time. For that reason, as it was pointed out many times before (for example, in Dialog 100), nothing will be the same. And not only will it not be the same, but not one particle will exist within the quality of everyone's individuality which would have any resemblance to anything which previously existed.

This new condition will also determine the quality of relationships and interactions which will exist at that time/state among all sentient entities, as well as how I will relate to and interact with you and how you will relate to and interact with Me. A new quality, transcending anything that was in place previously in this respect, will be established and manifested which will highly surpass anything available during the current cycle of time/state/process, and which cannot be described by any words, images, conceptualizations or ideas that are available, not only to humans but also to all other sentient entities in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence.

The entirely new quality of all individualities of all sentient entities will make it possible for this transcending quality of relationships and interactions at all their levels to take place. One thing that can be said about it is that such interactions and relationships will be far more intimate, private, intense, individualized, personalized and infinitely different from one individual to another, from Me to you and from you to Me, than has been the case during the current cycle in which you live and reside.

You have no idea how it is to be and to exist in a condition which does not contain anything at all from the non-life of the negative state and human non-life. You have no experiences whatsoever, what it means and how it is to be without them. This situation was needed to be established during this cycle, in order to give an opportunity for the non-life of the negative state and human non-life to manifest its nature as compared to anything else outside of their pseudo-domain and their pseudo-nature. Otherwise, they could not come to their adverse fruition. If you were to know and to experience the true life without anything contained in the non-life of the negative state and your human non-life, it would be impossible for you to survive in the current situation or under currently existing conditions.

So, as you see from this, not having any idea or experience of how it is to be without the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state and its human non-life, makes it possible for you to be the way you are, to do what you need to do, to relate and interact the way it is necessary and feasible under the presently existing conditions, and to live your life the way you have been living it. At this point in time, nothing more can be said about this issue. Think about everything revealed in this, and in all previous Dialogs, and discuss their content among yourselves.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Now, Peter, I would recommend to finish for today and devote your time to something else. Something else needs to occur before we may continue in our dialoging — if at all.

Peter: Thank You very much for everything revealed in this Dialog.

One Hundred and Forty Fourth Dialog

June 1, 2000

Peter: Today, I don't have any questions of multiversal significance. Also, as of now, I have not received any from anyone else. I am just checking in to determine whether You have something to contribute or elaborate upon that we are ready to know or to consider.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for giving Me this opportunity for discussion of some important spiritual issues. As you know, at the end of Dialog 143, it was indicated to you that our dialoging will resume after something occurs. It did occur but its occurrence took place in our realm. On your side, for you personally, Peter, it resulted in bringing to your attention, as well as to your memory, two events which are somewhat connected. The first one relates to the concept of 'innocence' and 'childhood,' and the second, to something which is recorded in the Bible, Genesis 6:5-7. Let us begin with the concepts of 'innocence' and 'childhood.' The current spiritual climate requires that these two concepts be reiterated from the position of the nature of the currently established spiritual phase in the ongoing multiversal shift. As you remember, these concepts were previously discussed both in the Big Book, in the **Corollaries...** and in the earlier Dialogs (in the first volume).

At the onset of those discussions it was generally assumed that on planet Zero the concept, meaning and content of 'innocence' is reflected in and corresponds to the nature of childhood or children in general. Although, at one time, there were grains of truth in this assumption, at the present time, this is not the case. Before the time when it was indicated to you that no longer was anyone allowed to be born on planet Zero from the positive state, the people who incarnated on planet Zero from the positive state did have this representation and correspondence during their childhood. In the process of their childhood they did reflect the state of innocence in order to give humans some indication of what it means to be innocent and what the nature of people in the positive state is like. However, following the prohibition of incarnation on planet Zero of anyone from the positive state, this representation, reflection and spiritual correspondence of childhood ceased to be in place. Because, at the present time, no one is incarnating on planet Zero from the positive state; and because neither are any humans proper being born on it; and because only the representatives of the negative state are allowed to incarnate here, the concept of innocence is no longer reflected and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

represented in any of the newly born children, and thus, there is no longer any spiritual correspondence to the innocence in them. Instead, all such children now represent, reflect and spiritually correspond to the state of corruption, degradation and perversion of innocence and to the defilement of anything positive and good. In essence, presently, they represent the disguised, and very often even very obvious, state of evil and abomination of the nature of the non-life of the negative state which is being more and more imparted on all who live on planet Zero, with the exception of My overt and covert representatives.

This obvious revelation for some of you will be difficult to accept or to conceive. After all, in your view, children could be so cute and adorable. As you noticed, presently, very beautiful children are being born. But, what do you think, how else can the negative state establish its pseudo-winning on your planet, if not outwardly presenting itself as being cute, adorable and beautiful? This is the catch or trap of the negative state to make humans continuously believe that children are innocent, representing the state of positiveness and goodness, and therefore, they cannot be responsible and accountable for anything.

In order to establish the proper and correct understanding of the real face of what childhood currently represents, reflects and to what it corresponds, you, Peter, were exposed to many different experiences in your lifelong preparation for becoming the transmitter and recorder of My New Revelation, which at the time of their occurrence did not make too much sense for you. One such important experience, as related to the issue of children and innocence, happened approximately 46 years ago. That event slipped your memory, although, from time to time, it would surface in it with your wondering what that was all about. As you remember, we have repeated several times that certain events may happen in your life, which during their occurrence their significance is not so obvious from the position of that time, as it becomes obvious from the position of this time. So, the mentioned occurrence of your experience, Peter, which happened 46 years ago, relates to this time and not to that time.

Let us bring your experience of that time to full recollection. As you remember, following your trial and sentence in the Soviet Union for the alleged anti-Soviet underground activities, you were transported with other prisoners in a railway car to a faraway concentration camp. Because you were a political prisoner, and because in that transport you were the only one of such a designation (being a political prisoner), you were kept separate from all other so-called normal and regular criminals.

So, you had your own small compartment in that railway car. The reason why Soviet authorities kept political prisoners separate from all other, non-political prisoners, was not because they were giving them some kind of preferential treatment, but because they were afraid that they would corrupt and contaminate all others with their anti-Soviet ideology. By other, non-political prisoners and by the guards, you were generally labeled as 'fascists.' At that time, two types of 'fascists' held such a designation. One was attributed to all those who collaborated with Nazi Germany during the Second World War and the other to those who were dissidents, rejecting the Soviet Marxist-Leninist doctrine and the Soviet lifestyle. The latter ones were called ideological fascists. As you see, this designation had nothing in common with the ideology of fascism. But this was the way you were commonly designated at that time.

So, in that transport, several prisoners were present. As you were sitting in your own compartment, pondering about your future and what you could expect upon your final destination in some remote concentration camp, you heard various voices of other prisoners. To your great surprise, there also was a voice of a child. You were very much surprised to realize that a male child was also being transported with you as a regular prisoner. You wondered what that child did that he deserved such harsh treatment as to share the fate of the adult prisoners (at that time, there were no juvenile courts in the Soviet Union). You were still under the impression that children represented the state of innocence, and that therefore, they were innocent and could not be held responsible for their deeds. For that, you blamed the draconian laws of the Soviet criminal justice system. As you were listening to the voice of that child, it was becoming louder and louder and more and more angry and rebellious. The child was grossly misbehaving; he was demanding, using foul language, cursing the guardsmen and causing them all kinds of trouble. At one point in time, the guardsmen became so tired of that child's behavior, that they threatened to punish him unless he shut up. What do you think, what kind of punishment were they going to impose on him? They told him that they would throw him in with that fascist who was in a few compartments over from the place where the child was with the other prisoners.

Because the child did not take heed, the guard unlocked his compartment, took him out, brought him to your compartment, unlocked the door, and threw that child in. In the moment he entered your compartment, Peter, you were shocked out of your wits, so-to-speak, to see, first of all, how young he was (he could not have been more than 10 years old), and secondly, and most importantly, what type of pure

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

evilness exuded from his countenance. Although externally, in his looks, he appeared as a very beautiful child, despite that, there was nothing in him which would resemble anything good and positive. The evilness of his being, and with him, the evilness of his presence which you felt, Peter, were overwhelming and almost unbearable. You were wondering for how long you could be in such an evil and negative presence. You were also wondering how it was possible for someone of that age to contain such an evil and abominable nature. For all practical purposes, it felt to you, Peter, as if you were in the physical presence of the devil himself.

Upon sitting down next to you, Peter, that child quieted down. It was obvious that he was very much uncomfortable in your presence. At that time, you did not know why. At this time you know that any such evil and negative entity, as that child was, is extremely uncomfortable in the presence of someone positive or in the presence of My representative (at that time My agent). Of course, at that time, you did not recognize yourself as being such an agent. However, unconsciously, the child did. Sitting next to you, you felt a need to talk to him. You asked him for the reasons why he was in prison. He told you, and this was corroborated by the guard who was watching you and listening to what you were saying, making sure that you would not corrupt the child by your 'fascist' ideology, that he was in for multiple murders. From very early childhood, he was trained by his criminal parents and other criminal gang members in the 'art' of murder, assault, robbery and similar, all extremely dangerous evil activities. He was telling you with great pride in his voice and posture how he enjoyed killing and torturing people and that it was not the first time that he was in prison, always for murders. During your conversation with him, he was getting more and more uncomfortable in your presence, Peter, and he begged the guard to take him back to his own people. He promised to behave if they agreed to his request. So they did and he stopped giving the guards trouble. This is a very good illustration and demonstration of how afraid and uncomfortable the negative state is in the direct presence of the positive state which was represented by you, Peter, at that time (without your conscious knowledge that it was the case).

What is this story telling you? For the first time, you were exposed to something which would become an all-pervading factor of human non-life on planet Zero. Of course, at that time, you had absolutely no idea about the true meaning of that experience. Also, you had no idea that it relates to the concept of innocence and how, in the future (which is the present time), it will not be possible to ascribe such traits to any children who

were born after July 1, 1988, because of the cessation of the representative and correspondential role in this respect that children will have. In order for the negative state to pseudo-win on planet Zero, it is necessary to first dispense with anything even remotely containing anything of true innocence. As long as anything of innocence is contained in any newborn infants and children, as a reminder of the nature of the positive state, the negative state is incapable of pseudo-winning. Why is it so? The reason for this derives from the definition of innocence itself. Let us reiterate what innocence really means and signifies. As you remember from the Big Book, innocence was defined in its two most important aspects. The first aspect professes and confesses that all positiveness, goodness, love, wisdom, true life in general and everyone's life in particular do not belong to their carriers (to sentient entities) but to their Absolute Source — The Lord Jesus Christ. Admission of this most axiomatic fact constitutes the very foundation on which the true life of the positive state is built and on which it stands. As long as you hold to this fact, you are in the state of innocence. But also, under these conditions, you cannot invent, activate, establish and manifest anything of the nature of the negative state and its human non-life. In order to do that, you have to abolish the state of innocence by proclaiming that all these facts of the true life stem from you and only from you alone, or from something or someone else, and that there is no such thing as the Absolute Source of all of them. In other words, the non-life of the negative state is founded on the denial of this axiom.

The second aspect of the definition of innocence derives from the first one. In this sense, to be innocent means not to be contaminated, polluted, poisoned, corrupted and influenced in any manner and way by anything contained in the nature, structure and dynamics of the negative state. Because, initially, children who were coming here from the positive state were in such a condition (until they would become corrupted by everything contained in human non-life), not having any knowledge of anything negative (after all, they came from the positive state), they were bringing with them the state of innocence, and they reflected that state. On the other hand, what kind of children are being born on planet Zero at the present time? Because they all come from the negative state, they all bring with them everything that fundamentally opposes anything contained in the true state of innocence. Initially, some of them may appear as being in the state of innocence. However, it is only a mask which is put on in order to set a trap for all other humans to accept something which is of pure evil, presenting itself under the disguise of being innocent and positive. And the child which you encountered 46 years ago, Peter, was a good example of what kind of children are and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

will be born. You were allowed to have that experience, and subsequent experiences with many children of similar nature whom you encountered in various prisons during your transport to the remote concentration camp, in order to give you a taste of what it will be when the negative state fully pseudo-wins on this planet. Also, to free you from the falsity of the assumption that children will be innocent and not responsible and accountable for their deeds, whatever they may be. You always wondered, Peter, why, during your life on planet Zero, you have such an unexplainable aversion toward seeing pregnant women and being so uncomfortable in the presence of children. You even expressed deep feelings of guilt for having such an attitude toward them, thinking that something was very much wrong with you and that because of that, it was you who were evil and negative. After all, in your view and in the view of all other humans and your friends, to be pregnant and to have children was considered to be the most blessed and desirable condition, sanctioned by God Himself/Herself. If you had such adverse feelings, you thought that you were going against God.

As you see from the above mentioned facts, your state of mind at that time, your feelings and aversions, as related to the issue in question, were a reflection of your attitude toward the negative state in general, human non-life and the false, pretentious innocence of children in particular. And because pregnancy for you was the embodiment of the means by which and through which the representatives of the negative state were pouring in to occupy planet Zero for the establishment of their full dominance here, you felt aversion and disgust toward it. Don't forget for a second, Peter, that in your position and role as the transmitter of My New Revelation, you had to go through these kinds of experiences, feelings and states of your mind, in order be able to ascertain and discern, and subsequently, to describe the true and genuine nature of the negative state and its human non-life and how and by what means the negative state will pseudo-win. In this respect, everything that you had to experience and that you had to go through during your life on planet Zero, has a direct relevance to everything related to My New Revelation. It is necessary for you to evaluate all factors of your life from this position, and only from this position, and no other.

Why are we talking about this issue at this particular time? As you remember, some time ago, in your position as My true representatives, you were advised to reevaluate most of your concepts, ideas and terms and their respective meaning and significance in order to get rid of any possible distortions or even falsities that might be contained in the manner you conceptualize them. It is spiritually very important that you

have the right ideas and understanding about all such concepts, ideas and terms. If you were to hold on to your prior conceptualization of them, in that case, you would be supporting the cause of the negative state. After all, what else would it signify, if you were to be holding in your minds distortions and falsities about anything, if not the support of the cause of the negative state? To hold on to distortions and falsities is to be in the negative state, the non-life of which is founded on them. Considering children to be innocent or to represent or correspond to innocence, at the present time, can be considered as being in distortions and falsities. Such consideration is very strong among humans, including with some of My representatives, who decided to have children under the presently existing adverse spiritual conditions on planet Zero. You can say that it is almost engrained in your genes. How else could the spread of the negative state's cause be accomplished if not under the disguise of innocence, goodness and cuteness of children who are so adorable and lovable? This is how the trap of the negative state is set for you.

One of the forms of severe temptation which you are/will be facing in your own personal lives as My true representatives, is/will be to have a false or inappropriate notion about this issue, yielding to the common expectations and understandings the way your culture has. By such a wrong and inappropriate attitude, your society, and you, if you yield to its requirements, support this false notion and thus, endorse the right of the negative state to be the main or dominant factor of human non-life. This is one of the many effective ways for its pseudo-winning on your planet. In your position as My true representatives, you don't want to find yourself in supporting this false notion.

In order to establish the truth of the matter in this respect, and by that factor to prepare humanity for receding from their negative, false and distorted notion in this or any other respect, it is very vital and crucial that someone on your planet has the right notion about this issue. You, who have My New Revelation and who are in the position of knowing these facts, are in this role of knowing what is and what is not right. By having this important knowledge, and by accepting it and applying it in your own personalized and individualized lives, you are reestablishing the correct notion of innocence on your planet. Do not forget, that in an ultimate sense, innocence stems from the State of My Absolute Innocence, being that I am Innocence in Itself and by Itself. Thus, by reestablishing the correct notion of innocence on your planet, you are allowing My Innocence to be manifested there as well. Therefore, you are instruments and mediums for My Innocence to be present on your planet

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

by the means of your life in accordance with the principles of My New Revelation.

As of now, as these words are being recorded, children as such will no longer be in the role of representatives, reflectors and correspondences of innocence as well as of My Absolute Innocence. One of the new factors of innocence will be the recognition and acceptance of who you are and what your role and position are in the same manner as I know absolutely Who I Am and What My Role and Position are and the way I see what your role and position are. Because of that, as of now, you, as My true representatives, will be in the role of representatives, reflectors and correspondences of innocence in general and My Absolute Innocence in particular. By accepting and implementing all principles of My New Revelation in your lives, which put everything in the position of absolute rightness, by ascribing everything to its right source (both in an absolute sense as far as My New Nature and My positive state are concerned as well as the true nature of the negative state and human non-life are concerned), you are placing yourselves into the state of true innocence. In that sense, you can say that you are becoming small children the way they used to be at the time they were allowed to incarnate on planet Zero from the positive state. In the true reality of this situation, you can say that your becoming small children will be much more advanced and much more transcending than what those children were at that time and before the knowledge contained in My New Revelation became available.

So, based on these facts, we can conclude that anyone who accepts and implements the principles of My New Revelation and the correct notion of innocence and all related factors in their lives, becomes a small child in its purely positive connotation. Thus, it is not the physical age which will any longer determine this factor but it is the acceptance and practice of all the principles of My New Revelation, and having its knowledge, which will do so. As of now, this will be an important distinction. For that reason, whenever I ask you to be as small children, it is not meant in the physical or mental sense but in the spiritual one. Meaning, unconditional acceptance and practice in your personal and individual lives of everything contained in My New Revelation with unconditional faith, trust and confidence in Me and My Absolute New Nature, as well as in yourselves and your true relative natures. As you know, such unconditionality used to be ascribed to physical children. However, because of the fact that the type of physical children who are presently incarnating on planet Zero cannot be in that role any longer, the factor of unconditionality in this respect and in the above connotation is ascribed only to those who are My covert and overt representatives and who keep

themselves free of being corrupted and influenced by the negative state. This is what true innocence is all about and this is what, as of now, childhood will signify.

In view of these facts, you have to learn to look at small children, who are presently on planet Zero and who will be incarnating here in the future, not as at some kind of adorable, irresistible and innocent cuties, so helpless and so dependent on you, but as on someone who is fully responsible and accountable for whatever they are and for whatever they do and will do. It will not be easy at all to adopt such views because of your genetic endowment and the brainwashing of millennia, which forces you into looking on them or considering them the way the majority of humanity does. However, as of now, it is important that you reevaluate your attitude in this respect along the line of this revelation. Of course, as always, only if you choose so by your own free will and choice.

The above discourse brings us to the second issue that we need to discuss on the platform of this Dialog. In some ways, it relates to the question of how innocence was lost and how humanity found itself in the present predicament. This issue has relevance to something which is written in Genesis 6:5-7. May I ask you, Peter, to quote the mentioned text so that it becomes obvious what we are talking about?

Peter: Most certainly, My Lord Jesus Christ. Here it is: *Then the Lord saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every intent of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. And the Lord was sorry that He had made man on the earth, and He was grieved in His heart. So the Lord said, I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth, both man and beast, creeping thing and birds of the air, for I am sorry that I have made them.* End of the quote. This is a very strange sounding statement. How do You reconcile it with Your True Absolute New Nature?

The Lord Jesus Christ: If you take the above quoted statement literally and not spiritually, it would indicate that I did not know what I was doing when I created so-called man. As you see from this statement, in the eyes of humanity, I am Someone Who is like them. In fact, I am a projection of their own likeness and image and not the other way around. That the entire text in the Bible was written in the human language of projections, was many times emphasized throughout My New Revelation, as well as by Swedenborg who was the first one who properly interpreted the above quoted statement and who for the first time noticed how humans project their own feelings, thoughts, attitudes, states of their minds, behaviors and everything else in describing Me, My Nature and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

My state of mind. Before going into the interpretation of the above quoted text from the perspective of the current spiritual state, let us briefly indicate how Swedenborg interpreted it. As you know, Peter, Swedenborg's translation of that text is somewhat different from the text of The New King James Version which you are using (as in the above quote). In fact, he learned the archaic languages in which both the Old Testament and the New Testament of the Bible were written in order to circumvent any errors that the available translations of the biblical texts contained. Thus, Swedenborg translated them into Latin which was the major language of all scientific, philosophical and religious scholars of his time. Subsequently, from his Latin translation, his books were translated into English. You can find the translation of the above mentioned text in the first volume of Swedenborg's ***Arcana Coelestia*** in paragraphs 584-595.

Based on Swedenborg's revelation regarding this issue, it became obvious that the Scriptures (the entire Bible) were written in appearances and not in the genuine and factual meaning of all events described in them. It also became very much obvious from that time, that the same words used by humans for the description of anything may have an entirely different, even opposite meaning when they are used in their spiritual connotation. For that reason, Swedenborg perceived that, for example, the word 'sorry' (or in his book, the word 'repent' — *And it repented Jehovah that he made man on the earth, and it grieved Him at His heart*) signifies 'mercy' and the word 'grieved' has the same meaning only from a different perspective. In his understanding, the word 'repent' (or 'sorry') has reference to wisdom, and 'to grieve at heart' (or 'He was grieved in His heart') has reference to love. So, whenever something is stated in the Bible, it is always stated in such a manner that one aspect of it refers to love and the other to wisdom.

From our current spiritual perspective, in dealing with the spiritual issues, you have to always take these two positions — the position of love and the position of wisdom. Both positions signify the same but they come from different perspectives. Symbolically speaking, one is of the heart — love; the other is of the head — wisdom. Or one is of the feminine principle — love; the other is of the masculine principle — wisdom. Here is an example of the total unification and integration of both. In their true meaning, no difference exists between them.

Let us now look at the true meaning of the quoted text from the current spiritual perspective and needs as they are reflected in the presently

ongoing shift and the way it is applicable to you and your understanding of the spiritual issues contained or encoded in the above mentioned text.

In order to properly understand anything contained in the above quoted text, you first need to make a connection to verse 4 of the 6th chapter of Genesis. In that verse, the following statement is made: *There were giants on the earth in those days, and also afterward, when the sons of God came in to the daughters of men and they bore children to them. Those were the mighty men who were of old, men of renown.* The content of this verse has direct relevance to the verse that follows (verse 5). What is described here is not the physical size of their bodies, as it would appear from the word 'giants,' but, instead, the gigantic distortions and falsifications of all spiritual principles to their very possible extreme. They were mighty in doing that. Their being of old and of renown refers to the nature of the pseudo-creators and their posterities. As you know, the pseudo-creators were originally created before the actual creation of Creation, into its process, took place. This is what the words 'of old' signify. The word 'renown' refers to their great knowledge they possessed. In that, they surpassed anyone and anything. But it also refers to the fact that they were the only ones who volunteered to ask the existential questions which were about to enter all sentient minds. In that, they became renown.

To ask such questions establishes a state of wickedness because it disregards the fact of My assurance that they were really in the positive state; and, based on My Absolute Assurance, and because of that, no need existed for asking such questions. By asking them anyway, they denied My Absolute Fairness, Goodness, Positiveness and Truthfulness. To deny that and to assume something opposite to it led to the ultimate or great wickedness of man on earth. 'Man of earth,' in this connotation means rejection of one's true inner nature (man) as it derived from Me and established instead, the rule of the externals (earth), which excludes My presence and everything related to My Absolute Nature from all their negative efforts.

As you remember, I cannot be present in the process of activation of the negative state. In order to make such an activation possible at all, the activators needed to exclude My presence from all their negative deeds in this respect. By doing that, they lost their innocence. In fact, by such an action, the innocence within them was destroyed and a different state occurred in their mind which, in Biblical terms, denoted acquirement of the knowledge of good and evil. Before that, no knowledge and experience of evil existed. Not to have any knowledge and experience of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

evil, also means to be in the state of innocence (compare the definition of innocence as formulated above). And because I am in the State of Absolute Goodness and Positiveness, not having anything of evil in Me, I am, therefore, also in the state of Absolute Innocence. However, by inventing evil and wickedness, the state of innocence was removed from all inventors and activators of the negative state's evils and falsities, and from everyone else who decided to partake in the non-life of the negative state and human non-life. Such participation is impossible with having or being in the state of innocence.

The establishment of this mode of pseudo-life resulted in a different mode of thinking and willing with a different nature of intent. Once you exclude My presence from anything you do or do not do, it gives rise to evil intent which begins to permeate all your thoughts, leading to the birth of everything evil and false. Hence, the non-life of the negative state. This is exactly what verse 5 signifies. That I saw that this was the case, relates to My Absolute Foresight of all possible consequences, outcomes and results to which the invention, activation, establishment and manifestation of the non-life of the negative state will lead. That I was sorry that I had made man signifies My full recognition of how awful, despicable, putrid, unbearable, burdensome, complicated, convoluted and impossible life in the non-life of the negative state and human non-life will be for all of those who will participate in it. That I grieved in My heart, signifies that I had/will have Absolute Compassion ('grieved') from the position of My Absolute Love ('in My heart') on all of those who were and will be, at some time or other, participating in that non-life. But it also means that I will bring them back to the positive state after I free them from that type of terrible non-life. At that time/state, the state of true innocence will be restored to them. You cannot very well be included in the true life of the positive state unless you are at the very same time in the state of innocence.

In the process of freeing all participants in the non-life of the negative state and human non-life, I will eliminate their reliance on the externals only ('destroying man from the face of the earth') and their disregard for their inner nature where their true 'I am' was deeply buried and forgotten, and remove to eternity the factor of permission ('whom I created') for the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the non-life of the negative state and human non-life to ever be established again. In the process of this elimination, all evil and negative affections and intentions ('both man and beast'), as well as all false and distorted knowledges, ideas and concepts and everything related to them ('creeping thing and birds of the air') will be permanently, to eternity, removed likewise. 'For I

am sorry that I have made them' signifies in this connotation My Absolute Desire for everyone to be happy, positive, good and joyous without any impositional, unfree and burdensome negative and evil factors of the sentient mind. This is how My New Nature is.

Why are we bringing these issues to your attention at this particular time? As you remember from the earlier Dialogs, and from the above statements, in order to set up a proper and effective condition for elimination of the non-life of the negative state and human non-life, it is first necessary to have a proper understanding of all spiritual factors. In other words, it is necessary to acquire the right ideas about all spiritual concepts, ideas, words, designations or whatever you have. The process of this proper acquirement is preceded by the process of getting rid of all incorrect or wrong conceptualizations of such concepts, ideas, words, designations, etc., and in what manner they are understood and defined. Before the acquirement and establishment of the right definition and understanding of them, you first need to remove their false and distorted designations from your mind and the way you understand, conceptualize, define and use them in your own minds and lives. Only after that is it possible to acquire and establish their right and proper definitions, conceptualizations, understandings and their use. As long as you hold on to their wrong and inappropriate conceptualizations, you cannot reestablish the fullness of the state of innocence within you. In that case, you cannot be fully in the positive state either. In order to establish your permanent residence in the midst of the positive state, and by that factor establish or restore the state of innocence within you, you need to get rid of all wrong, false, distorted and inappropriate conceptualizations and understandings of all spiritual ideas, concepts and terms.

By granting you My New Revelation, and all ideas, concepts, terms, etc., contained in it, you, as My true representatives on planet Zero, are put into a position of making such corrections, amendments and redefinitions, and by that factor, you are able to acquire and establish within you their proper and correct understanding, conceptualization and definition. By accomplishing that, you are placed by Me back into the state of innocence, and thus, into the midst of My positive state. And not only that, but by this process, by your very life in accordance with the state of innocence, you are establishing very important conditions and examples in human non-life based on which, in the opportune time, all humanity will be saved from their evil, false, distorted and inappropriate conceptualizations, understandings and definitions of all spiritual concepts, ideas, terms, or whatever they hold on to in this respect. Thus,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

making it possible for them to reacquire the state of innocence which was lost a long time ago (in your conceptualization of time).

This issue has especially important relevance to how humans and you, My representatives, conceptualize, perceive and understand My Nature and what kinds of words you use, and what kind of meaning you ascribe to those words which you use in describing My Absolute Positive New Nature. The above quoted text from the Bible is a good example of this relevance. As you noticed from that text, My Nature or the State of My Mind is described in typical human terms, the way humans define, conceptualize, perceive and understand the meaning of those terms or words. So they use such words as 'being sorry,' 'grieving in My heart,' 'being angry,' 'being destructive,' 'being furious,' 'being punitive,' etc., as if I have no foresight how the created sentient entities will turn out or what the outcome of their creation could or would be. In a typical human conceptualization, interpretation, definition and understanding of the meaning of those words, I really appear as being such or having such adverse emotions or states of My Mind; while the reality of My True Nature has absolutely nothing of such states and conditions. So, whenever such terms or words are used in describing how I feel, will or think, or how I am, as they are being uttered or written down by humans or any other sentient entities anywhere and anywhen, they acquire a totally different meaning than what is ascribed to them by humans, for example. Their meaning, as related to Me, has only and only positive connotation in the manner as, for example, indicated in the above described interpretation of them.

In your role and position as My true representatives on planet Zero, you need to train yourself in seeing, thinking, feeling, understanding and conceptualizing the right and proper meaning of such words and terms as used in describing what I feel, will, think. etc. So, whenever you read or think about Me, and during such activities you encounter these seemingly negative words and terms as indicated above, you are to ascribe to them not the same meaning as the common humans ascribe to them in their understanding and conceptualization of such words and terms but the way all sentient entities in the positive state do. In the positive state, whenever you utter the words such as, for example, 'The Lord Jesus Christ (or God, in the old conceptualization of My Nature) is angry, feels sorry, grieves, is full of wrath and violence' and any similar all negative words, they do not perceive them in the meaning of those words in the same connotation as humans do. Instead, they read out in them similar meaning, in their positive connotation only, as described above in our interpretation of the quoted biblical text in Genesis, for

example. In other words, in their conceptualization and understanding, nothing of evil and negative connotation is contained in them.

You, as My true representatives on planet Zero, are humbly asked by Me to acquire the same position in this, or any other respect, as all sentient entities in the positive state have. By having such a position, you are building a sound foundation in human non-life, as well as in the non-life of the negative state in general, on which removal of such negative and evil conceptualization of My Nature (how I feel, will, think, etc.) will be possible to accomplish. This is one of the very important reasons why we are talking about these issues and why, Peter, they were brought to your attention as a result of something important that occurred in our spiritual realm.

It is absolutely vital and crucial to eliminate any notion from your minds about My being able to feel sorry, to grieve, to be angry, to destroy, to kill, to be wrathful, to be furious or have any negative, adverse or evil thoughts, feelings, emotions or will. In My Absolute Positive New Nature, I am incapable of having within Me anything of this adverse nature. Yes, I experienced them fully during My life on planet Zero as any other human would, but, as mentioned many times before, to experience something and to make that something an integral part of your nature, are two entirely different things.

As you know, the forces of the negative state, especially the renegades, would like nothing better than for you, as well as for all their minions and humans, to have this false notion regarding My Nature and how I feel, think, will, act, behave, relate, etc. As long as anyone continues to have such false notions about Me and My Nature, the negative state, and everything related to and contained in it, cannot be eliminated, ever. For that reason, as much as possible, it makes an all-out effort to distort and falsify the true meaning of My Nature and My relatedness to all. Your role in this respect is not to ever fall into this trap. By holding the right notion about Me and My True Nature, you are making it possible for the elimination of the negative state to take place — when the time comes for this to happen. And this is the major reason why we are talking about this issue today and why the above quoted text, as well as your experiences of the past, Peter, were brought to your attention.

There are some other important spiritual consequences of the loss of innocence and establishment of wickedness which occurred following the activation, establishment and manifestation of the non-life of the negative state and human non-life that needs to be discussed on the platform of these Dialogs from their historical perspective and how they

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

influenced human conceptualization of the hierarchy of the spiritual organization in general. However, I would recommend to take up this subject in the next Dialog. The present Dialog is somewhat lengthy. Also, you need to take a break, Peter, because of your fragile physical condition. So, let us talk about it a little later. In the meantime, prepare this Dialog for editing by Betty and Heather Oudal. I, personally, would like to take this opportunity to thank them, and to all those who are in the process of translating all these Dialogs into other languages, and to all who give generous financial support for their printing (Dr. Beth Ann Voien and Thomas Oudal, for example, and others), for their laudable and useful work in this respect. You have almost no idea how important your works and contributions in this respect are. So, until the next time.

Peter: Thank You very, very much for everything that has been revealed in this Dialog. I am also joining You in expressing my personal gratitude and appreciation to all who participate in this effort by whatever means available to them.

One Hundred and Forty Fifth Dialog

June 3, 2000

Peter: Are we ready to continue our discussion about the topic mentioned at the end of the previous Dialog (144)? Or is there anything else that You feel is needed to be brought to our attention first before going into the mentioned topics?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, we are ready; and, yes, there is something else that I would like to briefly mention or reiterate once again before going into anything else. As it became obvious from the correspondence you received yesterday from Eastern Europe, there is some misunderstanding and possible misinterpretation of our statements about the shift in asking questions and getting answers. It always amazes you, Peter, how different readers of these Dialogs may have a different understanding of what they contain. As if they do not pay enough attention to what is really being conveyed in the Dialogs. Because of that, they come up with conclusions which do not always precisely reflect the true reality of meaning that the Dialogs talk about. Some concluded that no more questions will be accepted and thus, no more dialoging will occur because there is enough material covered in them to last you the rest of your life on planet Zero (which is, in some way, true). Others believe that dialoging will continue unabated and that, therefore, asking questions and getting answers to them by the means of our dialoging will remain for a long period of time (even this assumption, in some way, may be true). And some others have, more or less, a correct understanding of what it is that we were talking about in this respect.

So, what is it that has been conveyed to you precisely regarding this issue? Let us reiterate it once again: In some earlier Dialogs, it was indicated several times over, that the responsibility for **determining** whether your questions should be addressed to Me through Peter so that they could be answered on the platform of these Dialogs or whether they should be addressed to Me by you personally without their inclusion in these Dialogs, is entirely on each prospective inquirer. As is obvious from the many questions that were coming your way, Peter, this requirement was very obviously bypassed by everyone, or by most of the readers' conscious awareness. Simply stated, they disregarded it. Recently though, as is obvious from Dialog 141, it was clearly indicated that the situation will considerably change in this respect. Based on that statement, some of you assumed that it means the immediate ending of our dialoging. However, although such a possibility does exist

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

as one of the many options, it did not refer to the immediate situation, as is obvious from the fact that, following the recording of that Dialog, we have had more dialoging taking place. What was indicated though in that Dialog, was that we are approaching the time/state when the current chapter in the phase of the shift which is going on will be closed, and that a new chapter or new phase will be coming into place. The closure of that chapter and the opening of the new one will require a new approach and a new understanding, and based on that, a new requirement for how you are all to proceed from that point on.

Now, the statement about the closure of this particular chapter in the currently ongoing phase within the frame of the mentioned shift does not at all mean that this closure has already happened. We are not there yet. We are about to be there. How long that 'about' will last, depends on many factors that need to be determined and on many events and choices that need to occur. They are in the process of taking place as we speak but it will take time/state before they are fully completed or will take place. In the interim period, before the actual closure and opening happen, the state of preparation is being instituted which tells you about these impending changes. While this interim period lasts, not much difference exists between what you have been doing and experiencing up to this point, as well as will be doing and experiencing to the time/state of this closure and what you will be required to do and to experience following the opening of the next chapter or phase.

The issue here relates to asking questions and getting answers to them. Will such need continue or will it be necessary to continue in this mode of communication or conveyance of information from Me to you by whatever mode — either through Peter or by your own effort? It all will depend on the nature of the needs that the spiritual climate of that new phase or chapter will require. However, the obvious nature of that phase in the shift will be self-reliance and everyone's full responsibility and accountability in all aspects of their individualized and personalized lives and in the nature of the quality of everyone's individuality which will be needed to fully come into the foreground of your lives. Under those new conditions, several possibilities may be instituted — as far as the issue of asking questions and getting answers on the platform of these Dialogs is concerned. First of all, it is possible that no more dialoging of this nature will take place because Peter will either be recalled from planet Zero or he will be assigned a different work in My services while still on planet Zero. In either case, his energies will be fully needed to be directed to something else. Secondly, dialoging of this nature will continue but perhaps with lesser frequency

and only when questions truly multiversal in nature will be asked or if something important will be needed to be conveyed to you on the platform of these Dialogs. Thirdly, the shift may occur from ceasing to ask any questions anymore to full implementation and practice of all that which is contained in My New Revelation. Fourthly, the questions you may want to ask will be deducible from everything which is contained in My New Revelation and you will be required to train yourself in using your deductive abilities to derive all answers to them on your own. Fifthly, any questions you may have will need to be answered on your own by means of your intuition from Me in you without any mediation. Subsequently, the rightness of the answers that you receive you will need to corroborate by the principles of My New Revelation in order to make sure that you are not misled, either by your own wishful thinking or by some deceiving renegade or his minion.

With the exception of the first case scenario, all others may be implemented at the very same time; meaning, to some degree they may occur simultaneously and synchronously in accordance with the spiritual needs of that time/state. Thus, besides full implementation and practice, in some instances, some questions may be answered on the platform of these Dialogs (if Peter is still available for that purpose); some will be answered by your own efforts; and some will be deducible from everything contained in My New Revelation.

For your information, all the above will not come to its full implementation until the second volume of these Dialogs is completed. The completion or closure of the current chapter or phase in this shift, is contingent on the closure of the second volume of our Dialogs. So, do not expect too many changes in this respect until that time (as related to the issue of asking questions and getting their answers on the platform of these Dialogs). However, bear in mind, please, that **the issue of responsibility for determination of whether your questions should be submitted to Me via Peter or whether they should be answered by your own effort without any mediation, has been in place for some time now.** Unfortunately, most of you, or many of you, disregarded this requirement and have not taken that responsibility on your shoulders. This disregard led, to a certain degree, to your dependency on Peter in this respect. Such a dependency, as well as any dependencies at all on the external factors, contains spiritual danger because it puts you in support of the nature of human non-life in particular and the non-life of the negative state in general. As you know, their non-lives are founded on such external dependencies. ***So, please, take heed, and assume your full responsibility in this, or any other respect.***

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

At this point, we are going to close this issue and address something else — as indicated at the end of Dialog 144. What will follow will have some relevance to the question which was asked some time ago, shortly after your surgery, Peter, by **Radomir Pasternak** of Ostrava, in the Czech Republic. His question related to the multiversal spiritual hierarchy of organization which was and is in place and by which the proper and correct regulation, maintenance and course of the entire Creation is being executed.

Peter: Before You proceed, I want to express my gratitude and appreciation to You for the very timely reminder about our responsibilities related to the determination of how questions should be asked and by what means answers to them should be received. Thank You very much.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter. And now let us proceed with the issue in question. We are going to begin with some historical events which took place shortly after the so-called fall of man. Historically speaking, you can distinguish several phases in the process of creation of My Creation from the position of its process and not from the position of its state. As you know, Creation in its state has been from eternity an integral component of My Absolute Sentient Mind. The shift from its state to its process constitutes the factual and actual occurrence of its process — creation of Creation as such. As you also know, Creation was created from specific energies and their very specific various qualities by means of their emanations from My Absolute Essence through My Absolute Substance.

Before the actual process of creation of My Creation had taken place, it was preceded by the creation of a very special type of sentient entities who are summarily called — angels. You can consider these special sentient entities, as coming into their own being and existence, to be the very first emanations that sprang forth from Me as a precursor to the shift from the state of My Creation into its process of becoming. The nature of these sentient entities was determined by the various different qualities contained in the first surge of energies emanating from My Absolute Desire for My Creation to be in its process. This nature was also determined by the quality of the function, role and assignment which they were to execute, both in the process of creation of My Creation itself and after that process became actual and factual reality in its own right. In the first round of these sentient entities' functions, they were to assist Me in the process of creation of My Creation and in the creation of all subsequently created sentient entities who would have, as compared to the very first surge of My

emanation, totally different functions, roles and assignments in accordance with the nature, structure and dynamics of various components of which My Creation consist.

As creation of My Creation proceeded into its process, becoming the actual and factual entity in its own right, seen as now being outside of Me and not only inside of Me, from emanations which were beamed out from various different levels of My Absolute State and My Absolute Process and their respective very specific qualities, different circles of Creation and their respective very specific and very different sentient entities with their very specific qualities appeared or came into their own specific being and existence. This factor can be considered as the very first step in the establishment of the hierarchy of the spiritual organization which was to rule My entire Creation and its entire multiverse (inner or spiritual, intermediate or mental, and external or physical). Once the initial phase of creation of My Creation into its process was completed, it established an integrative, unified and harmonious condition which reflected the integrative and unified condition of My Absolute Nature. Under this condition, all circles and levels of My Creation with all their respective individualized and personalized qualities, and with all their sentient entities and with the specific qualities of their own individualities, no matter how infinitely different they were, functioned as a cohesive oneness. In this cohesive oneness is rooted the nature, structure and dynamics of My positive state which was instituted as a result of My creative effort. Because of it, all levels, degrees, dimensions and their various aspects of My Creation and their respective sentient entities worked together, interacting, seeing each other and being in each other's company as needed and if needed without any restrictions or limitations or any security considerations. Thus, no boundaries existed in crossing from one level to any other level or from one dimension to another or from one state to another in My Creation. In this setup, inner-spiritual, intermediate-mental and external-physical did not have any visible boundaries which would prevent anyone from crossing over in any direction — either vertically or horizontally or in any other way.

In this sense, you could visualize the structure of My Creation as one multidimensional and multimodal circle which fully functioned as the absolute equality of its components, qualities and sentient entities. Everyone's function, role and assignment, no matter what kind of responsibilities anyone had and no matter what kind of position anyone occupied in that circle, were considered as important, as needed, as unique, as different, and as everything else as anyone else's. For that reason, under this arrangement, no notions of preferences of one over

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

another could enter anyone's mind. Such notions were inconceivable to any sentient mind. This is how things were following the immediate time/state of My Creation's establishment into its process.

In order to make it possible for a concrete and tangible interaction, cooperation and relationship amongst all sentient entities to take place, each such sentient entity was assigned a very specific and unique name. That name fully reflected the specific nature, structure, dynamics and quality of his/her individuality as well as his/her position, role and assignment. At the same time, as various individuals clustered into groups for the purpose of coordination of their creative efforts, they formed various societies which had similar, albeit individually, very much qualitatively different, tasks in the course of their functions, roles and assignments. Because of that, these societies were also given names, as if they were individuals. These names fully contained the meaning of their nature, structure, dynamics and qualities. Very often, the same name which one individual had in his/her position of being in supreme charge of that society, was given to the respective society as well.

This is how things were shortly following the creation of My Creation into its process. As you remember, at one point in time/state, certain questions were about to enter sentient minds. These questions would eventually lead to the invention, activation, establishment and manifestation of what would become known as the non-life of the negative state. Because such questions would enter only the minds of those who were positioned on the external-physical level, and from their position those questions would spread out to the entire circle of Creation, it was provided that they would be asked on behalf of all sentient entities on that level as well. A certain group of people, who were the most advanced in all accumulated knowledges, available to them at that time, volunteered to allow those questions to enter their minds and to be not only asked by them but also to provide answers to all those questions by the means of the concrete, tangible and experiential mode which was the very nature of the external-physical portion of the circle in question.

The first step or phase in this respect was the asking of questions. During this phase, the blueprint of the structure, nature and dynamics of Creation, the way it was at that time/state, was firmly embedded into the cache of their knowledges. All other available inventions and knowledges were included into that cache as well. In the second phase, which can be considered as the activation phase, the non-life of the negative state began to, gradually and slowly, establish itself in the

lives of those who agreed to take part in that process. During this phase, their full separation and isolation from the positive state and activation by them of the Zone of Displacement had not yet taken place. Because of that, these entities or people established their own clans within the circle of Creation itself. In this respect, only a limited degree of separation and isolation had taken place in that, within the societies of the circle they originally occupied, they established separate groups which became distinguished from all other groups which were not in the same position as they were. Thus, at that time/state, you could find both the so-called positive entities and now, the so-called negative entities, side by side within the same domain or heaven. However, at that point, they stopped mixing together on a regular basis.

In the process of completion of the second phase, which is called the phase of activation of the negative state, two things were occurring simultaneously. One thing was an all-out effort to spread the sphere of influence of the negative groups over all the other groups and to establish their outposts in as many levels of the circle of Creation as possible; and the other was to sway as many other sentient entities as possible to their cause. As a result of this effort, a spiritual struggle or spiritual war — if you want to call it that, ensued, which had continued for a long time (in your conceptualization of time). During this phase, some entities from all other levels of the circle of Creation, for their own important spiritual reasons, and for the reasons of representation of all its levels in the permitted experiment in the other type of life other than the true life of the positive state, decided to join the original group of people who agreed to ask those questions and provide their answers from all aspects of their content and meaning. As you know, later on, these people were called the pseudo-creators.

At one point of this phase, the participants in this effort recognized the fact that in order to succeed in the full and complete activation, establishment and manifestation of the non-life of the negative state, they would need to fabricate their own pseudo-creation which would have nothing in common with the true Creation and which therefore, needed to be totally separated, isolated and put into a different state/space/time/paratime/condition/process than the true Creation was. They found such a state/space in the Zone of Displacement which, as you remember, was empty or which was used for expelling all ideas of the sentient minds related to their free will and choice to reject Me as the true source of their lives (among many other things). Within that Zone they established their own domain which they named Hells, as opposed to the name Heavens.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

As you remember, they separated a ‘chunk’ of the matter/state from the original one used for the creation of the external-physical dimension in the circle of Creation, and from that ‘chunk’ they fabricated the Hells and all other pseudo-worlds of the Zone of Displacement. Thus, they excluded themselves from the rest of Creation. This exclusion, later on, was conceived by the scholars of mysticism, as a forceful and violent act which happened between the archangel Michael and his cohorts and between the devil or Satan and his cohorts. The name devil and Satan, in their original connotation, before the so-called Fall (the invention and activation of the negative state), did not have a negative meaning as it has now or as it acquired following the Fall. In fact, it represented the quality and content of the external-physical portion of the circle of Creation. However, due to the fact that it was from this level that the questions were about to be asked, and the answers that were going to be about provided, that these names acquired a purely negative and ominous connotation. For that reason, the group of people who volunteered to ask these questions and provide all the answers to them, were called devil and Satan as well. As you know, we call them the pseudo-creators. That before the invention and activation of the negative state the name ‘Satan’ had an entirely different connotation, is obvious from the fact that he, or they (the word ‘Satan’ is not meant to be only one particular person but the entire society which was in charge of the external-physical portion of the circle of Creation) had full and equal access to the so-called throne of God as all other sentient entities who were created by Me during the very first surge of emanation of My energies for the purpose of creation of My Creation into its process.

Thus, it is obvious that the name ‘Satan’ meant a specific quality related to the nature, structure and dynamics of the external-physical dimension or universe within the original circle of Creation. In that position, that name had a positive connotation. After all, someone had to represent its external-physical portion in the hierarchy of the spiritual organization and its heavenly circle. Satan was represented in that circle. However, once the so-called Fall occurred, the group called ‘Satan’ was expelled or expelled itself from that circle and established itself in the Zone of Displacement. Following this act, the name ‘Satan’ and ‘devil’ acquired a purely negative and evil connotation.

As you see from these facts, we are building here a foundation on which it will become obvious why even the so-called Satan and devil will be able to convert to the positive state at an opportune time/state. After all, evilness and negativity were not in the content of their original individualized and personalized qualities. They were acquired later on in the process of trying to find the most needed and feasible answers to

all those existential questions which were about to enter the sentient minds. Having the original positive nature, it is impossible to eliminate or totally void that nature by any means. Such an effort would eternally eliminate My presence in them and with them. Without My presence, they could do absolutely nothing. However, it was possible to isolate, separate and close off that nature and My presence in it and with it in such a manner that, for all practical purposes, it was perceived by them as if I had no presence in them and with them at all. This was a very much necessary perception, or their turning their back on Me, in order for them to be able to invent, activate, establish and manifest all aspects of the non-life of the negative state. As you remember, with My direct and obvious presence, nothing of that nature could happen because I cannot be present in any phases of invention, activation, establishment and manifestation of the non-life of the negative state.

Due to the fact that they all do contain within them, albeit buried and forgotten, their original positive nature, at one point in time, after everything related to the negative state is fulfilled and completed, that nature will be brought to the forefront of their conscious awareness and the superimposed negative and evil one will fall away from them. Following that, they will be placed into their original position with an entirely new, different and purely positive quality. At that time, they will be given a new name and designation and such names as 'Satan' and 'devil,' because of their present purely negative, ominous and evil connotation, will be erased from everyone's memories, including theirs.

The process of separation, isolation and exclusion of the pseudo-creators and their followers from the positive state is described in verse 3, Chapter 6 of Genesis: '*And the Lord said, "My Spirit shall not strive with man forever, for he is indeed flesh; yet his days shall be one hundred and twenty years."*' That 'My Spirit shall not strive with man forever' signifies that there is no longer any room for anyone of negative nature in the positive state, right under My nose, so-to-speak, as the case was at that time/state. 'For he is indeed flesh' denotes the extreme case of externalization ('flesh') which makes it possible for the activation of the non-life of the negative state to take place. That its non-life is transient and temporary and cannot last forever is depicted by the words, 'yet his days shall be one hundred and twenty years.' 'One hundred and twenty years' does not at all mean the physical duration of anyone's lifespan. Instead, it means temporality and transience. In this sense, 'one hundred' means until the fullness and completeness of illustration, demonstration and manifestation of all aspects of the non-life of the negative state are completed in its evils and falsities ('twenty'). 'Twenty' in this connotation means the entire conglomeration

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

of all evils and falsities which the negative state can produce and which are fully and entirely exhaustible because they did not originate in the Absolute State.

So, how did things evolve following the split in the fabric of Creation and its circle? What happened afterwards? As you remember, the pseudo-creators took with themselves the blueprint of the hierarchy of the spiritual organization which was established shortly after My Creation was created. Also, they retained and further developed all available knowledge which was accessible to all sentient entities at a different level of their spiritual quality and evolvment. However, the pseudo-creators of that time were in the position of having a special ability that made it possible for them to have the most advanced understanding and application of that knowledge in comparison with others who were in a different position not requiring this special ability. In the foresight of the need to invent, activate, establish and manifest the non-life of the negative state, and in the foresight that they will be the ones who would volunteer to ask all those existential questions on behalf of all, the pseudo-creators were endowed with this special ability which included the life-making process.

Once they established themselves in the Zone of Displacement and began to construct a different world, called the Hells, their first effort was to fabricate various sentient creatures who would mimic the role, position and assignment which existed in the positive state of the Heavens. In fact, as you remember from the Big Book (Chapter 29), from the blueprint they had, they copied the structural design of Creation and its hierarchy of the spiritual organization and established the same type of hierarchy but with an entirely different, in fact, opposing purpose, which existed in the positive state of the Heavens.

What was the basic structural design of the Heavens at that time and before I acquired My New Nature? In the process of the creation of My Creation, when it was shifted from its state to its process, from the very surge of emanation of My Absolute Nature, in the first round of this process, or, more precisely, shortly before the process of Creation began, a special type of sentient entities were created with a very special designation of their roles, positions, assignments and with special types of qualities of their individualities, relevant to them. Because Creation after the shift from its state into its process would become relative to the Absolute, in order for it to survive in the presence of the Absolute, it was necessary to create a special type of protection and shielding or, better to say, special types of mediators, who would be able to temper all aspects of My Absolute Divine Love and Divine Wisdom, as well as

all other aspects of My Absolute Nature (the Old Nature), and redistribute them to all in succession throughout My Creation and to Creation itself in accordance with everyone's and everything's specific individualized and personalized qualities of their unique individualities.

Basically, several groups of such mediators were emanated from the special energies of My Absolute Nature. These groups were formed into special types of societies that carried on the assignment of this redistribution and titration of everything contained in My Absolute Nature. As a whole, each group or society was given a special name which reflected the quality, structure, nature and dynamic of its functions. You may know nine such names which were handed down and, later on, registered or recorded in various scrolls or books throughout the history of spiritual development and which were made available also to some humans (who were fabricated by the pseudo-creators much later). The names in question, in succession of spiritual order, are as follows: *seraphim, cherubim, thrones, dominations, puissance(s), virtues, principalities, archangels* and *angels*. These beings or societies formed what became known as the central circle of ruling, positioned (hypothetically speaking) above Creation in order to mediate, protect, shield and temper the intensity and extensity of all Absolute Attributes of My Absolute Nature. They were positioned in relationship to each other around a hypothetical roundtable or in an imaginary circle in order to reflect the structural design of Creation which proceeds in these imaginary and actual circles as well.

If you can imagine such a circle on a flat piece of paper, then you will be able to visualize something as follows: On the top of the circle were positioned **seraphim**. Next to them on their imaginary one side were positioned **cherubim**; on the other imaginary side of them were positioned **thrones**. Next to the cherubim were positioned **dominations**. Next to the thrones were positioned **puissance(s)**. Next to the dominations and puissance(s) and in the center of the circle were positioned **virtues**. Next to them on the side of dominations were positioned **principalities**. Next to them on the side of puissance(s) were positioned **archangels**. And on the bottom of the circle were positioned **angels**. Each society, as designated by the above names (these names do not reflect the precise reality as they were designated at that time, but they are the closest designation available in human language), consisted of many very special sentient entities who were endowed with various very special abilities needed to carry out the functions which were assigned to them. Each such sentient entity was given a special name which, in turn, reflected the nature, structure,

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

dynamics and quality of his/her unique and specific individuality and which reflected the specific nature of the function that each society had.

In brief and imprecise terms: seraphim, among many other things, were mediating and tempering My Absolute Divine Love and all its attributes, traits and characteristics. Cherubim, among many other things, were mediating and tempering My Absolute Wisdom and all its attributes, traits and characteristics. Thrones, among many other things, were mediating and tempering the Absolute Truth and its Justice and all its attributes, traits and characteristics. Dominations, among many other things, were mediating and tempering My Absolute Good, Care and Majesty of My Nature and all their attributes, traits and characteristics. Puissance(s), among many other things, were mediating and tempering My Absolute Power, Might and Energies and all their attributes, traits and characteristics. Virtues, among many other things, were mediating and tempering My Absolute Innocence, Modesty, Humbleness and Humility and all their attributes, traits and characteristics. Principalities, among many other things, were mediating and tempering My Absolute State of Inwardness and My Absolute Spirituality and all their attributes, traits and characteristics. Archangels, among many other things, were mediating and tempering My Absolute Divine Providence and My Presence with and in everyone with all their attributes, traits and characteristics. And finally, angels, among many other things, were mediating and tempering My Absolute Will, Protection, Relationship and Individuality and all their attributes, traits and characteristics. This is how the function of each specific society was established. Of course, as mentioned above, there were many other societies with their specific functions of mediation and tempering and with their specific names, relevant to their functions. However, at this time, it is not proper for you to know them or about what kind of mediation and tempering of something stemming from My Absolute Nature they did at that time/state.

Now, the pseudo-creators originally followed this structure and established a similar organization throughout their domain. They assigned similar names to their societies and gave them similar functions as their counterparts in the positive state had but with a diametrically opposing nature. This was a necessary arrangement in order to balance out their domain against the domain of the positive state. Moreover, as you remember, from each level of the circle, someone volunteered to join the pseudo-creators in their cause which made it much easier for them to establish the same hierarchy of the spiritual organization as it was in the positive state.

I see, Peter, in your mind a question (actually, two questions) about a possible contradiction between the prior statement in the Big Book and elsewhere in My New Revelation that no one on that level or circle of My Creation partook in anything related to the negative state. The way you have to understand the above claim is that during the process of the invention and activation of the negative state, no one from that level or any other level, with the exception of the external-physical level, was participating in the process of invention and activation of the negative state. However, once this invention and activation took place or was firmly established, following that, some members of the mentioned circle decided, for their own very important spiritual reasons, and with My kind permission, to join the pseudo-creators in their effort in this respect.

The second question which came to your mind, Peter, and which has been troubling you, was a possible contradiction between My Statement that nothing in Me exists which is of relative nature and My ability to interact directly, individually and personally with all relative sentient entities on their relative level as one relative to another. It was indicated before, that the Absolute cannot approach the relative without annihilating it in its process. Yet, the claim was that everything I took with Me from planet Zero, before its inclusion in My Absolute Nature, was divinized or absolutized so that nothing of the relative nature would be contained within Me. There is a misunderstanding of the true nature of this fact. The divinized or absolutized portion of everything that I acquired on planet Zero and took with Me to My own Domain, has fully retained its original nature and experience of relativity without any longer being relative itself. They are two entirely different things, to be relative or to contain anything relative within the Absolute Nature and to be able to accommodate My Absolute Nature to the level of any relative sentient entity. The specificity of the nature and experience of everything relative, which I acquired during My stay on planet Zero, made this crucial and vital accommodation possible. This was one of the many reasons why I chose by My Own Absolute Free Will and Choice to incarnate on planet Zero into a condition of the most ultimate and extreme relativity. So, as you see from this explanation, Peter, no contradiction exists in this respect. All happened and happens exactly the way it is supposed to happen.

Peter: Thank You very much for clearing my mind on these two issues.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome. Now, let us continue with our historical discourse. The reason we have decided to travel into the annals of the history of Creation and pseudo-creation, is for making

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

things right and for dispelling any distortions and falsities about what happened at that time/state. So, once the pseudo-creators established the above mentioned hierarchy of their own pseudo-spiritual organization, patterned in accordance with the blueprint they brought with them after they were expelled from the positive state, and once they fabricated their own circle of powers as in the above described organization, and mainly from those of the positive state's circles who joined them, they proceeded with the next step. As you remember, in this step, they wanted to imitate My creative efforts in that they decided to fabricate their own type of sentient entities who would carry their own likenesses and images. As I created the original sentient entities in My Own Likeness and Image, so did the pseudo-creators decide to do the same, with the exclusion of anything which was contained in My Own Likeness and Image. By this time, the pseudo-creators' original likeness and image, which they had from Me, was completely distorted and bastardized because, once you reject carrying within you My Likeness and Image, you cannot continue to have the same one as before.

As you remember from the Big Book, at one point of their experimentation with the life-making process, they succeeded in fabrication of the first humans who reflected their own distorted and bastardized likeness and image. Thus, as you know, the original humans, in the first round of their fabrication, were fabricated in the likeness and image of the pseudo-creators. This factor is reflected in the first verse of Chapter 6 of Genesis. It is stated in that verse, *'Now it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born to them...'* . This verse contains the fact that in the process of long experimentation ('now it came to pass') many humans were fabricated into the position of pure externals ('on the face of the earth') or into the likeness and image of the pseudo-creators and into their own negative nature. That 'daughters were born to them' had two distinct connotations: One was acquirement of a very specific mentality that would be prone to the production of evils and falsities only; the other was fabrication of beautiful women whom some members of the pseudo-creators clan fabricated for the purpose of sexual play. This fact is reflected in the next verse (2) of Chapter 6 in Genesis. *'...the sons of God saw the daughters of men, that they were beautiful; and they took wives for themselves of all whom they chose.'*

From this unusual union a peculiar breed of human type of creatures appeared who had very little in common with what the present humanity looks like. As you remember from the ***Corollaries...***, Jewish people are considered direct descendants of that union. However, this

sexual union and the resultant birth of these peculiar humanoids could not continue in the same manner as before because of their unusual power and knowledge which could lead to the establishment of the non-life of the negative state and, now, the human non-life, that could last to eternity. This factor was not included in the original agreement under which the negative state was permitted to come to its own adverse fruition. As you know, the agreement was that the negative state with all its fabrications and productions would last only to the point when all existential questions would be properly and exhaustively answered and the needed lessons would be learned by all and everyone. Because such danger loomed and could become reality, it was necessary to put an end to the birth of this type of humanoids (or humans of that time). The ending of this phase is described in the Bible by the Great Flood.

Following the Great Flood, the pseudo-creators resumed their experimentation with a new breed of humans who would be deprived of such powers and knowledge as were contained in the humanoids (or first round of humans) who were the result of the pseudo-creators' sexual involvement with women fabricated by them for that very purpose. In fact, the pseudo-creators themselves did not expect that from such a union unusually powerful and knowledgeable sentient entities would result who would endanger the original agreement. And not only that, but the pseudo-creators realized that these people-creatures would endanger their own position and power and would tend to replace them by either enslaving them to themselves or by destroying them altogether. Before it could come to this point, all those people were wiped out from the face of the earth and locked up in a special region of Hell where they underwent a special type of genetic, spiritual, correspondential and other type of rewiring (impossible for your human mind to comprehend) which entirely removed from them everything that was endangering the original agreement and that would be able to undermine the pseudo-creators' position and control they had. In fact, after the pseudo-creators fabricated the second round of humans, the way they appear right now, they turned all those humanoids into humans proper and, from time to time, allowed them to incarnate on planet Zero as any regular humans would.

The knowledge of all these events, in the process of the history of humanity, was handed down from posterity to posterity, first, by oral tradition and later on, by recording it in writing. As this history was being handed down from one generation to another, in the process of its conveyance and copying from the written scrolls, the original and genuine content of those events was more and more distorted and misunderstood so that in their present form, the way they are available

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

to you either in their fullness or, in most instances, in their very small fractions, very little remains from what really happened during those turbulent times/states. In the process of this history, many such books or scrolls appeared, the authorships of which were ascribed to well-known figures. There are such books as, for example, *The Book of Enoch*, *The Zohar*, *Sefer Raziel* (the book of an alleged angel, Raziel), *The Book of Jubilees*, *The Book of Adam and Eve*, *The Apocalypse of Abraham*, *The Martyrdom of Isaiah*, *The Sixth and Seventh Book of Moses*, *The Greater Key of Solomon*, *The Apocalypse of Paul* and numerous other books and scrolls, the authenticity and authorships of which are very much questionable, or even entirely false, and the contents of which are pure distortions and falsifications, as well as of misunderstanding and misinterpretation of the true hierarchy of the spiritual organization, the way it originally was on both sides of the fence, so-to-speak — on the positive side as well as on the negative side. For that reason, and in order not to confuse the human mind even more than it is already confused about all such issues, those books and scrolls were either entirely hidden or only some small fragments were allowed to be available to humans.

Now, the above described setup (its description is very much limited and accommodated to the degree that your human mind can apprehend), existed up to the time of My incarnation on planet Zero, with further substantial and profound modifications and changes which took place after I acquired My New Nature. Following that, nothing remained the same. From that time on, continuous progressive changes have been taking place in this respect which, to some limited degree, have been conveyed to you in the books of My New Revelation, and especially in these Dialogs. These changes in the hierarchical structure of the positive state, having their higher and higher degree of positiveness and goodness, are reflected in their opposite meaning in the hierarchical structure of the negative state and its human non-life, having their own lower and lower degree of negativeness and evilness. Such progressions or regressions, respectively, require continuous modifications in the structural designs of anything in order to accommodate them to the unceasing changes and restructurings that take place within all domains of the multiverse of My Creation and all pseudo-domains of the pseudo-creation. So, in this sense, we can repeat again and again that nothing is the same anywhere and anywhen and that, for that reason, do not even try to think about how things will be upon your recall in the other world because even if I were to describe to you how things are there today, they would not be the same upon your arrival to that world (whether in the positive or negative state, respectively). One thing you need to be aware of: At the time of the

lockup of the pseudo-creators, which happened after My crucifixion, for some time, their regions in some Heavens, occupied by their own special type of fabrications, were allowed to stay there for some time (approximately to the time when Christianity was adopted as an official religion of the Roman empire). Following that, they were expelled from the Heavens entirely and pushed back to the intermediate world. Their removal from the intermediate world was fully accomplished upon completion and establishment of My New Nature.

How far were the pseudo-creators able to penetrate the Heavens and establish their own outposts there in the form of small regions of the hells? As you know, it was postulated in the above mentioned questionable books and scrolls that there were seven Heavens. The reality of this fact is that there were many more than that. After all, the inexhaustible qualities of all Absolute Attributes, Characteristics, Traits and everything else contained in My Absolute Nature cannot be limited to seven Heavens only. But this fact is an entirely different story. Now, as you know, each respective Heaven has its own three levels. Each such level can be considered as its own separate Heaven unto itself. The pseudo-creators were allowed to penetrate all the way to the third level of the first Heaven which, symbolically speaking, was situated below the second and the third Heaven and their respective levels. In the mind of someone who would be taken to, let us say, the third level of the first Heaven, it would seem as if he/she was present in the third Heaven.

This is exactly what happened to Apostle Paul. As you know, in one of his epistles (2 Corinthians 12:1-4), he talks about being taken to the third Heaven where he experienced the so-called wondrous things. Where was Paul actually taken and what was it that he really experienced? In actuality, Paul was taken to the third level of the first Heaven to its so-called northern region, or to what it spiritually corresponds, where the specific hell of the pseudo-creators was located and where their minions still resided. From Swedenborg's writings as well as from My current New Revelation, you were made aware about the true nature of Paul and the nature of his role and assignment that he played during his life on planet Zero. With that kind of nature and role, he could not be taken to any other region but the one which was occupied by the negative and evil minions of the pseudo-creators having their own hell there side by side with the third level of the first Heaven. So, what kind of wondrous things did Paul experience there? In the original copy of his epistle, which deals with this experience, Paul wrote that he encountered there *'angels of evil, terrible and without pity carrying savage weapons'* (those were spiritual correspondences that

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

appeared as savage weapons. Of course, Paul, at that time, had no notion about correspondences. He took everything literally, and not spiritually). However, later on, the confused editors of his letters or epistles (after all, how could it be that if Paul was in Heaven, he, in actuality, experienced there pure hell?) excluded this particular quote which describes the real experience that Paul had there, and modified it to make everyone believe that he really was in the third and real Heaven. Otherwise, it would be extremely difficult, if not impossible, to justify Paul's sainthood and his devotion to My cause if they were to include such a confusing and controversial statement in the final version of his epistle. It did not go along with his being My holy apostle. Holy people are taken to the true Heaven and not to some kind of strange region which was supposedly situated in the same state/place as the real Heaven but which, in fact, was inhabited by evil angels.

Well, we are bringing all these facts to your attention at this time so that you are equipped with the right notions and ideas and consequently, become free from all the wrong and inappropriate ones. This is the issue, mentioned several times in these Dialogs, of making things right which were made wrong, or correcting things so that they are seen from their genuine and proper perspective. And because, you, as My true representatives on planet Zero, are in the role of carrying the right notions and ideas about all such important spiritual issues, this is the reason why we have been talking about them at this time. It is also in preparation for the closure of the current chapter or phase in the ongoing shift, and opening a new one. It is impossible to open the next chapter, unless certain important spiritual issues, instrumental to the opening of the next chapter, are seen in their proper light and in the truthfulness of their meaning and content.

Now, Peter, at this point I would recommend to finish for now. If any other Dialogs will need to be recorded, I'll let you know.

Peter: I thank You very much for this very interesting discourse. Until the next time — if at all.

One Hundred and Forty Sixth Dialog

June 5, 2000

Peter: I have a strong feeling that You would like to offer some further clarifications on the issues raised in Dialog 145. Am I right or is it my own wishful thinking? I don't want to impose any of my ideas in this respect and then claim that it was You who inspired me to feel like that. What is the true reality about this situation?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Your feelings, Peter, regarding this issue are correct. There is a strong urgency to continue in our dialoging in order to bring closure to this second volume. As you noticed in Dialog 145, it was indicated there that the conclusion of the second volume of these Dialogs coincides with the closure of the chapter or phase in the currently ongoing shift and the opening of a new one. We are on the threshold of this closure and opening. Before this important step occurs, some important events need to take place which are, in some ways, tied in with the completion of this volume. As you know, such completions, when they relate to The New Revelation, usually denote a milestone which distinguishes between something that was in place before it was set up and something new and different which is coming into force as required by the principles of spiritual progression. However, before the closure of the previous phase and opening of the new one takes place, it is necessary to relate to all of you, who are in the position of recognition, acceptance and implementation of everything related to the previous and subsequent phases, certain information instrumental for the successful closure of one and the opening of the other. Without such information this important event cannot happen. Everything, as well as everyone responsible for this to happen, needs to be placed into the right position which would enable the triggering of this important process.

Now, as indicated several times throughout these Dialogs, such important events do not necessarily register nor are they discerned on the level of your conscious mind or in concrete and tangible events on planet Zero. In most instances, and usually, they take place in the spiritual world first and from there they spread out to all other dimensions. Following that, their impact may be felt in the Zone of Displacement and, to some limited extent, on planet Zero. The impact of such events is felt more on the inner spiritual and mental levels rather than on the physical or environmental ones. It can also be reflected in behavioral and attitudinal changes, and consequent changes in the mode of thinking, feeling, willing, relating, acting, intending and being

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

motivated in different ways than previously possible. Externally, however, it could very well be that nothing will change. At least not to the perceptible awareness of your conscious or external mind. However, on the spiritual level, and in all other worlds not of your pseudo-dimension, such changes are tremendous. Because they herald something new and transcending of anything previously experienced, such changes are the most welcomed events. There is nothing more joyous for sentient entities in the positive state than having continuous opportunities to experience and implement all such changes in their personalized and individualized lives.

As you know, in the non-life of the negative state and human non-life, in the majority of cases, such changes are not welcomed at all. As you are aware, their lifestyle is founded on the principles of regression and stagnation. To be more evil and to live a life of greater falsities and distortions does not mean progression but regression. At the same time, it means stagnation because nothing new and different is contained in such a regressive mode. In their case, changes are possible only if they were to choose to recede from their evils, falsities and distortions. As long as they reject the notion of such changes, they cannot be progressive no matter how much they see or perceive themselves changing in the mode of their pseudo-lifestyle by becoming more and more evil, for example. The way you have to understand this situation with entities in the negative state is that their movement goes into the direction of the exhaustion of all possibilities, which give their evils, falsities and distortions the ability to be manifested, illustrated and demonstrated in their personal and individualized non-life. Anything that goes in the direction which is, in fact, a dead end, cannot be considered progressive. One of the reasons why all residents of the negative state are so desperately opposing and afraid of any changes in their pseudo-lives, is that somewhere deep inside of them they feel that their non-life is a dead end. Therefore, they do not want to move. Instead, they like to stagnate in one state, condition, place, etc. They falsely believe that if they do not move but stagnate, in that case, there is no end in sight to their non-life. Unfortunately for them, any positive changes in the positive state have a painful ripple effect on the stagnant condition of their non-life. Because of that, by that factor, they are forced to become more evil and more in falsities and distortions. Becoming that way more and more, brings them closer and closer to the ending of the non-life of the negative state and of all negative aspects of the human non-life.

As you see from these facts, the ending of the non-life of the negative state and human non-life is not initiated by anyone within the spheres

of these non-lives, but the positive and progressive changes in the positive state and in My Creation in general cause this ending to take place. In fact, you may conceptualize that such changes are the causative factors of this ending. Without them, no ending could occur. Thus, the progressive mode of all true life in the positive state makes it possible for this ending to come to its fruition. As you see from these facts, there is a diametrically reversed course of events taking place in a synchronous and simultaneous manner. As continuous spiritual progression is occurring in the positive state, at the very same time/state a continuous spiritual regression is taking place in the negative state. The more progression in one, the more regression in the other. The difference in these two is in the fact that whereas in the positive state spiritual progression is an eternally continuous process never ever coming to its end, in the negative state it is a temporary and transient process ending in a dead end. For that reason, as more progression and changes are happening in the positive state, the closer the ending of the negative state is at hand. And this is what all members of the negative state are vigorously fighting and resisting. The only problem they have in this respect is that the more they are fighting and resisting, the closer they are getting to the dead end.

How does this situation affect you, My true representatives on planet Zero? The issue here is in your willingness to change or to follow the path of continuous spiritual progression, avoiding at all cost your unwillingness to change. As long as you resist or are unwilling to change or to follow the path of spiritual progression, you are supporting the non-life of the negative state and human non-life. By doing that, you are impeding their ending faster and, at the same time, you are contributing to the unnecessary extension of their non-lives. As you know, human non-life was structured in such a manner so as to make it very difficult for humans to change in whatever mode of lifestyle they find themselves. Because, after all, you have this human nature in your individual makeup, you are prone to exhibit the same traits, characteristics and attitudes as all other humans do. The difference between you and other humans is that, from My New Revelation, you know about this situation whereas all other humans are not aware that this is the case. Thus, for you, no excuse exists should you find yourselves resisting changes in your own personalized and individualized lives along the line of changes in the positive state. By allowing such changes to take place in your own lives, you are substantially contributing toward the ending of the non-life of the negative state and its human non-life.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

The problem with all books and scrolls written so far about spiritual issues and about the hierarchy of the spiritual organization, with the exception of the books of My New Revelation, is that during the history of their being written, they were using, first of all, the typical human language; and secondly, they were written from the position of the typical human nature. That language and that position have engrained in their structural design the ability to perceive and understand things in a distorted and fixed, unmovable and unprogressive fashion. They do not consider the possibility that anything they were writing about, or the way they were describing these issues, or any issues at all, is either totally false or distorted, or whatever structural organization was in place at the time of their writing, no longer reflects the reality established afterwards. In other words, they do not at all consider the possibility of spiritual progression and all relevant changes that accompany it. Because of that, when humans read such books, they believe that things in the spiritual realm are still the same as they were at the time of such writings or recordings. They do not conceive the idea that whatever they read could be a total falsity in the worst case, or, in a better case, it could be a total distortion of the true reality of the subject matter. Also, they do not conceive the idea that things could have changed a long time/state ago. They assume that nothing has changed from the time such information was recorded or written.

Take, for example, the numerous books (or scrolls), some of which we mentioned in Dialog 145. Or take, for example, the so-called religious holy books (Christian Bible, Islamic Koran, various Indian holy books and others). They all deal, in some way or other, with the issues of so-called spirituality and the hierarchy of the spiritual organization. By their very content, by their claim that they were inspired or even dictated by God or divine, they take a position that, because they all contain the Word of God, nothing can be changed in them and whatever they are describing or talking about has absolute, unchangeable and non-modifiable eternal validity and all things will always be exactly the same as they are described in those books. In their false conceptualization, they assume that God is always the same, and therefore, nothing can be changed about anything. This is how all distortions and falsities of the negative state were established and how they are being continuously propagated to this very moment. It is very much profitable for the negative state to have this notion and perception and to maintain it in its domain and amongst the majority of humans, if possible, ad infinitum. Nothing pleases the negative state more than to proclaim that God does not change at all, and therefore, nothing can be changed in the structural design of Creation and in the hierarchy of the spiritual organization as well. If this is the case, then

there is no such thing as spiritual progression, and therefore, there is no need for any changes in the lives of any sentient entities to take place. This is how the negative state is able to perpetuate its non-life, believing that if it could maintain this false belief among all its followers as long as possible, in that case, it could continue forever.

One of the many purposes why My New Revelation was granted, was for dispelling this outrageous falsity. Nothing is further from the truth than this falsity. The very Absolute Nature of I AM WHO I AM (God — The Lord Jesus Christ) consists of, among infinite numbers of many other things, constant progressive and absolute changes. Although within My Absolute Nature are contained all possible changes from eternity to eternity, by the factor of dynamics of having all these changes, I am in the state and process of constant change. If all infinite and inexhaustible numbers of changes reside within Me, if My Nature, among many other things, is comprised of all of them, therefore, logically speaking, I am the Absolute Change in Myself, of Myself, from Myself and by Myself. Due to the fact that My Creation and all sentient entities reflect this Nature in their relative condition, they cannot be structured in any other way but along the line of this Nature. Thus, they are in the mode of continuous changes and progressions to eternity.

How would you conceptualize the most important term 'I AM WHO I AM?' What are the dynamics which are embedded in this term? Logically speaking, by the simple utterance of the words 'I am,' you conceive the notion of motion. To say that means to be in the state and process of continuous motion. Otherwise, you would be dead. The nature of motion itself, as it moves onward and forward, is change and progression themselves. If this were not the case, no one could ever conceive or even say the words 'I am.' Moreover, to say the words 'I AM WHO I AM,' and as a result of that, your ability to tell yourself that you likewise are who you are, means to extend your dynamic manifestation in the progressive mode to eternity. The reason why it is extended to eternity is because 'I am who I am' — in your case, as relative to My Absolute 'I AM WHO I AM,' — is of infinitely different, unique and non-duplicable nature which is in the process of change in its own unique, different and non-duplicable manner as someone who is the way he/she is. Reflecting in its nature the content of the idea of the element which was imparted on and made it possible for 'I am' to become 'who I am,' which element and its idea contains all needed and necessary changes to eternity, your 'I am who I am' can be nothing else but the mode of continuous progressive and eternal change. What do you think, how else could you understand the statement that sentient entities were created

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

in My likeness and image? This is, in fact, what My likeness and image are all about — among many other infinite numbers of things.

From the above discourse you can discern how dangerous it became, especially under the presently existing spiritual condition, to consider anything at all which is contained in the literal sense of such books and scrolls (as mentioned above and in Dialog 145). As you remember, or do not remember, from the Big Book, it was stated there that the literal sense of the Bible, for example, is being replaced with the literal sense of My New Revelation. Whereas the literal sense of the Bible was written in appearances of truth but not in the real truth itself (as was already revealed through Swedenborg), and therefore, it does not contain any real truth; the literal sense of My New Revelation contains nothing but the truth and the real truth in its undisguised nature. For that reason, as it was pointed out to you in one of the earlier Dialogs, to read the Bible, under the presently existing spiritual condition, if you take into consideration only its literal sense, may be very dangerous to your spiritual and mental health. This conclusion fully applies in an even greater degree to all other so-called holy books or the books and scrolls which we mentioned in Dialog 145. None of them contain anything of value to you or to anything which could reflect the present spiritual and hierarchical condition in the spiritual world or any world at all. They may have some historical value in that, they show how falsities and distortions can be produced and taken for granted as being the real truth. Also, they may reflect some aspects of the hierarchy of the spiritual organization, albeit in a distorted mode, which existed either at the time of their recording or many millennia before. However, from the presently existing spiritual needs, within the frame of the ongoing spiritual shift, not only do they not have any value, but they could be very dangerous for you because they could implant in your mind some very much false and inappropriate ideas which could impede your own spiritual progression and change.

The negative state knows very well how to play on your human curiosity. In the process of reading such books, it can very easily implant in your mind all kinds of doubts about the content of My New Revelation, for example, and give you an unwanted idea that, maybe, just maybe, what these books contain could be true. Here is a very convenient trap. A state of temptation was set up which can complicate your life very unpleasantly and painfully. In order to give you a warning that anything of this nature can and may happen, I am revealing all these facts on the platform of these Dialogs. As you know, one of the many functions and roles of these Dialogs, is to make all these facts available to you. From this point on, it is entirely up to you to take or

not to take heed. However, do not forget about your responsibility and accountability in this respect. As you know, if you are given the knowledge of these facts, or any other important facts, it is for important reasons why such knowledge is given to you at all. Having such knowledge, makes you responsible and accountable for the manner in which you will or will not use or apply that knowledge. This is the logical outcome of any such setup. You agreed to it by the factor that you have such knowledge. Otherwise, you would not have it. Whoever receives and reads these Dialogs, at the very same time, assumes full responsibility and accountability for anything he/she will do or will not do with what is contained in these Dialogs or in My New Revelation in general.

Tell Me, please, what would be the purpose for revealing all these important spiritual issues to you if not for their acceptance and implementation? Just to satisfy your curiosity? Whatever is coming from Me, has an important, crucial, vital and life-giving purpose and cannot be only the subject of fulfillment of the needs of your idle curiosity. As you know, Peter, in the past, several people ordered the books of The New Revelation. One of the reasons why you have never heard from those people, is because their main motivational and intentional factor was to satisfy their idle curiosity. Whoever approaches the reading of anything contained in the books of The New Revelation with such inappropriate intentions and motivations, not only cannot benefit from anything contained in them but it places him/her in a position of rejection of the veracity or truthfulness of My New Revelation. Because The New Revelation contains My Word, to reject it means to reject Me. By such a rejection, the rejecting individual places himself/herself into a spiritually very dangerous situation which imposes on him/her all unpleasant consequences, outcomes and results of such a rejection.

Peter: I appreciate very much this timely warning. It is too easy to fall into temptation of this nature, being in the human skin. Thank You very much for Your Words.

The Lord Jesus Christ: It is My pleasure, Peter. So, as you see, human nature, as well as nature of all in the negative state, is rooted in rigidity, inflexibility, stagnation, uniformity, non-changeability, non-progressiveness and similar traits which underlie their very non-life. These traits are especially, particularly and mainly applicable to their religious, spiritual (pseudo-spiritual), philosophical, ethical, social, sexual and similar views and understanding. Traits of this nature permeate all aspects of their lives and expectations. They may go to

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

such ridiculous applications as to the formal arrangement of the written or typed text in these Dialogs, for example. Some readers of these Dialogs noted that in the Second Volume of these Dialogs the questions which have been asked by others, are typed in italic font. In the past this was not the case. Because of that, these readers would like to see consistency in this respect and have them all either italicized or not italicized. Or they are irritated by the awkwardness of some sentence structure (English wise) and some mistakes, and they are compelled to change them to suit their expectations based on the formal demands of their English or the way they were taught. Again, rigidly clinging to such demands.

Well, very often, on our part, this is done purposefully in order to see what matters to you. Is it more important for you to adhere to the demands of the rigid and inflexible views you might hold to in this respect, and based on that, pay attention only to how the text in these Dialogs is being presented to you, or is it more important to pay attention to the content and meaning of the ideas contained in them? Has it ever occurred to any one of you that, perhaps, sometimes the editors are made to purposefully miss some errors, typos or awkwardness in the presented text for some important spiritual reasons? And because of that they should appear in that form in the final book version no matter how embarrassing it may seem to you to detect those errors after it is too late to do anything about them? Do you really think that there are such things as coincidences? What do you think, what could be hidden behind the spiritual need to retain some of those mistakes, errors or awkwardness in the sentence structure, or whatever does not suit your expectations? I can assure you that no coincidences exist behind such omissions. If someone gets offended or disgusted with such omissions and because of that he/she is turned off from reading My New Revelation, not giving any consideration to the great spiritual values of the content and meaning of the ideas contained in these Dialogs, in that case, such a person is not ready to know anything which is being conveyed to you by their means. In fact, it would be spiritually dangerous for an individual like that to continue in reading them. Of course, there are many other reasons why such omissions not only occur but, sometimes, are even necessary. These reasons are all of the spiritual nature.

So, in view of these facts, those of you who were not assigned the role of editors of these Dialogs, are advised not to waste your time, energy and effort on trying to make corrections, whatever they may be. You are advised to pay attention only and only to the ideas contained in them and to nothing else. The full responsibility for editing these Dialogs in

their English version was purposefully given to Betty Oudal and Heather Oudal. No one else should concern themselves with it. If, for some reason or other, they miss something during their editing, it is supposed to be that way. On the other hand, the full responsibility for the translations of these Dialogs into other languages is placed on the translators' shoulders (Lyudmila Savelieva in Russian, Dan Barba in Spanish, Jan Bereš and Fero Kupciha in Slovak, The Honorable Judge Kamil Brancík and Rev. Dr. Ivan D. Franklin in Czech). All other readers do not have this responsibility.

The reason why we are mentioning such supposedly trivial issues is to give you an opportunity to prevent yourselves from falling into the trap of assuming responsibilities which you don't have and, on the other hand, so that you are prevented from being bound by the rigid and inflexible rules of the demands of your human nature. There are more and more needs to be aware of such facts even though some of them, at first glance, could be considered trivial and unimportant. However, bear in mind that if I am mentioning them, it means they can't be trivial and unimportant. In My eyes nothing is trivial and unimportant. Everything serves some good purpose no matter what its interim state or nature looks like.

The other extreme in human nature, mentioned several times before, is literalization or taking everything literally, especially in spiritual matters the way they are presented or depicted or portrayed in the above mentioned so-called holy books and scrolls. Were things really the way they are described in those books and scrolls? Or do they mean something entirely different? Was the arrangement of the circle of My Creation really the way it was briefly depicted in Dialog 145, for example (when we attached names or labels to the various societies and their functions, roles and assignments)?

As you know, in spiritual matters, whenever we describe something in terms or words of the human language, by the factor of that description and by the factor of the use of such human language, the way its nature is, we are limiting the true meaning, content and sense of the conveyed information. In other words, very often, the human verbal and written language does not contain anything in its vocabulary that would be able to fully and correctly reflect the true reality of the conveyed information — in this case, the true structural design of the circle of Creation and the true and exhaustive meaning of the names assigned to the various spiritual societies of those times/states. Thus, our description in this respect would be very much limited, unable to fully give you an idea of how things really were at that time/state. They can give you only a

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

remote approximation of their structure and nature or how they really were. At the same time, as mentioned above, the problem with such information, albeit incomplete and imprecise, is that by the very nature and structure of the human mind, humans would tend to accept everything contained in it as having absolute, eternal and unchangeable validity. In order to prevent this from happening on a permanent basis, information of this important spiritual nature was given to humans in a confusing manner, shrouded in obscurity, known under the name of correspondences. Of course, the mystery of interpretation of the true meaning of correspondences was made unavailable to them so that they would not defile and degrade their true meaning by their literalization and externalization, and, thus, by that factor, prevent themselves from being saved.

Take, for example, the following statement as recorded in Genesis 3:24: *'So He drove out the man; and He placed cherubim at the east of the garden of Eden, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to guard the way to the tree of life.'* How would a typical human mind interpret the meaning of this statement? It would be totally literalized and externalized. It would be assumed that two people — Adam and Eve — called the man, resided in some kind of garden of Eden, and, because of their sin, they were expelled from it; and that literal cherubim were placed at the east side of that garden who had a literal flaming sword which turned every way; and that in the garden of Eden was placed some kind of mysterious tree of life which needed to be guarded so that the man could not approach it. This is the common understanding which the vast majority of humans, who ever read that text, hold.

However, what is the true reality or meaning behind this depiction? A rearrangement of the hierarchy of the spiritual organization in the circle of Creation is described which was prompted by the split in the fabric of Creation that occurred as a result of the invention and activation of the non-life of the negative state. In order to proceed with the third and fourth phases, which were establishment and manifestation, respectively (the first and second phases being invention and activation, respectively), giving a chance for the non-life of the negative state to prove its point, it was necessary to remove all participants in this process from the circle of Creation or from the positive state, depicted here by the words *'So He drove out the man,'* and to place them in an entirely different mode of reality (pseudo-reality). The word *'man'* denotes the physical-external position of those who came up with the idea of invention and activation of the negative state with its subsequent establishment and manifestation.

The placement of cherubim at the east of the garden of Eden in this connotation denotes the introduction of security measures and resultant need for isolation and separation of the various dimensions of Creation into their own sphere and atmosphere so that they would not be contaminated, polluted and poisoned by anything exuding from the negative state's evils and falsities. 'Cherubim' means those societies in Heavens who were assigned the role of carrying out this specific assignment and the establishment of security measures. From the Divine Wisdom and its Truth which perceives and sees all and everything, and which is represented here by the flaming sword which turned every way (security measures had to be placed from all sides), they were able to successfully accomplish their assignment. That they were placed east of the garden of Eden signifies that they did it by the power of My Absolute Divine Love by the means of My Absolute Divine Wisdom which correspond here to the east. Although the garden of Eden is assigned the meaning of being in the positive state or Heavens, its true meaning lies somewhere else. The garden of Eden means, in fact, the tremendous knowledges and their truth and wisdom accumulated and made available to those who occupied the circle of Creation.

As you know, it is said that in the midst of the garden of Eden was planted the tree of life. Because it was in the middle of the garden, and everything else was around it or in proximity to it, the access to it was not available to anyone. There is a deep spiritual mystery contained in the words 'the tree of life.' It refers to the mentioned before unnamable and incomprehensible Absolute Core of My Absolute Nature which is the real source and originator of all and everything. To have access to that Core would mean discovery of the mystery and means to immortalize and eternalize the productions of the relative sentient minds. In fact, it means that the relative to the relative only could continue in its own right to eternity, forever, in the same way and manner as the relative to the Absolute. The tremendous danger in having such access is very much obvious. If the inventors and activators of the negative state could figure out how to access that knowledge, they would succeed in immortalizing and eternalizing the non-life of the negative state and consequently, the human non-life as well. In that case though, the negative state and its human non-life, in their present nature and condition, could not be eliminated ever. And if that could ever happen, then the fullness and completeness of the positive state could not be established either.

In order to prevent this from ever happening, arrangements were made to guard the sphere and atmosphere of the tree of life — My Absolute Core, so that someone inadvertently could not discover how to access

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

the secret of the process of immortalization and eternalization. Let Me tell you something: There was/is a way to discover that secret, even for the relative sentient mind. After all, that mind is a full reflection, in its relative condition, of My Absolute Sentient Mind. The residents of the circle of Creation, which was above Creation (symbolically speaking), had an access to all other knowledges with the exception of this one.

In the foresight of invention, activation, establishment and manifestation of the non-life of the negative state and later on, of the human non-life, it was provided by My Divine Providence that nobody would be able to access that knowledge. However, the ones who later on became the pseudo-creators, surpassed all others in all respects in the available knowledge and all other mysteries of life. If they were allowed to continue in their effort within the sphere and atmosphere of the circle of Creation, and if they were not expelled from the positive state, they would be able to discover the key with which they could open this secret and utilize it to immortalize and eternalize the negative state and human non-life. If this were ever to happen, it would cause irreparable damage to the entire Creation, and Creation would ultimately be taken over by the negative state.

In order to prevent this from ever happening, as mentioned above, very special arrangements were made so that anything of this nature could never occur to eternity. These arrangements are described in the above quoted verse. This is one of the most important meanings of the statement contained in that verse. This is a very good example of how things should be looked upon from their true spiritual perspective and not in their literal meaning which is misleading and confusing. I can assure you that everything contained in the Bible and other so-called holy books has the same structure. For that reason, nothing in them could ever be taken literally.

So, as a result of the above mentioned split, and subsequent establishment of the conditions as described in the spiritual sense of the quoted biblical verse, an entirely different arrangement in the hierarchy of the spiritual organization needed to be made in order to reflect the status which appeared as a result of the invention and activation of the negative state. The former arrangement, as briefly and imprecisely described in Dialog 145, could not continue in the same structure and dynamics. The new situation which occurred required restructuring all and everything that has been in place up to that point and, in the process of this restructuring, it needed to take into its consideration the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state and, later on, the human non-life. Under this new condition, all members of those

societies needed to redefine their roles, positions and assignments in order to accommodate themselves to this new reality. From their old position and role, they could not succeed in holding back the influence, contamination, pollution and poison which were hurled upon them by the very pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state itself. For security reasons, which were now in place for the first time, the new arrangements and the new hierarchy of the spiritual organization were kept secret and in an inaccessible mode for everyone with the exception of the members of the circle. Suffice it to say, those arrangements were able to keep the poisoning, polluting and contaminating influence of the negative state out of the positive state.

As the process of development in the life of the positive state, as well as the process of regression in the negative state, was taking place, and as preparations were being made for My personal incarnation on Planet Zero, many further accommodations, restructuring and changes needed to be accomplished and set up. From the position of your time continuum, time-wise, something like the incarnation of the Absolute God-Creator into not only a relative condition but into the very fabric of the negative state and its most external position — human non-life, required very careful planning, accommodations, adjustments and changes in My very Nature. As these processes were going on, every single aspect of them caused the same type of changes in all relative sentient entities as they were occurring in My Absolute Nature. This necessity of changes in all others as well, derives from the fact of absolute dependency of My Creation on everything that is going on within Me. For that reason, any such changes and accommodations within My Nature, as they are registered in all sentient minds, trigger the need for their own accommodations and changes. Without paralleling My Own Personal and Individual accommodations and changes in this respect, they could not relate to Me any longer. Without them they would be trying to relate to Someone Who is no longer the same. In fact, it would be someone who no longer exists. To find yourself in a position of not being able to relate to Me, could cause a total and irreversible cessation of your personal and individualized life and the loss of the unique quality of your individuality which depends on whatever is going on within Me.

Due to the fact that these accommodations and changes were continuously going on in preparation for My incarnation on planet Zero, as they were occurring, at each point of their occurrence, they were setting up a favorable and desirable means for occurrence of corresponding changes and accommodations within every sentient entity in the positive state. At the same time, as each and every

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

sentient entity went through these accommodations, adjustments and changes, being that Creation in its function and manifestation depends on the function of the sentient minds, it was subjected to them as well. Thus, the entire organizational structure of Creation, as well as the hierarchy of the spiritual organization, were changed accordingly so that nothing remained the same at each junction of such occurrences.

In the process of these accommodations, adjustments and changes, the multiversal law from within to without was followed. Thus, in the subjective mode of perception of reality, which is founded on sequential and continuous modes of manifestation and function, they would start at the level of the first circle which was positioned, symbolically speaking, above Creation. The sentient entities of that circle (as tentatively and imprecisely described in Dialog 145) were always the first ones who would undergo these needed and necessary accommodations, adjustments and changes. They would set up a good illustrative and demonstrative example of how such changes, accommodations and adjustments should be implemented. As soon as they went through this process, everyone else in the hierarchy followed suit in accordance with their own individualized and personalized nature. Now, in the objective mode of perception of reality, which is the mode of simultaneity, discreteness and synchronicity, these changes, accommodations and adjustments, would occur in the form of their states, not yielding to subjective time requirements. Meaning, objectively speaking, no time lapsed (in your conceptualization of time) between those changes, accommodations and adjustments which were taking place at the level of the very first circle positioned above Creation and those which were taking place at all other levels within Creation itself. However, subjectively, it appeared as if succession, in the form of its proceeding from one level to another, was in force.

Corresponding changes, accommodations and adjustments were reflected also at all levels of the Zone of Displacement and planet Zero. These were very much necessary in preparation for My incarnation into the negative state and on planet Zero, in order to shield everyone positioned there from possible eternal destruction which would happen by the sheer presence of My Absolutely Positive, Loving, Wise and Good Nature, unbearable to anyone in the negative state and human non-life. The symbolical depiction of these necessary preparations and consequent adjustments, accommodations and changes, you can find in the story of John the Baptist. He was sent before Me in order to prepare for My entrance into the non-life of the negative state and human non-life. We have already discussed the mystery of John the Baptist in some previous Dialogs. It is not necessary to repeat it again. We only wanted

to bring to your attention that the facts of this preparation, and consequent changes, accommodations and adjustments, were also registered in the inner, spiritual sense of the Christian Bible.

During the time of My residence on planet Zero, as well as at all other levels of the Zone of Displacement and elsewhere, a very much different situation was in place which required the establishment of a very much different hierarchical structure of the spiritual organization throughout the entirety of being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. Again, this situation required very specific types of accommodations, adjustments and changes which would reflect the unusual situation occurring in the very fabric of Creation, the Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero. This unusual situation was the result of My Divine being made human. Nothing of that nature had ever been experienced up to that point. Because of this entirely new, different and unusual situation, which was triggered by Me, making My Divine human, it was necessary to establish profound accommodations, adjustments and changes in all sentient minds and in the fabric of Creation itself as well as in the fabric of the Zone of Displacement. Any and all changes which had been taking place up to that point, no matter when and where, or in what state, condition and process, were taking place on the level of everyone's spiritual mind with a subsequent impact on the level of the interior mind and then on the level of the external mind.

Further changes, accommodations and adjustments were instituted during My visit to all the Hells and during the lockup of the pseudo-creators. It is obvious that this act completely and totally restructured the entire hierarchy of the spiritual as well as pseudo-spiritual organization. As a result, nothing could stay the same. In the process of My resurrection and following My departure from planet Zero, an entirely different spiritual state came into its being and existence which required entirely new and different changes, accommodations and adjustments in all and everything. The process of making My human Divine had begun. That process itself, as it was going on, caused profound changes in and restructuring of all aspects of My Creation and all sentient minds with the subsequent full and complete restructuring of the hierarchy of the spiritual organization at all levels of Creation and pseudo-creation. The process of making My human Divine, from the standpoint of the temporal-spatial continuum, lasted for some time. Once the process of this divinization and absolutization was completed, as you know, it resulted in the acquirement of My Absolute New Nature. The permanent establishment of My New Absolute Nature caused the most revolutionary changes, adjustments and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

accommodations throughout the entirety of My Creation and pseudo-creation and in all sentient entities in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence.

So, as you clearly see from everything said above, nothing is ever the same. And I can assure you that nothing will ever be the same in the future as well. Prepare yourself for these facts! You'll need it! And this is all that we needed to talk about on the platform of this Dialog. Now, Peter, go and rest and do some other things.

Peter: I'll do as you suggest. Thank You very much for this Dialog.

One Hundred and Forty Seventh Dialog

June 7, 2000

Peter: I understand that You would like to continue in bringing to our attention some further issues related to the topics discussed in the two previous Dialogs (145 and 146). Am I right? Or is there anything else that You feel would be useful to share with us today?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, you are right. As you noticed, in the recent few Dialogs, we have been reiterating something which was mentioned in some earlier Dialogs several times before. It relates to the need for My representatives on planet Zero to carefully reevaluate and redefine many spiritual as well as non-spiritual concepts that they have been holding on to up to this point. The issue was that many such concepts and what they really mean and signify might not be correct or their conceptualization was distorted or improperly understood. The issue was also that in order to proceed with the next step in our effort of bringing the non-life of the negative state and its human life to a close, it is absolutely necessary to make things right which were made wrong. Or, in this respect, to correct all inappropriate, or even false, conceptualizations of all, and every, concepts that have significance in proper understanding and perception of the spiritual facts of the true life. It was pointed out several times, that if anyone of you holds to such improper understanding, by that factor, you unwittingly support the cause of the negative state. In that case though, the negative state and everything related to it cannot be eliminated.

The other point which was emphasized was that some events in the historical course of the development of Creation and all its sentient entities, as well as in the pseudo-creation, their perception and understanding, the way they really happened and what their happening really meant, was likewise skewed or entirely falsified. This is the reason why, from time to time, we have been including in these Dialogs some explanations of those historical events. The relevance of their proper understanding and why they needed to happen the way they did, relates directly to the process of elimination of the negative state and its human non-life. For if you evaluate such events from the wrong perspective and with buying into the verity of the claims which human historians make about them, then, in that case, you, once again, live in distortions and falsities. Under those conditions, nothing constructive can be done about anything related to the negative state and its human non-life.

As you were told before, and it is emphasized very strongly right now, the present state of spiritual affairs, and the nature and requirement of the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

presently ongoing shift and its current phase, require more than any other steps and phases that these corrections are being made and that everything crucial and vital to the process of elimination of the negative state and its human life is put into right and proper perspective. You, as My true representatives on planet Zero, are carriers and implementers of this requirement. Because of that, you are put into a position of making all such corrections and acquiring all such proper perspectives about anything crucial and vital to this ending or elimination. Even though the majority of humanity will not be in a position of making such corrections and amendments at this time, in order to accomplish this most desirable goal, only a certain appointed number of people need to know about all these things and acquire all right notions about such spiritual concepts and historical events. These particular people, based on their proper and correct knowledge regarding all these things and issues, will set up a proper condition on planet Zero and elsewhere in the non-life of the negative state which will lead all others to making their own corrections and amendments in this, and any other respects.

At this time, I can assure you that all those who read, accept and apply all the principles and ideas of My New Revelation, and only those, as well as all those who will be reading, accepting and applying them in the future, are these people, whom I call My true representatives. Thus, it is you who are in this position. For you I have been providing all these important informations throughout all the books of My New Revelation and especially in these Dialogs. You can consider these Dialogs as a pinnacle or summit of My New Revelation which closes or ends everything related to the needed revelation for these times and conditions. Because of this crucial role that these Dialogs play, among many other important spiritual things, they are the ones that contain most of such needed revelation regarding making those things right which were made wrong, especially and particularly in the field of proper and right conceptualization of all spiritual ideas, notions, terms, concepts, etc., and of some important historical events. At the same time, it was necessary to emphasize over and over and over again that what was right and proper yesterday might not be proper and right today and what is right and proper today might not be so tomorrow. This emphasis was done in order to place you into a position of preventing yourself from falling into a trap of the negative state and of human tendencies to be rigid, stagnant, inflexible, unchangeable, non-modifiable, unprogressive and unwilling to admit that things may not be the way they appear to you or the way they seem to be.

Very good examples of such constant need for changes, accommodations and adjustments were outlined in the two previous Dialogs. Take for example, the factor of My Absolute New Nature. What is the word 'New' telling you? The very meaning of the word 'new' denotes very clearly, even

in the limited and limiting human mind, that nothing is the same anymore. If it is not the same, in that case, whatever existed prior to the acquirement and establishment of My Absolute New Nature, cannot be in place any longer. This is especially true about the structural hierarchy of the spiritual organization and about the role, position and assignment that all sentient entities had up to that point, as well as about the structural nature of their sentient minds. Obviously, if I acquired and established My New Nature in an absolute sense, all else cannot continue in their prior modes, positions and functions as well as in their roles, assignments and placements in the above mentioned hierarchy of the spiritual organization.

A good example of these fundamental changes, accommodations, modifications and adjustments you can find in the specific role that sentient entities, positioned in the first circle which was placed above Creation (symbolically speaking), were assigned. Do you remember the role and assignment they had very shortly after My Creation was shifted from its state into its process and by that factor also became its own reality outside of Me? Among many other things, that role was the shielding, tempering and titration of energies constantly emanating from My Absolute State for the purpose of their redistribution into all levels of My Creation so that Creation, and all other sentient entities, could function and fulfill their purpose for which they were put into their own motion in the first place. In other words, those sentient entities in the first circle had the role of mediators between the Absolute and everyone and everything relative. In order to properly discharge these important and crucial duties, they were equipped by Me with very special and specific abilities related to their role as mediators between the Absolute and the relative. It is utterly impossible to define in human terms what these abilities were like. Nothing exists in human language or in the imagination of the human mind which could even remotely give you an idea about what kinds of abilities they were or of what they consisted.

However, what did happen following the acquirement of My Absolute New Nature and becoming The Lord Jesus Christ to eternity? As you remember, the content and meaning of those words, among many other things, reflect the fact that, from that time/state on, I became My Own Mediator to all and everyone. In other words, thanks to being The Lord Jesus Christ, I am fully and absolutely capable of providing any and all mediations between My Absolute State, Process and Condition and all relative states, processes and conditions. No longer is there a need for any other mediators to do this important job as the case had been before that. For that reason, those sentient entities and their respective societies (and you were tentatively given nine names of those societies in Dialog 145, although there were more of them than that), who had this role and assignment, were obviously reassigned and given something else to do. One general aspect of the new

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

role they now have is to help Me, together with the members of the New Universe, in the process of bringing to an end everything related to the non-life of the negative state and human non-life. They were also instrumental, after they acquired their own new nature, patterned by and accommodated to My Absolute New Nature, in helping Me in the process of creation of the New Universe as well as in continuous creative efforts which My New Nature constantly emanates.

The specific role that each individual from that circle was assigned cannot be revealed because of its utterly and completely individualized and personalized nature structured in accordance with the unique, infinitely different and non-duplicable quality of their respective individualities. It is between Me and them. In fact, they were given new names that fully reflect the nature, structure and dynamics of their new nature. Those names are so wonderful and unusual that no one can utter them but only I and that individual who was given that name. One of the important meanings of the statement recorded in Revelation (Apocalypse) 2:17 relates to this issue (*And I will give him a white stone, and on the stone a new name written which no one knows except him who receives it*). To 'give him a white stone' in this particular connotation is to give him/her an entirely new nature. 'And on the stone a new name written' signifies the unique and infinitely different quality of that nature and his/her individuality which is assigned such a specific and utterly individualized name that cannot be given to anyone else except to him/her who receives it. Because of that, no one can and may know what that name really signifies unless he/she is willing to disclose some aspects of its meaning. However, not all aspects of its meaning can be conveyed to anyone. This is true especially about the very core of that individuality which is registered in the center of that name (symbolically speaking). As My Absolute Core is unnamable and incomprehensible, so is the core of everyone's new nature unnamable and incomprehensible by anyone but him/her only. As I know in an absolute sense what that Core of Mine is all about, so each individual in his/her new nature knows about it. However, he/she cannot explain it to anyone. In order for anyone to have a full understanding of the meaning and nature of that core, he/she would have to become that individual. As you know, such a thing is utterly impossible.

Once all sentient entities in the first circle above Creation (symbolically speaking) went through all changes, accommodations and adjustments which put them in full alignment with My Absolute New Nature; and once they received their new names, which reflected the new role, position and assignment they received from Me, following that, by the power of My Absolute New Nature, they were helping all others at all other levels of Creation and its various circles with their own crucial and vital changes, accommodations and adjustments, making it easier and more comfortable

for them to accomplish this goal and receive their own new natures and relevant to them, their new names. In fact, by going through these changes, accommodations and adjustments first, they paved the way for all others to do the same. From this concise description you can clearly see that nothing could remain the same in anyone and anything after My Absolute New Nature came to its most desirable fruition.

The beginning of transmission of My New Revelation, and in the process of its transmission all the way to this date (until today, as a matter of fact), as well as to how long it will continue to be transmitted until the opportune time, something new and different was added to the roles, positions and assignments of all involved in this matter in the positive state and especially to those who were created by Me, as a result of the very first emanation in the process of this particular creative effort, before the actual Creation shifted from its state into its process (what we called the imaginary very first circle of Creation. Do not forget that the process of Creation was executed in very specific circles). This new role has a direct relevance to all which is contained in My New Revelation. They were the very first ones who implemented and incorporated everything contained in My New Revelation into their very much individualized and personalized lives. By the act of such implementation and incorporation, the qualities of their individualities and the nature and structure of their 'I am,' as well as the quality of their overall lifestyle, changed and are in the process of continuous changing as well. Once again, by these acts, they are paving the way for all others to go through a similar process in accordance with their own individual makeup and the unique qualities of their individualities.

The members of the New Universe, being that they were created from all aspects of My Absolute New Nature, and by that factor have nothing in their nature of anything of the old, established a foundation for all others, and in the first place, for the sentient entities of the first circle, to follow suit in this respect. On this foundation, all such changes, accommodations and adjustments, particularly as related to My New Revelation (which was/is made possible by and stems from My Absolute New Nature), have been taking place and will continue to take place as long as My New Revelation, now in the form of these Dialogs, will be recorded or to the very end of their closure. After that, a new form and content of changes, accommodations and adjustments will come into their being and existence.

How had all these changes, accommodations and adjustments been manifested within the sphere and atmosphere of the Zone of Displacement and on planet Zero? To some limited extent, you can read them out from the history of humanity. After all, as you know, whatever has been happening on planet Zero and in human non-life, was the reflection of the state of affairs in the Zone of Displacement and all its Hells. Generally

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

speaking, as conditions were getting better and better in the positive state or in My true Creation in general — thanks to continuous progressive changes, adjustments and accommodations, in a parallel manner, in the same degree, those conditions were getting worse and worse in the domain of the negative state and its human non-life. This factor was registered some time ago in the very first Update in the ***Corollaries to The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***. The content and meaning of that Update is fully applicable at the present time within the frame of this particular Dialog.

What can you deduce from the history of humanity in this respect? Just look at everything that has been going on up to this point and will be going on to the end of the negative state and its human non-life. At the dawn of the recorded history, savage wars, conquering and invasions by barbarians were constantly going on. One nation was waging wars against the other. Bloodshed was a matter of life (non-life). Turmoil, revolutions, uprisings, rise of the most abominable dictatorships, such as, for example, fascism and communism, was a common occurrence. As the so-called external progression in technological development was taking place, more sophisticated weapons of destruction and means of waging wars were invented and implemented, culminating in the abomination of the First and the Second World Wars.

All these events, turmoil, etc., were accompanied by constant natural and technological disasters, unusual weather patterns, earthquakes, famine, floods, fires, crimes, murders, perversions of all kinds, etc. It all culminated in the invention of the most destructive weapons that the history of humankind has ever had — nuclear devices. At the present time, the major problem humanity is facing is an unusual surge of terrorism and so-called ethnic cleansing, the substance of which is the extreme hate, intolerance and drive for wiping out everyone who is not of the same ethnicity from the face of the earth; or in religious circles, everyone who is not of the same faith (for example, the Islamic concept of infidels).

On the religious and ideological fronts the tendency is to go backward, to reestablish the so-called good old days of conservative, literal, dogmatic and fanatic lifestyle as reflected in the Islamic drive, in the so-called born-again Christians, in resurgence of neo-fascism, neo-communism and all kinds of other neo-something. Very often such drives are under the disguise of serving God, who demands from people to be the way they dictate them to be; or under the disguise of the so-called New Age movement which adopts the word 'new' but which, in its ideological doctrine, serves the preservation of the old from a somewhat different perspective.

If you carefully look at the above described development on planet Zero, you can conclude that, first of all, the situation in this respect was exponentially worse in the Zone of Displacement and its Hells, and secondly, that the nature of all those events have only a regressive mode — things have been getting worse and worse. In this sense, you cannot very well ascribe anything positive and good, or any real changes, accommodations and adjustments, to something which has a regressive mode or in which conditions are such that all things are getting worse and worse. The real progression is ascribable only to something which is getting better and better. The reason why such an unusual regressive situation exists within the domain of the negative state and in human non-life, is that, as the results of the establishment of My Absolute New Nature are being manifested more and more, and as the consequent changes, adjustments and accommodations in the positive sense and in the progressive direction, by the factor of everyone in the positive state becoming better and better, are more and more obvious and real, in the negative state and in human non-life all that triggers the process of acceleration of the ending of their abominable and despicable non-lives. The way this acceleration works is that by the factor of profound changes, adjustments and accommodations in the positive state, the opposing trend in the negative state and human non-life can be only in one direction — getting worse and worse in all aspects of their non-life. The worse and worse they are getting, the closer and closer they are coming to their eternal end. Basically, this is how the ending of the negative state is being accomplished.

The mystery of this situation is very obvious now: In order to accelerate the process of ending the non-life of the negative state and its human non-life, it is necessary to establish special types of conditions within the domain of the positive state which would enable a constant, unceasing, uninterrupted and continuous improvement, growth and betterment of all aspects of its true life or life of all sentient entities positioned in the positive state. My Absolute New Nature provides them with such conditions and opportunities. At the same time, in order for them to get better and better, they need to be in a mode of constant changes, accommodations and adjustments. Logically speaking, if you are to be better or to feel better, you cannot be the same way as you were at previous levels of being and feeling better. Otherwise, you would not be, or you would not feel better, but the same. In that case, no progression would occur. This is the reason why it was so strongly emphasized that for everyone in the positive state the need for changes, accommodations and adjustments is the most welcomed occurrence. It heralds the next step in the process of their becoming better and more positive.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

It is quite possible that for the human aspects of your mind this process of constant changes, adjustments and accommodations could cause your head to spin — symbolically speaking. As if there is no rest, respite or break in this process. In this respect this kind of setup would be perceived by the human mind as a very tiresome, never-ending state and process. Who could survive anything like that? Let Me tell you something: To have such a perspective is possible only from the position of the typical human nature. The reality of this situation from the position or perspective of the positive state is such that the opposite is true. Not to have this opportunity for constant changes, accommodations and adjustments for everyone in the positive state would be very much tiresome, boring, unproductive, uncreative and futile, not giving them the possibility to progress and to discover something new. Of course they have their moments or times of rest, play, fun, vacation, holidays or anything of that nature, but these are as progressive and as new at each point of their occurrence as everything else in their lives. In them they find a tremendous surge and recharge of energies which enable them to change, adjust and accommodate much better and much faster. This is how things are in the positive state.

As mentioned above, the availability of My New Revelation brought about something which has never before been possible. For the first time in the history of this cycle of time/state/process it became obvious why anything at all contained in the pseudo-nature of the non-life of the negative state and human non-life was permitted to come to its own pseudo-being and pseudo-existence. The proper and correct understanding of this need put everything in a very much different perspective for everyone everywhere and everywhen. Up to that point, it was necessary to keep hidden the many reasons why such permission was granted. Only some general sense was available about this fact. The sentient entities in the positive state had absolute trust, confidence and faith in My decision to do that. They knew very well that whatever I was doing or permitting was always for some very needed and good reasons. Therefore, they patiently waited for the full revelation about all these facts, knowing that if the negative state and human non-life are to provide for them all necessary, vital and crucial lessons of life and living, as well as non-life and non-living (and this was one of the main issues), then, in that case, all opportunities needed to be given for them to do just that. Otherwise, if they all were to know in advance what this was all about, they would never have had an opportunity for this important learning. Such advance knowledge would prevent the invention, activation, establishment and manifestation of the non-life of the negative state and its human non-life.

However, as the time/state was coming closer and closer for the ending of everything related to the non-life of the negative state and human non-life, in order to put into motion and process this ending, it was necessary to

reveal everything related to the question of why My permission was granted for something like the negative state and its human non-life to plague the being and existence of My Creation within this cycle of time/state/process. The reason why everyone in the positive state patiently waited for this revelation, was that I personally promised them that, first of all, the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state and its human non-life would be permitted to manifest their true face only within one cycle of time/state/process and in no other; and secondly, that in the opportune time, The New Revelation will be given by Me which would explain the major reasons for such permission. At the same time, they were assured that in the moment My New Revelation will become available to all, it will give everyone in the positive state a greater and more meaningful opportunity for change, progression, betterment, accommodation and adjustment and for transcendence of everything they previously had, experienced and knew. Parallel with that, they were assured that with My New Revelation, and what it contains, as their condition would become better and better, correspondently, the condition in the negative state and its human non-life would become worse and worse. This parallel process, moving in opposite directions, would become instrumental in the process of ending everything related to the non-life of the negative state and human non-life.

After all, as mentioned above, if things are getting worse and worse with them, in that case, by the factor of worsening itself, they are causing their own demise. The worsening process brings them to the point of total exhaustion of everything they have and what they are able to teach everyone about the nature of the non-life in all its forms and manifestations; thus, contributing to the closure of this cycle of time/state/process, instituting the interim period and preparing the way for the opening of the next cycle of time/state/process. At that point, nothing would remain in their non-life that could teach anyone anything useful or new.

As you remember from the Big Book, the justification of anyone's being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence is possible only if they serve some kind of use and provide important learning for all so that they can evolve and progress in their respective individualized and personalized lives. In the moment such usefulness and learning is no longer provided, the subject matter is closed and it is never allowed to surface again because it could not provide anything new or different. This is the multiversal law which was clearly defined in the 10th chapter of ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***. Nothing can or may violate that law. Such laws as that are always based on the principles of spiritual progression, changes, accommodations and adjustments. No other types of laws are permitted to impede sentient entities' evolvment and progression in any

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

respect. Therefore, such laws have no place in the true life of the positive state. They are possible only in the non-life of the negative state and human non-life which are built on all kinds of restrictions, limitations, prohibitions, taboos or whatever they have in that respect and in such an abundance. In the true sense of the nature of such negative and restrictive laws, they cannot be considered as true laws but only as pseudo-laws which have only a limited, temporary and transient validity as one of the aspects of learning for all how such laws should never be formulated and allowed to rule sentient entities' lives. In other words, such pseudo-laws are allowed to be temporarily in place in order to illustrate and demonstrate for everyone what kinds of laws should never be part of the structural nature and design of Creation and of the sentient mind and what happens if such pseudo-laws regulate all aspects of sentient life.

All these facts were brought to everyone's attention by the means of My New Revelation. Because they became available, by the factor of their availability, they herald the approach to the ending of the non-life of the negative state and human non-life in a non-time and non-space sense. At the same time, they herald the most profound and extensive changes, accommodations and adjustments which will be in place at the threshold of ending of the old and opening of the new. And you, as My true representatives on planet Zero, by having this information, are equalized with all in the positive state, taking upon yourselves the role of the most important carriers on planet Zero of this crucial, vital and life-giving information. Therefore, consider yourselves blessed beyond any other measures and beyond your human imagination.

It is necessary again and again to warn everyone who reads these Dialogs not to take the time factor literally in the sense of the typical human conceptualization of time. In other words, anything revealed about the impending closure or ending of the negative state and its human non-life does not relate at all to any external time factors. It is very easy to fall into this trap — expecting that, based on what we are talking about in this respect, will happen tomorrow or in the next few days, or weeks, or months or in the next few years. As My true representatives, you have to train yourself to think not in the terms of human time but in terms of states and their manifestations.

Do you remember what was said about the two modes of perception of reality? One mode was designated as being subjective and the other as being objective. How would these two modes tend to perceive the factor of closure or ending of anything at all and not only of the negative state and its human non-life? In the subjective mode, because it is sequential and continuous, such closure or ending would have a flow in a linear fashion. The linear fashion would depict all events that are needed to take place in

order to accomplish this goal in such a manner that one event would succeed the other and the other could not happen before the preceding one was fully completed and exhausted all its possibilities. Because of that, if you take into consideration what other numerous things or events need to happen before the actual beginning of this closure or ending can be realized, it would take quite a long time in the subjective mode to accomplish this goal. This is a very much understandable outcome if you look at it from a typical human standpoint. Take, for example, a situation in which you are put into a position of waiting for some important appointment or news to take place. Or whenever you are waiting on the result of some important test that could be a matter of life or death for you personally. In situations like that, each minute of waiting seems to you as if it is never ending. In other words, time goes by very, very slowly and nothing can be done to accelerate its flow.

This is the exact situation in which you find yourself regarding waiting for the ending of the negative state and its human non-life. Because you are waiting on it from your human position, which is time-space bound and, thus, from the position of the subjective mode, it seems to you as if it is a never-ending saga. In the process, you have a tendency to lose hope that it will ever end. Of course, it is very much possible that it will not end at all during your lifespan on planet Zero. It remains to be seen how many generations of humans need to go through the human non-life yet before this closure can be accomplished. For that reason, do not expect that it will happen during your life on this planet. It may or may not. The probability is high that it will not. It will all depend on what is going to take place in the next phase of the ongoing shift which is about to be opened. The stakes are very high in this respect (to use your figure of speech). Many things need to transpire and to be manifested. They will determine the nature of choices, accommodations and adjustments that will be needed to be made in the process of the next movement in the spiritual progression. It will also depend very much on your own individual and personal choices, adjustments and accommodations during that time. Your contributions in this respect are instrumental.

Do not ever forget that you have in your possession something extremely valuable that no one else has — My New Revelation. By having it and by considering all its ideas and all the information contained in, especially about this issue, you are put into a position of being instrumental toward the ending of the non-life of the negative state and its human non-life. However, in order to do that and be that way, you need to train yourself in disregarding the typical human attitudes and expectations that they have about anything at all. This is especially true about time factors. You know very well how many misleading, futile and even deceiving predictions were made about the ending of human life on this planet and about My Second

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Coming. They all were terribly wrong. And they will all be wrong in times to come. Do not ever fall into such traps. As I said, you have something at your disposal that no one has had so far. Rely on My New Revelation and not on human predictions. Disregard any typical human time factors whenever we are talking about the ending or closure of non-life of the negative state and human non-life. I can assure you, as long as you tend to hold to such typical human conceptualizations of time, you are not helping in this matter. Just the opposite: You are prolonging that non-life. Look at this situation from the standpoint of the objective mode.

As you know, in the objective mode everything happens in a discrete, simultaneous and synchronous manner. Time does not flow as a straight arrow but, symbolically speaking, any of its moments are contained within any other moment in such a manner that they fold. It is difficult for the human mind to visualize how such folding of time happens. But it does happen; and it is possible for you to intuit what we are talking about. It is a matter of training yourself to think in these types of terms. The more you are able to think in the objective mode, and at the same time, simultaneously, being aware of the subjective mode and switching between them at will, the more you are in the positive state. Remember that! Such ability puts you in the real life of continuous changes, accommodations, adjustments and progression. And because these changes, accommodations, adjustments and progression are the very nature of the true life of the positive state, by realizing and actualizing this ability in your everyday personal and individual lives, you place yourselves right in the middle of the positive state. What else would you like to have? Or where else would you like to be?

Now, Peter, I would recommend that we finish for today. For a few days now you have been experiencing a considerable shortness of breath. It became worse than before. You need to take care of this problem. Go and rest now.

Peter: I'll do so. And thank You very much for all these very much needed reminders.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are very much welcome. Such reminders and reiterations are essential to have if you take into consideration the fragility and unreliability of human memory.

Peter: How right You are!

One Hundred and Forty Eighth Dialog

June 8, 2000

Peter: We have some problems with getting back the edited Dialog 146. For some reason it is not coming through by the means of E-mail. I wonder what it is in that Dialog that we have so many problems with it? Is there something in its content which is a thorn in the renegade's back or is it just a regular problem of the Internet in general? Would You like to make any comments about it? Of course, if You would prefer to talk about something else, by all means do so and disregard these technical difficulties.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, objectively speaking, all our Dialogs are a real thorn in the minds of the renegades and their minions. It is not as if that particular Dialog is more damaging to their cause than any other. To tell you the truth, they make an all-out effort to interfere with anything you do in My services and the services of the positive state in general. In the process of this effort, they may temporarily succeed more in one case than in another. Or they can fail in most of their attempts to block this dialoging — as the case has been up to this point. What do you think, what is the reason for your recent difficulties that you are experiencing with your breathing (the shortness of your breath and some mysterious pressure along the line of your sternum)? You can consider it as their interference in this process or in the process of our dialoging. Don't forget one important thing: We are very fast approaching the closure of the current phase in the ongoing shift and the opening of the next one. Any such closures and openings put the forces of the negative state in an extremely uncomfortable position. It brings all of them closer to the ending of their non-life. Because of that, and knowing that, they do everything in their power to interfere with this process or to impede it as much as possible.

They are very much aware of our statement in the recent dialogs that the mentioned closure of the current phase and opening of the new one are contingent on the completion of the second volume of our Dialogs. They do not want this to happen because it calls for profound changes, accommodations and adjustments in the fabric of the entire Creation and its multiverse. As a consequence, the entire Zone of Displacement and all its pseudo-worlds and their respective Hells are put into the position of their own unwanted changes, accommodations and adjustments. Such changes mean only one thing for them: One more gigantic step toward their final demise. How would you feel if something like that would be about to happen to you or to anyone? Of course you

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

would try anything possible to avert such a tragic (in their view) outcome.

So, the best thing to do in this respect is not to get upset about anything which is thrown into your path and continue in your work as if nothing important has happened. That way, the results of their interferences would be nullified. At the same time, by your kind and patient attitude, you would illustrate and demonstrate to them that in the true life of My representative there is no room for retaliation, revenge, cunningness, hatred, anger, violence or anything of similar, all negative nature. Instead, the only things which rule his/her personal and individualized life are mercy, forgiveness, compassion, empathy, understanding, acceptance, tolerance, respect, appreciation, the utmost kindness, non-judgmental attitude and similar all positive characteristics. I can assure you that there is nothing more effective in dealing with the forces of the negative state than having such characteristics, traits and attitudes. If you were to respond to their interferences, temptations and blocks with an attitude of anger, hostility, retaliation, revenge, cursing them and similar behavior, in that case, you would be playing right into their hands, so-to-speak. That kind of response is expected by them because, by responding in this negative manner, you are giving all your energies to their cause. And this is exactly what they want and why they are making so much effort to frustrate you as much as possible (among many other things). So, take heed and do not give in to any of their efforts in this respect.

Peter: Thank You very much for clarifying this issue for us. It is very good to be reminded, from time to time, about the proper methods of coping with the forces of the negative state and the human non-life which is in itself a great source of all kinds of temptations and frustrations. By the way, as You were finishing conveyance of the above, finally, on the third attempt, the edited Dialog 146 from Betty and Heather came through. How do You like that?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, it definitely is. And the reason that the mentioned Dialog could not arrive sooner, was that it was necessary to reiterate the above mentioned facts. Sometimes things are allowed to happen in order to give an opportunity for something to be reminded or conveyed. So, as you see from this example, no matter what kind of attempts are made to impede your work, those attempts are used for some good purpose. What does it tell you? That no matter what the forces of the negative state would do, to their greatest disappointment, all their efforts will always end in something good and

positive — just exactly in the opposite manner than for what they were intended.

And now, let us talk about something else. On the platform of this particular Dialog, I would like to discuss the true meaning of three terms or words or concepts. In human perception and the way the majority of humans understand them, there are considerable distortions, misunderstandings and even falsifications of the true meaning of these words. Because we are committed within the frame of these Dialogs to put everything in their right place, perspective and meaning, we need to consider them. These words are: ‘angel,’ ‘saint’ and ‘the tree of life’ which was planted in the middle of the garden of Eden.

Let us begin with the word ‘angel.’ What do humans understand about this word? What kind of meaning or connotation do they ascribe to it? In most instances, humans assign the position of angels as beings in the Heavens. Of course, this is a limited positioning because as there are angels of heaven, so are there angels of hell, or as there are angels of goodness and positiveness so there are angels of evilness and negativeness. In the positive sense, angels are considered to be celestial attendants or servants of God. In another connotation, they are considered to be messengers of God. Still, in the special hierarchy of the spiritual organization, depicted as the first circle positioned above (symbolically speaking) Creation, they occupy the ninth position (on the bottom of the circle directly opposite seraphim who are positioned on the top of the circle; others being cherubim, thrones, dominations, puissance or powers, virtues, principalities and archangels) in this hierarchy (as described, for example, in Dialog 145). Another meaning of the word ‘angels’ is that they are guardians of other beings (especially of children and humans in general, or what used to be called in your professional books, Peter, as being in the role of spiritual advisors or, later on, as the members of your true spiritual family). Usually, in human lore, they are portrayed or described as having wings so that they can fly.

However, this seemingly spiritual connotation of the word ‘angel’ or ‘angels’ is not the only thing which is ascribed to this term. In human language and attitude it can also have a purely relational connotation — as one individual to another. You can say to someone who did something good for you or who made your life more bearable or more pleasant, or whom you deeply love and admire, ‘You are an angel.’ As you see from this expression, the qualities which are ascribed or attributed to angels in a typical human understanding and language are always positive and good. Also, someone who provides some kind of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

substantial charitable contribution, very often is called an angel. Still, in another so-called spiritual connotation, the word 'angel' is equated with the words 'a divine spirit.' Then you have such designations as, for example, an angel of anger (as described, for example, in the apocalyptic ***Revelation of Moses*** where Moses sees these angels composed 'wholly of fire'); the angel of annihilation; the angel of announcements; the angel of annunciation; the angel of the Apocalypse, the angel of the Ark of the Covenant; the angel of ascension; the angel of the bottomless pit; the angel of chaos; the angels of Creation (supposedly there were seven of them at the time of Creation); the angel of darkness; the angel of light; the angel of death; the angel of fire; the angels of the four winds (supposedly Uriel, over the south; Michael, over the east; Raphael, over the west; Gabriel, over the north); and many other numerous designations usually related to very specific functions which each such an angel performed.

Then there is another designation of this word which relates to someone virtuous and good who dies and subsequently goes to heaven and becomes an angel. So, as you see from this description, the word 'angel' has many meanings and designations. What is the true reality of the meaning, function, role, or whatever the word 'angel' contains? Is there any truth to these claims? Are the angels really winged and can they fly in the literal sense of these words?

There is a general meaning to this word, as related to the positive state, and there is a very specific one as related to the function, role and assignment of any angel (be it in the positive state or in the negative state, respectively). In the general meaning of this word, angels can be considered as the generic name for a group of sentient entities who were created either before the actual Creation was shifted from its state into its process, or after the first round of creation was executed with the help of the previously created sentient entities. As you remember, in the first round of creation, which emanated from My Absolute Spiritual Mind, by the means of My Absolute Core, the spiritual dimension was created. All sentient entities who were created in this first round are generically called angels. Because of the purely spiritual connotation of their origin, being that they were the emanation from My Absolute Spiritual Mind, they can also be called as the direct spirits of I AM WHO I AM (God) — The Lord Jesus Christ, or the spirits of My Absolute Divinity or divine spirits. In the first circle, positioned above Creation (symbolically speaking), the sentient entities were in the role of My direct servants, administering directly to Me. They were carrying out or, better to say it, they were distributing all aspects of My

emanation and its infinite energies in accordance with the design of Creation which was implanted for that purpose into their minds.

On the other hand, all those sentient entities who occupied the spiritual dimension of the multiverse, likewise called angels, in a general sense provided all necessary spiritual ideas, concepts, meanings, laws and everything related to the fundamental principles of life and its possibility to be manifested at any other levels, as they were engrained into their structural mind directly from My Absolute Spiritual Mind. At this point you may ask, and I see it in your mind, Peter, why didn't I do all that directly and why was it necessary to do all that by and through someone else, created for that specific purpose? The answer to this question was previously related to you. It contains the factor of the Absoluteness of My Emanation and its Absolute Energies which cannot be utilized for the creation of Creation in their direct absoluteness because Creation, by the factor of being created, cannot be absolute but only relative to that absolute. For that reason, in order for anything of the relative nature to be created, it was first necessary to precreate a special type of sentient entities who could take the very first and the most powerful surge of the emanated energy from My Absolute State and moderate it to the extent that it would be fully accommodated to the needs of the first relative sentient entities, making their spiritual dimension possible.

The second surge of My emanated energies was actually used for creation of the spiritual dimension and all its respective sentient entities-angels. By their means, as they were endowed by all ideas, concepts, means, laws and principles of Creation, in the third round of Creation, or during the third surge of emanating energies from My Absolute State, these energies were further moderated, establishing a favorable condition for the creation of the intermediate dimension. At this level of Creation, or in the third round, the sentient entities created for its occupation were called mediating angels or angels of the intermediate dimension. Their function, among many other things, was to mediate all ideas, concepts, means, laws and principles in order to support by their means the development of all mental processes which would enable creation of the concrete physical dimension with its corporeal sentient entities. Now, the word 'corporeal' does not mean that the so-called non-corporeal sentient entities (as positioned above Creation, in the spiritual dimension and intermediate dimension) do not have their own bodies, very much tangible and sensorial to them. Instead, 'corporeal' means that such bodies are derivatives of their respective physical environment which allow them to survive in that environment. It also means or designates the temporality and

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

transience of that body so that at the end of its function it would revert to its elemental particles from which it was formed in the first place.

In the fourth round of creation, as the emanation of My Absolute Energies proceeded further down in the circles, being moderated and redistributed by all the above sentient entities in succession, the physical dimension was created with all its respective sentient entities. The purpose of creation of this physical dimension and its sentient entities, among many other things, was to concretize, actualize and realize in a tangible and sensorial manner all ideas, concepts, means, laws, principles, etc., giving feedback in upward succession of the results, consequences and outcomes of all creative efforts taken together. Thus, their purpose was to become the ultimate embodiment of everything Creation had to offer. The members of this dimension were called angels of the physical or external dimension. So, this was the original course of the creation of My Creation or its shift from its state into its process.

So, no matter which way you look at this setup, in the original state and process of Creation, all sentient entities were called angels, no matter where or in what state and condition they were located or positioned. This factor reflected the condition which existed in Creation at that time. Because no evils, falsities, negativity or anything of this nature had been invented or activated, and because all created sentient entities contained within themselves all angelic traits, characteristics and attitudes (as described below), they all were called angels. However, once the split, separation and isolation of various dimensions happened, and once the Zone of Displacement was activated and all the hells fabricated, a different understanding and conceptualization of the term 'angel' was generated. Following that split, angels of evils and falsities or of the negative state appeared.

Why, generally speaking, are they also called angels, albeit, evil and negative? Because originally, also at the external-physical level, at the level where the idea of invention, activation, establishment and manifestation of the non-life of the negative state was born, they were not only called angels but they were, in fact, angels. From this situation, the term 'fallen angels' came into the vocabulary of sentient entities and especially to humans. The designation of being fallen angels gave, later on, to all human's religious or so-called holy books a very wrong impression that the angels at the highest possible level, in fact, at the level of the first circle of pre-creation and from the second round of creation, were the ones who came up with such ideas regarding the invention and activation of the negative state. They did not conceive the

fact that, at that time/state, everyone was called an angel. They wrongly assumed that angels were situated or positioned only around the so-called throne of God; meaning, at the highest possible level of pre-creation and exclusively at the spiritual level. This is how falsities and distortions about the actual invention and activation of the negative state, and who did them, came about. The confusion about this situation was compounded by the fact, that, as mentioned before, in the process of activation and establishment of the non-life of the negative state (second and third stage), some sentient entities-angels from other levels, besides from the external-physical level, did join the original inventors and activators of the non-life of the negative state for their own important spiritual reasons. However, in no way were they its inventors, and in no way did they come up with such an idea.

Do angels proper have actual, literal wings? Absolutely not! The reason they are depicted by humans as having such wings stems from the correspondential spiritual meaning of wings. Wings, in this connotation, signify not being bound by any physical gravitational or any other pull which would require for angels to have some kind of external physical means for their locomotion or movement from one place to another or from one state to another. In this sense, they signify the ability of angels to appear anywhere and anywhen or in any state and condition by direct approach without any external tools that would enable them to be where they want to be or in what state they want to be. However, spiritually speaking, wings mean independence and freedom to be the way angels want and need to be by their own free will and choice. So, do not expect to see angels as having wings when you come to the spiritual world. From a distance, they may appear as having them in order to emphasize their correspondential meaning. However, in face to face contact, no wings appear on their back.

Because in a general positive spiritual sense, angels represent the ultimate, most beautiful, kind, loving, wise, innocent, virtuous, compassionate, helpful, understanding, tolerant, respectful, appreciative, knowledgeable, etc., state and condition, the ultimate purpose of everyone in Creation and elsewhere is to become an angel. In fact, you can say for sure, that every sentient entity, no matter where and when he/she is situated or positioned, be it in the positive or negative state, respectively, is destined to become an angel in his/her individualized and personalized right in accordance with the specific, unique and infinitely different quality of his/her individuality. No one can/will ever be excluded from becoming one. In the true reality of the positive state, once its full and complete nature and life are established in the next cycle of time, all sentient entities at all levels of Creation

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

and its multiverse will become angels. This is the ultimate outcome of Creation. This is how the term, word or concept of 'angel' will be defined or is defined right now. It is a matter of the form of manifestation and the quality of everyone's individuality which will make anyone infinitely different but not the content, meaning, character, traits and designations contained in the word 'angel' as defined just above.

The manifestation of such traits can be qualitatively different and unique, but the intensity, extensity, fullness of love, wisdom, knowledge and everything else positive and good are the same. After all, they are all constantly emanated from My Absolute State. Their manifestation, in themselves and by themselves, by the means of each individual-angel has to be always infinitely different because he/she carries within himself/herself the very specific idea of the element emanated from Me which gives him/her a very unique nature. This unique nature conveys all the above mentioned characteristics of an angel to the rest of Creation in his/her own very much specific, infinitely different and non-duplicable way. However, in a general sense, the mentioned characteristics, in their nature, structure, essence and substance are very much the same. It is the quality of their manifestation and conveyance which is infinitely different. But having such quality, no matter what its specific nature and content is, by the factor of being his/her own quality, everyone is equalized and is as valuable, as needed, as preferred and as everything else as any other sentient entity-angel.

In the Zone of Displacement and all its Hells, the angels of evil or angels of darkness assumed similar roles as the angels in the positive state had. However, the nature of those roles, in its content and meaning, was diametrically different from such roles of the angels of light or of the positive state. Whereas, as you remember, the angels of light, in their original assignment, were tempering and shielding the Absolute Emanation of My Creative Process, and by that factor, were accomplishing the proper and safe distribution and titration of those emanations and their energies, the angels of darkness were assigned the roles of augmentation, amplification, exposure and spread in all directions in the original and full strength of all evils, falsities, distortions and everything else with which the forces of the negative state would come up. Fortunately though, the emanations of these augmented, amplified and fully exposed evil energies did not contain the potency of absolute proportions. After all, they were coming from someone who was not absolute but relative. For that reason, no matter how strong, potent and advanced such emanations were, they could never even remotely approach those emanations that were generated from My Absolute State. If the emanations of the rulers of the negative

state were to equal the potency and strength of the emanations of the Absolute State, with their augmentation and amplification, everyone would burn into a cinder. No one could survive such a surge. However, because, comparatively speaking, emanations of the negative state were very weak, in order to establish their sphere of influence which would allow the negative state to flourish fully and completely, it was necessary to come up with the idea of their continuous augmentation and amplification. Otherwise, the negative state would have very little chance to continue for too long in its pseudo-efforts. Simply stated, it would fizzle out. So, the major role of the angels of darkness and evil, was making sure that it would not happen. Therefore, they functioned in the role of being its augmenters and amplifiers. As you know, they continue in this role to the present time/state.

However, eventually, due to the negative state's relative source and due to the fact that the emanations for its maintenance and spread are relative and therefore, weak, no matter how much all its ideas, concepts, lifestyle or whatever they have, are being augmented and amplified, they will exhaust all energies they are capable of producing. These energies, at one point in time/state, will really fizzle out. Only if their source were to be absolute, could they continue to be generated ad infinitum. In that case though, the negative state would have to stay in its own pseudo-life to eternity. Fortunately for all sentient entities, they are not, never were and never will be absolute, but only relative. For that reason, no danger exists for them to continue to eternity. So, this is all that can be said about the angels at this time.

The point though, that needs to be kept in everyone's mind, and especially in the minds of My true representatives on planet Zero, is that everyone is destined, at one time/state or another, and we are repeating this again, to become an angel in the purely positive connotation of this term or word. Any negative and ominous connotation that the word 'angel' has, will be permanently eliminated from the minds of all sentient entities. Thus, in this sense, you all are potential or, in some cases, even actual angels. Whoever was or has been or will be born as a sentient entity, no matter where and when, was or has been and will be born to become, eventually, an angel with all the privileges, rights, meanings and content of being one.

Peter: This is very encouraging. I very much like to hear things like that. Thank You very much for this elaboration and explanation. It gives me tremendous hope that no matter how terrible are the conditions we live under at the present time, it is only a transient and temporary situation. How nice to have this kind of perspective! I love it.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter. And you are welcome. Now, let us address the concept or term ‘saint.’ Following that, we’ll address the mystery and secret of the tree of life. In a general sense, what do humans understand about or ascribe to this word or how do they perceive its content and meaning? In most instances, in the typical human mind, a saint is a person who, basically, gave up all the so-called worldly pleasures and who spends most of his/her time in prayer, meditation, fasting, celibacy, sometimes in charitable works, training and teaching others and in similar activities and who, very often, goes into seclusion in the desert, or on high mountains, or in monasteries or nunneries and similar places. In other words, in this conceptualization, you do not see a true saint walking the streets of this world unless, of course, he/she becomes a well-known guru who gathers a multitude of followers around himself/herself, etc.

Is this conceptualization of being a saint real or has it any merit? Not necessarily. Although some of these individuals, who are ascribed as being saints, may be real saints, depending on their intentions and motivations for leading such a restrictive life, in the majority of cases, this is not so. How do we conceptualize this term? To be a saint in no way means to avoid anything which is offered to you in the conditions of the type of life at which you are positioned at any given time. It does not at all mean that, in order to be a saint, you must restrict yourself in anything at all, with the exception of those things which are obviously harmful to your spiritual, mental and physical health. The word ‘restrict’ or ‘restriction,’ in its true meaning, means loss of personal freedom. Any restriction at all, in its true nature, cannot be positive. The only positive connotation such a word may contain, is if you are restricting yourself from doing, thinking, feeling, behaving, acting, relating negatively and evilly. However, such a restriction, by its nature, is not a true restriction but genuine freedom, because it is freeing you from slavery to the negative state. Thus, in essence, such restriction is for making you free or for reinstatement of your true and genuine freedom.

The word ‘saint’ in our conceptualization means someone whose intentions and motivations are pure; who does everything for the right reasons, for the sake of principles themselves without anything ulterior or selfish; who has in his/her mind the utmost welfare and well-being of all and everything; who goes about his/her business, work, job, assignment, role, position, etc., no matter what they are, with true honesty, decency, modesty, humbleness, humility, objectivity and righteousness, without holding on to any negative and evil thoughts, desires or wishes and without any need for revenge, retaliation,

hostility, viciousness or extreme unabated anger whenever he/she is hurt or deceived or something evil or wrong was done to him/her; and to do all that and to be that way for My sake, for the sake of all and for his/her own sake in that succession. To be a saint, at the same time, means to be unconditionally loving, wise, kind, thankful, appreciative, understanding, tolerant, merciful, forgiving, empathetic, compassionate, with utmost patience, to recognize his/her personal limitation and the nature of his/her own uniqueness, infinite difference and individuality without ever wanting, desiring, lusting or demanding to be like someone else. Thus, to be loyal and faithful to Me, to others and to his/her own unique nature, personality and individuality. None of these traits and characteristics require from anyone to spend all their time in prayer, meditation, seclusion, avoidance of others, avoidance of pleasure, sex, good food, fun, play and anything else which is not harmful and dangerous which would be able to impede your spiritual growth, betterment and progression.

If you look carefully at our description of the meaning and content of the word 'saint,' you will notice that all its characteristics and traits are equally attributable to all positive angels or angels of light. In this sense, all angels of the positive state are saints and all angels of the negative state are everything opposite of what the word 'saint' contains and signifies. By this definition, you also can conclude that anyone who is of the above described nature is a saint likewise. And because, ultimately, everyone is destined to become an angel, by the same token, everyone is destined to become a saint.

In the current conceptualization of the term 'saint,' in addition to what was described above, to be a true saint signifies to recognize, accept, and implement everything contained in My New Revelation, considering it to be My True Word. This is a new aspect of this definition and it is being applied as of now, as these words are being written, in the lives of all sentient entities-angels-saints of the positive state. All true angels of the positive state are fully and unequivocally incorporating all principles of My New Revelation within them, and by that factor, becoming saints to an even greater degree. After all, My New Revelation emphasizes many times over all the above described traits and characteristics of being a true angel and a saint. Also, as My true representatives, if you faithfully and unconditionally apply in your everyday lives everything contained in My New Revelation, for the sake of principles themselves without any ulterior reasons or without any strings attached, you are true saints and angels.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

As you see from our definition of the word 'saint,' it fundamentally differs from the way it is defined and understood by the majority of humans. Too many restrictions and sacrifices are expected to be in the lives of all so-called saints. From our standpoint, this kind of *saint-ness*, or life in accordance with this understanding, in actuality, is propagated by the forces of the negative state. Why do they do that? In order to portray the life in the positive state as something very solemn, serious, non-pleasurable, boring, restricting, unfree, consisting of nothing but constant prayer, meditation, endless singing of hosannas to the Highest, shouting out useless praises to Me, having no fun, no joy, no laughter, no rest, no nothing, etc. After all, if you can convince people that this is the true nature of the positive state and the true nature of being an angel or a saint, in that case, who would want to be in the positive state? Or who would want to live in such an unfulfilling and boring life? Only the negative state has all the fun and interesting activities which are inexhaustible and most desirable. This is how the trap of the forces of the negative state was set. And many humans and creatures buy into this understanding of what being an angel or a saint is all about. Unfortunately, even the literal sense of the Christian Bible, as well as all other so-called holy books, supports this false notion. And because such books are considered by them to be the true Word of God, they perceive the concept of being an angel or a saint in this very much negative connotation. After all, it is God who gives them this description. I can assure you that nothing is further from the truth than this assumption. What kind of God would I be if I would restrict people in any way at all?

One of the reasons for this effort of the forces of the negative state was to implant in everyone's mind (in their domain and on planet Zero), the very wrong notion about My Nature, of Who I am and how I relate to all or what kinds of things I demand from all sentient entities in order for them to deserve to become angels and saints or to be worthy of My attention. By accepting this notion about My Nature, the negative state has a greater chance of continuing in its non-life indefinitely. This is the reason why it came up with the most outrageous notions about Me and My True Nature. One of the many reasons why My New Revelation was given and is being given to you and to all others elsewhere, is to permanently dispel this abominable and despicable falsity and to give you the right idea of who and how I am and what My True Absolute Nature is all about. Because the negative state knows only too well that acquiring the right notion and conceptualization about Me and My Nature means the end of its non-life, it does everything in its pseudo-power to falsify and distort everything related to Me and My Nature. By succeeding in its effort in this respect, it thinks that it can postpone its

ending indefinitely. And for that purpose it uses the above mentioned so-called holy books. And, of course, it is all done under My Name or in the name of God. After all, for them, I and God are two different Entities — another outrageous falsity.

You have the greatest opportunity to get rid of all incorrect and false notions about Me and My True Nature. You have at your disposal My New Revelation which gives you the right and proper ideas, not only about Me and My True Nature, but about all spiritual principles, notions, precepts and categories as well.

One such notion which needs to be put into the right perspective is the notion and meaning of the above mentioned tree of life. As you remember from Dialog 146, the tree of life signified the body of mystical and secret knowledge of life and the process of immortalization and eternalization of the relative life and all its relative sentient inventions. The access to that knowledge, represented by this tree, was purposefully closed and all its mysteries and secrets were concealed from all sentient entities so that they would not be able to make something which is not of the true life be immortal and eternal. As you also remember, there was another tree in the garden of Eden — the tree of knowledge of good and evil. It was the fruit of this tree which was eaten by Eve and Adam on the prodding of the serpent. From these facts, you can clearly see that we are not dealing here with some kind of physical plant-tree, but its symbolical and correspondential depiction. The tree in general corresponds to some kind of knowledge. In this case, the tree of knowledge of good and evil represents the idea planted in the sentient minds that they have the right and freedom of choice to reject the true reality of their creation, and My Creation in general, by considering the source of their lives as someone or something else, or no one at all, or their own source — meaning, that they are their own source of life and not I. To be able to distinguish between these two factors and to reject the false one, means to have the knowledge of what is and what is not right. To eat the fruit of that tree signifies to accept that idea as true. The consequence of this acceptance leads to the invention, activation, establishment and manifestation of the non-life of the negative state and to all consequences, outcomes and results of such activation.

In order to prevent any possibility that the non-life of the negative state and its consequent human non-life would ever be immortalized and eternalized, it was provided by My Divine Providence that access to the knowledge of how to do it was closed and made inaccessible. As mentioned in Dialog 146, this is what the true meaning of guarding the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

tree of life by cherubim, so that no one would have access to it, is all about. Another important spiritual aspect of it is the necessary closure and inaccessibility of anyone to the very Absolute, Unnamable and Incomprehensible Core of My Absolute Nature, represented by the tree of life likewise. Life as such springs forth from that Absolute Core. As you know, the possibility of such an access would cause an instantaneous and irrevocable death of anyone who would attempt to approach It for whatever reason. The very Absolute Spring and Source of Life, its very Center, which, in the state of constant and unceasing emanation of life, any life, cannot be grasped by any relative sentient mind. The attempt to do so would be so overwhelming and unbearable, that the relative sentient mind could not survive it. In order to prevent this from ever happening, that aspect of My Absolute Core, which produces and emanates Life Itself, was made impossible to access or to apprehend by anyone at all.

However, besides what was said above, there is another mystery and secret related to the concept of the tree of life. This secret has not been available until now. It relates to the very factor of the being and existence of the positive state. In what form, shape, condition, state and process is the positive state in its being and existence? It was defined as incomplete and non-full. The positive state, the way it really is and the way it resides in its true shape, form, condition, state and process within the Absolute Core of My Absolute Nature, has never been fully activated. Only some aspects of it were. What do you think would happen if someone in the present condition of the positive state were allowed to have access to the tree of life? He/she or they would inadvertently, immortalize and eternalize the incomplete and non-full condition of the positive state. If this were ever to happen (and eventually, if the closure to the tree of life were not instituted or made inaccessible, the sentient minds, by their very structure and nature, would be able to figure it out), in that case the fullness and completeness of the positive state could never come to its desirable fruition. Once you immortalize and eternalize something, by that factor, it cannot be stopped or replaced with anything else because it takes the place of everything else.

The consequence of such an impossible and hypothetical situation would be that the non-life of the negative state and its human non-life could not be eliminated either because the very notion and meaning of the state of something being incomplete and non-full, gives the impetus for the negative state to continue to eternity likewise. After all, such a state as that, was established solely because of the pseudo-being and pseudo-existence of the negative state and its human non-life in the first place.

In order to prevent this from ever happening, it was also necessary to close the access to the tree of life to all and everyone in the positive state. Otherwise, the entire venture of these two opposing manifestations of the sentient mind, would end in the tragedy of never being able to change anything about themselves, their states and conditions and about anything at all. This is the most cogent rationalization why it was absolutely necessary to close the access to the tree of life.

Another secret in this respect, which derives from the above mentioned secret, was that during the agreement or contract which was made between Me and all sentient entities, it was postulated that all lives of all sentient entities, ***under their present condition and state***, would expire at the end of this cycle of time/state/process. If their current life is not in the state of its fullness and completeness, in that case, that kind of life cannot continue forever. In order to prevent it from making it so, the access to its immortalization and eternalization was made impossible. However, what is going to happen when the current cycle is closed, the interim state is instituted and following that, the new cycle commences? Because at that time/state, not only will nothing remain from the non-life of the negative state and human non-life but also any desires, wants, lusts, wills, memories or whatever you have in this respect for anything contained in the negative state and human non-life will be no more as well, an entirely different situation will be established.

This fundamentally and qualitatively different situation is hinted upon in something which I said to the angel of the church of Ephesus, Chapter 2, verse 7 in The Revelation (Apocalypse). It is said there, '*To him/(her) who overcomes I will give to eat from the tree of life, which is in the midst of the Paradise of God.*' The one who overcomes (I purposefully added the word 'her' to the word 'him,' which was omitted in the quoted text) is the one who is totally, completely, utterly and absolutely free from any desires, wishes, wants, wills and anything else to have anything in common with the non-life of the negative state and human non-life to eternity. Under these conditions, once there is no danger whatsoever to immortalize and eternalize anything of the negative state and its human non-life, as well as of anything of the incompleteness and non-fullness of the positive state, the access to the tree of life or to the knowledge of how to immortalize and eternalize themselves and their lives in this new condition will be restored. Such restoration will be necessary so that there is no longer any need for limiting their lives to only one cycle of time/state/process. The condition of expiration of their lives at the end of this cycle, which is in the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

contract or agreement, will be abolished once they enter the last phase of the transitional period. It is during this last phase, that gradually and slowly, the process of this restoration will be completed.

Well, Peter, I think it is enough for now. You need some rest because you continue to feel physically not exactly well. As you know, it was indicated to you, following your ordeal and surgery, that things with you will never be the same as they were before that time. Get used to that idea.

Peter: I am getting there. And thank You so much for this prolific and significant revelation. Until the next time — if at all.

One Hundred and Forty Ninth Dialog

June 10, 2000

Peter: A few days ago I received four questions from Desider — our doubting gentleman from Germany. The content of his questions is of purely philosophical nature. I believe they were extensively answered many times over throughout the Big Book and these Dialogs. Or they are very easily and obviously deducible from them. I'll let You decide if they deserve the merit of Your answers. Before including these questions here, perhaps You would like to talk first about anything that You feel should be brought to our attention. After all, we are at the threshold of some important and significant changes in the spiritual realm and they may require Your further input in these matters. So the floor is Yours.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Thank you, Peter, for giving Me this opportunity to talk first. I do have a brief comment to make regarding some issues raised in the previous Dialogs. They relate to My statement that the process of creation of Creation was executed in the circles. This description does not reflect the true reality of that process. The reason we have been using such a term as 'circles,' was to give your human external mind some orientation point by which you could, at least remotely, grasp how this process was taking place. In your human linear or subjective mode of perception and understanding of anything at all, and not only of such complex and huge issues as the creation of Creation, it would be almost impossible to come up with any idea, word or concept which would bring to your external mind some understanding of what really happened and how things proceeded in this respect.

So, in this case, what are we really talking about? As you remember from Chapter 21 in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***, as well as from ***Fundamentals of Human Spirituality***, the process of creation of Creation, up to a certain point, did not take place in time and space but time and space were introduced during creation of the physical-external dimension. Because the creation of Creation did not happen in time and space, it would be misleading to talk about concrete, literal circles or using such terms as first round, second round, third round and fourth round of the creative process. Such terms and their meanings are time-space bound. We have been using these terms only for the sake of your human mind which has no way of grasping the non-time and non-space states and processes. In actuality, the entire process of the creation of Creation, before creation of the external-physical dimension, or before the introduction of time and space into that process, was executed in the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

objective mode of perception and understanding of reality. This mode clearly requires that this process takes place in a discrete, simultaneous and synchronous mode. The term 'discrete' is the one which makes problems for your human mind and which, by its meaning, approximates or induces the notion of continuum, preceding, succession and being time-space bound. In actuality, this term denotes a discontinuous process of something which happens apart or detached from anything else, being distinct in its own right. Such an understanding of this term could give your human mind a false notion that the creation of Creation proceeded in some kind of separate fashion, unrelated to anything else. While, in fact, in our conceptualization it means self-containment in its own sphere and atmosphere, or state and condition, which is substantially different from any other sphere and atmosphere, or state and condition.

However, in the true reality of this process, discrete occurrence of various phases of creation of Creation, or in the objective mode, happened simultaneously and synchronously. The closest depiction for your human mind of the reality of this process can be found in the concepts of quantum physics which deals with subatomic particles. In the relational mode and behavior of these particles it would be very difficult to conceptualize time elements during which any inter- and intra-actions take place. For that reason, within their sphere, everything happens in infinitesimally small fractions of nanoseconds. You could apply this notion, in a very limited degree, to the creation of various different dimensions of Creation. In other words, if you apply some time-space bound elements to this process, then creation of the first spiritual dimension, in its discrete sphere and atmosphere, or state and condition, was separated from the creation of the very first sentient entities, who were created before Creation shifted from its state into its process, by an infinitesimally small fraction of a nanosecond, for example. The creation of the intermediate dimension was separated from the creation of the spiritual dimension by another infinitesimally small fraction of a nanosecond.

As far as creation of the external-physical dimension, from the position of the first, second and third round of Creation, its creation was separated from them by another very small and infinitesimally smaller fraction of a nanosecond. However, because in the process of creation of the external-physical dimension, the categories of time and space were introduced as the outcome of that creation, from its position, its creation proceeded in a continuous, sequential and proceeding mode. In other words, in this mode, the process of creation of the external-physical dimension, the way it is experienced by that mode, could take place for many millions or even

billions of your years. You have to understand one thing: Whatever happens in the objective mode, which we hypothetically measured in an infinitesimally small fraction of a nanosecond, for the same thing to occur in the time-space bound continuum may happen during many millions or even billions of years. Whenever you are positioned inside the external-physical dimension, the time-space factors apply and take over your perception. Hence, the subjective mode of your perception and sense. For this mode, something which in the objective mode may equal an infinitesimally small fraction of a nanosecond, can take many billions of years. This is how infinitely different these two modes are.

So, in assessing the process of the creation of Creation, you have to take into consideration these important factors. In this sense, in the non-external non-physical dimensions of Creation, you have to subtract anything related to being time-space bound. For that reason, do not take literally our claims that the shift of Creation from its state into its process (the actual creation), happened in some kinds of concrete, tangible circles or rounds. This is the reason why we always accompanied such statements with the words ‘symbolically speaking.’ Such language, used by us, was accommodated to the limited and limiting perception and understanding of your typical human mind. Unfortunately, in the typical human language and its vocabulary, nothing exists that could even remotely approximate the true meaning of what happened or took place during that process. Don’t even try to understand it by your external human mind. However, by your intuition, you can come much closer to the proper understanding of the process of creation of Creation.

Thus, as you can discern from the above, if you look at the process of creation of My Creation from the position of the external-physical dimension or from within the imaginary dimensional boundaries of the external-physical dimension, this process was executed in certain well-planned stages. In the first stage, which can be considered as a stage of pre-creation, special sentient entities were created. By their means and through them, the second stage resulted in the creation of the spiritual dimension. By its means and through it, the third stage resulted in the creation of the intermediate dimension. From the combined energies of all the above stages, through them and by them, the fourth stage resulted in the creation of the physical-external dimension. From this position an evolutionary process of the creation of My Creation came about. You could conceive them as developmental stages of the process of creation of My Creation.

However, the picture is entirely different if you look at this process from within imaginary boundaries of any other dimension. Each such

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

hypothetical stage occurs within and with any other one in a simultaneous and synchronous manner. The word 'within' is not the exact reflection of this occurrence. You can visualize it as something like a Russian doll which has within itself another smaller doll, the smaller doll has within itself another smaller doll, etc. Each such doll is self-contained in its own boundaries without continuous attachment to the previous doll. Thus, they co-exist in a simultaneous and discrete mode in relationship to each other. This is the closest possible approximation, albeit a very crude and imprecise one, of how the process of the creation of My Creation proceeded. Because of the obvious separation of all dimensions by their own imaginary boundaries, and because they do not touch each other in a continuous mode, being within and with each other, this factor appears to the external-physical sentient mind as if there were concrete stages of the process of creation. However, this is only an appearance of reality and not the actual truth of reality, allowed to be in place in order to give the external mind some fixed orientation points in the linearity of its perception and comprehension.

And this is all that I wanted to remind you of at this time as related to this somewhat difficult topic. You may proceed now, Peter, and paraphrase Desider's questions. I would suggest that you present them one by one without including them all in one paragraph.

Peter: Very well, here it goes. His first question is as follows: *If I understand it correctly, before the Zone of Displacement was pseudo-created, only the True Creation existed and everyone was purely positive. Then, in the mind of purely positive entities, suddenly a special idea occurred which they needed to repudiate because it was false. In order to have some state to repudiate it, the Zone of Displacement was pseudo-created. How is it logically possible that in the purely positive mind of the purely positive sentient entities could such a problematical, if not even negative or evil, idea occur? Where did that false idea come from? Where did the idea to pseudo-create something different or opposite to the setup of the positive state of the true Creation come from? Logically thinking, the evil cannot occur anywhere and anywhen if all and everything, including the creative source of all and everything (the Creator) is purely positive, no matter whether absolute or relative! In that case, the evil would come from or out of nothingness!* End of the first question.

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are right, Peter, when you indicated above that all Desider's questions were answered many times over in the books of My New Revelation, as well as in several previous Dialogs. In the Big Book, the entire Chapter 6, Chapter 11, and some other chapters, deal

extensively with this issue. For example, Dialogs 88, 89, 90 and several others, answer those questions. There is a serious misunderstanding of the entire issue on the part of the inquirer. Three important things need to be brought to everyone's attention, including the inquirer's. The first one is the issue of freedom of choice. The second one is the degree of each sentient entities' relativity to the Absolute. The third one is the issue of the nature of the positive state itself, which at that point, was not activated into the state of its fullness and completeness.

If you take into consideration that creation of all sentient entities can happen only from the position of the Absolute Freedom of Choice, then, in that case, in order to establish any meaningful and reciprocal relationship between the Absolute Creator and all other relative sentient entities, you have to give them the same type of freedom of choice. Of what does the freedom of choice usually consist? It consists of various options which define the nature of any relatedness. In order for anyone to be really free, you also have to give him/her the option of not wanting to relate. So, it is not correct to assume that the idea of rejecting the Creator as the True Source of any life came out of nowhere. As an integral part of the freedom of choice, it was implanted in the very core of the sentient mind from the onset of its creation. No initial creation can happen without having such an idea because it would deprive one of not wanting to do this or that; or, in this case, not wanting to relate to Me. This idea in itself is not a negative one. It is positive. Any freedom of choice has to be founded on a positive basis without imposition, duress or forcefulness. Otherwise, it would not be true freedom. It becomes negative or evil only and only if it is chosen, once again, by one's own freedom of choice, as the only feasible and possible alternative.

In order to have clear ideas about anything at all, and not only about this particular idea, for the sake of freedom of choice, you have to also include into such ideas the definition of all consequences, outcomes and results of their acceptance, actualization and realization, as well as their rejection. The idea of rejection itself, by the very energies of its rejection, as it is rejected or thrown out, gives rise to or appearance of the Zone of Displacement to which the rejected idea is able to fall out (see, for example, Chapter 21 in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ***). This is how the Zone of Displacement appeared and is being maintained.

Because I was the One Who implanted such an idea into the minds of all sentient entities, it could appear that I am also the One Who caused the negative state with all its evils and falsities to appear. The falsity of such a conclusion stems from the fact that it is illogically assumed that the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

idea itself contains everything bad or evil. What it contains though, is the notion of freedom of choice to be or not to be, to relate or not to relate, to choose or not to choose this or that and all others' 'this' or 'that.' The notion of freedom of choice, no matter what the choice is, by logical inference, because it gives you a choice, by the factor of that choice itself, is positive in itself and by itself. Because such a notion is purely positive, and because it stems from Absolute Positiveness, I cannot be considered the Initiator or the Implementer of anything evil, false or negative.

How is it possible that, being purely positive, the sentient entities could come up with a need to activate that idea by choosing it as the only viable alternative or option? The answer to this question depends on from what position such an idea of invention and activation of the negative state came. And this leads us to the second issue of the degree and quality of relativity of which each sentient entity consists. The problem with your human conceptualization in this respect is that you indiscriminately assume that the degree and quality of relativity of each and every sentient entity is the same across the board. Thus, according to this false assumption, no difference exists between the relativity of one sentient entity and the relativity of any other sentient entity. Yet, the truth of the matter is that no one is the same in their personal and individualized relativity and its degree and quality. So are no entire societies, dimensions, or whatever you have, in their overall relativity, the same. There are infinite differences among all of them.

The quality and degree of relativity depend on the position that everyone occupies in relationship and position to Me as Someone Who is Absolute in His/Her Absolute Quality and has an Absolute Degree not measurable by any available means. It is immeasurable. The corresponding factor which determines this degree and quality is everyone's state of inwardness. The more inwardly you are positioned, the closer you are to Me, and as a consequence, the lesser degree of relativity in relationship to My Absolute State you experience or have. Thus, for example, the sentient entities who were created in the pre-creation period are in the very center of that inwardness and, by that factor, are closer to Me and, by that factor, have the least degree of relativity. They can be considered **almost** absolute. I say 'almost' because, after all, they were created. Therefore, they cannot be absolute. But they come very close to it. In their position, being that, under the available nature, form and manifestation of the positive state, they are in the purest state as related to My positiveness, they could never come up with the idea of invention and activation of anything even remotely related to the negative state. In other words, although they do have the option or alternative of rejecting

Me as the only Source of their life, it would never occur to them to put that option or alternative to the test.

However, as the creation of My Creation proceeds further, in each round (symbolically speaking), by the factor of greater remoteness from the center of inwardness or from the center of Absolute Positiveness, the sentient entities in succession acquire a greater and greater degree of relativity to the Absolute. When you arrive to the sentient entities positioned at the level of or within the external-physical dimension, by the factor of its external position, they become the most relative to the Absolute. Because the nature of the most relative is such that it acquires all knowledges and experiences by experimentation and exploration, and makes conclusions about the truth based on them, it can easily find itself in the position of having a strong need and desire to put the content of such rejected ideas to the test. It is on this level that the questions of this nature were about to enter the sentient mind. In order to test anything, you first need to ask questions so that you can determine what kind of testing is necessary to undertake in order to receive the most satisfactory answers or to come to the right conclusions. Once that question is asked, because it is asked by the sentient entities who are in a position of providing feedback to all other levels of Creation, by the factor of interconnectedness of all and everything, all sentient entities become aware that the question was asked. In no way are they the initiators of such questions. They are only their registrants.

The hypothetical remote positioning of all sentient entities at the level of the external-physical dimension from the core of the Absolute Positiveness, even if they are purely positive in their nature, makes their positiveness the most relative. From the extreme relative state of their positiveness, being that they have no experience of what it is to be Absolutely Positive, they can easily end in doubting whether they are really positive if there is nothing out there against which they can compare their positiveness with something which is not so. This is how the beginning of the invention and activation of the negative state was made possible. So, it is very clear that evil or the negative state can occur at this level as a need for comparison between the two states. Once they compare it, it gives them reassurance that they are really positive and in the positive state. Such is the nature of this type of relativity, the degree of which is the most extreme. It underlies all aspects of the external-physical dimension. This is the way it is in the structural design of Creation.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

The third issue which was instrumental in making it possible for the invention and activation of the negative state to come to the relative sentient mind on the external-physical dimension, can be found in the nature of the positive state itself. What was/is the current status of the positive state? As you clearly remember, the positive state has never yet been in the state of its fullness and completeness. In My foresight for the necessity to allow the non-life of the negative state and human non-life to come into their pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, it was not possible to activate all aspects of the positive state to such a degree that it would be manifested in its fullness and completeness. Why is it so? Think about what would happen if I were to put the true life of the positive state in the condition of its fullness and completeness. In that case, it would not be possible to give any sentient entity the option or alternative for not agreeing with anything contained in My Absolute Nature or the nature of the positive state. By not having such an option or alternative, they would all be put into a position of no freedom of choice but instead, into the necessity of being positive only. As you remember from the Big Book, to have only one option or alternative, is to have none. In that case, all conditions of freedom of choice would be violated. Something like that is impossible to envision if you take into consideration that I am the Absolute Freedom Itself. I cannot create anyone from any other position but from what I have and what I am.

Before the full activation of the fullness and completeness of the positive state is possible, it is necessary to give all sentient entities an opportunity to experience some other mode of life (non-life) in order that they would have firm ground on which they could make an eternal decision whether they would like to have something else besides the true life of the positive state. Under this condition, in order to make it possible to illustrate and demonstrate all other forms and states of life (non-life), it is impossible to activate the fullness and completeness of the positive state. Simply stated, the full exposure of all aspects of the true life of the positive state would make it utterly impossible for any other type of life to be manifested. In that case though, being locked in only one mode of life, having no other choice and comparison of how it is not to be in the positive state, the sentient mind of all those who are positioned on the level of the physical-external dimension would be tortured by eternal doubts about whether they are or are not in the true life. In that case, what kind of feedback or message would they be giving to all other dimensions and their respective levels? They would be constantly conveying a state of doubt. That kind of state in itself and by itself is negative. So, they would be plaguing the entire Creation by this kind of negativity. Under these conditions, would it be possible for anyone to

really experience the fullness and completeness of the positive state? Of course not.

So, in order to prevent anything like that from ever happening, you give all sentient entities an option to experience something else so that they can make a real choice, based on their own free will and free choice, to choose only the life of the positive state. Once they make such an ultimate choice, it is then, and only then, that the original idea of rejecting Me as the Only Source of their lives can be removed and, following that, the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state can become reality. This is what is meant by My statement in the Apocalypse, 'Behold I make everything new' and by the statement, 'It is done.' Nothing can be done until all options and alternatives given to all sentient entities at all levels of Creation, as well as now at the level of the pseudo-creation, are tried out and discarded as useless and futile commodities leading nowhere. However, you cannot discard them or get rid of them until they illustrate and demonstrate all aspects of their pseudo-life or what never to choose.

Desider's question did not take into consideration these important factors or issues. If you think logically, by the true logic of the positive state, and not by the pseudo-logic of the typical human mind, you can clearly discern that there was no other way than to proceed in this manner in order to preserve the true freedom of choice of everyone. For that reason and with this in mind, only certain limited aspects of the true life of the positive state were put into motion so as to not interfere with the freedom of choice itself. With having only such limited aspects available, in relationship to the relative sentient entities, it is difficult to speak about the absolute purity of the positive state. There was no such thing as pure and absolute purity. It was/is all relative even as applied to the present true life of everyone in the positive state.

Not having this pure purity, the way it is within Me, it is not impossible at all to come up with an idea of something which is not pure. If it is not pure, then, from that step to the next step of the conception of evil, is only a very short distance. After all, the sentient mind is not an unthinking, unwilling, unfree and unfeeling automaton. Even if it is relative, it was endowed with all kinds of properties which would make it possible for it, independently, to think, to will, to feel, to make all kinds of decisions, to be inventive, etc., for itself and by itself. In the process of utilizing these ample abilities, and having all kinds of opportunities, being inventive in all aspects of its life, it could also discover something which is not of the positive nature or from Me. This is its eternal prerogative. Not having the absolute state of positiveness in its relative

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

life, by that factor, and by the factor of the needs to be inventive, which needs and abilities were engrained in its relative sentient mind, it could very easily come up with all those existential questions which led eventually to the invention, activation, establishment and manifestation of the negative state with all its evils and falsities.

And this is all that can be answered to Desider's first question. Go ahead, Peter, and paraphrase his second question.

Peter: His second question goes something as follows: *The Author of TNR (meaning You, The Lord Jesus Christ) is claiming that He/She is the Absolute Truth, The Absolute Positiveness and The Absolute Being. On the other hand, all created or pseudo-created sentient entities are relative beings, limited in their abilities to grasp anything... . The question is: Can it logically be possible that anybody with his/her limited ability to grasp anything could recognize that the Author of TNR is the Absolute: The Absolute Truth, Unlimited Positiveness, Unlimited Wisdom, etc.? In my view, if I look at something which is greater than my limited perception can grasp, in that case I cannot recognize whether that something — beyond the horizon of my perception — has some limitations or not.* End of the second question.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Also, the answer to this question is fully deducible from everything contained in My New Revelation. Even though the structure of the human mind is such that it is the most limited and limiting as compared with anyone else's in My Creation, nevertheless, it was equipped with many tools which can give anyone, who properly and with right intention and motivation uses them, a convincing sense that The Lord Jesus Christ is Absolute in all His/Her Attributes, Traits and Characteristics. The human mind has such spiritual and mental faculties as trust, faith, confidence, beliefs and their derivatives — logic, reason, rationality, intelligence, deductive and inductive abilities, analysis and synthesis and the ability to make the right conclusions based on observation, inner and outer experiences and on many other similar factors. The greater tool of them all, which has been available to the human mind is — intuition. By the means of your intuition you can very convincingly come to the right conclusion about this matter. These are the general faculties which can be utilized for such a purpose.

Take, for example, the following facts: If you carefully analyze your individual and personal life, and in the process, if you ask questions about the source of human life in general and your own life in particular, you inevitably have to come to the conclusion that you are not the source

of your life. You are not the one who gave you that life. You are not the originator of any life. That the two people — your parents — were the ones through whom you became alive and living, does not logically make them the ultimate source and originators of your personal and individualized life because they themselves were not the originators of their own life. You can track their life all the way back through all posterities and you still cannot find anyone or anything that could be considered the source and origin of the sentient life, or any life at all. Did life come from some kind of accidental combination of particles of some kind of cosmic stew which did not contain anything alive and living? Even if you could convincingly postulate that such a stew, as postulated by your biology scientists, contains some kind of organic organism, which might be able to initiate some forms of life, from which, by the evolutionary process, higher forms of life developed all the way to the sentient life, you still would have to ask who or what put such an organism in that stew. After all, it could not come about out of nothing. From nothing can originate only nothing. This is an irrefutable logical inference.

For these reasons, based on the fact that nothing of the relative nature could be the origin and source of life or have any ability to produce life from, by, of and in itself, it must have some originating source. Because, logically speaking, this originating source cannot be relative, in that case, it must be Absolute. And not only that, but by logical inference, it must be Absolute Life in, of, by and from Itself, without any originating source. It cannot have any origin because, in that case, it would not be Absolute. And this is the Absolute Truth. Due to the fact that life as such is the most fundamental occurrence in the multiverse, and that the multiverse functions and is possible by the functions of the life of the sentient entities who are the carriers of such life in their relative to the Absolute condition; and because it is good to live and to be alive, and to be that way is nothing but positiveness, you can easily conclude that such Absolute Life is Absolute Positiveness, Goodness, Love, Wisdom, etc. And not only that, but, based on your own awareness of self-awareness of your 'I am who I am,' which makes you sentient, you can come to the irrefutable conclusion that this Absolute Origin and Source of Life, is Absolute Sentience and the only One Who is Absolutely Self-Aware of His/Her Own Absolute 'I AM WHO I AM.'

The other source of this knowledge is by a direct revelation from the Absolute Source of Life Himself/Herself. Being that everyone alive and living is relative, and because, by the factor of this relativity itself, their ability to know is limited and very often inconclusive, I, The Lord Jesus Christ, throughout their history, supplement this gap in their knowledge

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

of these important spiritual matters by providing them with an occasional revelation in this respect. Of course, for the scientific mind, which is rooted in the external or so-called 'objective' mode of deriving any knowledge from observation, gathering external experiences and data, analyzing these data and experimenting with them by the manner of numerous replications, anything which comes to them by the means of such revelation is an invalid source of knowledge. Such revelations cannot be a subject of verification by whatever scientific tools are available to the scientists. However, in reality, in the true reality of such revelations, if they are coming directly from the True Me, they always make irrefutable common sense. As you say it, Peter, whatever I reveal to you, makes perfect sense.

Tell me truthfully, is there anything out there that really makes sense in these important matters? Think about it and you will see that it is so. And this is all that can be said about Desider's second question. The rest of it depends on his, and anyone else's free will and choice to accept or to reject these facts. The choice is theirs; so are the consequences. You may proceed, Peter, and paraphrase Desider's third question.

Peter: Actually, the third question has three additional sub-questions. Here it goes: *I understand that before my incarnation on planet Zero there was an agreement between The Lord Jesus Christ and myself about everything I should or shouldn't do and how to act, think, behave, relate, etc., while I am on this planet. While making such an agreement I was in full conscious knowledge — in the state of my innermost mind — that The Lord Jesus Christ is The Absolute Truth and that therefore, it would be for my best to do what I was recommended and to what I agreed to do and to be. Then my conscious memory about this agreement was shut down and I was put in the state of my external mind, and then I incarnated... . My question is: Why should or how could I decide to do such a contradictory thing as to do anything against or in deviation from the content of that agreement, making myself to sin and to suffer, if my agreement was by my free will and free choice? And: Who is responsible for closing down my memories, and putting me in the state of my external mind, doing many foolish and evil things, and who is fully responsible for why I cannot remember anything correctly... . And one more: Is it possible by the studying of The New Revelation, if at all, for me as a typical human, during my life on planet Zero, to make or to open my memory about this so as to acknowledge whether that agreement between The Lord Jesus Christ and myself was really made and what exactly its content was?* End of the question and its sub-questions.

The Lord Jesus Christ: First of all, there is a misperception of the issue about the agreement. It is assumed that something can happen to you which was not a part of the original agreement or further additions, supplements or modifications to that agreement — if necessary and needed — to which the agreement was made likewise. So, if someone is doing something bad or evil ('sinful') or experiences some kind of suffering or hard times or hardships in general, it was all part of the agreement to go through all of that. Nothing can happen or be that would not be agreed upon for some reason or other. Otherwise, it would be in gross violation of one's freedom of choice in making such an agreement and being subjected to something which is not of the original or even subsequent choice. In this sense, no contradiction exists between any of your current behavior, or during your behavior, attitude, lifestyle, or whatever you have on planet Zero, and the original agreement and its possible additions, modifications and supplements. And the reason you agreed to everything which has been and will be happening to you during your tour of duty on planet Zero, was because important learning for all about the nature of the non-life, or what kind of life never to choose, far outweighs any misery and suffering to which you may be subjected during that time.

At the same time, in order to make it at all possible to go through any type of experiences which occur on planet Zero, and which, in most instances are of a negative nature, it was necessary to remove any memories about the articles of agreement in this respect so that the genuineness and authenticity of them would be preserved and not violated. If you were to have those memories preserved even after your incarnation on planet Zero, with all the memories of the knowledge of the true life of the positive state, albeit in its incomplete and non-full condition, you would avoid at all cost to do anything which would contradict the nature of the positive state. In that case, you would be in violation of the articles of our agreement. It is impossible to do anything evil or negative, and thus, to provide the needed lessons about what not to choose, if you have all the memories about the true life of the positive state and if you are aware that you agreed to do foolish, stupid, negative, evil or 'sinful' deeds to the utter contradiction to anything contained in the positive state. With that kind of knowledge or with those kinds of memories, you would completely fail in your mission. From this viewpoint you may conclude that the responsibility for closing down your memories about these matters in all their aspects, is fully yours. In fact, in order for you to be the way you agreed to be while living on planet Zero, you, personally, by your own free will and choice, requested that all your memories about all of this would become unavailable during your stay on this planet.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

In order not to violate this agreement, and, at the very same time, in order to give you the full opportunity to fulfill everything to which you agreed, you also agreed not to have any possibility of having those memories restored to you by any means, including by the means of My New Revelation, and also, that it was the agreement which was made between Me and you.

Knowing that, or having such memories, would be compelling you to do things consciously which should be done by your own free will and choice under the condition of your life on planet Zero. In order for human non-life to have some kind of sense, it is necessary to give you the impression that whatever you do or do not do, is by your own volition. If you were to have memories that it was by prior agreement, the factor of volition would be nullified and only the compelling factors would remain. Under such conditions, if something is done only because you have no choice in the matter (from the position of your external mind), no true learning can occur. Because humans' non-life is vested in externals and their external mind, the awareness must exist that whatever is happening to them on planet Zero, is engrained in the nature of that life itself and not because of some kind of agreement to go through all of that. Only under these conditions can true learning take place. So, because of all the above, your memories can be opened only after you leave planet Zero. And this is all that can be answered to Desider's third question. Go ahead, Peter, and paraphrase, Desider's fourth question.

Peter: Here it goes: *In response to my question mentioned in Dialog 133, The Lord Jesus Christ said that if He/She would give me, while being a typical human on planet Zero, in a step-by-step manner, some kind of experiential evidence or proof that He/She is who He/She claims to be, it would be impositional because I would have no choice but to believe it on blind faith. He/She promised me that He/She will do it after my departure from planet Zero and after my resurrection in the spiritual world. My question is: What makes the difference between the two situations?*

The Lord Jesus Christ: This question disregarded the most important factors under which human non-life was allowed to be fabricated. We mentioned these factors several times before. As you remember, human life (non-life) is not the ultimate choice in itself and by itself. Instead, it is a transient and temporary occurrence for the purpose of illustration and demonstration of what not to choose, how not to be, how not to behave, how not to act, how not to relate, how not to rationalize, how not to philosophize, how not to be logical, how not to love, how not to make

love, how not to do anything, how not to worship, how not to conceptualize the nature of the Creator, or My True Nature, and all other numerous 'how not to's.' As long as there is something to illustrate and demonstrate of this nature, no external proof or evidence can be given about who I am, because in that case, humans would be locked up in this transient and temporary situation. By that factor, they would find themselves in making an ultimate choice to be the way they are without any possibility of being saved from their mode of non-life. After all, I came and proved to them beyond a shadow of a doubt that I AM WHO I AM, and by the very factor of such evidence and proof, their non-life, therefore, is the true life and because of that, it is the life of the ultimate choice without any possibility or even need to change anything of that nature. In other words, by such evidence and proof I would cancel the illustrative and demonstrative nature of human non-life, turning it into a permanent condition without any possibility of its termination. If this were ever to happen, the negative state and its human non-life could never be eliminated and they would have to stay forever. In that case though, the fullness and completeness of the positive state could not come to its fruition likewise. Simply stated, everyone would be locked-in forever in the currently existing condition. By that factor, this cycle of time/state/process could never be closed and the new opened.

It is an entirely different story once anyone from the human non-life departs planet Zero. At the moment of their departure, the illustrative and demonstrative phase of their personal and individualized lives will end for good and forever. Following their arrival in the spiritual world, they are put into a position of making their ultimate choice — by their own free will and free choice (do not forget that during their stay on planet Zero the choice was not to have any other choice but what the temporary chosen human non-life had to offer!). Under these conditions, no impositional factors could be in place. Therefore, presenting such evidence or proof about Who I am, is no longer impositional but is being made on the basis of everyone's free will and free choice.

To repeat again: In the course of human non-life, it is by choice not to have free will and free choice. To provide external evidence and proof about Who I am under the condition of human non-life of no freedom and no choice, is to validate their no freedom and no choice condition to eternity. This is one of the major reasons why it would be detrimental to all, and not only to humans, if I were to provide such external evidence and proof. Nothing more can be said about this issue. If these facts are unable to convince anyone about the need for this situation, nothing else will — no matter who says what.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

At this point, Peter, I would recommend to finish for today so that you can take a well-deserved rest.

Peter: I'll do so. And thank You very much for Your willingness to repeat all these issues again in spite of the fact that they were explained in Your New Revelation many times before.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, taking into consideration that you are, after all, humans, it is necessary to do so. Go in peace.

One Hundred and Fiftieth Dialog

June 12, 2000

Peter: This morning I am considerably concerned and confused about the possible inconsistency, discrepancy or contradiction between something that was stated in Dialog 144 and in some recent Dialogs, as well as throughout all the books of The New Revelation. I am almost at a panic level. In that Dialog, as You are interpreting the true spiritual meaning of verse 4 of the 6th chapter of Genesis, referring to the words 'of old,' You state that the pseudo-creators were originally created before the actual creation of Creation from its state into its process took place. Yet, everything in The New Revelation indicates that the idea of invention or fabrication, activation, establishment and manifestation of the non-life of the negative state with the consequent idea of fabrication of the typical human non-life, was born at the level of the external-physical dimension. How do You reconcile this discrepancy or even contradiction? After all, if the pseudo-creators were created in the so-called pre-creation period, they could not have been positioned at the external-physical level because it had not been in its state and process yet. Of course, before clearing my fogged up mind by this disturbing issue, perhaps You would like to talk about something else.

The Lord Jesus Christ: At this point I would give preference to discuss the issue you raised, Peter. Following that, we'll talk about something else. It is important that you brought up the above mentioned possible discrepancy at this time. Let Me tell you something: It was not by coincidence that last night, as you were opening the second volume of Dialogs, the very first page you opened, was the one in Dialog 144, which was dealing with the issue of the pseudo-creators. As you know, nothing is by coincidence. This is especially true when we are dealing with the issues addressed in The New Revelation. As you know, recently, we have been strongly emphasizing the need for making all kinds of reevaluations, restatements, redefinitions, different understandings, etc., of all common and less common spiritual notions, terms, ideas, words, etc. This need is tied-in with the ending of the current phase of the presently ongoing shift and the opening of the new one. One of the reasons it was necessary to make such a seemingly discrepant or contradictory statement as mentioned above, was for the sake of all of your learning to think spiritually and not in the manner available to your external human mind.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

There are several points to this issue. From the position of your external human mind, the word that needs to be substituted for the word 'created,' is the word 'conceived.' Thus, the pseudo-creators' creation was conceived during the pre-creation state. In the process of creation of Creation, this conception was projected for a concrete manifestation at the level of the external-physical dimension. However, from the position of the actual occurrence, as it is conceptualized and perceived in the spiritual state, no difference exists between those two words/states because, at the very same state, as conception occurs, so does its creation. Here again, is the issue of the objective mode of perception and understanding of any process and the subjective one. In the objective mode everything occurs. In the subjective mode everything proceeds. Whereas the state of occurrence is simultaneous, synchronous and discrete, the process of proceeding is continuous, sequential and precedential. Do not forget, please, the creation of My Creation does not take place in time and space. As you remember from the Big Book, and also from Swedenborg's writings, time and space are introduced at the very end of the creation of the external-physical dimension. They are not the building blocks of Creation. In fact, they are its outcome at only one level. However, as Albert Einstein pointed out, even at your level, time and space, in actuality, do not exist. It is only your subjective perception that makes them objective as if they exist outside of your subjective perception and discernment.

Because of these facts, if creation does not take place in time and space, and, thus, it happens in the objective non-time and non-space mode, in that case, occurrence of something and proceeding of something happen simultaneously. For that reason, to conceive something and to create something happen simultaneously as well. It is the very nature of the Absolute that if the Absolute conceives something, by the factor of the very conception, that something is created. That it is subsequently projected into the process of proceeding gives it a sense of being placed somewhere and somewhen. In the foresight of the need to invent and activate the non-life of the negative state, and later on, of the human non-life, it was necessary to conceive the pseudo-creators in the pre-creation state so that the process of the shift of Creation from its state into its process (the actual Creation of My Creation) would take this factor into consideration. However, because the occurrence of the conception of the pseudo-creators was at the same state (the words 'at the same time' are impinging on your external conscious mind), the very state of their creation, from the position of the temporal-spatial continuum, which is unable to conceptualize that one state occurs at the very same moment as the other state (meaning, the state of conception

is the same state as the state of creation), it seemed as if they came into their own being and existence before the actual creation of the external-physical dimension was created. While, in fact, the reality of this situation is such that the pseudo-creators' actual occurrence was projected from the pre-creation state into its process at the very same time as the external-physical dimension appeared.

This is a very difficult concept to explain to your human mind. Therefore, in order to avoid further confusion, the best way to understand this issue is by substituting the term 'creation' in the case of the pseudo-creators, with the term of being conceived in the pre-creation state with a subsequent projection into their actual creation at the external-physical level. Thus, you may interpret the words that they were 'of old' as being the very first ones, and initially, the only ones who occupied the external-physical dimension of My Creation. As you remember, they were placed in the garden of Eden. One of the spiritual correspondences of the garden of Eden was the body of great knowledge and wisdom with which the pseudo-creators were endowed (of course, at that time/state they were not yet called the pseudo-creators. Instead, as everyone else of that time/state, they were called the sons of God). The other significant spiritual correspondence of the garden of Eden is being the external-physical dimension of Creation. The entire external-physical dimension is conceptualized and perceived by everyone in other dimensions as the most beautiful garden of Creation. The third significant spiritual correspondence of the garden of Eden is as being the covering skin of Creation which holds together everything of which Creation consists. In this sense, it is obvious that its positioning is the most external one. It is into this most external positioning that the pseudo-creators were projected following their conception in the pre-creative state. The word 'following,' of course, is the term ascribable to the subjective mode only. In the objective mode the words that should be used are 'as they occurred in the conception.' Can you discern the fundamental difference between these two? Also, can you see how one word, in its spiritual connotation, has multiple correspondential meanings as seen, for example, in the case of the garden of Eden?

Peter: Yes, I see it, I sense it, but to my external human mind it is really a difficult concept. However, by my intuition, I am able to fully grasp what You are talking about.

The Lord Jesus Christ: It is so, Peter. There is another point to this whole confusion which is difficult to conceptualize but which really occurred. As you remember, at the external-physical level certain

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

existential questions were about to enter the sentient mind positioned at that level. By the factor of their preceding energies (as you remember, each event, before it takes place or occurs, is preceded by its specific energies), and by the factor of the spread of those energies throughout the entire Creation, all sentient entities became aware that some kind of unusual questions would be asked. You also remember that you were told in one of the previous Dialogs that a certain group of sentient entities volunteered not only to ask those questions on behalf of all before the actual questions would enter their minds, but that they also would provide the most tangible, concrete, factual and eternally convincing answers to all of them. This group of sentient entities, later on, were named the pseudo-creators. Of who or of what kinds of sentient entities did this very special group consist? It consisted of special representatives from all levels of pre-creation and Creation so that no one at those levels would be left out by not being represented in this important experiment of asking questions and providing to them the proper and right answers, the answers which would satisfy all of them at each level of their positioning.

If you look at the factor of this particular representation, which did not exclude anyone's representation and participation (from all other dimensions and their various levels), those members of that group which were created in the pre-creation state, would be called, later on, the pseudo-creators, likewise. In this sense, they would also be called 'of old' and 'of renown.' This is one of the major reasons, besides what was outlined above, why, in Dialog 144, we were talking about the pseudo-creators being created in the pre-creation state. However, this fact in no way means that they were the ones, or anyone else on the other levels of Creation, who would come up with the idea of asking those kinds of questions. As mentioned in one of the recent Dialogs, they were only the registrants of the energies that preceded the occurrence of those questions in the sentient minds of those who were positioned at the external-physical level. As you know, it is possible to read out from such energies the content and the nature of the questions which were about to be asked. By becoming aware of how crucial and vitally important those questions were, and how even more crucial and vitally important their answers would become for the benefit of all in Creation and for the possibility of the establishment of the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state, some representatives from each level decided to participate in the entire process. This is another source of how the term 'fallen angels' came into the vocabulary of humans. If you know the truth about this matter, is it appropriate to call them 'fallen angels?' Did they really fall? Of course, even if it were appropriate to

call them 'fallen angels,' it would still mean that they can stand up. After all, the only position from which you can really fall, is if you are standing. Falling down logically means that you can stand up. If you wouldn't be standing, you wouldn't be able to fall down either. If you fell down, by the factor of going down, you are also able to come up.

However, in this important case, the words 'fallen angels,' as conceived by all, and by the facts which were revealed above and before, are not used justly. If someone is in the status of volunteering for something as important as what we have been talking about throughout the entirety of My New Revelation, that someone cannot be called fallen or be considered as a fallen angel. They should justly be called angels who, on a temporary and transient basis, volunteered to step down from their prior position and to function and provide everything possible and vital needed for the eternal activation of the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state. Now, this point of view gives you an entirely different perspective than with what you have been fed by all those so-called holy books which deal with these issues. You can see clearly how wrong they are. This view, as explained in My New Revelation, could be one of the most surprising and the most difficult to accept, even for you, My true representatives on planet Zero. If, all your conscious life on planet Zero, you were fed by very much opposing views, being brainwashed into believing and accepting something entirely different, it is not at all easy to reject everything you were told and taught, and to switch to something which goes against everything that everyone accepts, considering it to be the only truth.

So, in view of these facts, to volunteer to do and to experience something, even if that something is totally opposite to everything you had and the way you were, cannot be considered as falling from it. Instead, from our position, or from the true spiritual point of view, it is a temporary and transient regression for the sake of all and on behalf of all so that, once and for all, when this situation and condition is over, no one anywhere and anywhen would be plagued by uncertainties of their relative condition and by the questions of existential significance. Having all the necessary answers, they would have no need to spend a considerable portion of their valuable energies on anything related to their answers.

In this connotation the issue of the relativity of all sentient entities is a crucial one. This brings us back to the question asked by Desider about how it was possible for anyone to come up with such a negative idea under the condition of their pure positiveness and goodness. It sounds

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

as if everyone was perfect in their state and condition. However, this has never been the case. We are talking here about their *relative* pure and perfect positiveness and goodness. What does the word ‘relative’ mean in this connotation? Even if you experience yourself as being in a pure and perfect state of positiveness and goodness, your experience of them is still relative. It means that it does not contain all absolute possibilities, choices, changes, knowledges, and anything else. Thus, in this sense, your relative condition always lacks something. If it lacks something, it cannot be absolutely, purely and perfectly positive and good. This lack can be considered as one of many motivational, intentional and creative drives to seek out or to always search for something new and different in order to compensate for that lack. Basically, you can conceptualize it as the need for continuous spiritual progression, change, accommodation and adjustment.

So, when you are in the position of a need to search for something which you lack, in the process of your exploration of what you lack and how to go about it to rectify this lack, you may discover that you lack certain types of experiences. Suppose, for a moment, that you come across the idea (and you most definitely will in the process of your search and exploration) that tells you that you have the right and privilege to reject Me as the only source of your life. As you are exploring the content of that idea, in the process of your exploration, you discover something which tells you that you have absolutely no experience of what the consequences, results and outcomes are if such an idea is put to the test, and in the process, it becomes its own actualized and realized reality. Now you know for sure that you are lacking a very important experience in this respect, which is the outcome of your being relative. In order to circumvent this particular aspect of your relativity, by the very nature of your individual makeup, and the makeup of all sentient entities, you must do something about this lack. And logically speaking, the only thing you can do under your relative condition is to experiment with that idea by shifting from your current state and condition, or by giving up, on a temporary and transient basis, — until the experiment lasts and the lack of this particular experience is eliminated, — to something entirely new and different which, in all its aspects and manifestations, does not have anything in common with anything you previously experienced or had; but which is in full concordance with the content of the idea in question.

This is one logical answer to Desider’s question about how it was possible to come up with anything like that under the so-called purity of positiveness and goodness. As you see from the logic of the above

discourse, it was, in fact, very easy to do so. It would be very much surprising, knowing the inquisitive, inventive, creative and constantly searching structure and nature of the sentient mind in general, if that mind were not to come up with anything of that nature. Having absolute foresight that this would be the case, and knowing absolutely that no other conditions existed or were possible under which the creation of My Creation and all its sentient entities could occur or come to its most desirable fruition, it was inevitable to permit for everything related to the non-life of the negative state and human non-life to happen the way it is manifested during the current cycle of time/state/process.

But what about in the next cycle of time/state/process when the positive state will be in the state, process and condition of its completeness and fullness? Will there still be a condition with the sentient minds which would continue containing the lack of anything at all? How can you assess that situation if you are in the fullness and completeness of something; in this case, of the positive state? Does it mean that the relativity of sentient entities will be suspended? Is anything of this nature possible? Can they become absolute in their own right? Absolutely not! In order to be absolute, they would have to be uncreated and eternal from eternity. Although they all are immortal, their eternal continuation is only unidirectional — from the state/time when they were created into the forward direction to eternity, but not from eternity. So, their eternity is ‘to’ but not ‘from.’ This is what their relative condition requires. Under these conditions, what is understood by being in the fullness and completeness of the positive state? And how does it compare to the current state of non-fullness and incompleteness?

Under currently existing conditions, many restrictions, limitations, security considerations, and similar burdensome factors apply. Some knowledges, experiences, conditions, states and processes are not available at all for the same security reasons and for the sake of all sentient entities themselves — so that they would not inadvertently lock themselves in one state or condition, not being able to rescind from it to eternity. All these situations and requirements will be completely abolished in the next cycle of time/state/process. Thus, in it, unending, unhindered and unlimited possibilities would exist for eternal exploration and search in order to fill in any gaps that would exist from the lack of something by the factor of their relativity. They will still be relative; but now they would not have to waste their energies on the exploration and experience of anything related to the idea in question which gave an impetus for the non-life of the negative state and human

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

non-life to be fabricated, activated, established and manifested. They will no longer lack this type of experience. And because all experiences related to this issue will be preserved in the Universality-Of-It-All, no need will exist to repeat it again and again.

Do you remember what we answered to Boris Bella's question about this issue? Because all sentient entities will continue to be relative to eternity, although in a very much different and lesser degree, they will have the need to supplement their relativity with the continuous acquirement of new and different knowledge. Whenever they come up with some idea or question in any subject matter, before putting it to the test, they will search out the Universality-Of-It-All in order to determine whether the answer to their question has already been answered. Should any question come to anyone's mind about the possibility of any other type of life other than the true life of the fullness and completeness of the positive state, before such question spreads out to all others, the inquirer will be directed to the Universality-Of-It-All where his/her question in this respect will be fully, exhaustively answered, to his/her full and complete satisfaction. Thus, no need would exist to eternity to reactivate the non-life of the negative state and human non-life. But it is also the reason why, from time to time, because of their relativity, all former sentient entities would be in need of being reminded about what happened and how it was during the previous cycle in which the non-life of the negative state and human non-life had parallel co-existence with the true life of the positive state, albeit in its incomplete and non-full condition. **Such reminders, *if needed and necessary*, would take place only and only within the confines of the Universality-Of-It-All so that no one else would be disturbed by such reminders.** On the other hand, the newly created sentient entities, being that they will be relative likewise, by the factor of their relativity, would be prone to ask such questions as related to the possibility of any other type of life (non-life). In their own rights and needs, they will be directed to the Universality-Of-It-All as well, where they will be able to know and experience everything which happened in that mysterious and strange cycle which preceded theirs; thus, not disturbing anyone's peace of mind by their need to experience anything of that nature or to know about it for their own personal and individualized reasons.

Looking on the issue of the need to invent, fabricate, activate, establish and manifest the non-life of the negative state and its human non-life from the proper spiritual perspective, no matter how awful, terrible, abominable, despicable, atrocious, disgusting, foolish and insane they

are in all their aspects and manifestations, it becomes obvious that it was not such a horrible thing to permit for something like that to happen. The relativity of everyone's condition requires experiencing many things in order to diminish its continuous lack of such experiences and knowledges. Otherwise, it would be easy from the relativity of their condition to find themselves in the state of unceasing desperation by not being able to know and experience this or that. In order to prevent anything of this nature from happening, many things are permitted to be experienced or to be in place which to the human conscious mind does not make too much sense. And not only that, but being overwhelmed by so many negative and evil experiences which happen on their planet every second, they question why God would permit or even cause something like that to happen. In many cases, because of that, many of them deny that God could exist at all.

It is extremely difficult for the limited and limiting human mind to understand that anything of the negative and evil nature of their personal and individual experiences, as well as of the collective experiences of the entire humanity throughout its entire history (and little do they know what is and to what extent it is being experienced in this respect in other regions of the Zone of Displacement and all its Hells), has a very meaningful and vitally needed contribution to curbing of the lack embedded in the condition of their relativity. And not only that, but, for that reason, they chose to have such experiences by their own free will and free choice. Also, that the genuineness and authenticity of such experiences required from them to agree to have no memories that such was the case. Only by the means of My New Revelation, and by no other means, such important knowledge has become available to all — whether on the conscious or unconscious level, respectively. For everyone in the positive state, for many in the negative state and for you, My true representatives on planet Zero, who read these words, it is available on your conscious level. For the vast majority of humanity, and many others in the pseudo-realm of the negative state, it is available on their unconscious level.

As was indicated to you several times before, the closer we are coming to the end of this experimentation with the idea in question, which idea made it possible for the non-life of the negative state and human non-life to have their opportunity to manifest their entire nature, the more mysteries and knowledges about all these factors become available to all by the means of My New Revelation. For humans, the availability of The New Revelation and the knowledge it contains about the fact of their non-life and the non-life of the negative state in general, even if it

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

is on their unconscious level, will serve as a foundation on which the actual buried memories about all these things will be opened and made accessible to them. Having these important knowledges, will cushion the possible fatal shock from remembering all these facts. But it also will make clear to them why they chose anything at all that they went through during their individual and personal life on planet Zero or in any state and condition of the negative state's realm. As you know, many of you, even My true representatives, question the wisdom of your decision to be in your current situation and position, by asking yourself why you would agree to anything of such a putrid, horrible and despicable nature which you go through during your tour of duty on planet Zero or elsewhere. At the point of your recall, it will all make perfect sense why you agreed to something like that. And I can assure you of one thing: Even if it would be totally inconceivable for you to admit from your current position and state that you could agree to all of that, nevertheless, you will praise your wise decision and choice to experience everything that you have been and will be experiencing while in human non-life or elsewhere. And not only that, but you will be deeply and profoundly thankful to Me for allowing you to go through your personal and individual experiences.

I know very well it is difficult, if not impossible, to conceive this notion of gratitude and thankfulness for all of that, when you are in the midst of such negative experiences. However, bear in mind that if you were to consciously know that it was one of the wisest decisions you could have made, the impact of your experiences, and the learning they provide for all, would be nullified. How else can suffering be manifested, demonstrated and illustrated if not by suffering itself? If by knowing that your suffering is by your design and decision and if it is such a wise thing to go through, in that case, your suffering would turn into delight. What kind of suffering would it be? It would be something like one of Dostoyevsky's heroes proclaims, 'What a great pleasure it is to have a toothache,' for example. In that case, the meaning of suffering from a toothache would be erased. No learning occurred about suffering from this particular ache.

Why are we talking about the issue of suffering and everything mentioned above at this time? As you know, we have arrived at the moment when the closure of this phase of the ongoing shift is taking place right now during the recording of this particular Dialog. This moment requires from you to realize more so than ever before that any situation, position, condition, or whatever you are experiencing or finding yourself in, no matter how awful and miserable it is, is needed

and necessary for you to go through or to be in. The wisdom of your situation requires from you a full acceptance of your condition in all modesty, humbleness and humility without complaining and bitching (excuse Me for this expression!) about it and without moaning or being dismayed or depressed or miserable about it. You are where you are supposed to be and you experience what you are supposed to experience. Nothing different or better or worse (in some cases) would be proper and right to have or to experience for you during this time or during any time of your presence on planet Zero. By fully and unequivocally accepting your situation and position, by recognizing that it is the best thing for you to be in at every moment of your being on planet Zero or elsewhere, even if it seems to you, on your conscious level, that it is the most miserable and suffering-causing condition, you are demonstrating and illustrating for all, how and what it is like to be My true representatives and the members of My positive state. It is a sign of great maturity, wisdom and an advanced spiritual level to be able to recognize and accept these facts and to live in accordance with their meaning and content.

The non-life on planet Zero for you, My true overt and covert representatives, can be considered as a modern type of martyrdom. We have already mentioned this fact in one of the previous Dialogs. A true martyr for the right spiritual cause is one who fully accepts, without any strings attached, without any complaints, for the sake of learning for all, his/her situation and condition with the full understanding that it is the right thing to experience and that it is needed for some important spiritual reasons even if he/she has no conscious ideas or knowledge what those reasons are and why he/she is in the state and condition he/she is in at each and every moment of his/her individual and personal life. It is not an easy matter to be able to recognize and accept the fact that even the most seemingly senseless events, even the most cruel happenings and experiences, even something that, by all signs of its occurrence, etc., should not be taking place, nevertheless, it is all happening, occurring or taking place for a very good reason. And the needed impact it has on all and everything, even though it is not discernible on your conscious or any other level, far outweighs what it appears to be and how it appears to be manifested.

The present spiritual condition, as it is being in the process of unfolding, requires from all of you not only to be aware of this setup, but to be actively involved in changing your attitude and behavior regarding everything which is going on, both around you and with you, personally and individually. If until now some of you might have been questioning

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

the wisdom of certain things which you witness on planet Zero, as well as in your personal and individual lives; if many things or most things of an adverse and questionable nature do not make any sense to your human mind, then, at this time, you are strongly advised to, as soon as possible, reevaluate your attitude in this, or any other respect, and learn to look at everything from the proper spiritual perspective, recognizing and accepting the fact that if things are happening the way they are happening, they need to happen that way and no other way. Any other way, even if it would seem so positive and good from the position of your external observation, from the spiritual standpoint, in its outcomes and consequences, would not be positive and good. Remember that!

The central issue of this concluding Dialog is the awareness for the need to proceed with self-reevaluation, self-exploration, self-examination, self-assessment, self-search, self-scrutiny, self-attitude and attitude toward others in order to discover anything within you or in you which is not congruent with the principles of My New Revelation or with all the principles of Love and Wisdom, Good and Truth and Positive Works and Faith. Any incongruence with them makes it possible for the forces of the negative state to influence your life adversely. Even any minutest incongruence in any aspects of your life in this respect, steals the substantial portion of your personalized and individualized energies from the cache of the energies needed for the positive state. In that case, it is utilized by the renegades for their own evil cause. At the present time, or right now, the situation in this respect is such, that utilization of your energies for the renegades' evil cause, makes it possible to indefinitely prolong the non-life of the negative state and the human non-life in its negative and evil aspects. Please, be aware, that the presently ongoing spiritual war between the forces of the Great Alliance and the forces of the renegades, is for nothing else, but, on the positive side, to shorten the time for ending everything related to the negative state in all of its aspects and with its human non-life, and on the negative side, to prolong them for as long as possible.

In order to give you time or room for this important process of self-evaluation or reevaluation of everything related to you personally and individually and to your attitude and position which you have toward Me, My New Revelation, others and yourself; and to give you the opportunity and time for discussing these issues and the issues raised in all these Dialogs among yourselves, an interim period is being initiated or established between the phase of the ongoing shift which is being closed right now and the next phase which will be opened after

you go through this spiritually important and vital process. During this interim period many things will need to happen at all levels of My Creation and pseudo-creation. At your human external conscious level such things will not be discernible as much as on your inner spiritual level. In your human case, they will be reflected in the process of your effort to evaluate, assess and discuss everything related to you personally and individually, and to My New Revelation, and especially to everything contained in these Dialogs and how to go about, in the best possible and most effective way, eliminating from your lives any possible incongruence between your behavior, attitude and lifestyle and everything contained in My New Revelation.

One important aspect of this crucial process will be the awareness of the articles of agreement which you signed before your incarnation on planet Zero. This awareness is not in the form of conscious recall or remembering that they were signed or agreed upon, but by the factor of them being revealed and conveyed to you by the means of My New Revelation. Once you are aware of them, and once you fully and unconditionally accept that such an agreement was made by your own free will and free choice, without any duress, imposition or forcefulness on anyone's part, it will be much easier for you to accept your past, current and future situation in which you find yourself at each moment of your life on this planet, no matter how bad, negative, or good and positive that situation might be. The important part of this awareness is the awareness of the temporality and transience of your situation. You have to learn to look at any situation in which you may find yourself, no matter what kind of situation it might be, that it will pass and that in no way is it allowed to continue indefinitely.

As everything related to your human life will pass and becomes no more in the moment you leave planet Zero, being that all your experiences are an integral part of the total experiences provided by all within the current cycle of time/state/process, you will be given a great opportunity to choose something else, or to enter into a different agreement with Me which will determine your new role, position, assignment and placement related to anything which will be needed at that time/state. One of the profound secrets, which we mentioned in one of the very recent Dialogs, divulges the fact that a contract was signed between Me and all sentient entities in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence, as well as humans, that their life (and non-life in the case of the negative state and humans), the way it is lived during the current cycle, will expire permanently and irrevocably. As you remember, the burdensome conditions which are embedded in the

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

current cycle due to the active status of the non-life of the negative state and human non-life, considerably poison and taint the type of life as it is being experienced by everyone. No one would want to continue with this type of life.

Let Me tell you something very important in this respect: **As the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state has never been activated yet, so has the fullness and completeness of life itself not been available to anyone.** Here is a mystery for you: What is being defined as life at any of its levels is only a limited aspect of the full and complete real life. Under the conditions which defined and established the current cycle of time/state/process, the manifestation of the full and complete true life would not be possible. Why is it so? Do you remember the mystery of the tree of life, planted in the middle of the garden of Eden and how the access to that tree was closed and made impossible? Well, another meaning of that tree and what happened at that time/state, besides what was revealed about it in the recent Dialogs, was/is that the true life in its complete and full manifestation is not possible until the non-life of the negative state and human non-life illustrate and demonstrate all aspects of their nature, structure and dynamics. If such fullness and completeness of the true life was possible under those conditions, in that case, it would be easily read out by the forces of the negative state, and they would successfully apply it to their condition, making their non-life last to eternity and, by that factor, blocking any possibility for the activation of the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state to eternity as well. In that case though, the current burdensome cycle could not be closed and it would also have to continue to eternity.

One of the true meanings of the statement recorded in Genesis 3:22-23 refers to this situation: *Then the Lord God said, "Behold, the man has become like one of Us, to know good and evil. And now, lest he put out his hand and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live forever" — therefore the Lord God sent him out of the garden of Eden to till the ground from which he was taken.* That 'man has become like one of Us, to know good and evil,' in the present connotation of the meaning of these words, signifies that the question was asked about the possibility of the other type of life (non-life) other than the life in the positive state and that all consequences, outcomes and results of that non-life were spelled out by Me ('to know good and evil') and accepted by all those who volunteered to participate in the fabrication, activation, establishment and manifestation of the non-life. 'The man' here signifies all those who were positioned in the external-physical dimension of Creation, the

dimension which was called, as you remember, the garden of Eden. 'Lest he put out his hand' signifies the ability of them to discover, by the power of their own exploration and search ('put out his hand') the secret of the full and complete state of life ('and take also of the tree of life') and appropriate that state to their own state, process and condition and immortalize and eternalize them. 'The Lord God sent him out of the garden of Eden' signifies leaving the sphere and atmosphere of the true Creation at its external-physical level and establishing themselves in the Zone of Displacement, denoted here by the words 'to till the ground from which he was taken.' 'To till the ground' means to be in the externals and to derive everything from the externals. 'From which he was taken' signifies, in this particular connotation, the ending of that kind of life, and of the entire life which has not been in its fullness and completeness during this cycle and, following the elimination of everything related to the non-life of the negative state and human non-life, to make it possible for this new type of life to be conveyed to all so that it could be manifested in its fullness and completeness.

The words 'from which he was taken' also signify the condition of the extreme and utmost relativity into which the inhabitants of the external-physical dimension were placed. As you remember, this extreme and utmost relativity of theirs gave an impetus for all those questions to be asked and for finding the ways for their answering by the means of the non-life of the negative state and human non-life. 'The ground' here signifies this utmost and extreme relativity to which they were referred back in order to disable their ability of finding out how to immortalize and eternalize their non-life.

So, under those conditions, it was not feasible at all to grant all sentient entities the conditions of the fullness and completeness of life itself. Such conditions would be detrimental to the full and complete life. In order to prevent this from happening during the current cycle of time/state/process, it was necessary to release only so much of life and such level of the life's qualities from My Absolute Life and Its Absolute Quality which would be sufficient to maintain the life of all sentient entities but which would not give them an opportunity to prolong it ad infinitum. Based on this necessity, the agreement was signed by all of us that this type of life and non-life will expire upon the completion of manifestation of everything which is allowed to be in place during this cycle.

Another reason for release of only limited aspects of the true life from Me was in, many times mentioned before, the factor of free will and free

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

choice. Before the fullness and completeness of the true life as such, and accompanying it, the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state, could be established, it was first necessary to provide for all, various samples of life and non-life so that everyone could decide, based on their own free will and free choice, what kind of life they want to choose in which they can live to eternity, or for good and forever. This is one of the most important decisions, if not the most important one, which establishes the permanency and irrevocability of the full and complete life as such. Before you can make a decision for something which will last to eternity, you need to have an opportunity to consider, experience and sample all forms, shapes, conditions, natures, structures and dynamics of many various manifestations of life and non-life so that you could have a firm foundation on which such decisions of yours could be made. Do you really want to be in the fullness and completeness of the true life as such and, accompanying it, in the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state which, up to this point, were available in their incomplete and non-full form and condition?

As you are comparing one sample with another, you choose that one which is the most suitable, the most pleasurable, the most inspiring, the most motivating, the most creative, the most meaningful, the most fulfilling and the most satisfying, giving you the most incentives and the most sense. If the available samples of the true life and the life of the positive state are so rich, so inspiring, so marvelous, so delightful, so uplifting, so productive, so desirable and so everything else without exception and exclusion, even in their present incomplete and non-full condition, as well as in comparison with everything opposite to that which is available in the samples of the non-life and human non-life, isn't it obvious how indescribably much more they would be in all their possible aspects in the state of their fullness and completeness? And isn't it obvious that if you compare that life with the non-life of the negative state and human non-life, that you would never want to choose anything else but what the true life as such and the true life of the positive state has to offer to you?

This is how decisions are made. This is how the choices are made. The theoretical factors are not sufficient in themselves and by themselves for making such decisions and choices. They must be accompanied by the experiential, factual, actual and realistic modes which give everyone a clear practical experience, perception and foundation on which such decisions and choices can be made with an absolute certainty and decisiveness. And this is how things are!

Peter: What about the previous cycles which preceded this one? Is there any difference in them as far as the fullness and completeness of life as such and the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state is concerned in comparison with what is available during this cycle?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Well, Peter, here we go again. It all depends from what mode of perception of reality you look at them. In the objective mode, because they occur simultaneously and synchronously, the same rules apply to them as to this cycle with the exception that in their case the negative state and human state are not in an active mode but in the mode of their potentiality to become active. Their potentiality for being active would not allow the fullness and completeness to be in place likewise. If you look at it from the subjective mode of perception of reality, in which it appears as if there was the past, is the present and will be the future, in a sequential and continuous manner, because of the dependency factor of one preceding the other and one succeeding the previous one, the same rule would also apply. So, in this sense, you can see that both modes require application of the same rule as exists during this cycle of time/process.

It is extremely difficult for you to conceptualize the issue of non-time. As you see, as we are talking about these important life topics, by using your human language, we are giving you an impression that something was, something is and something will be. Under your human conditions, we cannot very well talk in any other mode but in the subjective mode. It is proper to talk in the terms of this mode because, after all, you are currently positioned within the dimension which is time-space bound. In order for you to understand anything at all, it is necessary to talk about these issues, or about anything at all, from your position and not from ours. Of course, in our position, we take both modes and their respective factors into full consideration and accommodate the conveyance of our ideas to their nature, structure and dynamics accordingly. Whereas in the subjective mode we are mostly dealing with the appearances of reality, in the objective mode we are dealing with the real reality. But to the residents of the dimension ruled by appearances, they are as real as to the residents of the dimensions ruled by the true reality.

So, how do we reconcile the fact that in the true reality no concepts or experiences of past, present and future exist? By the previously mentioned principle of folding or by a Russian doll. If you place on a flat piece of paper, the present, past and future, which seem to be far apart from each other, and then fold and refold that paper in a certain

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

manner, then suddenly, past, present and future are at the same point, being on each other, yet being distinctly separate from each other. Or if you can visualize a Russian doll and in it, the past, present and future, then you can clearly see that they are all in the same container within each other, but, nevertheless, being distinctly and visibly separate from each other, perceptibly enclosed into their own sphere. The main factor in this perception is that they are being defined as distinctly different from each other, or, in a technical term, being discrete to each other without touching each other. They are all enclosed within their own sphere and atmosphere, having their own life and their own events and happenings without any obvious relevance to any other life and its own events and happenings. Looking at the piece of paper from above, you can see, at the very same time, past, present and future. This is the objective mode of your perception. Looking at the Russian doll from the outside, you can see only one external doll. You have no idea that within that doll there are several other dolls. You would have to take it apart in order to be able to see the other dolls. This is the subjective mode of your perception. This is how you can conceptualize these two modes in your limited and limiting human terms.

So, as you see from this discourse, no matter from what position you look at any cycles of time/state/process, up to this very point, the same rule applies to all of them as far as the issue of completeness and fullness of life as such and as the true life of the positive state is concerned. You can consider all these cycles as preparatory states/stages for the decision making and choice making process as related to the issue of eternalizing and immortalizing the sentient entities' final and ultimate choices for the only one type of life — the full and complete life, and accompanying it, the full and complete true life of the positive state.

Peter: But what about the next cycle of time/state/process from the position of the two modes of perception?

The Lord Jesus Christ: You need to be reminded about two important things. One is the state of Creation and the other is the process of Creation. The next cycle is within My Absolute State but it is not in its process. Therefore, **it is**, but it is not in its process yet. It is only in its state. The state does not conceive the notion of the past, present and future. The process does. The state is of the objective mode of perception and the process is of the subjective mode. Within Me they both always are. Anytime the need arises, I shift anything needed from its state into its process. Within each individual sentient entity, because he/she is a

self-enclosed universe unto himself/herself, the state is conceptualized as its process because of the relative condition of that individualized and personalized universe. In relationship to Me such individual is always in his/her process. Within himself/herself, as seen from his/her own self-perception, he/she is in the condition of his/her own state, reflecting My Absolute State in his/her own relative state. Whenever any individual is turned into himself/herself, he/she is in his/her own state. Whenever he/she turns his/her attention outside of himself/herself, he/she is in his/her process. In the state of his/her within, no time factors are applicable. Simply stated, he/she is — period. However, in the moment he/she shifts from the state of self-absorption or his/her own state of within, to the state of without or to someone or something else, in that very moment, he/she becomes his/her own process. The originating point of everything is always the state. Its manifestation outside of that state becomes its realistic process. Whereas in the state itself no categories of time and space are possible or conceivable, the entire process itself is built on the factors of temporal-spatial categories. Otherwise, you could not relate. Any relationship, in order to be a meaningful and perceptible relationship, has to have an impression that it relates from somewhere or from someone to something or someone outside of its state. And because there is a certain flow in the process of the relationship, it takes time for registering that the relationship is being initiated.

So, what is going to happen when the state of the next cycle within Me is shifted from its state into its process, when it becomes its own reality both in the objective and subjective mode of the perception of reality? Because the quality and the content of that cycle has absolutely nothing in common with any other cycle in any mode, by its very nature, structure and dynamics, it will cancel out their actual being and existence. Simply stated, all those cycles, with all their experiences and events, and with everything they contained, will be placed into the Universality-Of-It-All for eternal preservation. Because the Universality-Of-It-All is a self-contained, discrete and self-enclosed entity, whatever it contains within itself, cannot have any impact or influence on anything or anyone outside of its sphere and atmosphere. Only upon its entrance, its content becomes available to anyone who enters it with a well-defined and well-established purpose. The memory of their prior being and existence will be removed from all sentient entities, so that such memories would not interfere with anything which will be contained in the new cycle. Such memories will likewise be in the Universality-Of-It-All. Whenever there will be a need to recall anything from the other cycles, for whatever important purpose, or from

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

your own prior personal and individual experiences, you will be allowed to enter the Universality-Of-It-All, and within its boundaries you will be able to accomplish your goals without any problems and without disturbing anyone outside of those boundaries.

Looking at the structural design of the multiverse from this perspective, it becomes obvious why it was indicated in some of the previous Dialogs, that nothing, absolutely nothing, can be transferred or transposed from any other cycles into the next one. Should anything at all be transposed to the next cycle, it would taint and poison the purity of the content of that cycle by the awareness of something related to the non-life of the negative state and human non-life. Do not forget one thing: Even if you were to transfer into the next cycle something positive and pleasant, without modification and removal from it anything related to the nature and condition under which it happened, you still would be transferring something which is characteristic of an incomplete and non-full nature. Thus, you would be conveying to the next cycle something that does not belong there and which was acquired under the condition of the parallel co-existence of the positive versus the negative state, respectively. In essence, because embedded in the nature of incompleteness and non-fullness themselves there are imprints of the elements of the negative state and human state, by the very factor of this embedding, you would be transferring to the next cycle something of the negative state. Because in that something is reflected the totality of the pseudo-nature of the negative state and human state, you would be conveying to that cycle the entirety of the negative state. As you know, the rule is that any part of the whole contains all aspects of its whole because the whole consists of its parts. From this you can see the tremendous danger of such transfer or transposition. It is like playing with fire. If you play with it long enough, at one point you get burned. You could even be entirely destroyed by it. Such are the contaminating effects of any particle of the negative state and the human state.

From everything said above, you can see the rationale why nothing can be transferred, transposed or conveyed from any previous cycles into the next one and why everything contained within their sphere and atmosphere has to be placed into the Universality-Of-It-All; and why the Universality-Of-It-All has to be closed off within its own boundaries without having any connection to anything or anyone in the new cycle. Only under these types of conditions could the fullness and completeness of life as such and, accompanying it, the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state be established.

As you see from the above, for the first time, we are making a clear distinction between the fullness and completeness of life as such and the fullness and completeness of the true life of the positive state. These two have a distinctly different character. Whereas life as such has an all-inclusive general connotation as the source of anyone or anything living and alive, and whereas it is the Absolute Condition of I AM WHO I AM — Me, the true life of the positive state is a derivative and a form of the manifestation of Life as such or of My Absolute I AM WHO I AM. The true life of the positive state is absolutely dependent on the Life as such, as it is in its Absolute Condition — in Me, while the Life as such does not depend on anyone or anything because it is Me. As you know, I am in the Absolute State and Process of the Absolute Independency.

The current spiritual situation is such that it requires from you to know this crucial distinction. And although in the past we were often talking about life as such and the true life of the positive state, we have never mentioned yet that life as such is not in its full and complete manifestation. We have only been talking specifically about the incompleteness and non-fullness of the true life of the positive state. The secret of this mystery was embedded in the fact, only recently revealed, that, by everyone's agreement, no one is living a full and complete life and that therefore, their current type of life will expire upon the closure of the current cycle of time/state/process. The reason for this situation or agreement was revealed above. However, now is the time for you to know about these mysteries and their secrets. The presently existing spiritual development is ripe for this revelation. And you, as My true representatives on planet Zero, are receiving this information, together with everyone else in the positive state and elsewhere in order to prepare humanity and everyone else positioned in the non-life of the negative state for their future salvation. By having this information available, as you read these words, they become the property of the unconscious parts of the humanity's cache of knowledge, as well as of the entirety of the negative state's cache of knowledge, which, in the opportune time, will be pulled out from that cache and conveyed to their conscious awareness, giving them the opportunity to acquire the real truth about all these matters and, based on that, to **unchoose** their type of non-life. The importance of this revelation cannot be emphasized enough. Although at first glance it seems too impractical and too theoretical and abstract, I can assure you that its real concrete and tangible impact on all will be incalculable.

Peter: How do you reconcile Your statement made in Dialog 130 with what You indicated just above? Let me quote Your statement from

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Dialog 130: *On the other hand, as you remember, the structure, nature, dynamics and manifestation of the previous and succeeding cycles, which do not contain anything related to the non-life of the negative state, human non-life and their egos, could be retained in everyone's overt memories or recall. If they enter the Universality-Of-It-All from the position of all other cycles but the current one, they do not enter the state of separation and isolation. For that reason, their memories would not have any disturbing impact on anyone. As a matter of fact, such memories would be welcomed by all because they would enhance their individual lives — in a purely positive connotation, not containing anything related to the negative state and human non-life, — by the process of sharing such memories with them. Isn't this statement in contradiction to the above statement related to this issue?*

The Lord Jesus Christ: At first glance, it would seem that way. However, in the true reality of this setup, the way you have to look at it, is from a typical standpoint of metaphysical cosmology. As you noticed in the statement of Dialog 130, it is obvious that the previous cycles did not contain anything from the non-life of the negative state and human non-life. They were not in a state of separation and isolation. Within those cycles, such states were only in a condition of potentiality but no actuality. Because of that they were in the state of integration and unification. As you remember from metaphysical cosmology, in order to invent, fabricate, activate, establish and manifest anything at all contained in the nature, structure, dynamics and process of the negative state and its human non-life, it was necessary to abolish (temporarily or for the time being) the states of integration and unification and, instead, to establish the states of isolation and separation. Because the states of integration and unification are of purely positive nature, their notion as such, could be utilized, *if needed and necessary*, during the process of assessment of structural types of integration and unification that would be considered for building the next cycle. However, as is obvious from the above statement in this Dialog (150), in order to do that, you would have to modify and remove from those cycles anything related to the nature and condition under which they functioned in their own brand of unification and integration. In other words, you would have to subtract from them anything related to the issue of potentiality for the negative state to be invented and fabricated, as well as the notion of being in non-fullness and incompleteness of life as such and in the brand of life of the positive state under which they operated and functioned.

During the recording of Dialog 130, the spiritual situation was such that it contained the need to assess anything at all which was an

integral component of the previous cycles. In the process of that assessment something was discovered that related to the issue of integration and unification. It presented itself to the sentient minds for their consideration and possible utilization during the development of the building plans for the next cycle of time (when the time comes to do that). From the position of that assessment, at that time/state, it seemed like a good idea to take those notions and include them in the process of the future development of those plans. However, as further spiritual development and progression have been taking place, and as some secrets and mysteries have been in the process of being revealed (as contained in this Dialog, for example), in the process of their assessment, it became obvious that a much better deal in this respect would be not to utilize anything from any previous cycles because of the notion of incompleteness and non-fullness under which they operated and functioned.

To make a just and proper choice in this matter, it was necessary to give everyone a notion that certain things, related to the states of integration and unification, with the subtraction of anything related to the conditions under which their life was established (non-fullness and incompleteness), could be considered in the process of the future planning for the building of the next cycle. Once everyone considered this possibility, and once more Dialogs were recorded, it became obvious to all that there would be no need to retain anything from those cycles in order to utilize them for anything related to the next cycle.

As you see from the above example, it gives you a very good idea how changes can occur and how the principles of spiritual progression are being manifested and utilized; and how everyone can and may change their mind about anything at all. This is one of the important reasons, why such seeming contradictions or discrepancies are allowed to take place even on the platform of these Dialogs. It is, among many other things, for a clear illustration and demonstration of this important spiritual fact. This also helps to avoid falling into a dogmatic, rigid and stagnant state as related to the principles of spiritual progression or the spiritual issues in general.

Moreover, and most importantly, the statement in Dialog 130 talks about acquiring those memories, related to the previous cycles, from the Universality-Of-It-All and not retaining them directly in their memories which they will have during the next cycle. So, in this sense, no contradiction exists between what was conveyed to you in Dialog 130 and in this Dialog.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

Peter: What a meaningful and prolific revelation! I can't thank You enough for everything conveyed to us in this, as well as in all other Dialogs from the very first one to the present one. Is there anything else You would like to add or to convey to us on the platform of this Dialog?

The Lord Jesus Christ: Yes, Peter, there is. And you are welcome. It is My pleasure to tell My children about all these things. Now, Peter, with this 150th Dialog we are going to close the second volume of our dialoging. As mentioned previously, the closure of the current phase of the ongoing shift is connected with the completion of the second volume of Dialogs. I can reveal it to you, that today, this closure has taken place. As mentioned above, at this junction of closure, and before the opening of the next phase, an interim period is being instituted.

During this interim period, it will be necessary to undertake certain things; to allow certain events to be manifested; to take certain steps; to make certain decisions; to make certain important choices; to undergo certain assessments and evaluations; to deeply study everything contained in these Dialogs and in My New Revelation in general; to have certain important discussions among yourselves; to have certain ventures in some of your personal and individual lives; and to do many other important things which will become apparent as you proceed in your lives during this interim period.

The next phase of this shift cannot be opened until all these things take place. As mentioned before, externally, you may not be able to experience any apparent changes in your human life. Some of you may and some of you may not. Or some of you will not feel too much different and some of you will feel tremendous difference. Whatever the case may be, remember, as indicated to you above, it is the way it is supposed to be in each and every case of your individualized and personalized lives. Nothing better or different would be proper for you to experience or to go through.

To make it much easier for you to go through all of this, please, accept this fact in all your modesty, humbleness and humility. Otherwise, your life could be complicated beyond any measure. What is needed from you now is the full acceptance of these facts without complaining about your situation, no matter what it is — be it spiritual, mental, physical, financial, relational, marital, social, professional, or anything else.

You may share your situation with anyone you wish and with anyone who is willing to listen to your problems, but without imposing them on anyone and without being bitter, resentful and disappointed about

them. Such sharing would be for the purpose of illustration and demonstration of your full unconditional acceptance of your situation and its problems, showing to all that you have full trust, faith and confidence in My Divine Providence and that such things are permitted for a very good reason. And in your cases, they are permitted not as a means for some kind of punishment or retaliation for something you have done wrong or wrongly chosen, but simply because spiritual needs require from you to go through all of that and that you agreed to all of that even though you have no apparent or conscious memories that such was the case. If you do that, you will really reflect the fact of being My true representatives on planet Zero.

Will our dialogings continue with their third volume? It will all depend on what is going to happen during this interim period and what the needs will be of the new phase of the shift. They may or may not. It also depends on your personal situation and condition, Peter, as well as on your physical health, and the choices which will be made from our side of the fence. It is a good idea to prepare yourself for both possibilities. During the interim period, you will need to embark on certain ventures, to encounter certain experiences, to set up certain important spiritual conditions wherever you will find yourself during this time — be it in the physical or spiritual realms. What they will be, cannot be revealed in advance. They will become obvious as you find yourself in whatever situation and condition you will be in at each moment of time.

In the meantime, in order to gather your spiritual, mental and physical strength, which has been considerably depleted by our recent intense dialoging (all your available energies went into that), we will pause with offering any further Dialogs. Not only you, but also all their readers need to take a break so that they can study and consider their content and meaning in depth. For the next two-three months, as the interim period lasts, either no dialogs will be coming your way, or if they will be coming somewhere along the line of this period, they will not become available to anyone until the Fall.

If following the interim period no Dialogs will be forthcoming, or if they will not take place during the interim period, it will signify an important shift in the fabric of Creation and pseudo-creation, which will require from all of you to take an entirely different position. In your case, Peter, it will mean that either you will be recalled from planet Zero, or some other spiritually important work will be assigned to you. Whatever the case will be, it is the way it is supposed to be. As mentioned before, nothing different or better will work.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ — Second Volume

If there will be a need to record some more Dialogs, by opening the third volume of our Dialogs, I will let you know, or you will know by the means of your intuition that it is time to proceed with that work. In the meantime, rest, take it easy, enjoy your life, be of good cheer and prepare yourself to undertake your upcoming ventures — whatever they may be. I am suspending our dialoging. Go now in peace.

Peter: Thank You very much for this profound Dialog. Although I fully realize the need for this important break, nevertheless, it somewhat saddens me to know that no more dialoging will be taking place — at least for some time, if at all.

Postscriptum To The Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ

July 11, 2001

The Lord Jesus Christ: Although, Peter, you are in an extremely debilitating and the most grave physical condition, and from the typical human medical standpoint you are not able to do anything except lie in bed, with intermittent pain, constant shortness of breath and suffering in general, nevertheless, I would like to ask, in all modesty, humbleness and humility, to convey — of course, only if you are willing and able to do so — the following remarks to all My true representatives or readers and practitioners of My New Revelation. You and they can consider these remarks as a closure to ***Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ*** — both their volumes. Are you willing to proceed even though it is extremely difficult for you to do so?

Peter: Yes, I am willing and I will do my best, even though it will be slow going.

The Lord Jesus Christ: I am grateful for your willingness to be willing to do so. And it is okay to go slow even if it would take several days. Now, let us begin with some explanation about the need for you to be in the process of dying or, to be more precise, in the process of your physical body dying. As you know, you not only have cancer in your remaining lung but your cancer is unique and extremely rare. It is a very awful one, not yielding to any available medical treatment or to any other forms of treatments. As one of your physicians pointed out to you, it is a very nasty cancer and none of the physicians who have been treating you (four altogether) have ever had any experience with it and have never seen one like that during their entire practice. By no means is this a coincidence.

There are many reasons why you are in the state that you have been since November of 1999. Most of these reasons cannot be revealed until you come back to your home in the spiritual world. Only a few reasons can be revealed at this time. One of these reasons was previously mentioned on several occasions during the recording of our Dialogs. Let us reiterate this reason: Your unusual condition, which gives you enormous suffering and misery, is for the purpose of illustration and demonstration to the negative state that no matter in what condition you are, no matter how much pain, suffering and misery the negative state imposes on you, no matter what, in any way at all, you will never give up your devotion to Me, to My cause and to the positive state in general. You

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ

will always be My faithful and loyal servant. One of the main reasons why the negative state is after you so much, causing you this immense suffering, pain and misery, is to force you to denounce Me and My New Revelation and to give up, by proclaiming that, because of that, you will no longer consider My Revelation and Me as true and genuine, containing My Absolute Word. The representatives of the negative state would like nothing more than to accomplish their goal in regard to you. If you were to denounce Me and My New Revelation, they would consider it as one of the greatest victories they have ever had. Can you imagine how furious and disappointed they are, seeing that they totally failed in their effort in this respect?

The other reason for your ordeal has a purely spiritual connotation. It has something to do with what was indicated to you in one of the later Dialogs (in the second volume) regarding martyrdom. As you know, you are the transmitter of My New Revelation. As such, you fall under the category of all those who, during the history of humankind, were in the position of transmitting and recording everything contained in the Christian Bible and any other so-called holy books. You also fall under the category of all those who were the first ones to carry My Word and to practice It in their lives and who, because of that, were tortured, killed and eaten by lions.

As you are aware, when I was on planet Zero, I lamented about the fact that all My messengers, called, at that time, the prophets, whom I sent to your planet, were killed or stoned to death. None of them escaped that destiny. So were My disciples killed or crucified with the exception of the Apostle John who died in banishment on the island of Pathmos, and Swedenborg who died of natural causes. Now, many times you asked yourself why I would permit that all of these servants of Mine would have to die in such a gruesome way and why I would not protect them from their awful predicament. And this issue relates to you, Peter, as well.

Well, let Me tell you something: Inherent in being someone who has this assignment from Me within the non-life of the negative state and human non-life, being the transmitter and recorder of My Word, in whatever form and condition, is also in agreement to undergo this mode of physical death of their body. The main reason for this agreement is in the fact of illustration and demonstration to all in being and existence and pseudo-being and pseudo-existence that, first of all, life is not the property of the body, into which humans put so much hope and effort, but it is the property of the indestructible spirit and its soul; and secondly, that the

negative state and all its minions and representatives have absolutely no control whatsoever over the true and genuine life rooted in the spirit and soul of any sentient entity. Because the human body is their invention, it is only that body that they can influence and cause it any condition they wish. By the original mutual agreement between Me and them, the activators and implementers of the negative state were given the control over something that was not created by Me but was fabricated by them — a typical human body. And because My messengers or prophets were in their roles, or in your case, Peter, by being the transmitter of My New Revelation, they were and you are the most intense target of the negative state's minions to the point that they, in their fury and viciousness, are able to kill your body in anyway they can. They are not concerned that much with other humans, who are not in this category, because these humans do not represent such a big danger as you, Peter, and all others who had been during the history of humankind in a similar role as you are.

Other humans who have terminal illnesses are not in the same category because their condition is caused by some other typical human factors (such as, for example, retribution for false spirituality or some other spiritual and mental factors or improper and unhealthy lifestyles that they had been leading).

The third reason for their and your, Peter, condition is in something related to the mystical and secret factors which have something to do in taking upon yourselves the cross on behalf of many. This is a reflection of My bearing the cross of iniquity and the so-called sins of the entirety of the negative state and humanity. The only way to deal with this situation was to die for it and, subsequently, to be resurrected from death. Simply stated, there is no other way for the outcome of bearing such a cross. And because we are dealing here with the so-called sins or iniquities, and because they are the life (pseudo-life) of the negative state, and also because the methods of the negative state regarding all My messengers or prophets or transmitters of My Word is only feasible by torture in the process of their and your, Peter, physical dying, it is very much obvious why you all have to go the way you are going in your own ways. Of course, at the present time, the methods and tactics of the negative state are different than they were in the ancient times or in My time, while I was on planet Zero, and shortly after My physical departure. Presently, the negative state is using against you, Peter, something which is more seemingly humane and acceptable and which is manifested in the form of a terminal illness that has an unusual form and course.

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ

An integral part of this cross that you agreed to bear is something which is contained in some of the messages that you received from some of My true representatives — the readers and practitioners of My New Revelation transmitted by you, Peter. They expressed their thankfulness and gratitude to you that you agreed to go through your ordeal also on their behalf so that they are spared such an ordeal. There is a grain of truth in this assumption. You are very much an example to them and you agreed to take upon yourself the burden of the problems that they all have. This is not in the sense that you are taking away their problems by taking over what everyone has to go through in their own individualized, personalized and infinitely unique and different manner and way, but in the sense that you pave the way for coping with their problems and for being able to bear their own cross in a much easier and more bearable way. This is one of the many aspects of your destiny, Peter, on this planet.

And now let us close this topic and deal with something else. But before going into that, you have to take a break, Peter.

Peter: Very well, I'll do so.

The Lord Jesus Christ: Let us continue. If you carefully analyze the way My New Revelation is structured and if you compare it with all other past or Old Revelations, you will notice striking differences. Not only structurally are these differences discernible but also by their content. Not one of the past or Old Revelations contained even remotely anything which has been revealed in My New Revelation. During the entire history of humankind, nothing was available at all which is contained in My New Revelation. This is not by coincidence. Nothing could be revealed in this respect until My First Coming on planet Zero happened and, especially, until My New Nature was acquired. Basically, you can say that the revelation of all ideas of My New Revelation was/is contingent on My New Nature. A somewhat different situation exists with the revelation which was granted through Swedenborg. You can consider some of the ideas which are contained in Swedenborg's books related to the spiritual issues as being revolutionary (although some ideas of his so-called scientific books which were written prior to the spiritual ones, could also be considered revolutionary). Two most important and revolutionary ideas contained in Swedenborg's writings could be derived from them. The first one, and the most important and revolutionary one, which refuted the Christian abomination of the trinity, was the proclamation that there is only one God and that God is Me — The Lord Jesus Christ. This proclamation was something that

went against all traditional teachings of all Christian dogmas and doctrines. Nothing like that was available or proclaimed before the revelation granted through Swedenborg.

The second most important and revolutionary idea was the proclamation by Swedenborg that the literal sense of the Christian Bible (and we can easily add that that it is true of all the so-called holy books of all other religions) contains only seeming truth but not the real truth. In other words, in our modern terminology we can say that the literal sense of the Christian Bible, and all other so-called holy books, contains no sense at all. Not only do they not contain any sense but they are misleading and contradictory. However, here comes the serious problem with Swedenborg which is contradictory to this revolutionary proclamation. Although he clearly stated that the literal sense of the Bible does not contain any real truths, at the very same time, he declared that all doctrines and dogmas of the Church must derive from its literal sense. Well, what kind of logic is that? If, in our terminology, the literal sense has no sense at all, then, in that case, logically speaking, all doctrines and dogmas of any churches on your planet will have no sense either. And this is really the case. This is the reason why it was proclaimed in ***The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ*** that all religious systems on your planet contain nothing but distortions and falsifications about anything and not only about My Absolute Nature.

The ridiculousness of this no sense situation can be seen in dogmas of some Orthodox churches in Russia and in some Catholic churches in Europe that foolishly proclaim that God can inspire you and convey to you anything at all only if you say mass in the ancient Slavic language or Latin language (the Catholic church). Am I incapable of speaking to people in their own languages and their respective dialects, whatever they might be? After all, even these foolish churches and their practices admit that I am Absolute. If I am really Absolute — which I truly Am — in that case, how come that I am incapable of talking to you at your own level, in your own language or its respective dialects? Is Absolute not all-encompassing? By such foolish practices, these churches, with their insane dogmas and doctrines, degrade Me to the level of a relative being. How limiting and limited they make Me!

Furthermore, why is it that Swedenborg was a well-known scientist of his time and that in scientific books and explorations he used what we call intuitive discernment, logic, reason, rationality, intellect, intelligence and all their derivatives and faculties while at the same time in his spiritual books he did not? Instead, he limited himself in explanations of

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ

the Biblical proclamations by the quotes of the numerous verses scattered throughout the Bible. Take, for example, his major works such as **Arcana Coelestia** (Heavenly Secrets), **Apocalypse Explained**, **Apocalypse Revealed** and **The True Christian Religion**. How are they structured in their content? Or, to be more precise, what kind of corroboration, verification or proof is he using to justify his statements or proclamations? He takes one biblical verse, explains one of its inner spiritual sense and the spiritual correspondences it contains and then he goes ahead and uses numerous other biblical verses, *in their literal sense*, to prove his point. What kind of justification, confirmation or verification is that? In our modern terms, such a method is utterly circular because when he tries to explain some of those other verses which he used for that purpose, he, once again, quotes the original verse which he was explaining on a prior occasion. And it goes like that throughout all the above mentioned books.

Why is it that Swedenborg was not allowed to use the same methodology in his spiritual books as he was using in his scientific ones? The reason for this lies in the nature and dynamics of his time. At that time, the Christian Bible was considered to be an absolute authority, irrefutable, unchangeable, non-modifiable and indisputable eternal Word of God which by no means could be challenged or doubted as far as its content and claims were concerned. If you are going against everything that Christian churches were teaching and proclaiming in their foolish, no sense doctrines and dogmas, as Swedenborg did, the only way you can get your point across or convince anyone about your claims was by using the same Bible and its statements and proclamations which they cherished and utilized exclusively so much for all their life's purposes. Otherwise, if he were to use the same methodology as was applied in his scientific books, the negative state would do to him the same as they are doing to you, Peter. Or he would simply be assassinated.

However, at the end of his life on this planet, in his last book **The True Christian Religion** he describes a vision which he had in which he saw a beautiful structure on the gate of which was written in Latin (Swedenborg wrote all his books in Latin) ***Nunc licet*** which means "Now it is permitted." Permitted what? It was permitted to enter the mysteries and mystics of spiritual issues (or in his term the mysteries of faith) by intuitive discernment, logic, reason, rationality, intellect, intelligence and all their numerous derivatives and faculties. Of course, Swedenborg was not using these terms, instead, he used the word "understanding." But to enter something with understanding and not with blind faith, means to utilize one's intellect and all its properties because it is the

Postscriptum

property of intellect, logic, reason and rationality to have any type of understanding. This is the reason why we are paraphrasing Swedenborg's statement or the content of his vision. But Swedenborg was never allowed to use anything of this nature in any of his spiritual writings. It was not his role or assignment. Instead, at the very end of his life, he foresaw that sometime in the future, a man will come who will transmit My New Revelation and who will utilize nothing else in its content and expression of its ideas, precepts and everything else, but only and only intuitive discernment, logic, reason, rationality, intellect, intelligence and all their numerous derivatives and faculties and which Revelation will derive from some important revolutionary ideas of Swedenborg — such as, for example, the two mentioned above.

Let me tell you, Peter, that that man is you, and it was your role and assignment from Me to establish this new methodology in expressing spiritual ideas or to enter the mysteries and mystics of theirs for these modern times and states. And you have been doing an excellent job in this respect. And, for that reason, I and everyone else in the multiverse are profoundly thankful and grateful to you for utilizing this new methodology (new for expressing the spiritual ideas) with the utmost precision and irrefutable convincing. You have no conscious idea what it means to all of us — as well as to all My true representatives on planet Zero who read and practice My New Revelation.

As you know, Peter, before your time or before My New Revelation was made available to all, and even at the present time for those who are not of My New Revelation yet, whenever they were describing My alleged appearance to them and the manner I was supposedly talking to them was a peculiar one. The only way I was talking to them, and this includes Swedenborg and all other sentient entities, was by the means of biblical verses. Simply stated, I would quote Myself or say something solely by some of the verses from the Christian Bible. As if I was not Absolute and all-encompassing! How they limited Me in My ability to talk to My people in any way I wished! However, before your time, Peter, because of the above mentioned attitude about the Bible, this was the only way they would accept anything that I was to say to them. But My New Revelation entirely refutes this mode of communication. Instead, it is expressed in the ideas of everyone's language as one man or woman talking to another man or woman. Nothing like this has ever been before!

So, because of this placement of My New Revelation and what it contains and means, it would be unwise to force My representatives or to suggest to them that they must read the Bible. Unless they choose to do so by

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ

their own free will and choice, for some of their own reasons, it is no longer necessary to do so. To repeat what was said about it in The Big Book, My New Revelation replaced the literal sense of the Bible which does not have any sense. For the present and future time, the only true sense you can find is only and only in My New Revelation as transmitted through Peter. Martina Kamradova of the Czech Republic put it nicely in her statement which she wrote upon your request, Peter, which goes as follows (we are translating this from the Czech), “*Everything which is needed for us to know from the content of the Bible AT THESE TIMES, is fully contained in the quotes from the Bible, which are quoted in the books of **The New Revelation of The Lord Jesus Christ** and which also explains appropriately their meaning.*” And this is all that needs to be said about this issue.

And now we are going to talk about something very important, Peter. But before we do that, you need to take a longer break.

Peter: Thank You very much for the above revelation and for giving me a respite before continuing to transmit. I’ll rest now because I am exhausted.

The Lord Jesus Christ: We are back for making our concluding remarks and for closure to our Dialogs and for the entirety of My New Revelation.

Therefore, let us proceed: As you know, or better to say it, as you do not know, there have been several epochs in the history of humankind as well as in the history of the entire multiverse and the Zone of Displacement — within and during this particular cycle of time/state/process. We are not going to go into describing the nature, structure, content and dynamics of these various epochs. Suffice it to say, each such epoch contained within itself numerous most significant and most important shifts. Each shift contained within itself numerous most significant and most important steps and milestones. Each epoch and its respective shifts, steps and milestones were ruled by a very specific spiritual idea, released from My Absolute Nature, which idea determined their overall climate and nature in the course of their running. Usually, each epoch lasted several centuries — in your conceptualization of time. The spiritual idea which ruled any such epoch determined the degree of needed spiritual progression for the positive state and the multiverse in general and pseudo-spiritual regression for the Zone of Displacement, its worlds and planet Zero.

Postscriptum

On planet Zero, due to the presence of My people, both factors were present. In the lives of My representatives the principles of spiritual progression were in place; whereas in the lives of the agents of the negative state the principles of spiritual regression were in force. On the other hand, with typical humans, the situation was somewhat different. Those humans who showed in their lives, function and behavior predominantly positive features were ruled, to some extent, by the principles of spiritual progression; whereas those who exhibited predominantly negative characteristics in their lives, attitudes and behaviors, were ruled by the principles of spiritual regression. And this is how you could characterize the nature of each epoch.

How could we describe or characterize the nature, structure and dynamics of the epoch which is currently in place and in which you have been living? In the process of its unfolding it also contained numerous most significant and most important shifts. Within these shifts there have been many most significant and most important steps and milestones. They all determined how things and events have been going to be manifested or how they would be exposing their own nature, structure and dynamics. In a very broad and general sense, from a purely spiritual standpoint (and this is the only point that counts in our case), your epoch has been ruled predominantly by the spiritual ideas as reflected in the inner spiritual sense of the Christian Bible and the other so-called holy books of other religions on your planet. In the positive state and in the entire multiverse in general, the corresponding factors to the inner spiritual sense of these books have been effectively implemented, which gave/give everyone there a foundation for their own individualized, personalized and infinitely different spiritual progression.

In the Zone of Displacement and all its pseudo-worlds this epoch was predominantly ruled by distortions and falsifications of everything contained in those correspondences as contained in the mentioned spiritual books. These distortions and falsifications, with their subsequent evils and falsities, determined the degree of spiritual regression that that Zone and its worlds have been experiencing.

Once again, in human life the situation was somewhat different in that, the majority of humanity based on and derived their spirituality (pseudo-spirituality) solely from the literal sense of the mentioned books. Because the literal sense has never been making any sense but is full of no sense (or non-sense) and because until Swedenborg's time nothing more had been available in this respect, their spiritual development was determined solely by the inner dispositions and intentions with which

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ

they approached/approach the spiritual issues and their various ideas. The more positive and good dispositions and intentions, the more these humans have been on the side of proper spiritual progression, thus, being more in alignment with the rest of the multiverse. On the other hand, the more negative their intentions and dispositions have been, the more alignment with those factors which have had characteristics of the Zone of Displacement and its numerous worlds.

As you are aware, toward the end of this epoch, something entirely new came into being and existence. First of all, I acquired My New Nature, and, secondly, I granted, through Peter, My New Revelation, ideas of which stem solely from My New Nature. My New Nature and My New Revelation herald the inevitable closure of the current epoch and the opening of a new one within this cycle of time/state/process. This is not just a shift or a step or a milestone, but this is an opening of an entirely new qualitatively different epoch which will have within itself its own numerous most important and most significant shifts within which there will be many most important and most significant steps and milestones. Altogether, their nature, structure and dynamics will be determined by something entirely different than the case has been in the previous epochs within the current cycle of time/state/process.

Let Me make a very important and significant proclamation: **In the moment Peter will write the final word in this *Postscriptum*, in the very second the final dot will be in place, the current epoch will be closed for good and forever and a very brief transitional period will be instituted before the full opening of the new epoch.**

What will be the ruling spiritual principle of this new epoch? The full nature, structure and dynamics of the new epoch cannot be revealed in advance for security reasons (after all, if they were to be known, they would immediately become the property of the renegades and their minions. In that case, they would devise such an atrocious and abominable means that they could prevent the opening of this new epoch indefinitely or for a very long period of time). However, we can say one thing for sure without any danger for such an interference happening. ***The new epoch will be ruled solely and solely and only and only by all spiritual principles contained in My New Revelation as transmitted through Peter.*** This most significant and most important statement applies to the entirety of the positive state, to the entire multiverse and to My true overt and covert representatives on planet Zero. The Zone of Displacement and all its worlds, as well as the rest of

Postscriptum

humanity on planet Zero, will be ruled by the pseudo-spiritual principles as they will be propagated by the numerous pseudo-new revelations which will be springing about in large numbers, left and right, so-to-speak.

As long as My New Revelation has been in the process of its transmission and recording by Peter, the current epoch could not be closed and the new one could not be opened likewise. The reason for this is in the fact that My New Revelation has not been in its fullness and completeness. Because it was not in this state and condition, not much could have been done about this situation. However, ***let it be know to you now, whoever reads and ponders these words, that with the last word and dot of this Postscriptum, the transmission and recording of My New Revelation will be completed because at that point in time (your time as well as in everyone's subjective perception of reality), My New Revelation will be in the state and process of its fullness and completeness and that it will no longer be necessary to transmit and record anything related to My New Revelation for the new epoch as well as for the current cycle of time/state/process.***

You can be assured that the ending of the new epoch, which will begin its course soon, and the ending of the current cycle of time/state/process will happen at the same time/state. These two events will, most certainly, coincide. At that time, and only at that time, another New Revelation will be given by Me which will contain new spiritual principles, released from My Absolute **I AM WHO I AM ABSOLUTELY**, and which will rule the next cycle of time/state/process and its first epoch.

So, in the view of these facts, when will the new epoch begin? Its beginning will happen at the very same time, when the outcome of Peter's ordeal will be manifested, actualized and realized. Whatever the outcome of his predicament and ordeal will be, in that very moment the new epoch will begin. Even if, for some reason or other, the outcome is not what everyone expects, nevertheless, no matter what it is, it will, most certainly, herald the opening of this most significant and most important epoch. So, wait and see. And it will not be for a long time you'll have to wait.

In order for you to fulfill the purpose and meaning of your lives — of all My true representatives who read and practice with delight and pleasure My New Revelation in all its sources for the sake of principle — and thus, in order to impact fully the outcome of the new epoch and all its

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ

shifts, steps and milestones, it is recommended that, by your own free will and choice, you constantly read, ponder and meditate on My New Revelation for the rest of your lives on planet Zero. In the process of doing so, something always new and different will be triggered within you that not only will give you a tremendous boost to continue in bearing your daily cross patiently and enduringly, but you will learn something new and most significant for yourself which will positively influence your lives and which will make your lives on planet Zero more bearable and more joyous. At the same time, it will contribute to the final elimination of everything related to the negative state and its human non-life (in its solely negative aspects).

As you are well aware, My New Revelation, in the positive state and its multiverse, appears as one tremendously beautiful Idea, indescribable in its absolute beauty, which is in a constant state, process and dynamic of regeneration, renewal and newness. Because of that, nothing stagnant, nothing outmoded, nothing outdated, nothing outlived and nothing of this type of adverse nature can ever happen to it. For that reason, it can never become old and it is always perceived as something constantly new and infinitely different in its positive and progressive connotation only.

On your planet and in some other places of the multiverse, My New Revelation has to be in book form until the end of this cycle of time/state/process. And this is the way it is supposed to be until that time. Because My New Revelation springs from the above described Idea, it fully exhibits the same property as that Idea. Thus, in its content and meaning, in its entirety, it can never become outdated, outmoded, outlived, worn out and old. By your constantly rereading it, restudying it and practicing it on a daily basis in your lives, you make this most important phenomenon of My New Revelation to be actualized and realized on your stagnant and regressive planet.

For that reason, in conclusion of this ***Postscriptum***, if you would agree to be so and to do so by your own free will and choice, I would like to offer you — to all My true representatives who constantly read and practice My New Revelation on a continuous basis — a very important job, which would last for the rest of your remaining lives on planet Zero. I would like to appoint you to become Guardians of the purity of My New Revelation, protecting it by any means (by examples of your lives mostly) from being run over by the negative state and by being polluted, contaminated and poisoned by anything coming from the negative state and human minions of the negative state and from allowing My New

Postscriptum

Revelation ever to become outmoded, outdated, outlived, worn out or old in your own personal and individualized lives.

If you accept this appointment of Mine, in that case you would be comparable to the cherubim who were placed in the garden of Eden with the flaming swords in order to protect the entirety of the positive state from being run over by the forces of the negative state. You will be in the same position. And your flaming sword will be My New Revelation which has all the properties and much more of such symbolical sword.

In the final conclusions of these closing remarks, which herald the new beginning soon to come, I would like, once more, as I have done it on several occasions before (especially in Dialog 139, in its introductory statements), to remind you of the following very important facts: Following the closure of the current epoch, and following the ending of Peter's ordeal and martyrdom, and during the entirety of the next new epoch and this cycle of time/state/process, because now My New Revelation stands unshakably in its fullness and completeness, no other Revelation of multiversal significance will be forthcoming until the very end of the new epoch and the current cycle of time/state/process. For that reason, **if anyone at all comes and proclaims that I appeared to him/her and that he/she is appointed by Me to be a new transmitter of whatever I wanted to reveal, even if such a person would perform the most impressive miracles, even resurrecting people from death, in front of your eyes, such a person would not be coming from Me. He/she would be a deceiving spirit, an appointee of the Hells whose purpose for proclaiming such falsity about his/her role in this respect would be to destroy, contaminate, pollute, poison and make defunct My True And Genuine New Revelation as transmitted through Peter. Do not listen to such persons, do not go after them and do not ever buy into their claims. Please, write these words, symbolically speaking, on your forehead and into your heart, copy it, frame it and put it on your wall, so that you are constantly reminded about it. Remember, please, human memory is extremely fragile and unreliable in all its human properties.**

It is done! Now My Beautiful New Revelation stands in its fullness and completeness. We have finished. The current epoch is being closed right now. You are entering a very brief transitional period during which you can prepare yourselves for entering the new epoch and for the ending of Peter's ordeal and martyrdom. Go in peace and be My beloved Guardians

Dialogs with The Lord Jesus Christ

with the flaming sword in your hands — My Beloved and Beautiful New Revelation.

Peter: Thank You so much for allowing me in my grave condition to experience Your beautiful closing remarks and to be the witness of the completeness and fullness of Your New Revelation. I send You and everyone in the spiritual world, in the multiverse and to all Your true representatives, my deep unconditional love and appreciation. I love you all!

The Lord Jesus Christ: You are welcome, Peter, and we love you all unconditionally as well. And with these last words and with the last dot which is put after these words, we have ended the current epoch. Go in peace and endure to the end — all of you.